

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08071582 8





Mason

Mason, R.

ATV



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation







A LEGACY TO MY CHILDREN,

INCLUDING

FAMILY HISTORY,

AUTOBIOGRAPHY,

AND

ORIGINAL ESSAYS:

BY DR. PHILIP MASON.

---

Get Knowledge, Learn Wisdom, and Act Wisely.

---

CONNERSVILLE, INDIANA.

MOORE, WILSTACH & BALDWIN, PRINTERS,

25 WEST FOURTH STREET, CINCINNATI.

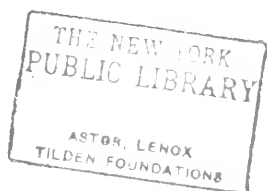
1868.

7011



W.C. Jackson del.

*Philip Mason*





## DEDICATION.

---

As I have already gone somewhat beyond the usual period allotted to man, being now over seventy-four years of age, I can not expect, in the course of nature, to remain here with those I love much longer; and, as it has ever been my desire and great aim to benefit my children by advice, in pointing out to them the road to honor, and the means for insuring success and happiness in life, I think I can not do better than to lay before them the results of my own long and varied experience. With the hope, therefore, that in relating my own history from boyhood up, as well as by sketches of others mentioned within these pages, I may prove to them the good results arising from perseverance, industry, and economy, and that after I shall have passed away to the spirit sphere my memory may be perpetuated in their hearts, and they may see my earnest solicitude for their welfare, as shown in the contents of this work. I, therefore, here dedicate it to you, my children, as a legacy, trusting that in the perusal, it may not only benefit you, but any others into whose hands it may chance to fall.

MOY WEN  
2177  
V00001

## PREFACE.

---

IN addition to the foregoing dedication, which, at my request, was written by my widowed daughter-in-law, Mrs. Charlotte H. Mason, the transcriber of the original manuscript of this book, I add the following, by way of a Preface.

Though I am aware of the peculiar character of this work, and which may be regarded by some as deficient, in a literary point of view, yet I have endeavored to give, in a plain and familiar manner, the conclusions to which my mind has been led, through a long life and varied experience. The greatest defect I find is the lack of brevity, and that terseness of style which would give life and conviction to its teachings. It may be objected to on account of the number and variety of subjects embraced. There are but few, however, treated in this book, but that it is to the interest of every one, and particularly every young man and woman, when they start out in life, to know of. To prevent confusion the subjects are thrown into groups, so arranged that the reader can select any subject and at once turn to it. By this means any one class of subjects can be studied independent of the others, until all have been learned. It may be objected to as being too dogmatical, but I think that, upon close examination, there will be very little found that will not bear the test of a careful philosophical investigation. It was intended to be founded wholly upon the law of causation, that *Truth* is an eternal principle, and such portion or portions of this work as will not bear this test (and I think they will be very few if any) should be discarded.

THE AUTHOR.





## PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

---

HAVING, in 1816, emigrated with a younger brother from the State of New York and settled within the present limits of Fayette County, State of Indiana, where we have since lived and both raised families, remote from all our connections, it can not be otherwise than interesting to our posterity to know something of their family history and genealogy.

I, Philip, the elder of the two brothers, being desirous of perpetuating the memory of our ancestors, have by various means obtained the records of several of the families; which, with a few general remarks connected with them, will be found collected within this volume.

The tradition in the family informed us that three brothers, by the name of Mason, emigrated from England to America; two of whom settled in New England, the other went South and settled. But this tradition I find to be erroneous. There were three distinct individuals, with three distinct civilizations, who emigrated from England to America, and at three separate periods. The first was John Mason of the Puritan stock, who emigrated to America in 1630, and settled, first in Massachusetts, and then in Connecticut. He was a considerable man, and ended the Pequot war.—See *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*. He left a large posterity behind. Sampson Mason, a Baptist, and an officer in Cromwell's army, and a Radical, came over from England about 1650, and settled in Rehoboth, and afterward in Swansea, Massachusetts. Colonel George Mason, a member of the English Parliament, was the third. When the Royal army was defeated by Cromwell, in a battle fought in 1651, at Worcester, Colonel George Mason escaped disguised, embarked on board of ship, landed at Norfolk, and settled in the Province of Virginia. From him sprang the southern Masons.—See *New American Cyclopedia*, Vol. II, page 254, and page 247, Vol. 18; *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, and *Antiquarian Journal*, for July, 1864, before quoted.

Thus we see that traditionary records are not always to be relied upon. In this case we have been able to detect a grave error, and to show the importance of correct early impressions.

In the autumn of 1866 I traveled over two thousand six hundred miles in Indiana, Michigan, New York, and Massachusetts, and met a large number of the Mason family, of the Radical descent. I found them, with one exception, of the Baptist faith in religion, and Radical in politics. Many of them had served, in some capacity, in the Federal army in the recent war, while the Masons who descended from the Royal stock were all rebels. There is no doubt in my mind, but that opinions like trains of muscular motion, when made in early life, become incorporated into the very being, and become part and parcel of the individual.

The branch of the family, of whom this record treats, were citizens of the Province, now the State of Rhode Island. Since my recollection my great grandfather died in Swansey, Massachusetts. At the time of his death, and for many years before, he was a Baptist minister. All the descendants of this clergyman, down to the present generation, were of this persuasion—my younger brother, Horatio Mason, who emigrated to this State with me, and I being the main exceptions, we both inclining to the progressive class, or Reformers, according to the liberal sentiments of the day.

Life flits away. One generation passes off the stage and is succeeded by another; and, though we may seek to treasure up our genealogy, it soon becomes too cumbersome, and is lost in the vista of time. We turn from it and seek the more illumined pathway of life's giddy pleasures, to be again lost to others, who may look back on the mazy path trod by their ancestors, and they again in turn seek more genial lights.

Thus passes away mortal man, to be forgotten. Yet there is, and must be in him, an immortal spirit that communes, though it be through a veil, with immortal mind, which, when released from the mortal body, will wing its way to the spirit land, there to gambol in endless progression.

The assertion is sustained by the constitution of man's mind. It is an innate faculty; hence this longing for immortality. It is manifested in the rude uncultivated man as well as in the scholar. It is the motive power of intellect. It is the sunbeam that vivifies and awakens the spirit-stirring thought of the glorious triumph over gross matter, and a realization of the effulgence of spirit-life.

It is this Spirit principle that arouses man's moral nature; his higher intellect; warms into being his higher aspirations. Through it he studies all his relations in life, moral, physical and intellectual, by which he is raised far above the brute, and gambols in thought and reason to the throne of the great positive mind of the universe, God! made manifest throughout all nature.

## PART FIRST.

# FAMILY HISTORY.

---

SAMPSON MASON, the Baptist and Dragoon in Oliver Cromwell's army, and progenitor of a branch of the Mason family in America, as contained in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register of July, 1864, as communicated to said Register by the Hon. Ira M. Burton, A. M., of Worcester, Massachusetts.

The following extracts constitute the principal portion of said report.—P. M.

In 1855 the Rev. Abner Morse, A. M., published an interesting volume of genealogies, embracing the families of Adams, Bullard, Holbrook, Phipps, Rockwood, Sanger, and Wood. As a supplement, never published, materials were collected with considerable labor and expense for an account of the maternal ancestry of Mrs. Lucy Bullard, widow of Dr. Artemas Bullard, late of Sutton, now eighty-six years of age.

Mrs. Bullard was the daughter of Deacon Jesse White, of Northbridge, by Anna Mason his wife, the eldest child of Melatiah Mason, of Thompson, Connecticut, who died in 1831, aged more than one hundred years. The early history of this family proved to be of some public as well as private interest. A clue to it was first obtained from the histories of the Baptists by Backus and Benedict, and Baylies' Memorial of the Plymouth Colony, where this family of Masons had its principal seat. The few facts gathered from those works have been much amplified by a reference to more local histories, to the records of the Plymouth Colony, and to the church and municipal records of Rehoboth, Swansey, Taunton, and other towns. It is not supposed that the early history, or much less, the genealogy of this family is complete; such subjects are never exhausted. It is hoped that the facts here collected may provoke genealogical research in the later generations of this numerous and widely extended family.

Sampson Mason was the American root of this family. Of this fact we have not only the testimony of Backus, in his Church History, whose wife, Susannah Mason, was a descendant of Sampson, in the line of his son, Samuel Mason, but the ancient records of the towns of Rehoboth and Swansey.

By the concurrent authority of tradition, and the history above referred to, Sampson Mason was a soldier, or as Baylies has it in his Historical Memoir of Plymouth, "a dragoon" in the Republican army of Oliver Cromwell. Backus says that he came over to this country upon the turn of times in England. If by this he means the restoration of Charles II in 1660, Mr. Backus was certainly mistaken, for Sampson Mason came over at least ten years before that time. This fact, however, does not at all countervail the evidence that he belonged to the army of Cromwell, who raised his celebrated "Ironsides" troop of horse at Cambridge, in 1642. At the battle of Marston Moors in 1644, he had become Lieutenant-General of the army of Parliament, and if Sampson Mason was a dragoon, as Baylies asserts, it is not improbable that he belonged to this "troop," which performed such prodigies of valor at the battle referred to.

The earliest notice of Sampson Mason yet discovered in this country, is found in the Suffolk record of the settlement of the estate of Edward Bullock, of Dorchester. His will is dated 25-5-1649, (July 25, 1649), and a debt is specified as "due to Sampson Mason for wife's shoes."—6 N. E. Hist. and Gen. Register, 356. The Registry of Deeds for Suffolk shows that in 1651 Sampson Mason purchased a house and land in Dorchester, of William Betts; that he afterward sold the same to Jacob Hewins and removed to Rehoboth. For this reference to the Registry of Deeds I am indebted to Ebenezer Clapp, Esq., of Boston.

The following extract from the Records of Rehoboth fixes the period of his removal to that place:

"December 9th, 1657.—It was voted that Sampson Mason should have free liberty to sojourn with us, and to buy house, lands or meadow, if he see cause for his settlement, provided that he lives peaceably and quietly."—Hist. of Rehoboth, by Leonard Bliss, Jr.

Anabaptist, as he certainly was, this permission to sojourn was all that Sampson Mason could expect from his Puritanical friends at Rehoboth. Their records show that Samuel Luther and other Baptists, who afterwards became prominent men in the Old Colony, instead of being admitted as freemen had accorded to them only the privilege of sojourners. At an early period, however, grants of lands south of Rehoboth were obtained from the Indians; and



in 1667 Captain Thomas Willett, Rev. John Myles, "and others, their neighbors at Wannamoiset and parts adjacent," were confirmed in their title to those lands, and erected into the township of Swansey, by the General Court at Plymouth. In that town the religious profession of a Baptist never worked any forfeiture of civil rights. The name of Sampson Mason appears as one of the original associates, and Baylies says that he became one of the founders of that town. Those associates were, many of them, distinguished men. Captain Thomas Willett was the first English Mayor of the City of New York; the Rev. John Myles was a Baptist clergyman from Swansea, Wales. There were also among the associates James Brown, Nathaniel Paine, Hugh Cole, Samuel Luther, and others, names well known and much respected in that part of the country. James Brown was a magistrate and one of the original members of the first Baptist Church in Swansey. His father, John Brown, was long one of the Assistants at Plymouth, a Commissioner of the United Colonies, and a large proprietor of Wannamoiset, an Indian country bordering on the south-westerly part of ancient Rehoboth, and now constituting the north-westerly part of Barrington and Swansey. Before the incorporation of Swansey Wannamoiset was regarded as a part of Rehoboth, and John Brown, with his son-in-law, Thomas Willett, resided there. April 7, 1662, Mr. Brown made his will, and died the same year. Sampson Mason was one of the witnesses to the will, a circumstance that renders it probable that he was a neighbor, and resided in the same part of Rehoboth.—6 N. E. Hist. and General Register, 94.

That Sampson Mason became a man of substance is inferable, not only from the part he took in the settlement of Swansey, but also from the fact that he was one of the proprietors of the "north purchase," since Attleboro'. And among those in Rehoboth who made advances in King Philip's war, his widow is credited £13 5s. 10d., it being among the larger contributions made on that terrific emergency. The credit is given to the widow, as Sampson Mason died just at the close of the war, and she settled whatever estate he had left after the ravages made by the Indians.—Bliss' Hist. of Rehoboth.

The above facts induce the belief that, although Sampson Mason was associated as one of the founders of Swansey, and worshiped there with his Baptist brethren, whose meeting-house was first erected at Wannamoiset, yet it is probable that he never actually moved from Rehoboth. His estate was there, the births of nine of his children were recorded there, and we shall find that Reho-

both has faithfully preserved the record of his death, and that of Mary his wife.

Though there is the usual tradition about the "three brothers emigrating to America," there is no evidence of any connection between the family of Sampson Mason and the other New England families of that name noticed by Farmer in his Register; and I am informed by the Hon. James M. Mason, of Winchester, Virginia, that none of his family ever emigrated to the north of Mason and Dixon's line. His ancestor was Colonel George Mason, a member of Parliament from Staffordshire, in the reign of Charles I, and a Colonel of cavalry at the battle of Worcester, in the army of Charles Stuart, afterward Charles II. Immediately after this battle, that ruined the fortunes of Charles, Colonel Mason left England and landed at Norfolk, Virginia, before the end of the same year, 1651. This fact, with the tradition that Sampson Mason had belonged to the victorious army of Cromwell, renders it probable that those families were as far separated in the old world as they are in the new.

The period of the birth of Sampson Mason and his wife must be inferred from their history, and from the following account of their children. But the periods of their deaths appear from the well-preserved records of the ancient town of Rehoboth, as follows:

Sampson Mason, buried Sept. 15, 1676.

Widow Mary Mason, wife of Sampson Mason, Sr., died August 29, 1714.

It appears from the will of Sampson Mason, and an order of court in relation thereto, a copy whereof is subjoined, that her maiden name was Butterworth. The Colony records show that the Butterworths were a prominent family, and they probably removed to Rehoboth with their brother Mason. The place of burial of Sampson Mason and his wife is not known. It is not improbable that they were buried in the ground of their friends and neighbors, the Browns, on Bullock's Cove. The authority of the State has recently been invoked to prevent the desecration of that public burial ground.—See *Commonwealth vs. Viall*, Vol. II, Allen's Reports, p. 512.

By a collation of facts from the history of Backus, the records of Rehoboth and Swansey, the Colony records, and a transcript from the genealogical registry of the Blackstone Monument Association, kindly furnished me by Ezra Baker, Esq., of Providence, Rhode Island, I am able to give the following corrected tables of the first three generations of the family of Sampson Mason:

1. Sampson Mason, b. in England; m. Mary Butterworth; buried Sept. 15, 1676; w. d. Aug. 29, 1714; had 13 children.

(15) 2. Noah,<sup>2</sup> b. pr. at Dorchester; d. March 2, 1699, or 1700.

3. Sampson, Jr.,<sup>2</sup> b. pr. at Dorchester. He was a soldier from Rehoboth in King Philip's war, and belonged to the expedition sent to chastise the Narragansetts in the winter of 1675-6. He was also one of the founders of the Second Baptist Church in Swansea, whom Wright, in his history of the Six-principle Baptists, mistakes for Sampson Mason, Sr.

(24) 4. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> b. pr. at Dorchester, ab. 1656; d. Jan. 21 1743-4.

5. John,<sup>2</sup> b. pr. at Dorchester, ab. 1657; d. March 18, 1683, a. 26. He did not remove to Rehoboth with the rest of his father's family, but was left at Dorchester with Mr. John Gurnell, and was there brought up at the tanner's business. Mr. Clapp gave me these facts, and also the following copy of an extract from the Church records of Dorchester:

"John, son of Sampson Mason, 23 (7) 1660, being about four years old when he was baptized, because his father was, and is, in his judgment, against the baptizing of infants; yet he being at Seconek (Rehoboth), do permit that Brother Gurnell, with whom the child doth dwell, may bring it forth to be baptized." Taken into the watch care of the Church, under circumstances of some peenliarity, their subsequent records show that John's walk was not always orderly. However, he so far secured the confidence of the widow of Mr. Gurnell, that, by her will, she entailed her real estate upon him, to go to the poor of Dorchester upon his decease without issue.—5 His. and Gen. Register, 400. See, also, Ancient Epitaphs of Dorchester, 4 His. and Gen. Reg. 167.

— 6. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> born at Rehoboth, Feb. 15, 1658.

(29) 7. Mary,<sup>2</sup> b. Feb. 7, 1660; m. Rev. Ephraim Wheaton, Jan. 7, 1684.

8. James,<sup>2</sup> b. Oct. 30, 1661. No further account of him is found, except the statement of Mr. Backus, that he went to Boston.

(30) 9. Joseph,<sup>2</sup> b. March 6, 1663; d. May 19, 1748.

10. Bethia,<sup>2</sup> b. Oct. 15, 1665; m. John Wood, May 23, 1688.

(35) 11. Isaac,<sup>2</sup> b. July 15, 1667; died Jan. 25, 1742.

(46) 12. Pelatiah,<sup>2</sup> b. April 1, 1669; d. March 29, 1763.

(58) 13. Benjamin,<sup>2</sup> b. Oct. 20, 1670; d. in 1740.

14. Thankful,<sup>2</sup> b. Oct. 27, 1672; m. Thomas Bowen, June 17, 1689.

(2) 15. Noah<sup>2</sup> Mason, m. first, Martha, d. Feb. 6, 1675; m. second, Sarah Fitch, Dec. 6, 1677; d. March 16, 1718; had,

16. Noah,<sup>3</sup> b. at Rehoboth, Dec. 17, 1678; d. Aug. 29, 1744.

17. John,<sup>3</sup> b. Nov. 28, 1680; d. Aug. 27, 1716.

18. Mary,<sup>3</sup> b. Dec. 12, 1682.

19. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> b. July 6, 1685.

20. Timothy,<sup>3</sup> b. March 17, 1687; d. Dec. 9, 1742.

21. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> b. Feb. 7, 1689.

22. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> b. Dec. 2, 1690; d. July 14, 1716.

23. Martha,<sup>3</sup> b. June 16, 1693; m. George Bristow, Sept. 29, 1715.

Noah<sup>2</sup> Mason also went into the service from Rehoboth, in King Philip's war. He belonged to the forces of the Plymouth Colony, under Major Bradford, and in addition to his personal services, he contributed 15s. toward the expenses of the war.—Bliss' History of Rehoboth.

(4) 24. Samuel<sup>2</sup> Mason m. Elizabeth Miller, March 2, 1681–2; d. March 3, 1717–18. They had,

25. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> b. at Rehoboth, June 9, 1683; d. June 3, 1772.

26. James,<sup>3</sup> b. March 18, 1684–5.

27. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> b. May 5, 1689; m. Edward Luther, Feb. 12, 1712.

28. Amos,<sup>3</sup> b. Feb. 18, 1700; d. April 25, 1700.

It appears from the will of Sampson<sup>1</sup> Mason, that Samuel<sup>2</sup> was the son designated with whom his wife was to have a home. His posterity became numerous and respectable. His son Samuel<sup>3</sup> had fourteen children; among them Susannah,<sup>4</sup> b. at Rehoboth, Jan. 24, 1725; m. Rev. Isaac Backus, of Middleboro', the author of Church History, Nov. 29, 1749; d. Nov. 24, 1800.—His. and Gen. Reg., vii, 243. Mr. Backus died in 1806. He used to say to his wife, that "she was the greatest earthly blessing which God ever gave him.—Vol. II, Benedict's History of the Baptists, 268.

(7) 29. Mary<sup>2</sup> Mason, m. the Rev. Ephraim Wheaton, Jan. 7, 1684. The records of Rehoboth show that they had nine children, born between 1685 and 1703. Mr. Wheaton was first settled as the colleague of the Rev. Samuel Luther, pastor of the First Baptist Church in Swansey. Upon the death of Mr. Luther, in 1716. Mr. Wheaton succeeded him as sole pastor of that Church. His ministry was long and eminently successful. He wrote an account of his success to Thomas Hollis, of London, from whom he received a congratulatory letter, and a present of books. Though he ministered in Swansey, his residence was in a contiguous part of Rehoboth, where he died, April 26, 1734, aged 75. His four sons settled upon their paternal estate, and among his lineal descendants are the families of Judge Wheaton, of Norton; Dr. Levi Wheaton, of Providence; Hon. Henry Wheaton, late United States Minister at Berlin; Rev. Dr. Henry Jackson, of Newport; Rev. Josephus Wheaton, formerly of Holliston, etc.—See Discourse of

the Rev. Josiah P. Tustin, at the dedication of the Baptist Church in Warren, May 8, 1845.

(9) 30. Joseph<sup>2</sup> Mason, m. Lydia ———, Sept. 4, 1686; had,

31. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> b. at Swansea, April 30, 1687.

32. Anne,<sup>3</sup> b. Aug. 28, 1688; m. Richard Hail, Jan. 2, 1705-6.

33. Frelove,<sup>3</sup> b. June 5, 1695; m. Samuel Gorton, June 1, 1715.

34. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> b. Nov. 7, 1704; m. John Brown, Nov. 5, 1724.

Joseph<sup>2</sup> Mason succeeded Elder Thomas Barnes as Minister of the Second Baptist Church in Swansea, July, 1700. In 1737 or 1738 he resigned the pastorate, on account of infirmity of body, and not of mind, as the Church record states, and his nephew, Elder Job Mason, was chosen in his place.

This Church was constituted in 1693, upon the *Six-principle plan*, as stated in the sixth chapter of Hebrews, 1, 2. They were connected with the yearly meeting of Six-principle Baptists in Rhode Island; did not allow singing in their public religious services, and in many of their notions they appear to have sympathized with the Friends. But since the American Revolution, they have conformed to the usages of other sects in the matter of Church psalmody. Their meeting-house was located three or four miles easterly of Myles' bridge, near which was located the meeting-house of the First Church. A section of the Second Church still exists that retain their original platform and their connection with the Rhode Island yearly meeting; but they have left the meeting-house, for some years past, to the brethren known as Christians, or Free-will Baptists. The ancient records of this Church are in the hands of Deacon Martin Buffington, near the meeting-house at Luther's Corner. They afford ample proof that the Masons were among the principal founders of this religious society. Joseph Mason was the first Minister of that name, but several others of the name of Mason succeeded him.

(11) 35. Isaac<sup>2</sup> Mason m. Hannah ———; and they had,

36. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> b. at Rehoboth, Jan. 9, 1694; d. Feb. 26, 1697.

37. Mary,<sup>3</sup> b. Jan. 26, 1696; d. March 4, 1697.

38. Isaac,<sup>3</sup> b. Dec. 26, 1698.

39. Sampson,<sup>3</sup> b. Feb. 24, 1700.

(62) 40. Hezekiah,<sup>3</sup> b. June 6, 1704; d. April 4, 1738.

41. Nathan,<sup>3</sup> b. May 10, 1705; d. May, 1758.

42. Olive,<sup>3</sup> b. at Swansea, Aug. 20, 1706.

43. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> b. March, 1710; m. James Brown, Feb. 19, 1740.

44. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> b. April 10, 1711.

45. Mary,<sup>3</sup> b. May 21, 1713.

Isaac<sup>2</sup> Mason was the ancestor of Mrs. Bullard. He was the

first Deacon of the Second Baptist Church in Swansea. Elder Thomas Barnes was ordained as their first Pastor, in 1693, and the record finds that "our beloved brother, Isaac Mason, was chosen and ordained Deacon."

This office he held during his life-time; and the records of both the Church and the town show that he died Jan. 25, 1742. He thus held the office of Deacon of this Church for fifty years, and during the whole of the pastorates of his brother Joseph and Mr. Barnes. It appears that he had much to do with both the spiritual and the secular affairs of the Church. June 17, 1731, he, with others, "was chosen a committee to treat with the other society concerning the ministerial lands in Swansea." His very numerous descendants are found in Massachusetts, New York, Ohio, and other States. In Ohio, they are represented by the Hon. Sampson Mason, of Springfield, formerly member of Congress from that district.

(12) 46. Pelatiah<sup>2</sup> Mason, m. Hephzibah Brooks, May 22, 1694, b. 1673, d. Aug. 24, 1727, by whom he had his children, but married a second, third, and fourth wife.

47. Job,<sup>3</sup> b. at Swansea, Feb. 28, 1695; d. July 17, 1775.

48. Elihn,<sup>3</sup> b. Jan. 1, 1696; d. April 11, 1719.

49. Elisha,<sup>3</sup> b. Jan. 11, 1699; d. July 25, 1760.

50. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> b. Jan. 30, 1701; d. 1709.

51. Aaron,<sup>3</sup> b. March 8, 1703; d. Dec. 24, 1731.

52. Anne,<sup>3</sup> b. June 9, 1705; d. May 26, 1776.

53. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> b. June 18, 1707; m. John Hail, Oct. 18, 1723; d. 1795.

54. Hephzibah,<sup>3</sup> b. Dec. 10, 1709; d. Dec. 19, 1731.

55. Pelatiah,<sup>3</sup> b. Dec. 16, 1711.

56. Russell,<sup>3</sup> b. April 21, 1714; d. Jan. 11, 1799.

57. John,<sup>3</sup> b. Oct. 3, 1716.

Pelatiah<sup>2</sup> was the head of the clerical branch of the family of Sampson Mason, and its history is well preserved by the public records of Swansea and a private record furnished me by Owen Mason, A. M., of Providence. It results satisfactorily from the records of the town of Woburn, that Hephzibah, the first wife of Pelatiah Mason, was the daughter of Timothy Brooks, by his wife, Mary Russell, daughter of Elder John Russell, Sr., and not of Rev. John Russell, Jr., of Boston, as supposed by Mr. Benedict. Three of the sons of Pelatiah Mason, Job, Russell, and John, were successively ministers of the Second Baptist Church in Swansea, said by Backus and Benedict to be "eminent." The Rev. Job Mason was, no doubt, a man of mark with his contem-

poraries. He was ordained May 26, 1738. The following document, given by him to his church, and entered upon their records, is interesting, not only as indicating his own views, but the views of his Baptist brethren of that day, in relation to ministerial support:

“Having perused the declaration of my predecessors, in the work of the ministry, recorded in the town book, and finding them grounded in the word of God, in respect to their support, I am willing to comply with the same, judging it to be most agreeable to the mind of God contained in the Scriptures. I declare myself to be fully satisfied with what may be freely and willingly bestowed on me for my labor in the work of the ministry, from them that participate of my labor in dispensing the word of God and no others. Also denying any support, by way of a tax, as witness my hand this eleventh day of August, Anno Domini, 1748.

“JOB MASON.”

Upon his death the inhabitants of the town caused the following entry to be made on their records:

“July 17, 1775. On Monday night last, died of an apoplexy and malignant fever, and on Wednesday were interred the remains of that truly venerable man, Elder Job Mason, in the eighty-first year of his age. He had faithfully labored in the Gospel ministry forty-seven years, more than thirty-seven of which he was an ordained Elder of the Second Baptist Church in Swansea. It may, with truth, be said that he magnified his office, in that he dispensed the Gospel to others. He exhibited in his own life and conversation the most striking proof of its tendency to make men truly wise, useful, and good. The dear and bereaved Church,” etc.

Elder Nathan Mason, a son of Sampson and grandson of Deacon Isaac Mason, was a contemporary of the three clerical sons of Pelatiah Mason. He gathered a church in Swansea, and emigrated with them to Sackville, New Brunswick, in 1763. After residing at that place about eight years, he returned to Massachusetts, and settled in what is now Cheshire, Berkshire County. Upon the return of the celebrated Elder John Leland, from Virginia to that place, he and this Elder Mason became colleagues in the ministry. Elder Leland was a native of Grafton, in the county of Worcester; and Mrs. Bullard recollects that her father and mother used to be much gratified at the occasional visits of this distinguished colleague of their kinsman. Whether Elder Mason co-operated with Mr. Leland, in forwarding the mammoth cheese to Mr. Jefferson, history does not inform us; he enjoyed the utmost confidence and respect of Mr. Leland, who said of him, that “he was a man of

peace and godliness—preaching seven days in the week—by his life and conversation.”

The name of Elder Russell Mason is suggestive, if not proof, of the relation between the Mason and Russell families. Among the descendants of Elder Russell Mason is the Rev. Alanson P. Mason; the minister of the Baptist Church in Chelsea, who is quite competent to speak of his branch of the Mason family.

Elder John Mason, the last of the clerical sons of Pelatiah Mason, was the ancestor of the highly respectable branch of the family in Providence, Rhode Island.

The record of the death of Pelatiah Mason, copied from the town books of Swansey, is as follows:

“Pelatiah Mason, of Swansey, deceased this life March y<sup>e</sup> 29, 1763, aged 94 years, and the last survivor of six brethren; the youngest was 70 years of age when he deceased.”

For access to this interesting record, I am indebted to the Hon. John Mason, a lineal descendant of this patriarch. He has been clerk of the town of Swansey for about 50 years.

The facts recited in this record are important in the history of the whole family of Sampson Mason. They settle, not only the longevity of the race, but show who the longest lived of his children were.

The youngest son, referred to in the record, was Benjamin; and as he was born in 1670, his death must have occurred in 1740. And as John died in 1683, and Noah in 1699 or 1700, and James, if living, was in Boston or vicinity, the six sons of Sampson Mason referred to must have been Sampson, Samuel, Joseph, Isaac, Pelatiah and Benjamin. The private record furnished me by Mr. Owen Mason states that “six brothers settled in Swansey and Rehoboth, and lived until the *youngest* was seventy years of age; when being taken sick, his elder brothers—the oldest being 93 years of age—all assembled at the same time to take a final leave of him.” The imagination could not depict a scene more truly patriarchal; and should the family ever produce a painter, his first duty would be to do justice to the subject.

(13) 58. Benjamin<sup>2</sup> Mason, m. Ruth, ———, had,

59. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> b. at Swansey, May 11, 1698; m. Wm. Slade, Jr., June 23, 1715.

60. Christopher,<sup>3</sup> b. July 6, 1702.

61. Charles,<sup>3</sup> b. Aug. 16, 1713.

In 1855 I was informed by Wm. Mason, Esq., of Fall River, then 78 years of age, and the nearest living descendant of Sampson Mason, that his grandfather, Christopher,<sup>3</sup> m. a daughter of Gov. Jenks, of Rhode Island. They lived at Swansey with eight other children; his father, Christopher,<sup>4</sup> b. Oct. 12, 1737.



(40) 62. Hezekiah<sup>3</sup> Mason, m. Rebekah Martin, July 23, 1730, had,

(67) 63. Melatiah,<sup>4</sup> b. April 19, 1731; m. Rebekah Miller, Nov. 14, 1754; d. Dec. 17, 1831.

64. Hezekiah,<sup>4</sup> b. Aug. 11, 1732.

65. Jeremiah,<sup>4</sup> b. Aug. 11, 1732.

66. Phebe,<sup>4</sup> b. Dec. 17, 1736.

Hezekiah,<sup>3</sup> the son of Deacon Isaac Mason, was the great-grandfather of Mrs. Bullard. The following is a copy of the record of his marriage, taken from the records of Rehoboth: "Hezekiah Mason and Rebekah Martin were married 23 July, 1730 by Mr. Ephraim Wheaton, minister of Swansey." She was the daughter of Deacon Melatiah Martin, born Feb. 19, 1708-9. Her father was ordained Deacon of the Second Baptist Church in Swansey, Oct. 19, 1715, and died Jan. 30, 1761, aged 88. Hence it appears that Isaac Mason and Melatiah Martin were simultaneously deacons of the same church for many years.

Deacon Martin had seven children, whose births are recorded in Rehoboth, but his death is recorded in Swansey.

(63) 67. Melatiah<sup>4</sup> Mason, m. Rebekah Miller, Nov. 14, 1754; d. Jan. 17, 1823; they had,

(80) 68. Anna,<sup>5</sup> b. at Rehoboth, Nov. 4, 1755; m. Deacon Jesse White, at Uxbridge, April 17, 1777; d. Aug. 20, 1839.

69. Noah,<sup>5</sup> b. at Dighton, Nov. 29, 1757; d. Feb. 27, 1841.

70. Rebekah,<sup>5</sup> b. Feb. 5, 1760; d. March 7, 1809.

71. Melatiah,<sup>5</sup> b. Oct. 16, 1761; d. June 30, 1790.

72. Abraham,<sup>5</sup> b. July 10, 1763, d. Sept. 30, 1852.

73. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> b. Aug. 1, 1765; d. Nov. 1, 1765.

74. Betsey,<sup>5</sup> b. Aug. 10, 1766; d. Jan. 15, 1812.

75. Mary,<sup>5</sup> b. Aug. 16, 1768; m. Enos Tucker; d. July 20, 1851.

76. Isaac,<sup>5</sup> b. at Uxbridge, Nov. 15, 1772; d. Sept. 22, 1826.

77. Rhoda,<sup>5</sup> b. Dec. 11, 1774; m. ——— Cutler; d. April 2, 1834.

78. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> b. Sept. 9, 1776; m. Otis Pratt; d. Sept 25, 1860.

79. Olive,<sup>5</sup> b. Feb. 20, 1780, at Killingly, Connecticut; set off to Thompson in 1785; m. ——— Wesson; d. Jan, 1820.

Melatiah<sup>4</sup> Mason was, by trade, a master mason. The record of his marriage shows that at that time he was a resident of Providence, where he was probably at work. In 1770, the year in which John Brown laid the corner-stone of the University Hall, Melatiah Mason assisted in the work. After his removal to Uxbridge, he was employed, with a company of hands, to go to Hanover, and erect some of the buildings of Dartmouth College.

(68) 80. Anna<sup>5</sup> Mason, m. Deacon Jesse White, April 17, 1777; d. at Northbridge, March 2, 1830. They had 11 children :

81. Lucy,<sup>6</sup> b. May 5, 1778; m. Dr. Artemas Bullard, at Northbridge, Dec. 6, 1798; removed to Sutton in 1805; d. there May 6, 1842. Since his death Mrs. B. has resided with her sons Ebenezer W. and Oliver C., and her sons-in-law, Henry Ward Beecher and your correspondent.

82. Noah,<sup>6</sup> b. Feb. 21, 1780; d. Sept. 23, 1830.

83. Amos,<sup>6</sup> b. Sept. 19, 1781; d. March 12, 1853.

84. Jesse,<sup>6</sup> b. June 30, 1783.

85. Alden,<sup>6</sup> b. March 21, 1785; d. Aug. 16, 1830.

86. Anna,<sup>6</sup> b. Jan. 11, 1787; d. Feb. 14, 1795.

87. Joel,<sup>6</sup> b. Jan. 5, 1789; d. July 8, 1814.

88. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> b. March 4, 1791; m. James Fletcher, son of Col. James F., of Northbridge, Jan. 1, 1817.

89. Sally,<sup>6</sup> b. May 6, 1793; d. May 17, 1793.

90. Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. May 4, 1794; d. April 15, 1839.

91. Washington,<sup>6</sup> b. May 19, 1796; representative of Northbridge in the G. C. of 1855.

Perhaps I can not better close this communication than by handing you, for republication, a notice of the celebration of the hundredth birthday of Melatiah Mason, the venerable grandfather of Mrs. Bullard. It was first published in the *National Ægis*, at Worcester, May 5, 1830. An amusing error, however, occurred in celebrating it one year too early. The mistake, no doubt, happened by a reference to the record of his marriage in the family Bible, Nov. 14, 1754.

This record recites that he was then 24, and his wife 19, years of age. The Bible contained no other record of the time of his birth, and it appears to have been assumed that he was 24 the April before his marriage; but, in fact, he was not till the April after. Of course he did not become a hundred years old till April 30, 1831, while the event was celebrated April 30, 1830. At first it was thought that there might be a mistake of a year in my copy of the records of Swansey. But upon reference to the original, it is found very plain and full, in the words and figures following :

"Melatiah Mason, the son of Hezekiah Mason and Rebekah, his wife, was born April 19, on the second day of the week, 1731."

By correcting the style, which should always be done in the case of records previous to the year 1752, we have, as the true date of his birth, new style, April 30, 1731; and his hundredth birthday, therefore, occurred April 30, 1831, a year after it was celebrated. However, he lived till Dec. 27, 1831, and thus became fully entitled to the distinction of being a centenarian.

## WILL OF SAMPSON MASON.

“The 22<sup>nd</sup> day of October, in the yeer of our Lord, according to the English accompt, one thousand six hundred seaventy and two, Know all men by these presents that I, Sampson Mason, of Rehoboth, in the Colonie of New Plymouth, in New England, Cordwinder, being sicke in body, but through the Grace of my God of Good and p<sup>r</sup>fect memory, Doe make and declare my last will and Testament, in manor and form following: That is to say, first, I give and bequeath my whole estate, as well Reall as p<sup>r</sup>sonall, to Mary, my beloved wife, to have and to hold the same and every p<sup>r</sup>te thereof, To the use of her, the said Mary, during her widdowhood, only excepting such Gifts and Legacies as are heerin and heerafter bequeathed. *Item*, I give and bequeath unto my eldest son Noah, either my house which is shortly to be built in Swansey, or that house wherein I doe now dwell; that is to say, that house which his mother, my said wife, shall order him to take, and an equall proportion with his other bretherin in all my lands within the severall Townships of Rehoboth and Swansey, and on the north syde of the Towne Reho [bo] th, when hee shall attaine to one and twenty yeers of age, to the use of him and his heires and assignes for ever.

“*Item*, I bequeath unto my second son Sampson fifty acrees of land, which is shortly to be layed out as my Lott on the north syde of the Town of Rehoboth, To have and to hold the said fifty acrees from the time that hee shall attaine to one and twenty yeers of age, To him and his heires and assignes for ever. *Item*, I give and bequeath unto my son Samuel that house which my said wife shall choose for her owne particular use, with five and twenty acrees of Land where my said wife and the overseers of this my will heerafter named shall see convenient; To have and to hold the said house and land from and after my said wife's decease; To him and his heires and assigns for ever. *Item*, I give and bequeath unto my other six sonnes an equall right to, and proportion of, all my lands not alreddy bequeathed within the severall Townships of Rehoboth and Swansey, and on the north syde of the Towne of Rehoboth, whether the same or any p<sup>r</sup>te thereof be devided or undevided, as it is or shall be layed out to the use of mee, mine heires or assignes, att any time heerafter, to have and to hold To them, my said six sonnes, and every of them respectively, when they shall attaine to one and twenty yerrs of age; and after the second marriage of my said wife or her decease, to their severall and Respective uses of them, and to the severall and respective uses of their heires and assignes, for ever, provided, nevertheless, that whensoever every of my last mensioned six sonnes shall possesse and enjoy an equall

proportionall of lands with my said sonnes Noah and Samuell ; that the remaining lands shall be att my wife's dispose, and of my said overseers hercafter mensioned. *Item*, I do heerby declare that it is my last will and Testament, that every of my four daughters shall have such a portion of my estate, both Reall and p<sup>r</sup>sonall, as my said wife and the said overseers shall see meet, and to be payed to every of them, according to the order of my said Wife and overseers. *Item*, I doe heerby nominate my said dear wife, Mary, to be executrix of this my last will and Testament ; and my beloved Friends, Mr. John Myles, Mr. James Brown, and my brother John Butterworth, to be overseers thereof, desiring that they Doe see the same accomplished and p<sup>r</sup>formed according to the true intent and meaning thereof.

"In witness whereof, I have heerunto putt my hand and Seale, the day and yeer first above written.

"SAMPSON MASON, [SEALE.]

"Signed and Sealed in the presence of,

"JONATHAN FULLER,

"JONATHAN WILLMOTH.

"Jonathan Fuller and Jonathan Willmoth took theire oath to the truth of this will and Testament, the 17th of November, 1676, before mee.

JAMES BROWN, *Assistant*.

"PLYMOUTH, ss., May 3d, 1862.—The foregoing is a true copy from the Plymouth Colony Records, Book of Wills, Vol. II, Part 2d, page 49.

"Attest : WM. S. RUSSELL, *Keeper of said Records*."

Extract from the printed Records of Plymouth Colony, Vol. V, pp. 213 and 221.

"1676, Nov 1. Mr. Brown is appointed by the Court to give oath unto the witnesses of the will of Sampson Mason, and to adminster an oath unto Mary Mason for the truth of the inventory.

"In reference to the will of Sampson Mason, tendered unto the Court, whereas it doth appear that some p<sup>r</sup>sells of land have been purchased since his will was made, that are not yet paid for, this Court hath ordered that his widow, Mary Mason, shall have liberty from the Court to make sale of some p<sup>r</sup>te of the said land to make payment for the rest, and that what remains be improved for the bringing up of his children.

"And Mr. Browne, Mr. Daniel Smith and her brother Butterworth are deputed by the Court to be helpfull to her in the disposing of the said Estate."

## THE MAN OF A HUNDRED YEARS.

“I scarce remember, in my observation, to have met with many old men, or with such who (to use our own English phrase) *wear well*, that had not at least a certain indolence in their humor, if not a more than ordinary gayety and cheerfulness of heart.”

This remark of the Spectator was forcibly suggested to me, on attending the celebration of the hundredth birthday of Melatiah Mason at Thompson, Connecticut, on the 30th ult. I never before had seen a person a hundred years old. This singular novelty created an interest not less singular, much heightened, no doubt, by the circumstance that this old man, and my little boy who was with me, constituted the extremes of five generations. The occasion called together quite a concourse of the old gentleman's posterity, friends, neighbors and townsmen, and appropriate religious services were had at the Baptist Church in Thompson. Elder Grow preached from 2 Timothy, iv: 6, 7, and 8: “For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand,” etc. The preacher stated that the old gentleman had, for three score years and ten, been a professor of religion; that the number of his surviving children was six; grandchildren, fifty-three; great-grandchildren, about one hundred and fifty, besides quite a number of great-great grandchildren. Several branches of the old gentleman's family are settled in this Commonwealth. Amongst others is “the large family of White, in Northbridge, and the family of Dr. Bullard, of Sutton.”

After the religious exercises of the occasion were over, I endeavored to ascertain by what means, under God, in whom he had so early put his trust, this man of a hundred years had managed to live so long in the world. He informed me that he was born at Rehoboth; that he was brought up to the trade of a mason, and continued to work at it more or less till he was eighty years old; that, when young, he had married a “worthy woman” by the name of Rebekah Miller, by whom he had twelve children, and whom he buried but a few years ago. He said he always worked hard; had frequently walked ten miles in the morning, and then done his day's work. Upon being questioned as to his mode of living, he modestly said he always aimed to be temperate. That when he used to work hard, he drank a little spirits, but never used tobacco habitually in any way; once in a while smoked a little *for amusement, but never a pipeful at a time*. He is a person small in stature, thick set, and has to this day a good head of hair, and a fine bright eye. The most striking characteristic of his mind was that of

equanimity and cheerfulness. And herein, undoubtedly, consists the main secret by which the subtle machinery of life has been so long kept in motion. So predominant were the kindly feelings of his nature that, through all the wars in which his country had been involved during his long life, he never, on but one occasion, to use his own words, "took his gun in hand for the purpose of hurting any body," and that was upon the alarm that the Regulars were making a descent upon Lexington and Concord. That was too much for the old gentleman's pacific nature. He resolutely took his gun, and nothing but his distance from the scene of action prevented him from shedding man's blood. During the Revolutionary War, he prayed ardently for the success of the good cause, but he could not overcome the conscientious scruples of his heart in regard to bearing arms as a profession, and did not therefore enter the service. At the close of the religious services of the occasion a contribution was taken up of about forty dollars, as well for the purpose of ministering to the few remaining wants of the patriarch, as to testify the filial regard of his posterity and the respect of his neighbors and townsmen. It would be altogether superfluous to speak of the moral character of one who could draw forth such an unequivocal expression of esteem from those who were best acquainted with him, and it is an affecting exemplification of the benign policy of Heaven towards men, that he, who had spent a long life in acts of kindness and charity to others, should, after the tardy lapse of a century of years, find an ample reward in being himself placed in a community and among friends by whom virtue is appreciated and age respected.—B.

OXFORD, May 3, 1830.

I am indebted to the Rev. A. P. Mason for the following letter of information :

"CHELSEA, MASSACHUSETTS, Sept. 10, 1866.

"DR. PHILIP MASON, *Dear Sir*,—Your letter of inquiry respecting the early members of the Mason family has been received. I can help you a little in your search. I have traced back the history of the Mason family, or that branch of it in which I feel most interest, to Sampson Mason, who came from England about 1650. I see that you are of the same stock. Our great-grandfather was the same.

"I will give you, first, a copy of a record made by Aaron Mason, who died 1812 :

"SAMPSON MASON.—The first individual bearing that name who came to America came over about 1650. He was an officer in

Cromwell's Army, and obliged to flee on the decline of the Protectorate. He married a lady in Boston by the name of Russell. They had twelve children, viz.: Noah, Sampson, James, John, Samuel, Joseph, Isaac, Pelatiah, Benjamin and three daughters, whose names have not been preserved.

"James and John established themselves in Boston. The other children settled in Swansea and Rehoboth. Six of the above sons lived until the youngest was 70 years old, and were all assembled at the funeral of this youngest brother.

"The following additional information I received from John Mason, Esq., Town Clerk of Swansea, relative to Sampson Mason: After his marriage to Miss Russell, he settled in Rehoboth, where he united with a Baptist minister in establishing a Baptist church. He was for this summoned before the authorities, at Plymouth Colony, and fined fifteen shillings, and warned to leave the jurisdiction of the Colony. To enjoy liberty of conscience he left his home in Rehoboth, and took up his abode in Swansea.

"I have not traced the history of the different branches of the family. My duties have been such that I could not command the time. By a statement of the town record of Swansea I find that Job, son of Pelatiah, was pastor of the Second Baptist Church in that town over 37 years."

The writer then proceeds to give the records of Pelatiah, son of Sampson; and the Rev. Russell Mason, son of Pelatiah; and Brooks Mason, son of Rev. Russell Mason; and Eddy Mason, son of Brooks Mason, which will be found within these pages. After a few general remarks he closes by saying, "Should you have time and patience to gather up and arrange the history of the family, I should be glad to receive a copy.

"Your very truly,

ALANSON P. MASON."

#### FAMILY RECORD OF PELATIAH MASON.

Pelatiah Mason, son of Sampson, Sr., was born in the year 1669, and was married to Hephzibah Brooks, May 22, 1694.

Their family was as follows:

Job Mason, b. Feb. 28, 1695.

Elihu Mason, b. Jan. 1, 1696.

Elisha Mason, b. Jan. 11, 1698-9.

Samuel Mason, b. Jan. 30, 1701.

Aaron Mason, b. March 9, 1703.

Annie Mason, b. June 9, 1705.

Elizabeth Mason, b. June 18, 1707.

Hephzibah Mason, b. Dec. 10, 1709.

Pelatiah Mason, b. Dec. 16, 1711.

Russell Mason, b. April 21, 1714.

John Mason, b. Oct. 3, 1716.

Pelatiah Mason, the father of these, died March 29, 1763, aged 94. He was the last survivor of six brothers, the youngest of whom died at the age of 70.

The family record of Rev. Russell Mason (great-grandfather of the compiler) was son of Pelatiah and Hephzibah, and was pastor of the Baptist Church in Swansea, Massachusetts, for 40 years :

Russell Mason,<sup>3</sup> b. April 21, 1714.

Russell Mason and Rhoda Kingsley were married June 5, 1736.

1. Brooks Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Oct. 2, 1737.
2. Barbara Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Aug. 11, 1739.
3. Andrew Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. May 20, 1741.
4. Malachi Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Feb. 24, 1743.
5. Philip Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Jan. 29, 1744.
6. Russell Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Nov. 4, 1746.
7. Rhoda Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Aug. 29, 1748.
8. Joseph Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Nov. 15, 1749.
9. Phebe Mason,<sup>4</sup> b., New Style, Jan. 8, 1753.
10. Nathaniel Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. May 29, 1755.
11. Kingsley Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. June 20, 1759.
12. Zerviah Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. March 3, 1761.
13. Hannah Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. March 5, 1763.

#### DEATHS.

Kingsley Mason, d. Oct. 23, 1761.

Malachi Mason, d. Jan. 25, 1762.

Andrew Mason, d. May —, 1766.

Zerviah Mason, d. Sept. 26, 1768.

Rhoda Mason, mother of the foregoing, died Oct. 29, 1779.

Russell Mason, father of the foregoing, died January 8, 1799, aged 85 years.

P. S.—The following letter addressed to Samuel Hoard, the husband of Phebe Mason, his daughter, at Lynchburg, is given as a relic of my great grandfather, Russell Mason.—P. M.

“SWANSEY, Oct. 26, 1791.

“These lines leave me well, and I hope they will find you so. I heard that you was about to move to the Mohog (Mohawk) River, and that you did not expect to come to see us before you moved, and I said I did not expect to see Phebe any more; and, if



you do go, I wish you well, and hope to see you in the next world, where there will be no moving; no, not from Abraham's bosom to this world, nor to where rich gluttons must go. Therefore, my children, I advise you to consider and remember your latter end, and make sure an interest in *Christ*, and wherever you live or die it will be well with you; and if you live in the fear of God, and die in his favor, you will be blessed. So, no more; but only tell you that your friends and relations are well, and we send our love to you. I am very lame, but I can walk with a staff and crutch.

"October 29, 1779, then my wife died, which was the mother of all the above named children. We lived together forty-two years, ten months, and three days 'A little span, 'tis soon cut off, and then away we fly.'

"From aged father,

RUSSELL MASON.

"P. S.—This record of his family, furnished by R. M. with this letter.

JOHN SAYLES."

NOTE.—I received from my cousin, Scott Wilmarth, a similar copy of the foregoing letter, which, he states, was copied from the original letter, now in the hands of the granddaughter of the said Phebe Hoard. Her name is Phebe Downey, now living near Sharon, Walworth County, Wisconsin. The two copies agree *verbatim*. I also received the following memorandum from my Aunt, Rhoda, in the fall of 1854, at her residence. She was a woman of strong mind, and well versed in her grandfather's family history. She stated that the Rev. Russell Mason, her grandfather, had been married twice. By the second wife he had one daughter, named Content; and that he died in Swansey, where he had spent his long life. He was pastor of the Second Baptist Church for over 40 years.

The Compiler,

PHILIP MASON.

"SWANSEY, Feb. 10, 1680.

"That God does foreknow things to come is generally acknowledged by heathens, Jews, and Christians, and prophecy is a plain demonstration of it; for he that can foretell things to come must certainly foreknow them. Now, from hence, some will argue: What is certainly foreknown must certainly be, and what is thus certain is necessary; and therefore if all future events are certain, as being certainly foreknown, then all things, even all the sins of men, are owing to necessity and fate; and then God, who is the author of this necessity and fate, must be the cause and author of man's sins too. Now, in answer to this, I readily grant that nothing can be certainly foreknown but what will certainly be;

but then I deny that nothing will certainly be but what has a necessary cause; for we see ten thousand effects of free or contingent causes, which certainly are, though they never might have been; for whatever is, certainly is, and whatever certainly is now, was certainly, though not necessarily, future a thousand years ago. That man understands very little who knows not the difference between the necessity and the certainty of an event. No event is necessary but that which has a necessary cause, as the rising and the setting of the sun; but every event is certain which will certainly be, though it be produced by a cause which acts freely, and might do otherwise if it pleased, as all the free actions of men are; some of which, though done with the greatest freedom, may be as certain, and as certainly known, as the rising of the sun.

“In the nature of the thing, foreknowledge lays no greater necessity upon that which is foreknown, than knowledge does upon that which is known; for foreknowledge is nothing but knowledge, and knowledge is not the cause of the thing which is known, much less the necessary cause of it.

“Now, could we certainly know what all men would do before they do it, yet it is evident that this would neither make nor prove them to be necessary agents; and therefore though the perfection of the Divine knowledge is such as to know our thoughts afar off before we think them, yet this does not make us think such thoughts, nor do such actions. How God can foreknow things to come, even such events as depend upon the most free and contingent causes, we can not tell; but it is not incredible that infinite knowledge should do this, when wise men, whose knowledge is very imperfect, can, with such great probability, almost to the degree of certainty, foresee many events, which depends also upon free and contingent causes; and if we will allow that God’s prescience is owing to the perfection of his knowledge, then, it is certain, that it neither makes nor proves any fatal necessity of events.

“If we say, indeed as some men do, that God foreknows all things because he has absolutely decreed whatever shall come to pass, this, I grant, does infer a fatal necessity; and yet, in this case, it is not God’s foreknowledge, but his decree, which creates the necessity.

“All things upon this supposition are necessary, not because God foreknewed, but because, by his unalterable decrees, he has made them necessary, but he does not make them necessary by foreknowing them. But if this were the truth of the case, God’s prescience considered only as foreknowledge would be no greater perfection of knowledge than men have, who can certainly foreknow

what they certainly intend to do; and it seems God can do no more. But this much we learn, from these men's confession, that foreknowledge, in its own nature, lays no necessity upon human action; that if God can foreknow what he has not absolutely and peremptorily decreed, how certain soever such events may be, his foreknowledge does not make them necessary, and therefore we can not prove the necessity of all events from God's foreknowledge, till we have first proved that God can foreknow nothing but is necessary; that is in truth that there is no such perfection as prescience belonging to the Divine Nature; for to foreknow things in a decree, or only in necessary causes, is no more that perfection of knowledge which we call prescience than it is prescience in us to know what we intend to do to-morrow, or that the sun will rise to-morrow. But that God's foreknowledge is not owing to a necessity of the event, and therefore can not prove any such necessity, is evident from hence, that the Scripture, which attributes this foreknowledge to God, does also assert the liberty of human action; charges men's sins and final ruin on themselves; sets before them life and death, blessing and cursing.

"Now, how difficult soever it may be to reconcile prescience and liberty, it is certain that necessity and liberty never can be reconciled; and therefore if men act freely, they do not necessarily; and if God does foreknow what men will do, and yet men act freely, then it is certain that God foreknows what men will freely do; that is, that foreknowledge is not owing to the necessity, but to the perfection of knowledge."

\* Copied Sept. 5, 1866, by Russell B. Mason, in the 56th year of his age, and great-grandson of Elder Russell Mason, the writer of the original.

NOTE.—After a careful and full examination of dates, and the age of my great-grandfather, I feel confident that the date of the foregoing manuscript should be 1780 instead of 1680; and, since furnishing me the copy, he writes me suggesting that the date was an error.

#### THE FAMILY RECORD OF PHILIP MASON, GRANDFATHER OF THE COMPILER.

Philip Mason,<sup>4</sup> b. Jan. 29, 1744 or 1745.

Mercy Scott, b. March 1745.

Philip Mason and Mercy Scott were married.

#### BIRTHS OF THEIR CHILDREN.

1. Joanna Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. May 18, 1767.

2. Russell Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Feb. 25, 1769.
3. Scott Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Aug. 2, 1770.
4. Rhoda Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. April 10, 1772.
5. James Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. April 3, 1774.
6. Abraham Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Sept. 14, 1775.
7. Isaac Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Feb. 21, 1777.
8. Nancy Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. March 6, 1779.
9. Mercy Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Sept. 10, 1780.
10. Amy Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. June 8, 1782.
11. Sarah Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Aug. 20, 1784.
12. Ruth Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. Sept. 6, 1788.

## DEATHS.

Joanna Mason, d. in childhood.

Abraham Mason, d. in childhood.

Nancy Mason, d. in childhood.

Ruth Mason, d. in childhood.

Doctor Scott Mason, d. Feb. 11, 1793.

Mercy Mason, mother of the above, d. Oct. 30, 1808.

Philip Mason, father of the above, d. July 21, 1813.

This record found in the trunk of Amy Mason Sayles after her death, September 17, 1853.—JOHN SAYLES.

NOTE.—On the 26th of August, 1866, I visited the graves of my grandfather, Philip Mason, and his wife. The dates of their deaths I copied from each of their tombstones, and find them to agree with the foregoing. They lie buried in the old burying ground of Elder Leland's church, in Cheshire, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. I have selected the foregoing record out of several; one of which I copied from an original one, found in an account book of my grandfather's, in 1822.

Grandfather Mason was a militia captain in the time of the Revolutionary War, and was in the battle of Bennington, Vermont. He was twice married, but had no issue by the second wife. He died in South Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, where he had resided from the time that my father was a small boy. At the time of his death he owned a fine farm, which he had cultivated for many years. His son, Scott, had been bred a physician, but died within a year after he commenced the practice of medicine, and lies buried near his father and mother.

His son, James, had a respectable English education, and held several offices in the county of Berkshire, and was a delegate from that county, in the Massachusetts Convention, to amend her Con-

stitution, in 1811. He was several times a member of the Legislature of that State, and died at the age of 75 or 76, on the farm on which his father died, and where he had lived his whole life-time, except when on an adjoining farm which he also owned. At the time of his death, about 1850, he was living with his second wife, who survived him but a few years. He had no children by either wife. He had accumulated an estate worth \$18,000 or \$20,000; and after leaving his wife a comfortable home, he, by his will, distributed the residue among his nephews and nieces, giving an equal share to each. August 25, 1866, I was at his grave, in South Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, near where he had lived and died. He had the reputation, universally, of being an honest man; and on his tombstone were inscribed the words, "An honest man."

#### FAMILY RECORD OF JOHN W. LIPPITT.

John W. Lippitt, b. Sept. 10, 1780.

Sarah Mason, b. Aug. 20, 1784.

John W. and Sarah were married; time not given. They had the following children:

Marcy Lippitt, b. May 8, 1814.

Philip M. Lippitt, b. March 16, 1816.

Phebe M. Lippitt, b. May 25, 1817.

Mary Lippitt, b. May 17, 1819.

Louisa S. Lippitt, b. July 10, 1820.

John W. Lippitt, Jr., b. April 22, 1822.

#### DEATHS.

John W. Lippitt, Sr., d. May 14, 1837, and was buried in the Indian Opening burying-ground, in the town of Madison, Madison County, New York.

Sarah Lippitt, his wife, d. April 20, 1845, and was buried beside the grave of her husband.

(Philip M. Lippitt, I presume, died young.—P. MASON.)

The following are the marriages of the children of the foregoing John W. and Sarah Lippitt:

Marcy Lippitt was married to John Fraser, June 12, 1836. They had the following children:

Phebe Fraser, b. June 9, 1837; d. Nov., 1845.

Sarah Jane Fraser, b. April 22, 1840; d. Aug., 1846.

George Fraser, b. March, 1842; d. Nov., 1845.

Harriet Fraser, b. March 4, 1844.

John L. Fraser, b. March 1, 1848.

The family are now living in Ellisburg, Jefferson County, New York.

Phebe M. Lippitt is still unmarried, and lives at Middletown, Delaware County, New York. (I think she is keeping house for her brother-in-law who married her sister Mary.)

Mary Lippitt married a man named Luzon Tucker. They were married Dec. 25, 1839, and had the following children :

Louisa M. Tucker, b. Nov. 16, 1840.

Mary Tucker, b. Oct. 14, 1842.

Orphigena Fraser, b. June 6, 1844.

Mary Tucker, d. May 28, 1851.

Louisa S. Lippitt married Dr. Hylon Doty, June 24, 1853. They had the following children :

John C. Doty, b. Dec. 3, 1855 ; d. at the age of two years and one month.

Jennie P. Doty, b. April 1, 1860.

Sarah M. Doty, b. March 26, 1861.

Louisa S. Doty, the mother, d. March 30, 1861, in the town of Roxbury, Delaware County, New York.

John W. Lippitt, Jr., was born April 22, 1822, and married. They have no children, and are living at Solsville, Madison County, New York. He is at this writing (June 30, 1867), over 45 years of age; is a prominent man in the county in which he lives, and has been a member of the New York Legislature. I am personally acquainted with him. He is a pleasant man, and has the character, where he lives, of being an honest man. His talents, which are above mediocrity, have been fairly cultivated.—The compiler, P. MASON.

#### RECORD OF MY FATHER, RUSSELL MASON, JR.'S FAMILY.

Russell Mason,<sup>5</sup> b. in Providence, State of Rhode Island, Saturday, 25th day of Feb., 1769.

Ruth Lapham, b. in Smithfield, State of Rhode Island, Wednesday, April 4, 1769.

Russell Mason, m. to Ruth Lapham, on Sunday, the 30th of Dec., 1792.

1. Philip Mason,<sup>6</sup> their son (the writer of this memoir,) was born in Adams, Berkshire County, State of Massachusetts, Tuesday, Dec. 10, 1793.

2. Almond Mason,<sup>6</sup> their son, b. in Fairfield, Herkimer County State of New York, Monday, May 11, 1795.

3. Horatio Mason,<sup>6</sup> their son, b. in Fairfield, Herkimer County, State of New York, Thursday, June 29, 1797.

4. Mary Mason,<sup>6</sup> their daughter, b. in the same town, county, and State, as above, on Thursday, April 18, 1799; and d. on Sunday, April 10, 1803, of canker rash.

5. Stephen Mason,<sup>6</sup> their son, b. in Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, Tuesday, Sept. 8, 1801.

6. Mercy Mason,<sup>6</sup> daughter, b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Thursday, Feb. 23, 1804.

7. Hiram Mason,<sup>6</sup> their son, b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Tuesday, Sept. 17, 1805.

8. Isaac Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Tuesday, March 15, 1808; d., aged one month.

9. Nancy Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Friday, Sept. 1, 1809.

#### DEATHS.

Russell Mason, Jr., departed this life in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, on Friday, May 17, 1811, aged forty-two years, two months, and twenty-two days. He fell a victim to typhus fever, and died after a short and painful illness. Funeral service by Elder John Farley; text, Job xiv: 5.

Ruth Mason, departed this life March 18, 1829, aged fifty-nine years, eleven months, and thirteen days. She died in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, after long and protracted suffering from a disease of the throat. She was a good wife, a kind and indulgent mother, but like many mothers, sympathy too often predominated over judgment. She died at her old home with her son Hiram, at six P. M., in full possession of her intellectual powers, and in the hope of a glorious immortality. She had been raised and trained in the Quaker faith, but for a number of years before her death had belonged to the Free Will Baptist denomination. At her funeral an affectionate discourse was delivered by Elder George Sawin, from 1st Thessalonians, iv: 13, 14.

My father was bred a farmer, and followed it during his whole life. He owned a farm of one hundred acres at the time of his death. He had emigrated from Adams, Massachusetts, to Fairfield, New York, in the winter of 1793-4, when I was but a few weeks old, and had settled in the woods on a piece of land owned by himself; he however sold it, and having bought the farm on which he died, had moved to it in the fall of 1802. He was not a member of any church, but inclined toward the Orthodox Baptist, and attended that church. He was a plain man, of exceedingly regular and steady habits; struggled hard and cleared a new farm and procured the means which supported a growing and helpless family of children. He was a cautious, prudent man, but possessed

no capacity for trade and speculation. In his day men and things were very different among the masses to what they are now. The many were contented with a straightforward way of making a living by honest toil. He died just at the period of his life when the judgment was fixed, body firm, and his family partially grown, his farm improved, and in a good condition to have enabled him to save and lay by something.

The farm was retained in the family during my mother's lifetime, a large portion being owned and held by my brother Hiram, but after my mother's death it was sold by him, and thus passed into the hands of strangers. In 1854 I visited it, and in rambling over it recalled the scenes of my childhood and boyish reminiscences, in which there was a mixture of holiday sports and rugged toil, now sadly pleasant to look back and dwell upon. My father was fond of his children and kind, anxious to train them in all that would be useful in after life; and to facilitate their education, he gave a corner for a school-house on his land, and also contributed toward building it; but, as in all new countries of mixed inhabitants, and this was remarkably the case here, for there was not only an old German settlement in the neighborhood, but there were Connecticut men, Rhode Islanders, and Massachusetts men, all had their piques and jealousies, so much so that much of the time a school could not be sustained, hence his children, as well as others, were but indifferently educated. On visiting the spot of the old school-house, the whole train of associations attendant upon school-boy days passed through my mind most vividly, awakening anew the recollection of the gambols and feuds of days long gone by.

At first thought one is surprised at the clearness with which early associations are brought up. I asked myself, where were the companions of my youth? the boys and girls who were with me once at this old school play-ground? Many have gone to their long homes; others, to distant lands. Some few of the very youngest, then in their A B C's, whom I had forgotten, were living on some of the old manors. I felt as though I were almost a stranger in a strange land. The hills and dales were there, many of which, 'tis true, looked natural, but the once familiar faces were gone, and gone forever!

I visited this spot again in the summer of 1859, and again, in 1866, took a last lingering look. But four families were living there that I had ever seen, and those I could scarcely recognize. I often, while there, thought of the old man released from the



French Bastile; "I was a stranger," not exactly "in a strange land," but to a strange people.

#### THE FAMILY RECORD OF PHILIP MASON.

Philip Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. Tuesday, Dec. 10, 1793, in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts.

Sarah Jencks, b. June 12, 1795, in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts.

Philip Mason was married to Sarah Jencks on the 9th of March, 1815, in the town of Scipio, Cayuga County, New York, at her father's. They had seven children, viz.:

1. Alonzo Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. June 19, 1816.
2. Stephen Jencks Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Aug. 22, 1819.
3. Hiram Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Sept. 14, 1822,
4. Darwin Erasmus Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. March 9, 1825,
5. Thomas Jefferson Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. July 9, 1826,
6. Jonathan Rush Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Sept. 9, 1828, in Connersville, Fayette County, State of Indiana.
7. Harrietta Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. January 14, 1830, on her father's farm, known as the Helm farm.

Alonzo was born near Somerset, in Franklin County, Indiana, and died on Garrison Creek, August, 1817.

The other four children, Stephen J., Hiram, Darwin E., and Thomas J., were born on a farm of their father's, on Garrison Creek, Fayette County, Indiana.

Hiram died in Connersville, Indiana, March, 1823, of measles.

Sarah Mason, my wife, died, after a protracted illness of nearly six months, of a dropsical affection, on the 26th of September, 1842, in the forty-eighth year of her age.

In youth, she was gay and cheerful, but easily depressed. She was extremely modest and retiring in her manners, kind and affectionate. To her children she was a slave, and indulgent to a fault. As a neighbor, she was kind, liberal, and unsuspecting. The last two years of her life she was religiously inclined, and became a member of the Methodist Church. She was, by nature, open-hearted and generous; and, if a friend, a sincere one, incapable of guile or dissimulation. At her death, I was left with five children, and in embarrassed circumstances, as to financial affairs, growing out of the great crisis of the times. For some time I tried to keep house with my children, but it was a lonely, dreary life. After much trouble I succeeded in getting an excellent home for my only daughter, seventh child, Harrietta,<sup>7</sup> in Mr. John Whippo's family, at Dublin, Indiana. I took her there and placed her at school,

where she remained for about eighteen months. She became dissatisfied, and I took her home, where she remained until she was married.

She was married to William Kilander, November 11, 1847. He was born October 14, 1821.

After they were married he continued his trade, but moved about from place to place, seeking more advantageous business locations. Being unsuccessful, however, they have returned, and are now (1867) living in Connersville.

The names of their children are :

1. Mary C. Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. December 9, 1848.
2. Rollin M. Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. October, 14, 1850.
3. Fannie Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. May 11, 1853.
4. Thomas Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. August 15, 1855.
5. Ida Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. Dec. 12, 1857.
6. Alice Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. June 12, 1860.
7. Minnie M. Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. June 9, 1862.
8. Jane Kilander,<sup>s</sup> b. June 9, 1867.

#### DEATHS.

Mary C. Kilander, d. July 1, 1849.

Ida Kilander, d. March 4, 1863.

My youngest son,<sup>6</sup> Rush,<sup>s</sup> I placed with Colonel Daniel Hankins, a merchant of Connersville, where he remained for some time. He then came home, and remained with me until the next spring, and went to school during that time. I procured him a situation with a Mr. Luke Kent, in the city of Cincinnati, Ohio, to learn the watchmaking and jewelry business, as he seemed to prefer it to a profession. On the breaking out of the Mexican War, in 1846, he volunteered, and was corporal in Captain William Lytle's company (late General William Lytle, of the last war.—C. H. M.) By a writ of habeas corpus I took him out, with the assistance of his brother Darwin, who brought him home. I then placed him with Mr. Henry Goodlander, of Connersville, to finish and perfect his trade. He remained with him but a short time, and without any cause known to me he left, and went again to Cincinnati, and acted on his own responsibility, entering into the employ of a Mr. Edward P. Hill, jeweler, etc.

On arriving at majority, he was married, on Sunday, Sept. 16, 1849, in Cincinnati, Ohio, to Mrs. Charlotte H. Price, who was born January 25, 1825, and whose maiden name was Robinson. She was formerly from Vicksburg, Mississippi, where she was

raised, and had married, previous to her union with my son. After his marriage, Rush was engaged in business with Mr. Theodore Oskamp, in whose wholesale and retail watch and jewelry establishment (on Main street, between Columbia and Pearl streets) he was foreman of the watch-making department, until he left the city, in May, 1858, when he and his wife removed to Danville, Boyle County, Kentucky, where he subsequently went into business for himself, and resided, until his death, which event took place at one P. M. on Wednesday, Jan. 13, 1864, of typhoid pneumonia, after an illness of only five days. He was aged thirty-five years, four months, and four days, and was buried at the Danville Cemetery, on Sunday, at four P. M., Jan. 17, leaving a widow, but no children. (The funeral services were performed in the Episcopal Church—of which he was a member—at Danville, and although the day was cold and inclement, the church was crowded. His favorite hymn, “I would not live away, I ask not to stay,” was sung, with the accompaniment of the organ, and some of the voices seemed heavenly. Although almost overwhelmed by my great grief, one or two of those sweet voices impressed me by their almost angelic tones. I shall never forget them. I was alone! and yet, he who had loved that precious hymn was there, *but* might never hear it, or sing it with me again on earth. Beautiful in life! gentle, kind, affectionate, and ever polite, generous and kind to all. Beautiful in death! nothing but the dread thought, which would ever intrude, that thou wert not merely calmly, sweetly sleeping, those four days I kept you near me, after you “fell asleep,” my beloved husband, could have made me believe that you would not *soon awake*—that I might once more have those large, beautiful, expressive, dark eyes turned toward me with their look of love. But, no, it was not to be. Nothing unpleasant, in any way connected with him, before nor after death, in the remembrance of the last sad, trying scenes, but the *one agonizing thought* that the “dread messenger of death” had really come, and that he whom I loved was then sleeping “a *long, long sleep*,” as he remarked to the Doctor and myself, the night before he died that it would be when he *did* “get to sleep.” My dearest one, you slept, but you fell asleep very sweetly—no pang, no struggle, to mar the beauty of thy classic features. His virtues were many, and his faults very few and entirely lost sight of and forgotten, if he had them; and I am satisfied that, as a friend of his knew, and expressed it in his obituary, “He died without an enemy.”—C. H. M.)

5 Thomas<sup>7</sup> I placed with Mr. William Brown, who had mar-

ried Nancy Martin, an orphan that my wife Sarah and myself had raised from a child; she had continued to live with us until her marriage. Thomas afterward learned the printing business. Subsequently, he came home, and for a year was in the drug-store with me. He then engaged in the confectionery and baking business with one Robert Patterson, who led him into errors. Thomas followed various pursuits, and finally came home and stayed with me in the store for more than a year; he then married. For awhile he clerked, and became a steady, straight-forward man. I advanced him money, and he started a bakery and restaurant in Connersville, and bade fair to do an excellent business, but took sick, and after an illness of two months he died on the 24th of April, 1854, of consumption, aged twenty-seven years, nine months, and fifteen days. He left a wife and one child, named (1) Edward S. Mason,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 11, 1854. He is now a fine, promising boy. Thomas' wife's maiden name was Mary Sherman, who was born May 29, 1825. Her father came from the New England States. She was raised in Oxford, Ohio, but when married to my son, she was living with her father in this place. She proved herself to be a prudent and an industrious woman, supporting herself and child by her own industry. She died May 15, 1865, of a dropsical disease, induced from typhoid fever, in connection with another serious difficulty, peculiar to females, which she had labored under for some time previously.

4. Darwin<sup>7</sup> I placed with a Mr. John Miller to learn the brick-mason's business. Afterward he came home, and was with me as a clerk in the drug store, in which business I was engaged at the time. He, however, preferred his trade, but afterward became dissatisfied, and left for Wabash Town, Wabash County, Indiana, and has continued to reside in said county ever since. He married his cousin, Abiah Jencks (born February 1, 1828, a daughter of Wm. Jencks) August 20, 1851.

They have had three children, two of whom are dead, viz.: William Silanus, born May 17, 1852; died May 28, 1852. Their daughter, Amanda Helen, was born March 16, 1855. Stephen Silanus, born May 11, 1853, died December 28, 1855.

Darwin served two years in the Federal Army, in a cavalry regiment. The war closed, and the regiment was disbanded, and he was honorably discharged. He returned home, and it is to be hoped that he will now assume steady habits. He is a man of mind, and understands men and things.

2. Stephen,<sup>7</sup> my oldest living child, was married in the spring of

1841, to Jane Maple. She was born on a farm, where Laurel is now situated. Her parents were Kentuckians. She was a sprightly and intelligent woman, though not of a vigorous constitution. Stephen was raised to the farming business, which he has followed up to the present time. Immediately after his marriage, he went on a farm I then owned, called the Helm farm, but did not succeed well. I then let him have a farm of seventy acres, with a house and improved lands. He had a team and stock sufficient to manage the farm to advantage. He continued on this farm until his wife died, in the fall of 1843. She died immediately after giving birth to her second child. Her system seemed to be overwhelmed by the shock of parturition. The child was still-born.

Their first child, a son named Philip, was born Dec. 25, 1841.

1. Philip,<sup>s</sup> d. Dec. 3, 1861.

From his birth, up to twenty years of age, he was a sufferer, from stone in the bladder, and was operated upon, and a large stone extracted; but he died the third day after the operation was performed. He was a most amiable young man, and had he been free from the difficulty he labored under, would have made his mark; but all was swallowed up in the fell disease.

On the 28th of June, 1844, Stephen married Eliza Muchmore, for his second wife. She was born August 2, 1819. By this last marriage they have had seven children, three boys and four girls, named as follows:

2. William Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Sept. 16, 1845.
3. Mary Jane Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. March 1, 1848.
4. Sarah Ann Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Aug. 6, 1853.
5. Harriet Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Sept. 26, 1858.
6. Edward Thomas Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. April 7, 1860.
7. Warren Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Sept. 22, 1862.
8. Julietta Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Aug. 16, 1865.

#### DEATHS.

William Mason, d. Sept. 10, 1866.

Julietta Mason, d. Sept. 17, 1866.

I have succeeded in getting them on eighty acres of land, near Wabash Town, Wabash County, Indiana, where they are doing much better than before, and are now in a way to make themselves a comfortable living.

I have been rather lengthy in this family history, but as I designed it for the benefit of my children and their posterity, I have been thus full.

On the 19th day of May, 1843, I was married to Mrs. Mary Ann Gayle (my second wife) the widow of Dr. T. E. Gayle, a Kentuck-

ian by birth, and a man of talent and learning. At the time I married this woman she had two daughters, Cephania and Temple E. Gayle.

Cephania lived with us until she was married to Alfred Barnes, a merchant of Connersville. Temple E. continued to live with us until her mother's death, which took place on the 3d day of February, 1854, aged forty-nine years and three days. By this marriage we had no issue. We had lived together nearly eleven years.

From the death of my first wife to the marriage of my second, I had materially changed my financial affairs. I sold my Helm farm, made investments in land to the amount of two and a half quarter sections, mostly in Wabash County. About six months after this last marriage I purchased the old drug store in Connersville, and for nearly ten years devoted all my energies to the business, assisted, a considerable portion of the time, by my wife. I was successful, and for my energy and application to business was rewarded by a clear gain of about eight thousand dollars. It was a recovery from an impaired fortune, occasioned by overtrading, and negligence in my legitimate business or profession, while being engaged in politics, and by the general depression of every kind of business in 1838, and which lasted until 1843. I was much benefited by my wife's assistance, in retrieving my fortune. My past experience had taught me an important lesson, which was, to attend to *my own* affairs.

My second wife's maiden name was Shipley. She was born in Wilmington, Delaware. Her father died when she was young. She was respectably connected, being related to some of the best families in Delaware. Her family continued to reside at Wilmington until she was nearly grown. They then emigrated to Franklin County, Indiana. She had an uncle on her mother's side, John Test, who resided in Brookville, Franklin County, which induced them to settle there. Said uncle had been a Judge, and at the time the family emigrated he was a member of Congress. She was married to Dr. Gayle when young, and they settled in Connersville, where he died. Mary Ann, my second wife, was a woman of fine intellectual powers, had a well-balanced mind, self-relying and decided; was not turned from her purposes by trifles; kind and affectionate, generous in her feelings, and a decided friend. Toward her enemies she was decided, but not bitter. Had fortune placed her in a more favored position, where her mind could have been more fully developed by education, and had circumstances led her into the higher walks of life, she possessed the physical developments and intellectual capacity, to have sustained her in an emi-

ment degree. But, from her childhood to her grave, she was the football of fortune. As our means became improved and the prospect of being able to relax a little from toil, she became afflicted with disease, which preyed upon her, body and mind. The last three months of her existence were rendered wretched by her affliction. Much of the time her bodily suffering was intense, though as this increased her mind acquired strength and sustained its powers, in a remarkable degree, to the last.

Toward the close of her life, when all hope of recovery had vanished, she often expressed the hope of a glorious immortality; and at the time, while surrounded by a large number of her connections and friends, who were in the expectation of soon seeing her depart in death, her farewell to each of them in turn could not be excelled for beauty, purity of thought, and in being admirably expressed. She had seen much of the modern spiritual manifestations, and though not fully convinced of its reality, yet she was influenced in sentiment by it.

Her daughter, Temple E., remained with me for some fourteen months, and then married a Thomas N. McQueen, an educated Irishman, from Dublin, Ireland, and bred a merchant. They went, immediately after they were married, to Galesburg, Illinois, where they now reside. They have one child, a son.

Cephania's first husband, died after a few hours' illness, induced from overexertion in loading a boat, in November, 1851. She was married a second time to Marvin Tryon, in the fall of 1855. They resided awhile in Galesburg, Illinois; lived a short time near New Albany; then, in New Albany, and finally returned to Connersville, where they are at this present time (January, 1867), and appear to be doing well. They have had no children.

My wife Mary Ann had two brothers and one sister: Samuel J. and Charles E. Shipley and Mrs. Eliza Merrifield; all residing in Fayette County, and all my friends—the two brothers were especially so. It would be difficult to make a distinction between them. They were to me like brothers. With Charles, the elder of the two, I had longer and more immediate connections, and was, perhaps, influenced in the preference on account of our age and long association. He had been bred a merchant, had retired to a farm, and was in independent circumstances. Charles had been married. His wife died, by whom he had had two children; one died; the other, a daughter, named Mary, was raised by her aunt, my wife. Charles E. Shipley, her father, died in October, 1856, and soon after his death she married J. M. Wilson, Esq., an attorney—

at law. They have two children, a son and daughter. Wilson is now a Circuit Judge, and resides in Connersville.

Samuel J. Shipley, the younger brother, was at one time a Lieutenant in the United States Navy. He resigned his commission, but on the breaking out of the war volunteered and served as a Lieutenant for over a year. He lost his health, and came very near dying, therefore resigned, and with much trouble returned home, but finally got well. He has been married once; has one child, a daughter, Jennie, who is now about twenty-one years old. His wife died when Jennie was very young. She is still with her father, who yet remains a widower, and they are living on their farm within a few miles of Connersville.

On the 28th and last day of February, 1855, I was married to Miss Deborah Hankins (my third wife) at her sister's, near Williamsburg, Clermont County, Ohio. She was born near Bordentown, State of New Jersey, June 5, 1803. Her parents emigrated from New Jersey to near Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, where they resided for three years, and then emigrated to Williamsburg, Clermont County, Ohio, where her parents died. She continued to live at Williamsburg until February, 1839, then came to Connersville to live with her brother, Colonel Daniel Hankins. His second wife dying the next July following, she remained and kept house for him until his third marriage, in the fall of 1845, November 18th. Her brother having business to transact in Cincinnati during the winter, they resided there. On their return to Connersville in May, she left his house and went to near Williamsburg to reside with her much loved sister, Mrs. Lydia Smith, with whom she remained until June, 1847, she then returned to Connersville, Indiana, at the urgent solicitation of her nephew, Thomas D. Hankins, a son of her brother Daniel. She and her nephew kept house, he being a bachelor, and continued to do so until her nephew's death, which occurred on the 16th of May, 1852. She remained at his house until the 27th of September, 1852, she then returned to her sister's, Mrs. Smith, and made that her home until our marriage, though she spent considerable time previously with her niece, Mrs. Maria Kimball (a daughter of her brother Daniel), who resided in Cincinnati. Her niece had been in bad health for some time, and after being confined by the birth of a child, ultimately died. Thus she spent the flower of her life in caring for, nursing, and ministering to her relations; remaining in single life until her marriage with me. At this time (January, 1867), she is enjoying fair health for one of her years, and has proved a true and faithful wife. For five years after our marriage her health



was poor. We have spent considerable time since our marriage in traveling. Having means independent of mine, ours jointly enable us to live comfortably, and to visit our friends and relations at a distance. We have had no children.

Sampson Mason, an officer in Cromwell's Army in England—and the evidence is strongly in favor of his having belonged to the famous Ironsides Regiment that fought many a hard battle—was, it seems, a Free Will Baptist, and came over to America about the year 1650. He settled first in Rehoboth, and assisted in building up the Second Baptist Church in Swansea, an adjoining town, for which, as one account has it, he was summoned before the authorities at Plymouth Colony and fined fifteen shillings, and warned to leave the jurisdiction of the Colony. He consequently left Rehoboth and settled in Swansea.

Sampson Mason was the father, and his wife, whose maiden name was Russell, was the mother of Pelatiah Mason, one of twelve children which they had.

Pelatiah Mason was born in 1669, and was married to Hephzibah Brooks, May 22, 1694. They were the father and mother of eleven children; among whom was,

Russell Mason, the tenth child. He was born April 21, 1714, and was married to Rhoda Kingsley June 5, 1736. They were the father and mother of twelve children; among whom was,

Philip Mason, born January 29, 1744-5. Philip was married to Mercy Scott. They had twelve children, and were the father and mother of,

Russell Mason, Jr., who was born February 25, 1769, and married Ruth Lapham on Sunday, the 30th of December, 1792. They had nine children; among whom was,

Philip Mason, Jr., who was born December 10, 1793, and was married to Sarah Jencks on the 9th of March, 1815. They had seven children, viz.: Alonzo, Stephen, Hiram, Darwin, Thomas, Rush, and Harrietta. Stephen, Darwin, and Harrietta are the only ones now living, January 25, 1867.

John Lapham, a weaver, emigrated from Devonshire, England, and came to America between 1635 and 1672. He settled in Providence, Rhode Island, and was married to Mary Mann, April 6, 1672. By this marriage they had four sons and one daughter, viz.: John, Jr., Thomas, William, Nicholas, and Mary.

John Lapham, Jr., married Mary Russell, daughter of Joseph Russell, of Dartmouth. They were the father and mother of,

Benjamin Lapham, born July 24, 1715; and was married to

Mary Mann, who was born July 6, 1726. They were the father and mother of,

Ruth Lapham, born April 4, 1769. She was married to Russell Mason, born February 25, 1769. They were the father and mother of,

Philip Mason, born December 10, 1793, and married Sarah Jencks, the 9th of March, 1815. She was born June 12, 1795. They had seven children—five lived to be grown; their names were Stephen, Darwin, Thomas, Rush, and Harrietta. The two that died, were the first one named Alonzo, and the third named Hiram; these two died before they were two years old. Thomas and Rush died.—See record of the family.

FAMILY RECOD OF MY OLDEST BROTHER, ALMOND MASON, AS GIVEN  
BY HIM.

Almond Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. Monday, May 11, 1795.

Lydia Thomas, b. Monday, Nov. 16, 1796.

Almond and Lydia were married, but the date of that event was not given me. By this marriage they had nine children, viz.:

1. Russell Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Sunday, June 2, 1816.
2. Nancy Jane Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Saturday, Jan. 28, 1823.
3. Scott Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Saturday, June 2, 1826.
4. Amos Thomas Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Thursday, May 27, 1828.
5. Stephen P. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Wednesday, Aug. 15, 1837.
6. Mary Ann Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Dec. 19, 1821.

The names of the deceased children are in order, as to age, as they stand here.

Lydia Ruth lived to be 17 years old, and died.

Merey m. in 1848, and d. in 1849. Left no issue.

Alanson died young.

Russell Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. as given above.

Sarah A. Brockway, b. —.

Russell and Sarah were married.

By this marriage they had two children, viz.:

1. Almond Mason, Jr.,<sup>8</sup> b. —.
2. Rudolph Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. —.

This family now live, May 6, 1866, in Alamo Township, Kalamazoo County, Michigan.

Nancy Jane<sup>7</sup> Mason was born as above recorded, and was married to Amasa Blodgett, on Wednesday, June 28, 1842. They have the following named children:

Mason Blodgett,<sup>8</sup> b. Monday, March 24, 1845.

Celia Blodgett,<sup>8</sup> b. Tuesday, Feb. 22, 1848.

Monroe Blodgett,<sup>8</sup> b. Monday, Jan. 3, 1853.

Scott Mason,<sup>7</sup> born as above mentioned in the record, was married to Harriet Barnum, Monday, Jan. 1, 1849. They have but one child—Lucias A. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Feb. 12, 1853.

Amos T. Mason,<sup>7</sup> born as stated in the record, was married to Mary Ann Brockway, in Michigan, on Friday, July 18, 1851. They had the following children:

1. Horatio K. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Monday, July 12, 1854.

2. Ida. A. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Monday, Sept. 17, 1858.

Stephen P. Mason,<sup>7</sup> born as the record gives it, and was married to Henrietta Sternbergen, Wednesday, Feb. 22, 1859. She was born Aug. 29, 1842. They have one child (name not given) born March 8, 1861.

Mary Ann Mason<sup>7</sup> was born Dec. 19, 1821, in Deerfield, New York.

Parker Dexter was born Jan. 6, 1819.

Parker and Mary Ann were married May 3, 1840. By this marriage they had the following children:

1. Rodman A. Dexter,<sup>8</sup> b. March 15, 1841, in Fulton, Oswego County, New York.

2. Adelbert Dexter,<sup>8</sup> b. Aug. 22, 1846, in Fulton, Oswego County, New York.

3. Elizabeth Dexter,<sup>8</sup> b. March 23, 1851, in Fulton, Oswego County, New York.

4. Horatio R. P. Dexter,<sup>8</sup> b. May 21, 1853, at Schroepfel, Oswego County, New York.

5. Lydia Ann Dexter,<sup>8</sup> b. July 21, 1855, at Syracuse, New York.

This family are now living at Clinton, on the Upper Mississippi, where the railroad from Chicago, west, to the Pacific, crosses the same. The two oldest sons served three years each in the Federal Army. After their term of service expired they were honorably discharged. They returned home, and are now engaged in laborious pursuits.

#### RECORD OF MY BROTHER, HORATIO MASON'S, FAMILY.

Horatio Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. June 29, 1797, in Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York.

Amelia Perrin, b. July 4, 1798, in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts.

Horatia Mason and Amelia Perrin were married July 24, 1819,

in Connersville Township, Fayette County, Indiana. The children by this marriage were :

1. Mahala Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. March 19, 1821.
2. Warren Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. April 11, 1823.
3. Alonzo Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Nov. 13, 1824.
4. Amelia Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Dec. 16, 1826.

Amelia Mason, wife of Horatio Mason, departed this life June 21, 1827, aged twenty-eight years, eleven months, and seventeen days.

Mahala Mason, born March 19, 1821, was married to Henry Klum, February 27, 1840. His parents were from Vermont Mahala had one child, and died. Soon after her death the child died.

Warren Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. April 11, 1823.

Mary Hanley, b. Nov. 8, 1824.

Warren and Mary were married March 2, 1845. They have had seven children, viz. :

1. First child,<sup>8</sup> born and died an infant.
2. Cero. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. July 13, 1848.
3. James H. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. May 31, 1851.
4. Alice Jane Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Aug. 17, 1855.
5. Oliver H. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Oct. 21, 1857.
6. Infant son,<sup>8</sup> b. Feb. 11, 1863; died the next day.
7. Owren. W. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Sept. 20, 1865.

#### DEATHS.

Cero. Mason, d. Sept. 13, 1853.

James H. Mason, d. Sept. 2, 1853.

Alice Jane Mason, d. April 12, 1859.

Alonzo Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Nov. 13, 1824.

Elizabeth Green, b. Oct. 17, 1826.

Alonzo and Elizabeth were married Sept. 11, 1845. They have five children, viz. :

1. Charlotte Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Aug 15, 1846
2. Albert Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Dec. 30, 1848.
3. Ernest Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. March 2, 1851.
4. Lawrence Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Aug. 22, 1853.
5. Marietta Mason,<sup>8</sup> June 4, 1863.

Both Warren and Alonzo are living on farms of their own, adjoining each other, in Wabash County, Indiana.

Amelia Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Dec. 16, 1826.

William M. Hedrick, b. May 9, 1823, in the city of Baltimore, Maryland.

William and Amelia were married May 25, 1845, in Fayette County, Indiana. They have had eight children, viz.:

1. Mary Amelia Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. Aug. 10, 1846.
2. Thomas Mason Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. Jan. 30, 1848.
3. Horatio Perrin Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. Dec. 21, 1849.
4. Blanche Luella Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. Oct. 16, 1851. Dead.
5. William Eugene Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. July 15, 1854.
6. Laura Olivia Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. July 28, 1856.
7. Warren Alonzo Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. Sept. 16, 1859.
8. Ruth May Hedrick,<sup>s</sup> b. Aug. 21, 1860.

The above-named children were all born in Laurel Township, Franklin County, Indiana, where they are residing with their parents, on their farm.

Horatio married Selina Gates for his second wife, on the 20th of September, 1827, in Connersville Township, Fayette County, Indiana. She was born August 17, 1806, in Litchfield, Herkimer County, New York. By whom he had nine children, viz.:

1. Mary Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Sept. 30, 1828.
2. Fidelia Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. June 24, 1830.
3. and 4. Ozias<sup>7</sup> and Ozro Mason<sup>7</sup> (twins), b. Feb. 18, 1832.
5. Lucretia Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. April 14, 1834.
6. Caroline Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. June 29, 1836.
7. Cæsar Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Dec. 27, 1838.
8. Austin Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. May 21, 1842.
9. Annie Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. July 20, 1848.

All the children of Horatio Mason were born in Columbia Township, Fayette County, Indiana.

Mary Mason,<sup>7</sup> his first child by his second wife, was born Sept. 30, 1828.

Mary was married to Spafford Mount, Nov. 17, 1846. His parents were from New Jersey.

Mary died, leaving three children, viz.:

1. Theodore Mount,<sup>s</sup> b. Nov. 17, 1847.
2. Frances Mount,<sup>s</sup> b. Feb. 3, 1850.
3. Selina Mount,<sup>s</sup> b. Dec. 2, 1853.

The children are living with their father, in Jackson, Illinois.

Fidelia Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. June 24, 1830.

John Winchel, b. Feb. 5, 1827.

John and Fidelia were married Aug. 16, 1849. Mr. Winchel's grandfather emigrated from New York in 1814. They have two children, viz.:

1. Austin Winchel,<sup>s</sup> b. May 28, 1850.
2. Rhoda Winchel,<sup>s</sup> b. April 1, 1863.

Winchel and his family are living on Sains' Creek, in Fayette County, Indiana—January, 1867.

#### THE TWIN BROTHERS' FAMILIES.

Ozias Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Feb. 18, 1832.

Mary Snyder, b. April 22, 1833.

Ozias and Mary were married Oct. 19, 1853. Their children are as follows:

1. Frank Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Dec. 5, 1854.
2. Eva J. Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Jan. 9, 1856.
3. Annie B. Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. May 17, 1858.
4. George Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Dec. 30, 1860; died Aug. 3, 1861.
5. Gertrude Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. July 17, 1862.

Ozro Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Feb. 18, 1832.

Ruth Carpenter, b. Aug. 3, 1833.

Ozro and Ruth were married Sept. 23, 1852. Their children were as follows:

1. Ernest C. Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. Sept. 25, 1854.
2. Emma Mason,<sup>s</sup> b. April 10, 1858.

Ruth Mason died May 9, 1861.

Ozro married Eva A. Snider, for his second wife, Nov. 5, 1861.

She was born July 25, 1831, and is the sister of his twin brother's wife. She has had no children.

The twins and their families are living together on the old homestead farm, on Garrison Creek, Fayette County, Indiana.

Lucretia Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. April 14, 1834.

Benjamin Flinn, b. October 1, 1830.

Benjamin and Lucretia were married July 29, 1852. His parents were from Ohio. Their children are as follows:

1. Ambrose Flinn,<sup>s</sup> b. July 9, 1853.
2. Carrie Flinn,<sup>s</sup> b. Aug. 5, 1855.
3. Frank Flinn,<sup>s</sup> b. April 22, 1858.
4. Charles Flinn,<sup>s</sup> b. Oct. 3, 1860.
5. Austin Flinn,<sup>s</sup> b. Jan. 21, 1863.
6. Augustus Flinn,<sup>s</sup> b. June 19, 1865.

Lucretia and her husband and children are living in Chester Township, Wabash County, Indiana, January, 1867.

Caroline Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. June 29, 1836.

Robert Lewis Webb, b. March 31, 1835, in Fayette County, Indiana.

Robert L. and Caroline were married October 15, 1860, in Fayette County, Indiana, and their children are as follows:

1. Mary Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Dec. 28, 1861.

2. Katie Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Dec. 6, 1863.

Caroline and her husband and children are living on their farm adjoining Brownsville, in Union County, Indiana, January, 1867.

Caesar Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Dec. 28, 1838.

Ella A. Augur, b. July 20, 1838.

Caesar and Ella A. were married June 23, 1858; their children are,

1. Mollie Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. June 19, 1860; d. June 27, 1860.

2. Luanna Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. June 16, 1862.

3. Belle Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Dec. 11, 1865.

Caesar and family are living at Laurel, Franklin County, Indiana.

Austin Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. May 21, 1842.

Eliza Burns, b. Sept. 17, 1848, in Warren County, Indiana.

Austin and Eliza were married May 24, 1864, and are living on the same farm with Robert L. Webb. They own the farm jointly.

Their son, Edward Mason, b. August, 1867.

Annie Mason, born July 20, 1848. She is single. She and her mother are living with her aged Grandmother Gates, in Dublin, Wayne County, Indiana. (Since the foregoing was written, Annie was married to Mr. Frederick Carmony, in 1867.)

Horatio Mason was my second brother, and emigrated with me to this State in his nineteenth year. He returned to New York soon after he was twenty-one years of age, spent the winter there, and returned early in the spring of 1819. In the fall of the same year he married his first wife, and settled on a farm adjoining one which I then owned, on Garrison Creek. He continued to enlarge his farm, by purchases from time to time, as his means increased, until he became the owner of about five hundred acres of land. He raised a large family through considerable difficulty and much care, as they were subjected to more than the usual amount of sickness. He was a kind husband, an indulgent father, and an energetic farmer, to which business nearly his whole life had been

devoted. At one time he held a Captain's Commission in the Eleventh Regiment of Indiana Militia; afterward he was acting Justice of the Peace for ten years. Both of these offices he filled with much credit to himself. He died August 9, 1863, at ten P. M., on the homestead farm. I had been with him constantly for seven days. He suffered much during his last illness from the intensely acute nature of his disease, which was that of the urinary organs. Death at length relieved his sufferings. Although the day was wet and disagreeable, his funeral was largely attended. He was a man much respected by all who knew him, and his loss was deeply felt in the community.

The Perrin family, into which my brother first married, emigrated from Berkshire County, Savoy Township, Massachusetts.

#### RECORD OF MY THIRD BROTHER, STEPHEN MASON'S FAMILY.

Stephen Mason,<sup>6</sup> was born in Fairfield, Herkimer County, New York, Sept. 8, 1801.

Olive Doane was born in Litchfield, Herkimer County, New York, August 1, 1801.

Stephen and Olive were married in 1820, in Warren, Herkimer County, New York. By this marriage they had twelve children, only four of whom are now living :

1. Candace M. Mason,<sup>7</sup> the oldest child, b. Sept. 9, 1821.
2. Amelia L. Mason,<sup>7</sup> (8) b. Jan. 5, 1834.
3. Henry Marcus Mason,<sup>7</sup> (11) b. March 24, 1840.
4. Marian Mason,<sup>7</sup> (12) b. April 12, 1842.

The names of those not living are given in regular rotation as to age: Sylvania, James, Hiram, Helen, an infant unnamed, Dolly, Charles, and Wallace.

Candace M.<sup>6</sup> was married to Mr. Osmon Rice, September 25, 1832, by Rev. Ard. Blakesley. They are now living in Albion, Calhoun County, Michigan, and have two sons and a daughter :

1. George Albert,<sup>8</sup> the oldest son, b. Feb. 21, 1842, in Oswego County, New York. He is a practical telegrapher.
2. Charles Erman,<sup>8</sup> the younger son, b. Sept. 11, 1850, in Calhoun County, Michigan. Is at present a student at Racine College, Wisconsin.
3. The daughter's name is Kittie Amelia,<sup>8</sup> b. Oct. 6, 1854, in Oswego County, New York.

Sylvania Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Nov. 24, 1822. She married a Mr. James T. Gibson. They had two children; a son :



1. Frank J. Gibson,<sup>8</sup> who lives at Racine, Wisconsin; and a daughter:

2. Mary Sylvania,<sup>8</sup> b. in Feb. 1843, in Oswego County, New York, and is now married to a man by the name of Parkhurst, a druggist. They live in Bellplains, Benton County, Iowa. Sylvania, the mother, died in June, 1843.

James Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Oct. 30, 1825, in Oswego County, New York. He married Miss Huldah Rising, in September, 1846, by whom he had three children:

1. Charles, the oldest son, died in Oct., 1863.

2. Frank,<sup>8</sup> the second son, b. Oct., 1851, is living in Oswego County, New York, with a farmer.

Cora, the only daughter, b. Feb. 1860, and is living with her mother in Pulaski, Oswego County, New York.

James, the father of these children, was in the Federal Army, in McClellan's division of the Army of the Potomac. After being in several hard fought battles, from which he came out unhurt, he died at Yorktown, Virginia, November 11, 1862, of disease of the bowels, leaving the above-named children and wife.

Hiram Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Oswego County, March, 1827, and was married to Miss Elizabeth Bowman, in January, 1847, and died in Jefferson County, New York, October, 1852. By this marriage they had two sons:

1. Daniel T. Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Dec. 28, 1847.

2. Adelbert Mason,<sup>8</sup> b. Feb. 6, 1851.

The oldest of these boys is at present (1866) living in Lyons, Clinton County, Iowa. The younger one is living with his step-father, on a large farm which he owns, near Batavia, Kane County, Illinois.

Amelia L. Mason was married some years since to a Dr. J. Gibson. They are living near Rochester, New York. They had one child, which is now dead.

Henry Marcus Mason,<sup>7</sup> born March 24, 1840, was married to Catharine Leslie, in Oct., 1860. They have one child, a daughter, named Olive, aged four years. Marcus served in the Union Army, on the James River, in Virginia, and at the close of the war was honorably discharged.

Marian Mason,<sup>7</sup> born April 12, 1842, was married to Mr. Elhanan C. Seeley, in June, 1863. They have one child named Hattie Louisa,<sup>8</sup> who was born Sept. 11, 1864, in Pulaski, New York. The rest of the children died young. My brother, his

wife, and the two youngest, Marcus and Marian, are living in Pulaski, Oswego County, New York.

#### HIRAM MASON'S FAMILY.

Hiram Mason,<sup>6</sup> my fourth brother, and youngest of the family but one that lived to be grown, was married early in life to a Miss Brown. By their union they had one child, a son, Horatio H. Mason.<sup>8</sup>

My brother, Hiram, was an active, trading business man. He pushed his speculations into the State of Michigan, and during one of his visits to that State he was taken sick with the bilious fever, and died soon after he returned home. Some time afterward his widow died, leaving their son Horatio, who was raised by his Grandfather Brown's family. After he had attained his majority, he married a Miss Mary Eliza Tredway. They emigrated from Herkimer County, New York, to Sycamore, the county seat of DeKalb County, Illinois, where they lost their first child, an interesting little girl. My wife and I visited them in 1857. We found them very pleasantly situated on a fine farm, very near the town, on which he has fine and commodious buildings. He is a trader and speculator, and, at the time we were there, was not quite thirty years old, but was said to be worth \$25,000. They had, when we visited them in 1857, a little girl named Florence, an interesting child eighteen months old. I saw them again in 1859. We both were then on a visit to our old homes, in Herkimer County, New York. I visited them again, with my wife, at Sycamore, Illinois, in 1865. They then had an infant daughter, named Libby, a sweet babe about three months old; making two children then living. He was still pursuing his speculations, and said to be worth \$30,000.

#### MERCY MASON'S FAMILY.

Mercy Mason was my oldest sister that lived to be grown. She was married to a Mr. Brown, by whom she had one child, a daughter, named Florilla. In the summer of 1859, while on a visit to New York, I learned that this niece was married to a Mr. Eban Blakeman, and resided at Log City, in Madison County, New York. Myself and wife paid them a visit at their house; found them pleasantly situated. They had two children; a daughter about fourteen years old, and a son about three years of age. I recognized in the niece the features of her mother as I last saw her. We spent a couple of days with her very pleasantly. In the beginning of the next winter she and her husband and children

moved to Charleston, Coles County, Illinois. During the summer of 1860 their whole family, as she informs me by letter, suffered from chills and fever, and they lost their little boy. They returned to Madison County. She never wrote me after they returned. By a letter received, some time since, from my cousin, John W. Lipsett, of Madison County, I learned that my niece, Mrs. Florilla Blakeman, died of consumption about the 1st of January, 1863. I presume that her daughter is still living. I had strong sympathies for this niece. She seemed solitary and alone, although she and her husband were well off as to property. By a more recent letter I learn that the daughter of my niece is married. Her husband's name I have not got. She and her father live at Charleston, Coles County, Illinois.

RECORD OF MY SISTER, NANCY MASON'S FAMILY:—Nancy was my Father's Youngest Child.

Nancy Mason,<sup>6</sup> born in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Sept 1, 1809.

James R. Combs, born in Litchfield, New York, Sept. 1, 1805.

James R. and Nancy were married Feb. 5, 1829. Nancy died Sept. 3, 1854. By this marriage they had the following children:

1. Russell E. Combs,<sup>7</sup> born in Stockbridge, New York, May 8, 1830. He married Mary A. Lynch, May 18, 1853. They have two children—Jennie,<sup>8</sup> b. Nov. 17, 1857; and Kittie Mary,<sup>8</sup> b. Aug. 13, 1862. This family in 1866 were living in Prairieville, Barry County, Michigan.

2. Chester D. Combs,<sup>7</sup> born in Eaton, New York, Oct. 17, 1832, and was married to Harriet Walker, in St. Charles, Kane County, Illinois, on the 29th Sept., 1857. They have two children, Lena<sup>8</sup> and Walker<sup>8</sup> Combs. This family in 1865 were living at Royalton, Waupacca County, Wisconsin.

3. Maria N. Combs,<sup>7</sup> born in Eaton, New York, Sept. 26, 1834, was married to Mr. George Isabel, Dec. 5, 1855. She had two children by this marriage. Her husband died in the army. She afterward married her first husband's brother, and they moved to Farley, Dubuque County, Iowa.

4. Stephen M. Combs,<sup>7</sup> born in Eaton, New York, Dec. 30, 1836, and married Abbie Gardner, Sept. 5, 1860. They have two children, Mercy<sup>8</sup> and Emma<sup>8</sup> Combs. In 1865 they were living at Royalton, Waupacca County, Wisconsin.

5. Sarah E. Combs, born in Eaton, New York, March 11, 1839; died Jan. 20, 1841.

6. Mercy E. Combs,<sup>8</sup> born in Eaton, New York, Jan. 22, 1845,

and was married to Mr. Decillo Stevens, Jan. 26, 1864, and are living in Norwich, Chenango County, New York.

7. James R. Combs, Jr.,<sup>s</sup> born in Eaton, New York, Sept. 21, 1845. He, in the fall of 1865, was living at Royalton, Waupacea County, Wisconsin.

8. Clarissa A. Combs,<sup>s</sup> born in Eaton, New York, Sept. 12, 1847.

9. Sylvia R. Combs,<sup>s</sup> born in Eaton, Madison County, New York, Aug. 25, 1854.

My brother-in-law is married to a second wife, and living in Eaton, Madison County, New York, at his old home, near Morrisville. His two youngest children are living with him. I never saw Mr. Combs until 1854. I was much pleased with him. He had an interesting family. My sister, Nancy, was comparatively a child when I left home. On my return visit to my father's house, in 1822, I found her grown up to womanhood, and so had my sister Mercy. On going into the house, my sisters, I learned, were absent temporarily. When they came in I did not know them, nor they me. We conversed together sometime before my mother made known our relationship. Neither could realize that it could be so. It was so novel; producing unpleasant feelings, mingled with emotions of pleasure, and leaving impressions that never have been, and never can be, effaced. They can be felt, but language can not express them. Some time after this my sister Nancy was married. I never saw her after this visit. My visit in 1854 was some weeks after her death. As I had been informed of the occurrence, I was prepared, on visiting her house, for the event; yet a gloom hung over it. I had for years longed to see her, and it was difficult to reconcile myself to the disappointment. To some extent, however, her loss was made up by her daughter, Maria N. Combs, on whom the care of my sister's children devolved. Maria had a most amiable disposition, and she made a strong and favorable impression upon me.

#### THE FAMILY RECORD OF ISAAC MASON, AN UNCLE.

Isaac Mason<sup>s</sup> was born at Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, on Wednesday, Feb. 21, 1777.

Hannah Martin, wife of Isaac Mason, was born in the town of Warren, State of Rhode Island, on Tuesday, the 3d of July, 1782.

Isaac and Hannah were married August 17, 1800, in Cheshire, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. By this marriage they had the following children:

1. Amy Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, on Thursday, July 30, 1801.

2. Alanson Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, on Wednesday, August 17, 1803.

3. Samuel Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, on Friday, April 24, 1807.

4. John Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, on Saturday, May 12, 1810.

5. Rhoda Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, on Sunday, August 16, 1812.

6. Almira and Harriet, twins,<sup>7</sup> b. in Herkimer County, New York, on Monday, April 10, 1815.

7. Isaac Mason, Jr.,<sup>7</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, April 3, 1817.

8. Apama Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Dec. 24, 1819.

9. Sarah Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Sept. 20, 1822.

10. James Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, Nov. 3, 1824.

#### DEATHS.

Isaac Mason, Jr., d. May 3, 1817.

Hannah, the wife of Isaac, Sr., d. in Warren on the 25th of July, 1826, aged forty-four years and twenty days.

Rhoda d. May 10, 1863, aged fifty-one years, three months, and six days. She never married.

Sarah d. July 17, 1864, aged forty-one years, two months, and three days. She never married.

Apama d. May 5, 1865, aged forty-five years, seven months, and nineteen days. She never married.

Isaac, the father of the foregoing children, d. July 18, 1866. He was married twice, but had no children by his second wife. She died several years before her husband, Isaac Mason.

Amy Mason, daughter of Isaac Mason, b. July 30, 1801.

Briggs Thomas, b. at German Flats, Herkimer County, New York, on the 10th day of Oct., 1800.

Briggs Thomas and Amy Mason were married in Herkimer County, New York, on the 28th of December, 1820. They have had seven children:

Hannah, b. Oct. 26, 1821; d. aged seventeen years and ten months.

Mary, b. Oct. 30, 1822.

Abijah, b. May 5, 1825.

Lexa, b. Dec. 30, 1827; d. aged one year and nine months.

Jane, b. March 9, 1829.

Clarissa, b. April 17, 1830.

Mason, b. Dec. 13, 1842.

The above-named family were living in McHenry County, Illinois, in Sept., 1866, all with the exception of Clarissa, who was living in Juneau County, Wisconsin. The children are all married and have children, except Clarissa.

Alanson Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. in Adams, Massachusetts, Aug. 17, 1803.

Mary Ann Thomas, b. May 4, 1808.

Alanson Mason<sup>6</sup> and Mary Ann Thomas were married March 8, 1827. She was one of a large family, and sister to Briggs Thomas, who married Alanson's sister Amy. They had the following children, all born in the town of German Flats, Herkimer County, New York:

1. Isaac Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Dec. 5, 1827; dead.
2. Mary Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Sept. 15, 1829; dead.
3. Amos T. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. July 1, 1832.
4. Electa Jane Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Oct. 26, 1834.
5. Joseph W. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. Sept. 5, 1837.
6. Helen E. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. April 1, 1840.
7. Hannah A. Mason,<sup>7</sup> Nov. 20, 1842.
8. Maria A. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. July 4, 1845.

Mary Ann Mason,<sup>7</sup> wife of Alanson, d. Sept. 26, 1848, aged forty years, four months, and twenty-two days.

Alanson Mason was married a second time, to Adelia Slater, in April, 1849, and they had three children:

1. Norman J. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. May 25, 1850.
2. Almira V. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. July 12, 1854.
3. Almira V. Mason,<sup>7</sup> b. July 12, 1856.

Alanson Mason d. April 17, 1865, aged sixty-two years, leaving his second wife a widow with three children. By a family arrangement she moved to Cayuga County, up Cayuga Lake, where they are living on a farm. The children by the first wife, all that are living, are residing in the old neighborhood.

Amos T., son of Alanson, is a bachelor and owns most of the old homestead farm, and lives on it with his youngest sister, Maria A., who is unmarried.

Electa Jane was married to Giles Walker, June 24, 1854. They are living on a farm near Amos T.'s, and have three children, all girls.

Joseph W. Mason married a Harriet Tisdale, April 13, 1858.

They had one child, Cora, who died Nov. 9, 1865. Joseph owns and lives on a farm near his brother Amos T.'s, in what used to be called Whitman Town.

Helen E. married a William Marts, Dec., 1859. They have no children.

Hannah A. married a John Cokeley, December, 1861, and they have one child. They are all living with Amos T., and assist in carrying on the farm. We visited them in September, 1866.

Samuel Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. April 24, 1807.

Nancy McCrady, b. 1808.

Samuel Mason and Nancy McCrady were married Feb. 9, 1832. They had two children :

1. Rosanna Mason, born and died in early childhood.

2. J. Roswell Mason,<sup>7</sup> was married to Catherine Rankins.

In 1866, I visited them. They have no children, and are living in Warren, Herkimer County, New York.

Samuel Mason died Sept. 28, 1840, aged thirty-three years, five months, and four days. His widow is still living on the farm her husband died on, in the township and county as above.

James Mason,<sup>6</sup> b. in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, November 3, 1824.

Ann Elizabeth Cleland, b. May 14, 1830.

James Mason and Ann Elizabeth Cleland were married Dec. 4, 1850. They had, Addy Hortensia,<sup>7</sup> b. April 15, 1854. They are living in Warren, Herkimer County, New York, near Jordanville village.

John Mason, son of Isaac Mason, b. May 12, 1810. I visited him in 1866. He and his sister Harriet, who is a single woman, and one of two twin sisters (the only one now living), were living and keeping house at the old homestead, of which he was at that time the owner, and which is in the town of Warren, Herkimer County, New York.

#### RECORD OF THE FAMILY OF DUTY SAYLES,

As given me by letter from his son, John Sayles :

Duty Sayles, son of Oziel Sayles and Sylvia Bowen, b. July 29, 1776, at Smithfield, Rhode Island; d. at Troy, Sept. 22, 1832.

Amy Mason, daughter of Philip Mason and Mercy Scott, b. June 8, 1782, at Adams, Massachusetts; d. at White Creek, New York, Sept. 17, 1853.

Duty Sayles and Amy Mason were married by the Rev. Peter Worden, Feb. 1, 1801.

Children of Duty Sayles :

John Sayles, b. at White Creek, New York, May 23, 1803; now living (Nov. 25, 1866.)

Cyrus Sayles, b. at White Creek, New York, Aug. 5, 1804; now living (Nov. 25, 1866.)

George Mason Sayles, b. at White Creek, Feb. 28, 1808; d. in Albany, New York, April 19, 1860.

Maria Ann Sayles, b. Sept. 29, 1809; died at White Creek, Dec. 11, 1809.

Francis Howland Sayles, b. May 23, 1812; d. April 10, 1813, at White Creek.

Mary Willard Sayles, b. Sept. 9, 1815; d. at Rochester, New York, Aug. 3, 1848.

#### RECORD OF THE FAMILY OF JOHN SAYLES.

John Sayles, b. at White Creek, New York, May 23, 1803.

Mary Ann Burton, daughter of Gardner Burton and Marium Burton, of Shaftsbury, Vermont, was born June 15, 1805, at Shaftsbury.

John Sayles and Mary A. Burton were married Feb. 2, 1832, at Shaftsbury, by Rev. Josiah Mattison. Children of John Sayles :

Mary A. Sayles, b. at Troy, Dec. 19, 1832; d. same day.

John Mason Sayles, b. at Troy, July 18, 1834; d. at Albany, Oct. 29, 1836.

James Mason Sayles, b. March 1, 1837, at Albany; now living (Nov. 25, 1866.)

Annie Kellogg Sayles, b. Aug. 10, 1840, at Albany; now living (Nov. 25, 1866.)

Mary Augusta Sayles, b. July 7, 1843, at Albany; now living (Nov. 25, 1866.)

John Sayles, Jr., b. June 26, 1853, at Albany; d. March 5, 1854.

#### RECORD OF THE FAMILY OF JAMES M. SAYLES.

Carrie B. Ross, b. Oct. 29, 1839.

James M. Sayles and Carrie B. Ross were married at Albany, Dec. 3, 1861. Both now living.

Their daughter, Carrie B. Sayles, b. June 8, 1866; now living.

#### RECORD OF THE FAMILY OF CYRUS SAYLES.

Cyrus Sayles, b. at White Creek, New York, Aug. 5, 1804.

Cyrus Sayles and Maria Dorr were married at White Creek, Feb. 16, 1831. Children now living :

Mary Bishop Sayles, married, has children.

Francis Sayles, married, has one child.



Amy Sayles, married.

William Sayles, married.

Henry Sayles, married.

Louisa Sayles, single.

Cyrus Sayles, married second time; no children.

Cyrus Sayles married third time; no children.

Cyrus Sayles married fourth time; one daughter, whose name is Annie, four years of age, living,

Cyrus Woodruff Sayles, son of the fourth marriage, died in 1860, eleven months old.

#### RECORD OF THE FAMILY OF GEORGE M. SAYLES.

George M. Sayles and Mary Angeline Preston were married at Albany, in Jan., 1833. Children:

Mary Jane Sayles, b. in 1833; d. Oct. 14, 1846, at Albany.

George M. Sayles and Caroline R. Ford were married Jan. 12, 1843. Children by this second marriage were,

Harriet Story Sayles, now living.

George M. Sayles, Jr.; John Sayles, 2d—twins; d. children.

Carrie F. Sayles, now living.

Mary W. Sayles, now living.

Cornelia Rochester Sayles, now living.

Mary Willard Sayles and William S. Bishop, of Rochester, New York, were married at Albany, Sept. 9, 1835, by Rev. N. S. S. Benman. Children:

George Sayles Bishop, born June 30, 1836, at Rochester; is now pastor of Calvary Church, at Newburg, New York—Presbyterian.

William S. Bishop, Jr., drowned April, 1848.

Mary C. Bishop, now living, single.

James Lord Bishop is single, and at college, preparing for the law.

A daughter, born July 20, 1848; died same month.

George S. Bishop and Hannah Williston, of Northampton, Massachusetts, were married Aug., 1864. Children:

William S. Bishop, b. Aug., 1865.

#### RECORD OF MY COUSIN, SCOTT M. WILLMARTH'S, FAMILY,

As given by himself, in a letter, dated at his residence, in Deerfield, near Utica, New York, the 5th of March, 1866.

Isaac Willmarth, Sr., was married to Rhoda Mason, in Adams, Massachusetts, Dec. 10, 1789. By this marriage they had two children, Scott M. Willmarth and Isaac Willmarth.

Isaac Williams, Sr., departed this life Aug. 25, 1808. His wife,

Rhoda, was married a second time, to Abraham Randall, in Sept., 1815. She lived with him for seventeen years; but, by this marriage, there was no issue. This husband dying, she returned to her son Scott's, and lived with him until her death, which took place June 29, 1856, aged eighty-four years, two months, and nineteen days. She was beloved by all who knew her.

Scott M. Willmarth, born Sept. 22, 1793, was married to Mary Crossman, April 4, 1814. By this marriage they had the following named children:

Philip M. Willmarth, born June 19, 1816, and was married to Charlotte Vewgen, Nov. 21, 1840. They have had nine children, seven of whom are now living. They reside near Galena, Illinois.

Ira Willmarth, born Dec. 3, 1818, was married to Lucy Carpenter, March 27, 1844. They have had five children; four of whom are living. The family now live in West Middlesex, Dane County, Wisconsin.

Sarah Willmarth, born April 21, 1820, was married to Luke O. Ladd, April 23, 1845. They had one son. Mr. Ladd died Aug. 27, 1856. The son, by this marriage, was a promising young man, and was preparing for college when he was taken sick, and, after an illness of only one week, died of typhoid fever in the fall of 1865. Sarah was married a second time, to John Ladd, in Sept., 1849. By this marriage they had four children; three of whom are now living. The family are living in Sharon, Walworth County, Wisconsin.

Rhoda Willmarth, born Aug. 29, 1822; d. Aug. 11, 1824.

Mary Willmarth, born Oct. 30, 1825, was married to Elisha P. Ladd, Sept. 10, 1850. By this marriage they had eight children; five of whom are now living. The family reside at Grand Traverse, Michigan.

Isaac Willmarth, born Aug. 2, 1830, was married to Margaret Davis, Sept. 10, 1852. By this marriage they have had three children; two of whom are yet living. The family reside in Deerfield, near Utica, New York.

Harriette Willmarth, born Sept. 19, 1837, was married to Nelson Wilcox, March 17, 1858. They have two children, and live at Sharon, Wisconsin.

Mary Willmarth, the mother of the foregoing named children, and wife of Scott M. Willmarth, died Feb. 10, 1857. Her husband was afterward married to Martha Randall, Dec. 8, 1847. By this marriage they have had no children.

## ISAAC WILLMARTH, JR.'S, RECORD.

Isaac Willmarth, Jr., born Oct. 27, 1804, was married to Harriet Willard, April 8, 1834. By a note appended to this record, they had, by this marriage, two children—James and Harriet. Isaac was an educated man, and became so by his own exertions. He was appointed, by a Baptist Board of Missions, as missionary to France, in the year 1834, but returned in 1838 with health much impaired. He is at this time (1867) the pastor of a church in Williamsville, Vermont. His son James is said to be the pastor of a church not far from his father's residence. Neither James nor Harriet have ever been married.

## THE FAMILY RECORD OF BROOKS MASON,

A brother of my grandfather, Philip Mason.

Brooks Mason, b. Oct. 2, 1737.

Brooks Mason and Annie Eddy were married Dec. 28, 1758, and settled in Cheshire, Massachusetts. They had the following named children :

Michael Mason, Malachi Mason, Susan Mason, Brooks Mason, Jr., Andrew Mason, Annie Mason, Rhoda Mason, Candace Mason, Julia Mason, Eddy Mason, Sarah Mason.

His children and grandchildren are said to have numbered one hundred and forty-four, previous to his death.

I obtained the following from Mrs. Nancy Coffin, a second cousin of the compiler's. She resided in Newport, Herkimer County, New York, where she had lived for many years, and had been acquainted with Malachi Mason (son of Brooks Mason, Sr.), who had lived there and raised a family. He died and was buried in that place, leaving a part of his family living there. One son had moved, and was living in Belvidere, Illinois.

## RECORD OF EDDY MASON'S FAMILY.

Eddy Mason, son of Brooks Mason, Sr., was married to Matilda Redway, and had ten children, viz.:

Hannah, died aged nine years.

Truman E., a physician, died in Cincinnati, Ohio.

Russell B., architect and carpenter, at Utica, New York.

Alanson P., Baptist Minister, Chelsea, Massachusetts.

Jane M. (Haswell), Missionary to Burmah.

Julia Ann (Carr), died in Michigan.

Sumner R., Baptist Minister, Cambridgeport, Massachusetts.

Elmina C. (Coe) died in Michigan.

Joel L., died aged four years. Lucinda, died aged three years.

## RECORD OF RUSSELL B. MASON'S FAMILY.

Russell Brooks Mason was born Jan. 30, 1811.

Harriet Cook was born Dec. 25, 1809.

Russell B. Mason and Harriet Cook were married Oct. 19, 1831.

Their children were :

Eddy Dayton Mason, b. Oct. 18, 1832.

Rhoda Matilda Mason, b. Aug. 23, 1834.

Hattie Jane Mason, b. April 19, 1849.

Hattie Jane d. March 8, 1857.

Russell B. Mason lives at Utica, New York, and is Superintendent of Repairs and Architect of the Insane Asylum in that city.

Eddy Dayton Mason, son of Russell Brooks Mason, was born Oct. 18, 1832, and was married to Marian Stratton Oct. 13, 1854.

Hattie Mason, their daughter, was born March 17, 1857.

Eddy Dayton Mason was Colonel in the Federal Army in Texas. He returned and resigned his commission, and is now living at Quincy, Illinois. He is first assistant engineer of a wire suspension bridge, to be built across the Mississippi at that point.

Rhoda Matilda Mason, daughter of Russell Brooks Mason, was born Aug. 23, 1834, and was married to George A. Coe in May, 1864.

The following record was transmitted to me :

GALESBURG, MICHIGAN, November 19, 1866.

DEAR DOCTOR MASON : In accordance with my promise I send you what information I can with regard to the genealogy of our family, which is very meager, from the fact that my father migrated to the far West in 1801, when I was but three years old, consequently my acquaintance with his family was very limited.

My grandfather, Brooks Mason, was born in Newport, Rhode Island, about the year 1735 ; moved to Swansey, Massachusetts, about 1765 ; and about 1770 moved to Cheshire, Massachusetts. My grandmother was the daughter of a Mr. Eddy. They had eleven children, five sons and six daughters. The names of the sons were: Michael, Andrew, Malachi, Brooks Jr., and Eddy. Those of the daughters were: Anna, Rhoda, Sarah, Julia, Candace, and Susan. Of their children I had but a partial acquaintance with a few, and none with the greater part. My uncles, Michael and Andrew, settled in Washington County, New York, before my birth. Malachi settled near Utica. My father, Brooks Mason, Jr., settled in Farmington, Ontario County, in 1801 ; subsequently moved to Penfield, Ontario, now Monroe County, New

York. His wife was the daughter of William Clark. Their family consisted of four sons and three daughters. The eldest, Deborah, was born August 19, 1791. Russell was born Aug. 15, 1793. Octavius, born Sept. 8, 1795. Isaac, born Nov. 23, 1798. Candace, born Oct. 12, 1801. John B., born Jan. 8, 1806; and Susan, born June 12, 1813.

My sister Deborah died in September, 1813, leaving four children.

My brother Russell lives in Penfield, Monroe County, New York; has two children.

My brother Octavius died in September, 1851, leaving four children.

My sister Candace, lives in Webster, Monroe County, New York, and has five children.

My brother John B. lives in Plainfield, Washara County, Wisconsin, and has seven children.

My sister Susan died November, 1836. Left no children.

The foregoing statements are made from recollection, as I have no record to refer to. If it will do you any good I shall be glad. And I would further state that my family consisted of ten children, six sons and four daughters. My eldest, James B., was born Feb. 17, 1822; was killed at Clinch Mountain, Virginia, Oct. 4, 1864. He was in command of the Eleventh Michigan Cavalry. My second son, Edwin D., was born Feb. 24, 1824; died in hospital July 14, 1847, in the Mexican War. My third son, H. C. Mason, was born Sept. 14, 1825, and now lives at Dunkirk, New York; runs a train on the New York and Erie Railroad. My daughter Lucy C. was born Sept. 5, 1827, and died Oct. 7, 1852. My daughter Mary A. was born April 19, 1830, and now lives at Battle Creek, Michigan; not married. My daughter Sarah Jane was born July 8, 1834; married and lives at this place. My son Lee A. was born May 1, 1836; lives with me, after having gone through the war of the Rebellion. He enlisted as a private; was in the first Bull Run battle; closed up with the surrender of Lee in command of Company C, Second Michigan Infantry. My son George P. was born May 14, 1838; was killed at Marion, Virginia, Dec. 18, 1864; was Captain of Company A, Eleventh Michigan Cavalry. My son, Russell B. was born Aug. 23, 1840; was wounded June 30, 1862, in McClellan's inglorious retreat from before Richmond; is a cripple for life; lives at this place. My daughter Harriet was born May 5, 1843, and died Jan. 8, 1862.

Very respectfully yours,

ISAAC MASON.

## RECORD OF RHODA MASON.

In August, 1866, I got the following from my Cousin Octavia Parker, now Wetmore:

Rhoda Mason, sister to my Grandfather Philip Mason, married James Barker. They had four daughters and four sons. One daughter married Elisha Morey, and went to Michigan.

Octavia further stated that Patience Slocum was a half-sister of my Grandmother Mason, and married a Russell Barker, by whom she had children, two of whom she knew, viz.: Philander and Sarah.

Sarah married Ryland Eaton, and lived in Syracuse. He died two years ago, leaving a wife and two children—a son and daughter.

Two of Russell Barker's sons are living in Detroit, Michigan.

His wife, Patience, died; and he afterward married the widow Mercy Parker, mother of Octavia Wetmore, and sister to my father.

The descendants of my Grandfather Philip Mason stand related to several families, through my Grandmother Mason, wife of Philip. Thus Grandmother Mason's mother was married twice. The first time to a Scott, by whom she had several children. One, a son, whom I have entirely lost sight of, and Mercy, my grandmother, and a sister who married a Brown, by whom she had five children, four sons and one daughter. I was acquainted with three of the sons. They each had families. Their names were David, Nathaniel, and Isaac Brown. Isaac had a daughter named Maria, who married George Lapham, Jr., a first cousin of mine.

Nathaniel married and had several children, only one of whom are now living.

David married, and had two children who grew to mature years; one died, the other was living the last that was known. This information I got in the summer of 1866 from several of their relatives. The daughter, Lydia, married an Allen.—See his record in this book. Her second husband was a Slocum.

I have given this to explain the trouble I have had all my life to understand the relationship.

RECORD OF MY GREAT-UNCLE JOSEPH MASON, AND HIS SISTER,  
PHEBE HOARD.

The following statement was made to me at Scott M. Willmarth's, August, 1866, by Orissa Mason, a granddaughter of my great-uncle, Joseph Mason, who was the eighth child of my great-grandfather, Russell Mason:

He settled on the Mohawk River, a few miles below the city of

Utica, where he lived for many years and raised a family. He died at an advanced age, in Jefferson County, New York, where he had resided for several years, with his youngest daughter, Susan Howell. She is now dead, leaving a family in Jefferson. Besides his daughter Susan, he had the following named children: Aaron, Kingsley, Joseph, Calvin (who left home and his whereabouts are unknown), Eunice, Saviah, Betsey, Hannah, and Marian. Eunice and Betsey died young. She further states that it is believed that the children are all dead, and left families.

Aaron married and raised a family of eleven children; nine of whom are now living, five sons and four daughters. Three sons are married and have children. One lives in Springfield, Illinois; another is in California, and one in Sterling, Cayuga County, New York. One, David, is married, and lives in Auburn, New York, but has no children. Eleanor married a Cohen, and lives at Oriskany Falls, Oneida County, New York. Susan married a Woodward, and lives in Utica, New York. Mary, the youngest, is single. She and Orissa make their homes with their sister Woodward.

Kingsley Mason, son of Joseph Mason, married and had five daughters and one son. He died in Cayuga County, New York. The son died in childhood. Two of the daughters died, leaving families. Two of the others are married and have families of children. One is yet single. The families are scattered, but mostly all are in Cayuga County, New York.

Joseph, another son, married in Ohio, and settled on the Mohawk River, a few miles below Little Falls, New York. He had a family of children; moved to Buffalo, where he and his wife both died, leaving two sons and a daughter in Buffalo. The daughter is said to be a teacher.

My uncle, Joseph Mason, had a sister Phebe, who married a Mr. Hoard, and lived near him on the Mohawk, at Frankfort, Herkimer County, New York. They had a family of four daughters and one son. The son died. His daughter Betsey married a Mr. Campbell, and had children by him, one son and two daughters. This son, as well as both daughters, married and went West. Phebe married a Mr. Downey, and lives in Wisconsin, about eight miles from Sharon. She is the one who has the original letter—written by my great-Grandfather Mason to his daughter Phebe Hoard—attached to his record in this work.

#### AN ABSTRACT RECORD OF THE LAPHAM FAMILIES.

In August, 1866, I visited John Hussey at his home—the old

residence of his father, Sylvanus Hussey—when his wife gave me the following, which is a true copy of the paper handed her, as she stated to me, by my Annt Lydia a short time before her death. She was a daughter of Benjamin Lapham, grandson of John Lapham, Sr. It reads as follows:

Some account of the Family of the Laphams, taken down in the year 1782; viz.:

John Lapham, the first that we find any account of in America, came from Devonshire, in old England—and a weaver by trade—to Providence, at which place he was married to Mary Mann, daughter of William Mann, and settled near Burying Place Hill. The Indian war breaking out, they were obliged to return to Rhode Island, and their house was burnt by the Indians. Sometime after he went to Dartmouth and settled there, and had children, four sons and one daughter.

Thomas, their second son, after coming to man's estate, built a house in Providence, on one of the seven-acre lots, toward the lower part of the town, near where Dr. Gibbs since lived, but soon after died; a single man, well beloved by his neighbors.

William, the third son, lived to grow up, and fell into something of a melancholy state of mind, put an end to his life by hanging himself on a tree.

John Lapham, eldest son, married to Mary Russell, daughter of Joseph Russell of Dartmouth, whose wife was Elizabeth Fabes, of the family of Fabes, of Bridgewater, and brother to William Fabes, in Seconnet, by whom John had issue, five sons and nine daughters, viz.: 1. Elizabeth; 2. John; 3. Thomas; 4. Rebecca; 5. Joseph; 6. Mary; 7. Francis; 8. Benjamin; 9. Ruth; 10. Bathsheba; 11. Joshua; 12. Hannah; 13. Sylvia; and 14. Elizabeth.

1. Elizabeth, the eldest, married Amos Faber, son of Joseph Faber of Dartmouth, by whom she had two children, Hannah and Jethro, and died when her son was about three months old of a fever.

2. John married Desire Howland, daughter of Benjamin Howland, of that town, by whom he had two sons, Benjamin and Jonathan, and one daughter, Jemima. This wife, dying in the year 1860, he since married the Widow White, and now lives at the Nine Partners, he living some part of his life at Smithfield, near Providence.

3. Thomas, the third child, married to Abigail Wilber, daughter of Benjamin, by whom he had nine children, four sons and five daughters, to wit: Sylvia, David, Phebe, Abigail, Thomas, Bathsheba, Jethro, Augustus, and Lillis.



David died when near twenty-one. Abigail at the same time, aged about sixteen. Both were buried in one grave. Lillis died at about eight months old. The others all lived to marry and have children. Died aged nearly seventy-four.

4. Rebecca married Barnabas Howland, in Dartmouth, son of Benjamin, by whom she had two sons and four daughters. All lived to marry and have children. Died aged about —.

5. Joseph married Mary Barlow, daughter of John Barlow, of Smithfield, by whom he had nine children, viz.: Abram, Rebecca, Amy, Livinia, Mary, Naomi, John, Mary, and Abigail. Amy died, aged one year and nine months. Livinia died in her seventeenth year. Naomi lived about two weeks, and died. The others all married, and have children. He now lives in Cumberland.

6. Mary, at about twenty years of age, grew melancholy, and became delirious, but not very troublesome; lives near Gloucester with one of her nieces.

7. Francis married Nathaniel Bowdish, son of Wm. Bowdish, of Dartmouth, by whom she has two children living; both married. They now all live at the Oblong.

8. Benjamin married Lydia Ballou, daughter of Samuel Ballou, of Smithfield, by whom he had three children: James, Mary, and Lydia. They are all deceased, and their mother also. He married the second time, to Mary Mann, daughter of John Mann, of Smithfield, by whom he had ten children, viz.: Lydia, Sarah, Stephen, Gideon, George, Elizabeth, Abigail, Silas, Benjamin, and Ruth; all living except Gideon and Silas. Lydia, Sarah, and Stephen are married. They moved from Smithfield to Hoosac about twelve years ago.

9. Ruth married Seth Sherman, son of Daniel Sherman, of Dartmouth. She had two sons and three daughters. One of the sons died young. The others all married. She died about the year 1858.

10. Bathsheba married John Gifford, son of Benjamin Gifford. They now live at the Nine Partners. We don't know how many children they have.

11. Joshua married Hannah Sherman, daughter of David Sherman, of Dartmouth, by whom he had ten children; all living except one. He now lives at Hoosack.

12. Hannah married three husbands: Josph Brown, Jacob Aldrich, and Richard Estis. The last is now living. She had four children by Joseph Brown. They are all living.

13. Sylvia died young.

14. Elizabeth lived to marry, and had one child, and died. Her

husband's name was Benjamin Sherman, son of Thomas, of Dartmouth.

Nicholas, fourth son, lived till old; married Mary Arnold, daughter of John Arnold, of Smithfield, and had three sons and two daughters, viz.: Abigail, Solomon, Rebecca, Nicholas, and Arnold. Rebecca died after a woman grown; unmarried. Arnold, through fits, became an idiot. The others all married.

Mary, fifth child, married Charles Dyer, who settled a little west of Providence. They had children, viz.: Charles, Mary, John, Samuel, Elizabeth, and William.

NOTE.—I believe the foregoing to be substantially correct. It is corroborated by matter given me in the fall of 1822 by my uncle, George Lapham, and by a genealogical chart, furnished me by Increase A. Lapham, of Milwaukee, Wisconsin, December, 1866, which seems to have been gotten up with much labor and great care.—PHILIP MASON.

#### RECORD OF MY GRANDFATHER, BENJAMIN LAPHAM'S FAMILY.

Grandfather Benjamin Lapham, son of John Lapham, the second, and whose record is partially given on the preceding page.

This latter is believed to be substantially correct. The family were friends or Quakers.

Benjamin Lapham, born the 7th month, 24th day, old style, 1715.

Mary Lapham, his wife, born the 6th day of the 7th month, old style, 1726. Their children were,

Lydia Lapham, born the 6th day of the 4th month, 1753, new style.

Sarah Lapham, born the 9th day of the 6th month, 1754.

Stephen Lapham, born the 2d day of the 11th month, 1757. He died, but left a son, Stephen, living near Clyde, Wayne County, New York.

George Lapham, born the 5th day of the 7th month, 1759.

Elizabeth Lapham, born the 29th day of the 1st month, 1761.

Silas Lapham, born the 20th day of the 11th month, 1762.

Abigail Lapham, born the 12th day of the 3d month, 1764.

Benjamin Lapham, Jr., born the 20th day of the 11th month, 1766.

Ruth Lapham, born the 4th day of the 4th month, 1769.

The above named Silas Lapham departed this life the 28th day of the 2d month, 1763.

The above said Mary Lapham departed this life the 12th day of the 7th month, 1787.

The above said Benjamin Lapham, Sr., departed this life on the 20th day of the 8th month, 1788.

By a statement made to me by George Lapham, his brother, Gideon Lapham, departed this life in the year 1777. He says, "I think in the month of May. Please ask sister Lydia Hussey.

(Signed)

"GEORGE LAPHAM, SR."

ADAMS, the 9th month, the 17th day, 1822.

The following is copied from a letter written to me by Jonathan Lapham, a grandson of the foregoing Benjamin, dated at Dayton, Ohio, Nov. 12, 1856; and, as he says in his letter, was copied from the Record in his possession :

"Benjamin Lapham (our grandfather) was born July 24, 1715. He married Lydia Ballou in 1742, who had three children, James Mary, and Lydia; all deceased. She died in 1751. Afterwards, he married Mary Mann, who, as he gives the date, was born, as recorded here, in 1726. The names and time of birth of her children also corresponding."

#### RECORD OF GEORGE LAPHAM'S FAMILY.

George Lapham was born in Smithfield, Rhode Island, July 5, 1759; died January 1, 1832.

Dorcas Babcock, his wife, was born Nov. 9, 1763, and died May 26, 1816.

The time when, and where they were married, I do not know. By this marriage they had six children, with whom I am acquainted. They are as follows :

Gideon Lapham, the eldest, was born June 12, 1787, near South Adams, Massachusetts. He married a Miss Dorcas Bowen, of Scipio, Cayuga County, New York, who was born April 17, 1790. They were married April 12, 1812, and had four children, one son and three daughters.

George H. Lapham, born Sept. 5, 1813, is a physician, and is said to have a fine practice, and is lying in East Aurora, Erie County, New York, where his parents reside.

Susan, born July 29, 1816, married a man by the name of Bowen; had six children, and died. The children, with their father, are living at Aurora, Erie County, New York.

Ann Eliza, born July 9, 1823, was married to Judge Benjamin F. Graves. They have two children, and are now living at Battle Creek, Calhoun County, Michigan.

Mary E., born March 21, 1829; is unmarried, and lives with her parents.

Gideon Lapham and wife moved from Scipio, Cayuga County, New York, to near Aurora, Erie County, New York, and settled on a farm, in the winter of 1813-14. They raised a family of children, and were living there October 4, 1866, when I visited them. We left on the 8th. While there I obtained this record. They were old people, yet able to be up and about. Asa, a brother, seventy-three years of age, who had never been married, was living with his brother Gideon, and still attending to business.

George H. Lapham, son of Gideon, was born Sept. 5, 1813.  
Catherine White, was born Aug. 5, 1815.

George H. and Catherine were married Oct. 1, 1840.

Mary T. Lapham, their daughter, was born Feb. 8, 1842.

Henry W. Lapham, their son, was born Oct. 6, 1845.

Clara E. Lapham, their daughter, was born Aug. 6, 1853.

Albert Lapham, their son, was born April 15, 1857.

Mary T. married Seth Sill, and has two children, both girls. I saw her and her children, on a visit to her father's, at the time my wife and I were there, in October, 1866. Clara died in the summer of 1866, of typhoid fever. Henry W. Lapham was said to be living atoleon, clerking in a store. Albert is living with his parents at home. George H., the father of the foregoing children, is a regular allopathic physician.

Jonathan Lapham, second son, born Oct. 21, 1789. He is a lawyer by profession, and was a Judge in Geauga County, Ohio. He is married, but has never had any family. He and his wife, at one time, lived in Dayton, Ohio, but afterward settled in Cincinnati, Ohio, where they are living at the present time (1866.)

Jeremiah Lapham, third son, born June 20, 1791, and died May 8, 1815.

Asa, fourth son, born Dec. 25, 1793. He never married, but is living with his brother Gideon.

Susanna Lapham, born Jan. 30, 1796. Was married to Robert R. Briggs, had two children, and died Dec. 14, 1823. Her husband now lives in Pontiac, Michigan. One of the daughters married, and lives at Lawrence, Massachusetts. The other lives with her sister.

George A. Lapham, Jr., fifth son, born April 17, 1798.

#### FAMILY RECORD OF GEORGE A. LAPHAM, JR.—FIFTH SON.

George A. Lapham was born in Adams, Massachusetts, April 17, 1798, in which place he died, and where his family still reside.

Mary A. Brown, who was a second cousin of mine, was born July 25, 1802.

George A. Lapham and Mary A. Brown were married July 8, 1824. By this marriage they had the following children :

Susan M. Lapham, born April 6, 1825. Was married to a Mr. Smith, and has three children, one son and two girls. Her husband died in Illinois. She then went home to her parents, in Adams, Massachusetts, and is now (1866) living with her mother. She is still a widow, and has three children.

James A. Lapham was born Sept. 13, 1827, and married Caroline M. Chapel on the 16th day of September, 1848. She was born in West Stockbridge, Massachusetts, June 13, 1829. They have one child, who was born in Massachusetts, August 5, 1862, and whose name is George Henry Lapham. This family now reside on a farm near Whiteford, Monroe County, Michigan. Their post-office is Sylvania, Ohio.

Ellen G. Lapham was born Oct. 5, 1840. Was married to a Mr. Pierce Burton. They lived for about two years in Anderson, Madison County, Indiana. She had one child, named Charles. She became sick, went back, with her husband, to her father's, in South Adams, where she died Jan. 13, 1863, leaving her child with her mother. The last that I heard of Mr. Burton he had gone South, to Alabama.

George Lapham and his wife Doreas both died on the farm where they had lived and raised their family.

George A. Lapham, Jr., died Oct. 19, 1865.

#### FAMILY RECORD OF BENJAMIN LAPHAM, JR.,

As given me by his grandson, Moreau Allen, by their daughter Lucy :

Benjamin Lapham was born the 20th day of November, 1766. He married Eliza Babcock, by whom he had the following children : Lucy Lapham, who was born in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, Oct. 27, 1796 ; Sarah Lapham, ; Eliza Lapham, and Stephen Lapham.

Lucy married Nehemiah Allen, who was born in Whitestown, New York, Dec. 10, 1790. They were married in Berkshire County, Massachusetts, Nov. 16, 1815. The only living child they had was Moreau Allen, who resides at Toledo, where I visited him in October, 1866, and from him obtained verbally this history, and all that relates to his family. He was born on the 1st of March, 1817. His father died the 4th of August, 1861. His mother died on the 9th of March, 1866. Both died at Toledo, Ohio.

Sarah and Eliza married John Hall. Sarah had one child by him and died. He then married Eliza, and by her he had three

children: Henry C. Hall, Benjamin Hall, and Lucy Hall. Henry C. is married and has three children, two boys and one girl; all living in Toledo. Benjamin died young. Lucy, a single woman, lives with her parents, who live four miles west of West Cleveland, which is their post-office address. The daughter of Sarah grew up to be a woman, and married John Quinn, a brewer. They had two children, both boys, one dead. The family are living at Cleveland, Ohio.

Stephen Lapham, son of Benjamin Lapham, Jr., married about the year 1830, to A. Rutherford, and had four children by her, all girls: Sarah, Mary, Lucy, and Catherine. Mary married a Roder, lives in Chicago, and has one or two children. Lucy married Cornelius Washington; lives in Janesville, Wisconsin, and has three children. Stephen died in the fall of 1865, at Janesville. His widow lives with her daughters, but mostly at Chicago, with Mary.

Benjamin Lapham, Jr., the father of the foregoing children, was a brother of my mother. He and his family emigrated from Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, to Geauga County, near Chagrin Falls, where he died, about the year 1834 or 1835. His wife died about the year 1828 or 1829.

#### A BRIEF RECORD OF ISAAC AND LYDIA ALLEN'S FAMILY.

It is imperfect, but it is as I got it.

Nehemiah Allen, born the 10th of the 11th month, 1790.

John Ford Allen, born the 24th of the 3d month, 1792.

Nancy Allen, born the 27th of the 10th month, 1793.

Sarah Scott Allen, born the 24th of the 8th month, 1796.

Maria Allen, born the 20th of the 9th month, 1799.

Infant, born the 3d of the 10th month, eleven days old, and died 1801.

Waterman Allen, born on the 27th of the 9th month, 1803, and died the 14th of the 7th month, 1807.

Roxey Long Allen, born the 17th of the 3d month, 1806.

Isaac Riley Allen, born the 4th of the 5th month, 1808.

This family was connected with ours through a sister of our Grandmother Mason, through the Brown family. They lived at Newport, West Canada Creek, in Herkimer County, New York.

Nehemiah was further connected with the author of this work by marriage with his cousin Lucy Lapham.

#### FAMILY RECORD OF NANCY COFFIN, WHOSE MAIDEN NAME WAS ALLEN.

Her father married a Mrs. Brown, who was a sister of the wife of Philip Mason, Sr.

John Coffin was born in Newport, Herkimer County, New York, in the year 1789.

Nancy Allen was born in Schuyler, Herkimer County, New York, Oct. 27, 1793.

John and Nancy were married Dec. 27, 1813. They had the following children :

Eliza Ann Coffin, b. May 27, 1815.

Orissa Coffin, b. Oct. 15, 1817.

Adelia Coffin, b. April 20, 1818.

Abigail Coffin, b. June 2, 1819.

Jane Coffin, b. April 5, 1822.

Wellington Coffin, b. June 8, 1824.

John Coffin, the father of the above-named children, departed this life Oct. 12, 1856.

The foregoing record I got from Nancy Coffin, through her grand-daughter, Mary Rowley. This family were born and raised at Newport, on West Canada Creek, Herkimer County, New York, where the father died. I saw Nancy and her son Wellington at Toledo, Ohio, when on a visit at that place in the fall of 1866. It was the only time that I ever saw them. They returned to Newport, and I left for home.

#### FAMILY RECORD OF SYLVANUS HUSSEY'S FAMILY,

As given to me by his youngest son, John Hussey, in a letter dated  
January, 1866:

Sylvanus Hussey, born at Dartmouth, Massachusetts, March 16, 1755, and died at his old residence, now Ledyard, New York, April 12, 1838, aged eighty-three years and twenty-seven days.

Lydia Lapham, born at Smithfield, Rhode Island, April 6, 1753, died Jan. 10, 1849, aged ninety-five years, nine months, and four days. (Lydia Hussey was a sister of my mother.—P. MASON.) The date of her marriage is not given.

The following are the children of Sylvanus and Lydia Hussey, viz.: Reuben, Sarah, George, Jonathan, Benjamin, Stephen, Mary, Eliza, and John.

Reuben Hussey, born April 14, 1777, died February, 1864, in Erie County, New York, leaving five children : Warren and Lydia L. by his first wife, and Lucy, George, and James by his second ; and who reside in Collins, Erie County, New York, except Lucy, who lives in Cayuga County, New York.

Sarah Hussey, born November 13, 1799. She was married the second time, to a man by the name of Durfee, and went to Wayne County, New York, where she died, September 14, 1829, leaving

two children by her first husband, whose name was Fuller. Her children's names were: Erastus Hussey, Edwin and Cyrus Fuller, and who reside in Michigan.

George Hussey, born Dec. 2, 1782; died in Michigan, July 28, 1834, leaving three children: William, Isaac, and Charles, who reside in the city of New York.

Benjamin Hussey, born Sept. 2, 1787; died in Erie County, New York, March 18, 1855, leaving seven children: Cyrus, Sylvanus, Mary, Stephen, Erastus, Sarah, and John. Cyrus is in Illinois; Erastus, Stephen, and John are in California; Sylvanus, Mary, and Sarah are in Erie County, New York.

Stephen Hussey, born Nov. 2, 1789; died in Erie County, New York, April, 1862. His children's names are: Delphia, Eliza, and Lydia, and all reside in Erie County, New York.

Mary Hussey, born June 13, 1791; was married to a Dr. Elisha Smith; moved to Erie County, New York, and died December, 1819, leaving one daughter, Mary Jane, who married a Mr. Nichols, by whom she had two children, a son and daughter. Her husband died. (After his death, she, with her children, moved to Iowa, and then moved back, and in the summer of 1866 they were living in Erie County, New York. The son's name is Austin Nichols, and the daughter's, Cornelia Nichols.—P. MASON.)

Eliza Hussey, born Nov. 13, 1793; was married to a William Barber, November, 1816. They moved to Battle Creek, Michigan, where her husband died Dec. 27, 1846. She afterward married a Mr. Mahlon Beaks, in the spring of 1853, and lived with him until the spring of 1862, when he died. She is now living with her son, Stephen D. Barber, at Battle Creek, Calhoun County, Michigan. She has two children besides the one she lives with. Their names are: Lewis J. and Richard H. Barber, and are at the present time living in Galesburg, Kalamazoo County, Michigan.

Lewis J. Barber, born Sept. 10, 1818. Lydia McClary, born Feb. 13, 1828. Lewis and Lydia were married, May 9, 1849. Lewis has been married twice, but had no children by the first wife. He had one child by the second wife, named Frances Barber, born Oct. 28, 1856.

Richard H. Barber, born July 4, 1820. Mary E. Knowles, born March 30, 1823. Richard and Mary were married Oct. 2, 1844. They had four children. Charles H. died in 1865, in North Carolina, while in the employ of the Government, in the regiment of railroad employees. William Barber, born February 12, 1850. Eliza Alma Barber, born Nov. 29, 1852. George K. Barber, born Aug. 17, 1862.



Stephen D. Barber, born Sept. 26, 1827. Mary C. McAmby, born April 1, 1833. Stephen and Mary were married June 10, 1852. They have two children: Frank E. Barber, born July 3, 1856; Ella Barber, born April 24, 1858. Eliza had a daughter, Mary H. Barber, who died July 1, 1863, aged forty-two years. She had never married.

John Hussey, born at Cambridge, Washington County, New York, February 27, 1796, was married to Prudence Durfee, who was also born in Cambridge, Washington County, New York, March 29, 1796. They have four sons: John D., Erastus H., Lemuel D., and Edward S. Erastus H. lives with his father and mother on the old homestead farm. The others are married, and live in the same neighborhood. This last branch of the family are all farmers.

Erastus Hussey is an adopted son—though really a grandson—of Sylvanus and Lydia Hussey. They had adopted him as their own child. He was, as he states in a letter to me, sixty-five years old on the 5th of December, 1865, and informs me that he resides at Battle Creek, Calhoun County, Michigan. In early life he married a Miss Bowen, of Scipio, Cayuga County, New York. They have one child, and a grandson named Frederick Henry Denman, whose father married my cousin Erastus' daughter, and lives at Dowagiac, on the Michigan Central Railroad. His name is Henry B. Denman. He is President of a Bank.

By a letter from my brother Stephen Mason, in December, 1861, he informed me that he had just returned from a tour in which he had called on a large number of our mother's relatives, and had collected the following facts in regard to their families and residences. I shall also add a few items of interest which I gathered while on my summer tour of 1866.

Our mother had four sisters. One married Sylvanus Hussey, and lived in Scipio, Cayuga County, New York. (Their family record immediately precedes this.)

Another married a Mr. Job Howland. They settled in Farmington, Ontario County, New York, in the year 1790. George Howland, a son, in 1861, lived on the old homestead, one and a-half miles from Manchester, in the aforesaid county.

The third married a Mr. Gilbert Howland. They settled on the outlet of the Canandaigua Lake, in the year 1800, and had a numerous family. The old folks are dead, and left no children living in the old neighborhood, except one daughter. She had married a Doctor Elisha Smith (the same man that married Mary

Hussey), and they were living in Erie County, New York, the last that I heard from them.

The fourth married a Nathan Aldrich. They moved, in the year 1800, to Farmington. Their son Nathan, in 1861, was living on the old homestead farm, and had a family, all of whom were settled about him.

Our mother had a brother, Stephen Lapham, who died in Saratoga, New York, leaving quite a large family, and whose record is as follows: Stephen Lapham married Rachel Hussey. Their children were: Gideon, Clarissa, Hephzibah, Phebe, Anna, Benjamin, Ruth, Rachel, Lydia, Stephen, George, and Clarinda.

Clarissa married William Follier, and resided in Queensbury, New York. Hephzibah married Samuel Tucker; Phebe married Moses Tucker; Anna married Abraham Tucker; Ruth married Nathaniel Sisson; Rachel married Stephen Sisson; Lydia married William Sisson. They all reside, with their families, in Erie County, New York.

Stephen Lapham, Jr., resides in Salem, Seneca County, New York. George and Clarinda reside, I think, in Queensbury, New York. Benjamin resided in Queensbury, New York. Gideon died young.

The following is a copy of a letter to John Hussey, dated, I think, in the summer of 1866. The writer was the widow of Nicholas Howland, and has two children, living in Manchester, Monroe County, New York. Nicholas was the son of Gilbert and Elizabeth Howland.—P. M.

Of this family there are but two now living. Jonathan Howland, who married, had children, six in number, and living in Michigan. The other living child, named Elizabeth, married a Dr. Elisha Smith. They live in Erie County, New York, and have nine children, all living in the same neighborhood. The children married and settled there. There was David Howland, Charles Howland, and Job Howland. Polly Howland married a Brown. The four last named are dead. They had children. They are scattered; some living in Michigan. Uncle Job Howland married Sarah Lapham, sister of my mother, and so was Elizabeth Howland. This family lived in Manchester, and it is believed that not one of the family are now living. George, a son of Job, died Jan. 1, 1865, left a wife and two children—a son and daughter. The daughter is married, and lives on the old farm. The son married, and lives in Manchester, and has two children. Nathan Aldrich married Abigail Lapham (also a sister of mother's.) They had two sons, who grew up and had families. John, the eldest, is

dead. He married in early life, and had children. Their residence is not certainly known. Nathan, the younger, is married, and lives in Manchester; has a family of children. Their whereabouts is not known.

#### RECORD OF THE JENKS' FAMILIES,

Given me by Samuel Jenks, a grandson of the eldest, Jesse<sup>1</sup> Jenks, on the 5th Feb., 1867.

He states that he had no knowledge of any relatives prior to his grandfather, Jesse<sup>1</sup> Jenks, who, with his brothers, Edmund<sup>1</sup>, Isaac,<sup>1</sup> and Lawrence,<sup>1</sup> emigrated from Demerara, in British Guiana, South America, to North America, previous to the American Revolution, and settled, first, in the Province of Rhode Island. They all married, and finally settled in Berkshire County, Massachusetts.

Jesse<sup>1</sup> married Rhoda Smith, and had a large family, whose history is appended.

Edmund<sup>1</sup> Jenks married, and had a large family of children. They all lived in South Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts.

Isaac<sup>1</sup> Jenks married, and had two sons, John<sup>2</sup> and Isaac,<sup>2</sup> Jr. They have families, and are living at Terre Haute, Indiana, on the Wabash River, and are said to be wealthy. One of them is a lawyer, and has been a State Representative.

Lawrence<sup>1</sup> Jenks married, and had one son, who was a physician. The family lived in Stafford, Berkshire County, Massachusetts.

I give the following as a matter of history :

Joseph Jenks, or Jenkes, or Jencks, or Jinks, for the name is thus variously written, came from Hammersham or Hounslow, near London, England, to America, in 1643. He was a worker in iron; and, in 1646, obtained a patent from the General Court of Massachusetts for making scythes and mills, which was among the earliest taken out. He was a widower, and had left a son in England to be educated, who came over afterwards and married Esther Ballard, of Linn, Massachusetts. He went with his young family into Rhode Island, where his posterity have been numerous and respectable, and have held various offices. He (Joseph) had a son Joseph who had a son Joseph who was Governor of Rhode Island from 1727 to 1732. A son of the Governor married into the Mason family. Ebenezer Jenks was a Baptist, and the Elder of a Church, and pastor of the ancient flock.

The Jenks families were remarkable for longevity, and were very prolific. I have not been able to trace any connection between

this family and the former from Demerara, though I have no doubt that they are from the same ancestors.—See Vol. IX, page 201, New England Historical and Genealogical Register and Antiquarian Journal.

Jesse<sup>1</sup> Jenks, one of the four brothers, was the parent branch of the families hereafter mentioned, and was married twice. His first wife, as before stated, was Rhoda Smith. The date of this marriage is not known. He moved into Cheshire, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, and had the following children by his first wife:

1. Ahab<sup>2</sup> Jenks; 2. Jacob<sup>2</sup> Jenks; 3. Stephen<sup>2</sup> Jenks; 4. Shubal<sup>2</sup> Jenks; 5. Laban<sup>2</sup> Jenks; 6. Elisha<sup>2</sup> Jenks; and a daughter, named Huldah. Her name is all that we know of her.

His first wife died, and he afterwards married Abigail Sayles, but the date of the marriage is not known. By this marriage they had six children—one son and five daughters:

Allen<sup>2</sup> Jenks; Rachel<sup>2</sup> Jenks; Amy<sup>2</sup> Jenks; Mary<sup>2</sup> Jenks; Cynthia<sup>2</sup> Jenks; Belinda<sup>2</sup> Jenks.

These last children continue to reside in Cheshire; but few of them are now living, as I was informed when on a visit to the old farm during the summer of 1866. The old gentleman lived to an advanced age, being over ninety years old at the time of his death. He lived and ended his days on a large farm in Cheshire, where he had first settled, about two miles from Elder Leland's meeting-house. Nothing, however, remained of the old church when I was there in 1866. The old burying-ground, near where the old church had stood, was visible, but in a dilapidated condition.

Jesse<sup>2</sup> married, and had children, named:

Wata<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Mary<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Haveril<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Smith<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Jesse<sup>3</sup> Jenks; John<sup>3</sup> and Isaac<sup>3</sup> Jenks.

Jacob<sup>2</sup> Jenks, son of Jesse<sup>1</sup> Jenks, married, and had a family of seven children:

Ahab<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Wanton<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Jacob<sup>3</sup> Jenks, Jr.; Drusilla<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Rhoda<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Mary<sup>3</sup> Jenks; Martha<sup>3</sup> Jenks.

This family settled in Ashtabula County, Ohio, over forty-eight years ago. I was at their house in the fall of 1822.

He had one son, a physician, who was married, and lived in a small village near his father's, who was living on a new, but good farm. All intercourse has been suspended for years with them, and nothing is known of the children, or their age, except their names as above.

Shubal<sup>2</sup> Jenks, fourth son of Jesse<sup>1</sup> Jenks, married and had six children, named :

Harris <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	Shubal <sup>3</sup> Jenks, Jr.,
Alphens <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	John <sup>3</sup> Jenks,
Smith <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	Adonijah <sup>3</sup> Jenks.

The family all moved to Roscoe, Winnebago County, Illinois, some years ago. His first wife died. He married again, and had children, but for several years all intercourse between his family and the Jenks' in this part of Indiana has been suspended.

The foregoing comprises all the information that I have been able to obtain of the children of this branch of Jesse Jenks' family, except the second son.

Stephen<sup>2</sup> married Anna Sayles. He was father of the first wife of the compiler of this narrative. The time of their marriage I have not been able to ascertain. They had the following children, six boys and five girls :

1. Stephen <sup>3</sup> Jenks, Jr.,	1. Abiah <sup>3</sup> Jenks (died
2. Gideon <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	young),
3. Samuel <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	2. Mary <sup>3</sup> Jenks,
4. Jesse <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	3. Deborah <sup>3</sup> Jenks,
5. John <sup>3</sup> Jenks,	4. Sarah <sup>3</sup> Jenks,
6. William <sup>3</sup> Jenks.	5. Ann <sup>3</sup> S. Jenks.

(William and Ann were twins.)

The sons rank, as to age, as enumerated; the girls in the same way. These children were all born in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. While his youngest children were small, he moved from Adams to Scipio, Cayuga County, New York, where he owned a fine farm, on which he lived; was comfortably situated, and lived in easy circumstances. He and one of his sons took a trip West, through Kentucky into Tennessee, and into Indiana, and on White River, and also over a considerable portion of Ohio, and returned home. In the spring of 1814, his three oldest sons, Stephen,<sup>3</sup> Gideon,<sup>3</sup> and Samuel,<sup>3</sup> left home, in wagons, for Indiana, traveling the entire distance by land. They bought land and settled, in common, a mile below where Laurel now is located, on White Water, Franklin County, Indiana, then a Territory. In the spring of 1816, the writer of this, who had married Sarah<sup>3</sup> Jenks, one of Stephen<sup>3</sup> Jenks' daughters, left Scipio, New York, in a wagon, and on arriving at Olean Point, took passage on a raft, and landed at Cincinnati, Ohio, on the 15th of April, 1816, and went out to White Water, to the residence of his wife's brothers. In June, the remainder of the family left Scipio, and reached the sons' in July, having traveled the whole distance by land. (That

season was known as the cold summer, it being so cold that but little corn was raised in the State of New York that year. On White Water, the morning of the 7th of June was frosty, and uncomfortably cold in planting corn, and in Cayuga County, New York, it snowed that morning.)

Their arrival, and the meeting of the whole family, except one married daughter living in Bennington County, Vermont, was a pleasure which must be enjoyed to be appreciated. After a few days of hilarity and pleasure spent in talking over old times and family relations, and of the future permanent settlement, it was determined upon that a trip across the State to the Wabash should be made. An outfit was arranged, and Stephen Jenks, Sr., his son Samuel, myself and brother Horatio, with a Mr. Bush, left and took a trace from Brookville, through the woods, into what was an Indian country, to Brownstown, in Jackson County; then to Vincennes; then up the Wabash to Fort Harrison, above where Terre Haute is now situated. On our return, we struck through the woods from Busroe Creek to Bean Blossom; then home by Brownstown and the outward route. We were absent twenty-one days, and not pleased with the country. The old gentleman and lady with a majority of the family, settled on a large farm of excellent land lying on both sides of the Big Miami River, at Colerain, a short distance below where Venice now is situated. Here the family suffered much from sickness, and several died. The old gentleman first, and two years afterwards the old lady, his wife, died.

The son Jesse<sup>3</sup> lost his wife; and Samuel, a child—all with bilious disease.

Here we have a specimen of the folly of old people changing their location for one differing materially in clime and local influences. After the deaths here mentioned, the remainder of the family left the place, and the farm passed into the hands of strangers.

I am largely indebted for the information which I have received respecting the family to Stephen<sup>3</sup> Jenks, Jr., the oldest son of this branch of the family whom I visited in 1858. He was then seventy years of age.

Mary, the oldest daughter, married Otis Phillips, and lived in Bennington County, Vermont. The number of her children not known, all correspondence between her family and the other members of the family having long since ceased.

Deborah married a Mr. Josiah Bowen, and had five children by him. She died in 1815, in Cayuga County, New York, where they

had lived from soon after the time of their marriage. But, by a letter to me, dated at Washington City, D. C., on the 20th of November, 1866, in answer to one of mine, to Sayles Jenks Bowen, a son of Deborah, I got the following history of the family. He says :

“My own brother, Polimon, left home in the fall of 1831; went to Detroit, Michigan, and it is supposed died there, of cholera, in 1832. My eldest sister, Ann, married a Mr. Joseph Anthony, and died in October 1842, leaving three children, all of whom are now living in Central New York. Sister Matilda married Charles Brownell. She died in January 1855, leaving three sons, all of whom are in Iowa.

“Stephen Bowen, my half-brother, is a farmer, and resides in New York. Mary and Caroline are living in Groveline, New York. The former married Isaac Benway; the latter, John Allen. My step-mother, now very old and feeble, lives with Caroline. Jeannette and Lucinda died many years ago. My father lived to the age of sixty-four, and died in Scipio, New York, July 12, 1848 of a disease of the knee joint.”

He further says :

“I am now fifty-three years old. At the age of twenty-two I married Mary Barker, who was raised in Scipio, near our old home. We have had two children. The first, Ann Jeannette, was born 1843, and died in 1850; the other, Hattie Baker, was born in 1855, and died in 1860. We are, therefore, childless. We removed, in the fall of 1842, to Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, where we remained until 1845, when I was appointed a clerkship, in the Treasury Department, at Washington, where I have since resided.”

He now holds the office of Postmaster, at Washington, D. C., and is said to be worth \$130,000. This man must have started in life with limited means, and has wound his way to wealth and position by the dint of his own exertions.

#### THE FAMILY RECORD OF STEPHEN JENCKS, JR.

Stephen Jencks, Jr., born in Berkshire County, Massachusetts, March 13, 1788.

Susannah Oderfield, his wife, born Sept. 1, 1791.

(I have not the date of their marriage.) Their children were,

Eliza Jencks, their first child, born July 13, 1815.

Gideon Jencks, second child, born Dec. 9, 1816.

Sarah Jencks, third child, born Nov. 1, 1818.

John Tyler Jencks, fourth child, born Feb. 9, 1821.

Robert N. Jencks, fifth child, born Feb. 16, 1823.

Lucinda Jencks, sixth child, born April 2, 1825.

Stephen Warren Jencks, seventh child, born Sept. 9, 1827.

Samuel Jencks, eighth child, born Nov. 18, 1829.

Deborah Ann Jencks, ninth child, born Oct. 19, 1831.

Edwin S. Jencks, tenth child, born Nov. 18, 1835.

#### DEATHS.

Stephen Jencks, Jr., d. Jan. 5, 1860.

Susannah, his wife, d. Sept. 29, 1849.

Stephen Jencks was my first wife's brother, and was married in Scipio, Cayuga County, New York. He was a quiet, orderly, thrifty citizen. He emigrated with two of his brothers, Gideon and Samuel, in the spring of the year, 1814, to the then Territory of Indiana. Two years afterwards it became a State. He and his two brothers bought land in common, a mile below where Laurel now is, and continued to reside at that place until about the year 1838, when he and his brothers dissolved partnership. Stephen sold his interest to his brother Gideon, and then moved with his entire family into the northeast corner of Wabash County, Indiana, where he settled with three of his brothers who had separate farms, and lived until his death. He raised a large family, who are all living, except one.

Eliza, their oldest child, married Jonathan Hamilton. The date of their marriage I have not got. Their children are,

Stephen J. Hamilton, b. Dec. 8, 1838.

Chauncey Hamilton, b. Oct. 29, 1840.

Samuel Hamilton, b. Aug. 4, 1842.

Mary F. Hamilton, b. Jan. 24, 1855.

The oldest of these children, Stephen, is married, and lives on the Wabash River, below Lafayette. The sons all served in the Federal Army during the late war; two of them for three years each. Chauncey is studying medicine, and spent the winter of 1855-6 at the Medical College, at Ann Arbor, Michigan. Samuel and Mary are living with their parents.

Sarah married William Harper, and resides in Jefferson County, Iowa. They have two children: Stephen Otis and Deborah Ann.

Deborah A. Jencks married Robert Harper. They reside in Jefferson County, Iowa, and have three children: William O., Theresa L., and Frank.

Lucinda Jencks married Jacob Singer. They have five children: William H., John H., Sarah J., Edwin S., and Mary Emma. This family reside in Chester Township, Wabash County, Indiana.



Samuel Jencks resides in Iowa; has two children; names, age, and sex unknown to me.

Gideon Jencks also resides in Iowa, Warren County. He also owes land in Ringgold County, Iowa; an old bachelor.

Stephen Warren Jencks was married to Sarah Jane Spaulding. They have four children: Alice, Rosina, Mary K., and Ira M., and live in Chester, Wabash County, Indiana.

Robert N. Jencks married Harriet Conda, and has four children: Sarah J., Emma L., Nelson E., and Charlotte L. They reside in Chester, Wabash County, Indiana.

John Tyler Jencks married his cousin; went to California in 1855 or 1856, and died there, leaving his wife and three children in Chester, Wabash County, Indiana. The names of the children are: William Warren, Susannah, and John S. Jencks.

Edwin S. Jencks is a single man, and served three years in the Federal Army, and enlisted in the veteran service, and was with Sherman's campaign through the Southern States; was at the close of the war honorably discharged, and married a Mrs. Tiner in the spring of 1866.

These ten children, mentioned in Stephen Jencks' Record, were all by his first wife. He was living with his third wife at the time of his death. For this family record I am indebted to a grandson, Chauncey Hamilton.

#### GIDEON JENCKS' FAMILY.

Gideon Jencks married a Miss Shaw, in Scipio, Cayuga County, New York. They emigrated with Stephen and Samuel Jencks, and settled as before stated. He lived and died on the farm adjoining the one on which they first settled. His widow is still living, and residing on the old homestead farm. During his lifetime they had acquired a handsome estate. They had seven children—three sons and four daughters. The boys names were: Isaac (dead), Chauncey (dead), and Mason, who is married and has children, and is living with his mother, at the old homestead, below Laurel. The girls names were: Deborah, Olive (dead), Elizabeth, and Pamela (dead). But two of the daughters are now living; one of whom is the widow of Coburn Murray. She has quite a family, but their names are not known to me.

Chauncey was married, and had children, but he has been dead for a number of years. The remaining members of the family are believed to be living and residing in their old neighborhood, but for a long time I have had but little intercourse with them.

## SAMUEL JENCKS OR JENKS' FAMILY HISTORY.

Samuel Jenks was born in Adams, Massachusetts, April 22, 1792.

Phebe Winchel, born Sept. 23, 1792.

Samuel and Phebe were married Feb. 6, 1814, in the State of New York, and emigrated in the spring of 1814, with two brothers as before stated. His father-in law, Winchel, and family also emigrated with him, and settled on Garrison Creek, within the present limits of Fayette County, Indiana, where he lived until his death. Samuel settled with his brothers, as before stated, and was married twice. By his first wife he had thirteen children:

1. Emily<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. Nov. 22, 1814.
2. Stephen<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. Dec. 22, 1815.
3. William<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. March 14, 1817.
4. Ruth Ann<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. March 16, 1819.
5. Phebe<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. Dec. 16, 1820.
6. Robert II.<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. May 2, 1824.
7. Louisa<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. April 24, 1826.
8. Susannah<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. March 18, 1828.
9. Susie Jane<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. May 8, 1830.
10. Richard Tyler<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. May 2, 1834.
11. Susannah Jane<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. Oct. 31, 1836.
12. Samuel<sup>1</sup> Jenks, Jr., b. May 8, 1839.
13. Lura Jane<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. Feb. 15, 1841.

## DEATHS.

William<sup>1</sup> Jenks, d. Oct. 22, 1820.

Susannah<sup>1</sup> Jenks, d. March —, —.

Lura<sup>1</sup> Jane Jenks, d. March —, —,

Richard Tyler<sup>1</sup> Jenks, died while in the army, April 9, 1863.

Robert II.<sup>1</sup> Jenks, d. Oct. 21, 1863.

Emily<sup>1</sup> Jenks was married to Andrew Murray; died Aug. 14, 1863.

Phebe Jenks, wife of Samuel<sup>3</sup> Jenks, and mother of the foregoing children, died in the fall of 1841.

Samuel<sup>3</sup> Jenks afterward married Lura Potts, a widow; her maiden name was Lura Marsh. They were married April 3, 1842. By this marriage they had four children:

Phebe<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. Oct. 9, 1843.

Isabelle<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. April 5, 1846.

Mary Jane<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. July 3, 1848.

Andrew Murray<sup>1</sup> Jenks, b. June 16, 1850.

Lura Jenks, Samuel<sup>3</sup> Jenks' second wife, d. Nov. 27, 1863.

Samuel<sup>3</sup> Jenks, since he moved to Indiana, has always lived in

the same neighborhood, though not on the same farm. He, at this writing, March 30, 1867, resides one and a half miles east of Laurel, on the farm where he settled after he married his second wife. He is living with his two stepsons, his daughter Isabelle (who is a single woman and the housekeeper), and his son by his second wife.

Phebe, the eldest daughter by the second wife, was married, a few years ago, to John Taylor. They moved to Huntington County, Indiana.

Mary J. Jenks, the youngest daughter, married Thomas Moore, and is living in Rush County, Indiana.

The following named children were by the first wife:

Emily Jenks grew to womanhood, and was married to Andrew Murray, by whom she had twelve children, seven daughters and five sons. They reside at Metamora, in Franklin County, Indiana, where they have long lived, and where she died. She had two sons in the Federal Army, who served three years each, and at the end of the war were honorably discharged.

Stephen Jenks married Sarah Murray, by whom he had two children. The mother and children are all dead. He afterward married Sarah Bryson, by whom he had four children, and is now living, with his family, on a fine farm one mile below Laurel.

Robert Jenks married a Miss Brown. By her he had three children, the oldest of whom died young. His wife died, and he then married Mary Barnhart, by whom he had five children. He had been in the Federal Army, but returned home in poor health and eventually died.

Louisa Jenks was married to Giles Davis, by whom she has had nine children, one of whom is dead. They live where they first settled, a mile below Laurel, in Franklin County, Indiana.

Richard Tyler Jenks never married. He went into the Union Army at the commencement of the war, and continued in it until his death.

Susannah, the second, was married to Alfred Bourn, by whom she had five children, two of whom are dead. They live between Laurel and where her father lives.

Samuel Jenks, Sr., was born May 8, 1839.

Jane Sherwood was born April 29, 1841.

Samuel and Jane were married Jan. 19, 1860. By this marriage they had three children, viz.:

Wm. W. Jenks, b. March 10, 1861.

Louisa A. Jenks, b. Dec. 21, 1862.

Mary E. Jenks, b. Nov. 28, 1865.

The family are now living (1867) in Wabash Town, Indiana.

#### JESSE JENCKS' FAMILY.

He was the sixth child of the family, and was twice married. By his first wife, whose name was Rachel Baker, he had three children: Anna, Lucy A., and Linden.

Linden died at the age of about twenty years. Anna is also dead. Lucy A. married a Mr. Antrum. They have had four children: Caleb, Serinda, Rachel Ann (dead), and Mary Ann. The family live in Chester Township, Wabash County, Indiana.

Jesse Jencks married for his second wife Hannah Redpath, by whom he had the following children: Matilda Jencks, who married a Mr. Young. They had four children; he died, leaving her with them. Their names are: Jesse, Catherine, John, and Hannah. Matilda married again, but by the second husband she had no children; he is dead.

Serinda Jencks married a man by the name of Harter. They have a large family of children, names unknown to me.

Hiram Jencks married Lucinda Newman. They had four children: Mary Ann (dead), Hannah, Matilda, and Susie. He died while in the army, of typhoid pneumonia. His widow married again, and lives in the town of Chester, Indiana.

Elinora Jencks married her cousin Alpheus Jenks. They have had four children: Stephen Warren (dead), William, and Eliza. The name of the youngest unknown to me.

Stephen Warren Jencks married Frances Heck. They have three children; names unknown to me.

Eliza Jane Jencks married Adam Smith. They have two children, one named Hannah, the youngest not known to me.

The whole family, Jesse, his children, and grandchildren, all live in the same neighborhood, in Chester Township, Wabash County, Indiana.

#### RECORD OF JOHN JENCKS' FAMILY.

John Jencks married Jane Ayres. At this time (January, 1867), they are both living. He is past sixty years of age, and nearly blind from cataract. Their children, those that are living, are all grown up to man and womanhood. One of the sons served three years in the army. The family are all living in Chester Township, Wabash County, Indiana.

Alpheus Jencks, their son, married his cousin, Elinora Jencks. They have four children. (See Elinora Jencks, in Jesse Jencks' Family Record.)

William Jencks married Sarah Brew; have no family.

Stephen Jencks has been married twice. Had two children by the first wife, whose name was Maria Guffin; one child dead. His second wife's name was Susan Wilson; no children by her.

Erastus Jencks married Eunice Willett. They have three children, names unknown to me.

Sarah Ann Jencks married a Mr. Conda, by whom she had three children; their names are unknown to me. Conda died in the army.

Gideon Sayles Jencks, dead.

Linden Jencks, dead.

Mary Elizabeth Jencks, grown and single.

James Nelson Jencks, grown and single.

#### RECORD OF WILLIAM JENCKS'S FAMILY.

William Jencks was the sixth son, and married in Fayette County, Indiana. They had the following children:

Anna Jencks, died young.

Mahala Jencks married her cousin John T. Jencks. They had four children, three of whom are living. John went to California, and died there, leaving his wife and children in Wabash County, Indiana. The names of the children are: William Warren, Susannah, and John Singer Jencks. One boy and the girl are mutes, and are at the Indiana Deaf and Dumb Asylum. Mahala died Nov. 26, 1866, of flux, in Wabash County, Indiana.

Abiah Jencks married her cousin, my son, Darwin E. Mason. They had three children: William Silanus (dead), Leonidas (dead), and Amanda Helen, who is now about fourteen years old (1867.) The family reside in Wabash County, Liberty Township, Indiana.

Isaac Jencks, dead; died in Chester Township.

Susannah Amanda Jencks was married to James Daniels, by whom she had no children. He died in the army. She was again married, to Wiley Williams, in the winter of 1864-65; has no children.

Alexander Ayres Jencks married Martha Bonafield. They have one child living, named Byron; two dead. They live in Chester Township. Ayers served three years in the army, and then in the veteran service. He was in over twenty battles and unhurt.

Mary Jencks married a Mr. Wellman; has no children.

Robert Nelson Jencks died at Knoxville, Tennessee, while in the army.

There were twelve from the Jencks' family who served in the Federal Army, besides a son of the writer of this work; three of

whom lost their lives. Quite a number of them saw hard service, and were in many a hard-fought battle.

#### ANN JENCKS' FAMILY.

Ann Jencks, the youngest child of Stephen Jencks, Sr., married John B. Tyler, in Fayette County, Indiana, and settled in the county. They afterward moved, and settled in Wabash County, though not in the same neighborhood with her brothers, but near the towns of America and Ashland, where they have lived ever since. They had several children, named William, Alexander, Clark E., Asa, Oliver, and Lorenzo Dow. They had one daughter, who is dead.

William Tyler, their eldest, married Elizabeth Spaulding, and had several children. He died in the summer of 1858, of typhoid fever. Left four children.

Alexander Tyler has several children; names not known to me.

Clark E. Tyler married and has one boy six or eight years old. Clark served three years in the army, and then in the veteran service as lieutenant in the artillery. He was in many a hard-fought battle.

Asa Tyler married a Miss Bruner, and has one or two children.

Oliver Tyler is married and has one child.

Lorenzo Dow Tyler is the youngest child, and remains single.

John B. Tyler was an excellent man; truthful and honest, but too indulgent to his family. I liked him much. He was born March 30, 1792 (as he informed me in the fall of 1863), and consequently his age was seventy-four years, nine months, and seven days at the time of his death, which took place on the 6th of January, 1867. He had been very feeble for several years.

With much labor, through a series of years, I have succeeded in collecting the family records of a considerable number of my relatives. In collecting this information I have become acquainted with a variety of opinions and modes of thought, in common-place matters, and also a wide range of opinions in regard to religion. In many I have observed a great lack in the philosophy of the human mind, and in much that goes to make up a man's or woman's character for good.

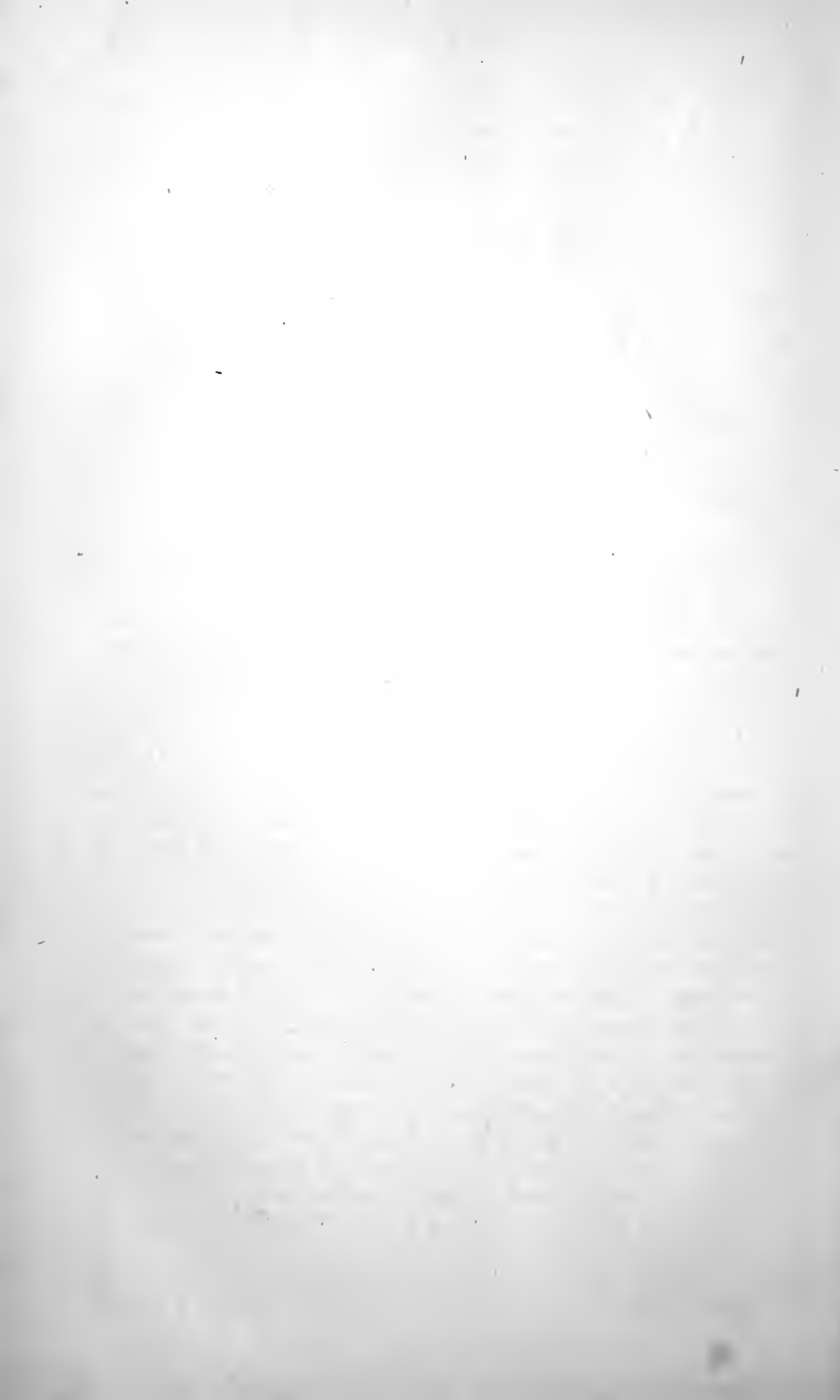
Although I have in this work a long article on "Education," and often speak of the importance of correctly training children in their infancy, and during the whole of their early life, up to matu-

rity, yet I can not too strongly or fully point out to mothers the duty they owe to themselves and their offspring.

It is the mind of the *mother* that influences the character of the offspring, even before birth. From its birth, even to mature years, a constant and continued impression should be kept up upon the mind of the child. It should be carefully taught in all that will be useful in after life. The why and the wherefore of things can not be too often or too fully explained, and it should be done in such a manner, by oral instruction, as to please and interest the child. If the proper system of instruction be adopted, one not acquainted with the mode will be surprised at the great amount—a child will learn without ever seeing a book. The principle is, to teach it to do right in all things, and at all times, and in all places. It is *Love* that governs the world, and not *Fear*, and the dread of a vindictive God. Great pains are taken by some to tell children how much God hates, and how much he will punish, and how wrathful he will be, and finally send them all to hell. This is all wrong. It is not the teaching of the gentle Nazarene. Love is the commandment. Teach children that right doing begets good results; that wrong doing begets bad results; and that it is to the true interest of all to do right in all things. All this is easily explained, even to children, and is susceptible of being demonstrated in a great variety of ways.

To raise something to wear and something to eat is more essential than a formal prayer. “Get wisdom, it is above riches or fine gold.” Act wisely in all things. To be wise is to act in conformity with the laws of our being in all our relations. By so doing we will be right in all that we do.

We must teach by example, as much that is necessary to be learned can *only* be learned by practical application, under the direction of a competent teacher. A child should be strictly under the care of a skillful and practical instructor. Mind, like the body, can only be developed by exercise. He who will patiently and carefully read the several records herein contained, can not fail to discover the different results, even in the same family, owing to the difference in the development of the mind; and if a closer observation could have been made, there would be no difficulty in determining the cause; or, if I had felt myself at liberty to have pointed out defects, I could give lessons of instruction of immense value to all who would receive them.





## PART SECOND.

# AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

---

A SHORT BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF MYSELF CAN NOT OTHERWISE  
THAN BE INTERESTING TO MY CHILDREN.

I have been so much afflicted by disease, through my whole life, that a brief statement at the outset seems important.

From my cradle to the present period, I have been subject to irregular periodical returns of an eruption of the skin, accompanied with an intolerable itching and burning sensation, lasting for six or eight days, sometimes, and often confining me to my bed, and leaving me weak, requiring several days to restore strength. The difficulty was an anomaly, and one which, I have no doubt, I inherited from my mother. In childhood, though physicians were consulted, but little good was effected. After I became fully grown, the periods were more severe and intolerant. I consulted physicians. They gave but little or no satisfaction; looked wise and stood near with all due dignity of the profession! In my moments of exquisite suffering, I would try first one, and then another remedy, with but little perceptible effect, until I used the lancet. By free and copious depletion by that instrument, and by saline cathartics and starvation, I found great mitigation from its intolerance. This course, often repeated, soon broke down a vigorous constitution; at the same time it did not prevent occasional returns of the difficulty, though it was somewhat modified in its character. Although I was thus afflicted, I passed through all the specific diseases common to early life, except the small-pox. This I probably avoided by vaccination. How far I was protected from febrile diseases, I can not say; yet it is probable that it had an influence, as I never suffered from any until my system was broken down. Then I fell a prey to the whole catalogue of bilious diseases common to the West. I am now well satisfied that a much

larger share of happiness and good health would have been my lot, if I had only exercised what now seems to me common sense, namely: an abstemious mode of living, and an occupation in life which would have maintained the greatest equilibrium of the circulation, with moderate exercise. Modern philosophy and pathology would certainly have dictated such a course. Notwithstanding the vast improvements in science and the arts, the masses of mankind seem doomed to learn only in the dear school of experience.

As stated in my Family Record, I was born in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. A short time after my birth, my father moved from Adams to Fairfield, in the northern part of Herkimer County, New York. This country was then, except along the Mohawk River, a wilderness (this had been settled by the Dutch), and my father settled in a log cabin in the woods, on one hundred acres of land, which he owned. Here the family lived until I was nearly ten years old. It was here that I spent my childhood. In a log-cabin school-house, half a mile distant, I was taught my A B C's by an old-fashioned pedagogue. Though I have forgotten his name, his looks were so impressed upon the tablets of memory that they are often recalled to mind. He was a crusty, austere man, past the middle age of life. There yet dwell upon my mind unpleasant recollections of those school-boy days, under the instructions of the ferule; tasked in hard, and, to me, unmeaning lessons, which we were made to memorize, or learn without instruction, or even explanation. Such was my antipathy to one of those knights of the ferule, in particular, that I dreaded him, and refused to go to school. I well recollect a certain occasion, among the first of my going to school, that I refused. A girl, living in our family, was sent with me most of the way to the school-house, to encourage me; but with all her coaxing and threats, I returned with her, and coaxed my mother to let me stay at home. I crawled under the table, where she was ironing, to keep out of sight of my father; a striking lesson of instruction to those capable of being instructed. Government by fear was the order of that day. What a shameful idea! One that tyrants have always resorted to in government and religion.

At this period of my life, now seventy-two, I contrast this mistaken and God-forsaken mode with that soft, sweet voice of love, mixed with reproof and lessons of instruction, that unfold the wisdom and beauty of nature's divine government. What a contrast! The one, revolting and repulsive; the other, ennobling, and developing the divinity in man. Though this dark picture was left

upon the mind from misdirected instruction, there are many pleasing reminiscences of childish sports and gambols during those early days. The old log-cabin, with the straight-up chimney back; the door opening to the south; a little to the east of the door, the well, with the old wooden bucket dangling to the well-pole, are yet fresh in my memory, as is also a favorite boulder, of considerable size, a short distance north of the cabin. The purling rill, that meandered south, and not far off, were centers of attraction for myself, brothers, and our playmates. Many were our childish pleasures, in those primitive days, though even they were not unalloyed, for we had our childish troubles, as well as our golden days.

In the fall of 1802 my father moved into the town of Warren, in the southern part of the county of the same name, eighteen miles distant from our old home. Our new one opened upon new scenes; with a different dwelling and surroundings, the landscape differed widely from our old home. Our old residence was near a plain, and our neighbors were shut out from view. Here our new residence was on an elevation; we could not only see our neighbors', but for the distance of twenty miles, even to one-fourth of the horizon, could be seen dotted with fine farms and romantic scenery. All seemed strange, and greatly altered. I grew homesick, and longed for our old play-grounds and companions. In a short time my brothers and self formed the acquaintance of a family of three brothers by the name of Tysdale, with whom we contracted a friendship that lasted as long as I remained in the country. In this move we gained nothing in educational advantages. On one side of us was an old Dutch settlement, where the people brought up their children in their mother tongue, and were slow to patronize an English school. Through the exertions of my father, a school-house was erected on a corner of his land, in which we had an occasional school, where I learned to write, though but indifferently, and also acquired a knowledge of the simple rules of arithmetic. My fifteenth year ended my schooling, or instruction by pedagogues. Though an illiterate man himself, in a great measure, yet my father was not insensible to the advantages of an education, and under different circumstances would have given to each of his children an opportunity for obtaining a good one. When I was about thirteen years of age, my father became a member of an association which had a circulating library. I shall never forget the first book he brought home from that library. It was the history of King Philip's War, the great Indian warrior of New England. It was a great curiosity, and a new era in the

family. I had access to this library until I was twenty years of age, and, although I was so situated that I had but little leisure for reading, yet it created a taste for books, which was constantly increasing, and did more toward developing the mind than all else beside.

I soon found that books and knowledge, independent of everyday pursuits, gave consequence among informed men, whom the masses had to look up to, and upon whom they were, to a certain extent, dependent.

During the spring, previous to my attaining my sixteenth year, I was in poor health, induced by those periodical spells of which I have spoken. My father advised, and procured me a primary school, which I taught for three months, with a success beyond the expectations of many. This should have taught my father a lesson as to my future course, but my health had improved, and at the end of the quarter I went home.

My father was engaged in having his new house built and had house joiners at work. The thing was new to me, and I had a curiosity to try the tools. I soon manifested mechanical skill; was praised and flattered by the "boss" workman, who soon desired me to become an apprentice. My boyish vanity was flattered, and my father, unfortunately, yielded his consent, and an arrangement was entered into for me to learn the trade of a house carpenter and joiner. The business led me from place to place. The comforts of home were lost. The "boss" was an unscrupulous man, dollar-making being his dominant passion. He only cared for his apprentices and journeymen as they earned him dollars. My father dying when I was a little over eighteen years of age, I had to fight my own battles. My dislike for Gardner, the "boss," grew into hatred, which embittered all my feelings. Soon after the age of twenty I gave him an everlasting slip; and to this day the recollection of him causes repulsive feelings toward him. Poor creature! he paid the debt of nature within the last six years, in Knoxville, Knox County, Illinois, to which place he removed from Herkimer County, New York, where I had served the low, groveling man. I hope ere this he has somewhat progressed in that fair spirit land to a higher plane of being.

On leaving this man, and I was almost about to say, my native land, from which my feelings had become estranged, I went into the town of Scipio, Cayuga County, New York. Here I resided for more than two years and followed my trade, first as a journeyman, and then set up on my own account. While residing in this town a circumstance occurred a few days after I became twenty-

one years of age, which was of lasting benefit to me. It transpired one evening during the first part of January, at a little cross-road village, in a bar-room at a tavern where I was boarding. Several persons came in and were seated around the bar-room fire. Soon a conversation sprang up between a blacksmith, who lived in the place, and others, on the subject of chemistry, and the hardening and welding of cast-steel. They talked of oxygen, carbon, and hydrogen, in connection with metals and their affinities, which was all new to me. I did not so much as understand the word chemistry, much less any of the principles it taught. The blacksmith was a plain, unassuming man, advanced beyond the middle age of life. I approached him after the most of the company had left, and inquired by what means I could get some knowledge of chemistry. He referred me to Park's Chemistry, then an excellent work, and informed me that it was in a circulating library, in an adjoining neighborhood. I procured the work, and before spring—although I was absent from the place a month or more—by the aid of a glossary it contained, I acquired quite a smattering of the science. This was a new awakening of the intellect. It opened a new field for investigation, and in the right direction—the acquisition of knowledge in accordance with the laws of nature. This occurrence proved of much benefit to me in the stimulus given for the proper investigation of subjects. This old blacksmith understood the welding of cast-steel by the use of borax, and hardening by the addition of some substance in water, a thing but little known in that early day.

A short time after the occurrence in the bar-room, as mentioned above, I returned to Warren to see my mother and the family. I also made a visit into Massachusetts, to the place where I was born, and where my grandfather had left me a small patrimony. I had an uncle residing there—my father's brother. To him I sold my patrimony in my grandfather's estate, which was an interest in a piece of land; and, after visiting a brother of my mother's and his family, who lived in the same township, where I spent some days very pleasantly, I returned to my mother's. On my way back, as I was going into Troy, on the Hudson River, the cannon boomed in consequence of Jackson's victory in the battle at New Orleans; and at my mother's, some days after, the roar of the cannon announced the news of peace. In Troy I bought a few tools which I much needed to carry on my business. During my stay with my mother I sold her my interest in my father's estate; and with a horse and some old gears I fitted up a one-horse sleigh, called a pung in those days, as it had a tongue, which went on the off side

of the horse, with a cross-piece on the end; to this was fastened a strap that went over the horse's neck, and by it and the other gears the horse guided the sleigh, and held it back in going down hill. Into this cheaply and rudely gotten up pung I packed some plain timber I had laid up some two years before, which with my tools constituted my load. I jumped aboard and bid my friends good-bye for a time, and started back to my new home.

On the way I called on an aunt, a sister of my father's, who was married to a second husband, and then living in Madison County. Here I spent a pleasant day and two nights. I reached home safely, or rather the family with whom I made my home. Here I made for myself one or two sets of planes, a moving plow, and a tool chest, and sundry articles, so that I was well prepared for a summer's work.

While living with this family I enjoyed myself much. They had a large family. Two sons were young men, one a little older than myself, and the other younger. They had a sister, a young woman grown. Their names were Lapham, and said to be distantly connected with my mother. There resided in the same neighborhood a sister of my mother's, who was married to a man by the name of Hussey. They had a large family, quite a number of them grown. With them I had made my home, and passed the time very pleasantly. There was another family by the name of Bowen with whom I became acquainted and visited. There were two brothers about my own age with whom I spent many a pleasant hour when otherwise unemployed. There were several other families with whom I became acquainted, and enjoyed myself much in their society. The two years that I spent in this town were the happiest of my life; free as air, wanted for nothing, as my labor brought me means far beyond my immediate wants. My health was good, except occasional spells of my old complaint. I differed from most young men with whom I was acquainted, though I found a few like myself, anxious to lay by means for future use or wants. This desire to lay by kept me from all extravagance or useless expenditure, except occasionally a little pocket money.

The neighborhood in which I principally lived were Quakers. Their influence extended over the whole township. The inhabitants were mostly persons who had settled and cleared the forest, and trained their families to habits of economy. There was no lack of sociability among young or old. The young people had in the fall and winter frequent meetings, where, in social parties, the time was spent most agreeably. Their dress was plain and neat;

their manners courteous, affable and sincere. The fast, young-America principle was unknown, but instead they observed a steady, straight-forward course, with reasonable expenditures, and the spare dollar was carefully laid by for future use. During the first year of my residence in this town I courted my first wife. After my return from my Eastern visit we came to the conclusion to marry at once, and then make preparations for a permanent settlement. On the 9th of March, 1815, we were married. A few days previous to our marriage we attended the wedding of Amilie Lapham, one of my friends before spoken of. He and his wife in turn, with several others, attended ours. After a few visits among our friends, and a special one to my Uncle Hussey's family, we, by the desire of my wife's father, made his house our home. My wife lived with her father's family while I was absent during the week days engaged at my trade. Thus we spent the summer and fall and also a portion of the winter. We had a large circle of young acquaintances in the immediate neighborhood with whom we occasionally spent some time, most on Sunday afternoons, although a week's hard labor generally prepared me for enjoying a day of rest on Sunday with the society of my wife.

The winter came. I had, by the advice of my wife's father, concluded to emigrate to Indiana, in the spring of 1816. To prepare for this it was necessary for me to take a trip to Adams, Massachusetts, to collect the money due me from my patrimony sold the year before. I started on foot, as I had done before, to return to my mother's, and as I had done on leaving home the first time for the West. While at my mother's, she proposed that Horatio, my younger brother, should accompany me, even to the Far West. I went to Adams, Massachusetts, collected the money due me, bid my uncles good-bye, and returned to my mother's. During my absence my brother, Horatio, had been fitted out. The time came for leaving. We shouldered our knapsacks, and bidding them a long farewell, we started. It was midwinter, with snow on the ground. We walked a distance of over one hundred miles, to my father-in-law's, where my wife was. We allotted for our first day's walk over thirty miles, to our uncle's, in Madison County, my usual place of stopping. The afternoon of the first day it snowed, which made it laborious walking. Night was approaching, and we had yet some miles to go before reaching our much desired stopping place. My brother became much fatigued, and I shall never forget that day's toil and my brother's weariness. I took his pack, and encouraged him on by all the means in my power. At last quarters seemed miles. We both feared we would fail in

our object. Darkness came, but with it our much desired haven of rest, namely, our uncle's, where we received a hearty welcome at their cheering fireside, and to their loaded table, and soft downy beds, and protection from a pelting storm. Next morning we arose, feeling refreshed; and after a warm and luxurious breakfast, the roads having become beaten, as they soon were (it being a great public highway), we bade our kind uncle and aunt good-bye (it was the last time that I ever saw them) and started onward towards our next point of destination, my wife's father's, which we reached in due time. Found all well, and a warm and ready welcome home, my brother being also cordially received. I had some business to close up, and arrangements to make, preparatory to our starting for Indiana Territory. My brother engaged for one Humphrey Howland to obtain petitioners to the Legislature of New York, praying the construction of the New York and Erie Canal. The time at last came for us to start West, and with it came bad health to my wife; yet her father and mother advised going. We started; my brother accompanying us. We commenced our journey in sleighs, the fore part of March, with two other families, acquaintances of ours and friends of my father-in-law's family. Our second day out we had to exchange our sleighs for wagons. After two days' hard travel and much trouble and fatigue over bad roads, through a new and almost uninhabited country, we reached our destination—Olean Point, a small village on the second bank of the Alleghany River, and situated in a lumber region, where an extensive business was carried on from it down the river. It was night when we drove into the town or village, and it was with much difficulty that we could get lodgings for the night, and then only obtained by using our own beds on the floor of the tavern. Our only alternative was to build us houses or shanties out of pine boards. We were so fortunate as to find lumber, and obtain it for a shanty building, which we erected by sticking poles in the ground two and two together, and putting the plank edges between the poles. The snow had fallen, the day before and during the night, about a foot deep. This we had to clear away from the ground before building. We succeeded in getting up two rooms, fourteen feet square, floored and roofed, shed fashion. One served as a kitchen, and the other as a parlor, bed-room, and store-room. Here we lived two weeks, waiting for the river to rise, and for a raft to take us down the stream, as steamboats were unknown in those waters. While waiting here I tried my hand at building a skiff, which I so far succeeded in accomplishing as to produce one that served us an excellent purpose on the river.



The much desired time came, and we went on board of a raft, with all our baggage, and launched out in the stream. It was a fine pleasant day, and the prospect was cheering. We were again on our way to the Far West. Our hopes beat high, and joy swelled each bosom; but, alas! how soon the fairest hopes may be blasted! Long before sundown the raft which went out before us had doubled on the point of an island, a noted place, a short distance above Red House Eddy. The pilot, on board of our raft, became excited, on account of the disaster to the other. He took another shoot, and stuck fast on what was called Sunfish Bar. After some delay and much labor, we got off, and ran down to the eddy. Both rafts belonged to the same man. The next day all hands from both rafts were engaged in getting the raft, which had doubled around the point of the island, off. These rafts are built in squares, and securely fastened at the four corners, so that these squares are very difficult to break up. A raft is made by these squares being fastened together. In width, they are from the width of one square to four; and in length, from one to two hundred feet. These squares or platforms, as they are called, were taken from the island to the eddy and rafted over. This was a new business to our party, as not one of us knew any thing of navigating any kind of water craft, but we soon proved ourselves apt scholars. Necessity works wonders. This eddy afforded a fine harbor for rafts, and was much used for that purpose. On the east bank of the eddy resided a celebrated Indian chief. His house was a frame building, and was painted red; hence the name Red House Eddy. Back of the house rose a mountain; the side of which was literally covered with the evergreen, known as the wintergreen, whose berries were then ripe. It was an attractive sight, the green running vine with a beautiful red berry. An hour was spent by several of our party in rambling over the mountain side and gathering the berries; the flavor of which was at first pleasant, but soon cloyed.

All things being ready, we launched out upon the river again, and soon commenced descending the stream. The river was low for rafting, and the pilot was not without apprehension of grounding on shoals and bars. The accommodations on one of these rafts were rather slim. To protect us from the storms, boards were put up on one of the squares or platforms; one end resting on the platform, the other elevated to a ridge pole in the center. The ends were boarded up, and a doorway left open in front, except when the wind blew from that direction, and then it was closed. In front of the door, and on the next platform, a box was fitted

up, filled with earth, on which fire was kept, which served us for cooking. In pleasant weather our quarters were comfortable enough. The constant change in scenery along the river, as we floated onward towards our destination, cheered us on, giving evidence of man's adaptation to surrounding circumstances and even enjoyment of the same.

We occasionally passed what was called a pirogue (a tree dug out and shaped like a canoe, and large enough to take in a common-sized barrel), and filled from stem to stern, except a small place in the bow, middle, and stern, sufficient for a man to stand in. Three men constituted the crew. With poles made for the purpose this craft was pushed up the stream with its load. When night overtook them, they went ashore, fastened their craft, built a fire, cooked and ate their meals, and camped on the ground. It required considerable skill to navigate one of these pirogues, when loaded, up against a strong, swift current. In the early history of this country a considerable business was done by this mode of navigation. The transportation of commodities to and from Pittsburg to various points on the Alleghany made it quite a business. What a contrast with the steamboats that are now employed in carrying on the same kind of trade.

In due time we landed at Pittsburg, where we lay a couple of days. We went ashore, rambled over the place, looked into the stores and begrimed shops; now and then we noticed a huge volume of smoke issuing from vast chimneys and sometimes smaller ones. The whole city was blackened with this coal smoke. Our curiosity was greatly excited. The burning of stone coal, the coal itself, was new to us. The manners and customs of the people were different; their dialect, or provincial language, new to us. We seemed to have got into a strange land and among a strange people, with new habits and occupations. The landscapes were pleasing and interesting. The lilac, with its violet hue, the peach, unfolding its blushing blossom, afforded a wide contrast to the snow-covered ground and white-capped hills of the upper river, which we had left some ten days before. To pass so suddenly from dreary winter to blooming spring was cheering as well as new.

While lying at Pittsburg, the two rafts had been united into one, the pilots discharged, a chart of the Ohio River substituted, and we again launched out, and were upon that "beautiful river." Nothing of much interest occurred until we passed Maysville, Kentucky. The last night but one that we were out, about sundown, I had returned from the village, where I had made a small purchase of some articles we needed. As the sun went down the

moon rose in all its beauty. The wind, that had blown a gentle breeze all day, calmed. All was loveliness. A delightful prospect for the last night on our floating home. The early night was my watch. I went to my task with a light and cheerful heart, thinking it my last in navigation.

About eleven o'clock, as my watch was about to terminate, there arose a fearful wind, which threatened us with utter destruction. A scene was presented such as I had never witnessed before. Prayers, screams, cursing, and swearing, all in one mingled mass of sound. The owner of the raft seemed composed, but unwilling to take control. I importuned him in vain. He urged me to do so, and stated that he would risk all in my hands; gave me his reasons, and urged the control on me. I knew every hand on board. By prompt action and a proper appeal to the more calm and considerate, I soon had all safe, though the wind was blowing up stream, and dashing the water for some distance on the raft, and it was difficult to go from one end to the other; the raft yielding to the waves, the different portions alternately rising and falling. In a few hours the wind abated. Early next morning we landed in the mouth of the Little Miami. The flood in the Ohio backed water up the Miami, and here we lay until the next day. I shall never forget an incident that occurred during the night of the storm, and our landing in the mouth of the Miami. At Pittsburg the owner of the raft made a contract with a man, who professed to be well acquainted with the river and the navigation of a raft, to take charge of the navigation of his raft to Cincinnati. This man was one of those self-conceited kind of men, possessing but little executive powers. He was generally obeyed, in consequence of his situation, not from love or respect for his qualifications. During the storm he lost all control over himself, and consequently over the men on board. If his advice had been listened to, we probably would have been lost.

When the storm came on, which was sudden, we were in an open, unwooded country; the river banks were low, and there was nothing to protect us from the violence of the wind and waves. He was anxious to land, but no one heeded him. It was in this state of affairs that the owner requested me to take charge. After a time we reached the woods; the bottom was overflowed, and among the trees the waves were still rolling. The captain wanted to land, but to have done so would have dashed us to pieces against the trees, by the action of the waves. The storm abated before we had a chance to land. Daylight came, and with it our approach to the mouth of the Little Miami River. It was thought best to sep-

arate the two rafts, and run them into that stream, where we intended to land. The rafts were soon separated, and the captain took charge of one, and I of the other. Mine was soon ahead of his, by our industry and superior management. In every bend we ran from point to point. It was more labor, but we were ambitious to beat, and did not regard a little extra toil. At last we were within sight of the mouth of the river, but to our dismay there was a large sycamore tree directly in the mouth of the stream, with the roots of the tree, which were very large, toward the Ohio river. The space was small, requiring skillful management to enter the mouth of the Miami. I placed all the best men at the hindmost oars, and took the shoot for the channel, and as soon as the front part of the raft struck the eddy water, sent all but one hand to the hindmost oars. By a rapid and quick movement the hindpart of the raft was kept up, so that we missed entirely the roots of the tree. By means of a line we soon had the raft sufficiently up the stream to admit a free passage for the other raft. It hove in sight, and as well as it was possible we indicated by signs the course to be pursued; but in spite of all our advice he was soon against the tree, roots and all, and a portion of the hinder end of the raft was acted on by the current of the Ohio, but by means of a cable and all hands from both rafts, with the assistance of pries and poles, we got the raft into the eddy water of the Miami. After it was in our men shouted, until the would-be captain was completely cowed. It was a subject of remark through the day that an inexperienced waterman like myself should excel an old hand. It was a lesson to me, to first learn what was proper to be done, and then do it with promptitude and decision, and where there is a natural lack, the more study and application is requisite to insure success. It is industry and application that wins. Idleness or inattention will seldom succeed in any pursuit, however trifling.

On the morning of the 14th day of April, 1816, we landed safely at Cincinnati, just below Main street. We procured an old log house to live in, yet it was comfortable. It stood on the bank of the river. We were not long in getting our luggage to our new quarters, and bade a last farewell to what had been our floating home. The ill-fated raft was, by some unknown means, loosened from its moorings, during one night, and with it went my darling skiff, from which, and the raft, I never heard more.

My brother had left me at Pittsburg for high wages on another raft, which was to leave the next day after we left. He overtook us after we had landed in Cincinnati. After being domiciled in that city, our first object was to replenish our stock of provisions,

and provide for our departure in search of our intended new homes. The two families which accompanied us to this place proposed settling on Tod's Fork, on the Little Miami; I on the Whitewater, a tributary of the Big Miami. Now came the parting scene, with mingled emotions of buoyant hope for the future and regret at the separation of friends—I for my fancied paradise, the Whitewater, and they for theirs on the Fork. Our wives were left in our log-cabin home, my brother remaining with them. I started in company with a young man who came down the river as a hand on the raft. On foot, we took what was then known as the Taylor Creek Road, to Harrison. Since then a fine turnpike road has been made, varying but little from the old road. Our first day's walk took us thirty-six miles, to Casey's Mills, four miles below Brookville, where a high feeder-dam now stands. The next morning we continued our journey, passed through Brookville, and up the West Fork of Whitewater to Vannmeter's Mill, one and a half miles below where Laurel now stands. Here we crossed the river and went west, about three-fourths of a mile, to the residence of three of my wife's brothers, who had preceded us two years before. They gave us a hearty welcome, their wives joining with them. They all were soon together; the friends left behind in Scipio were talked of, and the incidents of our journey all narrated—a bright spot in their history. We remained there but a short time, when they fitted out a team, and we started back for my wife, and what little of this world's goods we had. Two days took us back to the city. The young man who had accompanied me out returned with me, and at the city we separated, and I never saw him more. We found all well. Our male friends had not returned. Now came the hour for separating with those who had been our companions on the river. It was a final separation, as I have never seen but one of the party since, and that was a Mr. Samuel Southwick, who, after reverses in his family and property, settled near Louisville, Henry County, Indiana. He has since paid the debt of nature, leaving two sons, one of whom has also gone to the spirit land. We loaded the wagon with our goods, and accompanied by my wife, we started back, my brother also accompanying me. We reached our destination, over bad roads, a thing not uncommon in a new country. My wife, as her bad health continued, seemed pleased that our journey was ended, and she once more among some of her near relatives. It was soon arranged that myself and wife should live in the house—a simple log cabin—with my wife's brother, Samuel Jenks, the youngest of the three brothers, his family being the smallest. With them we remained nearly nine

months. My brother Horatio working as he could get employment, from place to place. The country being new, and I not being able to get any work at my trade, accepted a proposition to remain with my brother-in-law and raise a crop of corn. It had been the fashion of the country to clear the ground of the timber or forest trees by girdling, and grubbing the bushes, which were thick, especially a bush called the spice bush. The grubbing was done by a tool nearly two feet long, one end of which was a blade three or three and a half inches wide, strong, with a sharp steel edge, and standing like a hoe; the other end was not so stout, made flat, three inches wide, and brought to a sharp edge, to be used as an ax. In the center was an eye, diamond-shaped, for a handle, by which the tool was used. This is a most excellent instrument for grubbing bushes and even small saplings. After the grubbing was done, the small timber, eighteen inches and under, was cut down, the brush and wood burned up, the larger being left standing on the ground, to be cleared off as time and circumstances would permit. The cut-worm made its appearance with the first approach of vegetation. What little corn had been planted early was entirely eaten up by this worm. My wife's brothers had considerable land cleared, as above described. The tops of trees, and at the time of high wind the bodies of dead trees, would fall during the summer, doing more or less injury to the growing crop. We went immediately to work and cut all the timber down, and burnt it up before we planted. That season was known throughout the United States as the cold summer, so much so that in the New England States and New York very little corn was raised. We finished planting our corn on the morning of the 7th day of June, our fingers suffering from the cold. Though we had frost early in October, which injured our corn, yet we had what might be said to have been good crops, yielding at least fifty bushels of good corn to the acre.

My father-in-law started with his family from his late home in the town of Scipio, Cayuga County, State of New York, about the 7th of June, 1816, for the Far West, and to the place where his sons had settled. The day they started they were in the midst of a snow storm, which was somewhat unseasonable for the time of year. Reached their sons sometime in the month of July, traveling in wagons the entire distance, which was some seven hundred or eight hundred miles.

The Valley of the West Fork of Whitewater River was at this time a new country from Brookville up, having been settled in 1812, during the war with Great Britain; and, though they were

not in open hostility with the Indians, the inhabitants were kept in so much fear of it that a military force had been organized, and block houses erected throughout the entire Valley. The proximity of the settlement to an Indian country on the west, extending to the western boundary of the State, and north to its northern limits, was not in those times calculated to inspire the new settlers with a feeling of perfect security.

The country was not only new but destitute of improvements. The place where my brothers-in-law lived and owned land was nearly two miles below where Laurel now stands. On the same side of the river, a mile from their residence and on the river, was constructed a mill for grinding corn. There was no mill for grinding wheat nearer than Brookville, a distance of twenty miles. There were no stores for the retail of goods.

A few years afterwards the town of Somerset was laid off, half a mile below where Laurel is now situated, and two men by the names of Babbitt and Edgerton opened a small store of goods at retail. They were Connecticut men, but their business did not prove very successful, as the country was new and the inhabitants poor in every thing but land. It might be said that there was no market nearer than Cincinnati, a distance of sixty miles, and that over most wretched roads. All the business was done by barter between the inhabitants. All the money that was in the country was brought in by emigrants, and only paid out for articles of provision and a cow. These could not be dispensed with. The clothing was manufactured by families, with the common spinning wheel and looms, from wool and flax. Shoes were made from leather tanned in a rude manner, and as rudely made. Plows and farming implements, of the most simple kind, were manufactured by indifferent blacksmiths. The plow was the common shovel plow mostly, though a few called the barshare were used. This was a bar on the land side, with a broad flat share running to a point at the forward end, attached to a colter, with a steel nose in front. The colter extended up through the wooden beam of the plow; two wooden handles, one attached to the beam and to the bar of the land side of the plow, the other handle connected with a wooden moldboard, which pressed out the dirt and partially turned it. It was connected with the other handle by wooden pins or rounds. To the plow horses were attached often without an iron clevis. The double-tree was connected by a wooden fixture not unlike a clevis; the single-tree fastened to the double-tree with a hickory withe; sometimes with a kind of wooden clevis. The horses were mostly geared for plowing with a collar made of corn-

shucks; hames, made from the roots of the ash or oak, fashioned, as best they could be, with a drawing knife; a hole, top and bottom, so as to fasten with a cord, or a thong made from some raw hide; not uncommonly, a hole was made with an augur, near the middle of the hame, to take in the trace, which was made from hemp or flax-tow, and spun and made on a rude ropewalk. The trace was run through the hole in the hame, and secured by a knot, and looped over the end of the single-tree, on which there was a notch at the back part to keep it in place. For a back-band a strong piece of tow cloth, doubled, was used. The horses were guided by a bridle, with iron bits, a rope headstall, and rope line; mostly driven with one line. When using two horses they were coupled together at the bit by a rope; sometimes by a stick, with strings tied to the stick, and then to the bridle bit. Double lines were seldom used in driving one or two horses. Even a four-horse team was driven with a single line attached to the near forward horse. These were the primitive days of the country. Salt and iron were obtained from Cincinnati; and fortunate was he who could, by any means, obtain salt enough to preserve his meat and salt his food. Corn was often sold for six cents a bushel, and wheat for twenty-five cents; and it was difficult to get money at that, and then only in small amounts. Salt was often as high as two and a half and three dollars a bushel.

Connersville, in 1816, had a few log houses, and one small retail store. Our mails were only weekly, and were carried on horse-back. What a contrast with the present! We now have fourteen pairs of mill-stones; eight large dry-goods' stores; one large hardware store; four drug and variety stores; four jewellers' establishments for fancy articles and the repairing of watches, etc.; two large pork houses, where from twenty to twenty-five thousand hogs are packed yearly; turnpikes, in two directions, to Cincinnati, and others coming into town; a canal from here to the city, and also a railroad to the same place, besides two others, now in progress of construction, running in different directions through this place. To these may be added the many and great improvements in agricultural implements of all kinds; many of which are manufactured in this town. A greatly improved plow, besides harrows, spades, shovels, pitchforks, wagons; and to these may be added a horse rake, for the raking of hay; reaping machines; mowing machines; machines for gathering clover seed, etc., etc. Besides all this, we have an almost endless variety of buggies and carriages. All these improvements within forty-four years, it now being 1866.



By far the largest number of these improvements have been made within the last twenty years. But to return to my narrative.

On the arrival of my father-in-law there was a general jubilee among us, as his family, with but one exception, a daughter residing in Vermont, were now all together. We spent several days in talking over old times and family matters. Our living was corn-bread, mostly baked in what was called corn-dodger; that is, corn-meal wet up with cold water, and baked in small rolls in an iron vessel with a lid. This, with salt meat, milk and butter, with a few vegetables, constituted our daily living. With this fare, and our friends' society, we were contented, and as happy as people under more favorable circumstances are very often. In the month of June my wife became the mother of a fine son, to present to her relations on their arrival. With the birth of our babe she had regained her former health and good spirits. After the first few days spent with our friends we began to mature plans for a permanent location for the whole family. It was finally decided that we would examine the Wabash country, and soon made up a party to view the country and make the necessary investigations. The party consisted of my father-in-law, Mr. Stephen Jenks, his son Samuel, myself and brother Horatio, and a man named Bush, who had resided for several years in the West, and was a good backwoods' man.

Early in August we set out, after taking leave of our friends, who were to remain behind. Having provided ourselves with three horses, and such food as we had, with salt, two or three rifles and ammunition, we set out for Salt Creek, a tributary of the Whitewater, some miles below us. Here we took a trail, which led from Brookville to an old Indian trading house, not far from the East Fork of White River, which is sometimes called Driftwood Fork. From this point we went down White River to where Brownstown now stands. The place had just been laid out as the future county seat of Jackson County. A few men were engaged in clearing the forest for the purpose of erecting buildings. We crossed the Muscatatuk, where the road now runs, not far from its mouth in its junction with White River; thence by a place called Orleans, and thence by Washington, the county seat of Davis County, situated on the road from Louisville, at the falls of the Ohio River, to Vincennes, on the Wabash River. The country between Whitewater and White River is table land, and generally poor beech land. As you approach White River the soil becomes much better. The country, when we passed through in 1816, was entirely uninhabited, with not a house or a clearing.

There were a few farms and houses between where we struck White River and Brownstown; and from there to Vincennes the country was more or less settled, though, in many places, much broken until near Vincennes. From the West Fork of White River, near Washington to Vincennes, the country is mostly a plain, made up of barren and open prairie.

Our stay at Vincennes was only for a few hours. We took our course up the Wabash River to Fort Harrison, a few miles above where Terre Haute now stands. Soon after leaving Vincennes we entered a poor portion of the country, thickly set with the blackberry bush, loaded with ripe berries. It being a lovely afternoon, quite a controversy sprang up about stopping to luxuriate on the ripe berries; but as the roadside was thickly hedged with the bushes, and ripe berries plentiful, we soon became fully satiated with the fruit gathered as we jogged on, and all agreed to push on until we found a good comfortable place for camping all night. Two objects were necessary in a good camping ground: wood and water, to which may be added, dry-ground. By the use of our rifles we could soon strike fire. First, having procured wood and some dry, light material, we soon had a good blazing fire, before which we cooked our meat by putting it on one end of a stick, then sticking the other end in the ground before the fire. Our drink was from some spring or running brook near, or, as we say in the West, creek. Our lodging place was on the bare ground, unless we chose to cut fine brush for a bed which we sometimes did when the ground was wet, using a saddle for a pillow, or sometimes a chunk of wood.

At Busseron Creek we found a society of Shakers, with a fine farm and snug buildings. We stopped with them over night and found comfortable lodgings and good table fare, the first that we had had since leaving home. These people had mills on the creek and were engaged in erecting a splendid flouring mill. The location was an unhealthy one, so much so that the society some years after sold out, and left their well cultivated domain and settled on the Dry Fork of Whitewater River. From the larders of these people we replenished our stock of provisions, and all but my father-in-law left for Fort Harrison. On arriving at the Fort we found it garrisoned by United States troops. We were kindly received and treated, and very fair accommodations were afforded us for one night, the length of time we stopped there. This place was situated on the edge of a beautiful prairie, and not far from the Wabash River. A purchase of lands had been made of the Indians, called "Harrison's Purchase," which extended a short dis-

tance above the Fort, then eastwardly and southwardly across to the Driftwood Fork of Whitewater River. It was brought into market in the fall of 1816. The next morning after reaching Fort Harrison we concluded to retrace our steps.

As we were about to leave an incident occurred between a traveler, whom we had fallen in with, and the commanding officer at the Fort, in which we felt considerable interest. Our traveling companion had a United States yager or rifled musket, which he carried and seemed much attached to, not so much for its value as for its companionship and the security it afforded him. The officer claimed it as the property of the United States. The final result of the matter I never knew, as we left him at the Fort parleying with the officer as to his right of ownership. This man had been with us but a short time, and was anxious to see the country and seemed inclined to stay. We took our leave and returned to the Quaker village. They were what is called the Shakers or Shaking Quakers, and lived in a community as a family, and seemed to be in possession of many comforts and conveniences, and appeared happy. Our father Jenks was pleased to see us.

Having renewed our stock of provisions we took our departure up Busseron Creek, by a dim trail that led through prairies and woods. This trail we soon lost and had to depend upon our own judgment as to our course. We took the sun for our guide, and crossed the West Fork of White River by fording it. From this on we had a thickly wooded country with underbrush to travel through. The ground was covered with pea-vines and nettles, which not only impeded our traveling, but the nettles were intolerable. Notwithstanding this we kept in good spirits, struggled on, and were so fortunate in keeping our course that we came out as we desired, on a creek called the Bean Blossom, not far from a new settlement made the year before. This creek was a remarkable one. We found that the water passed between solid rocks, apparently without any bottom that we could find. In this neighborhood we found the settlement spoken of. The settlers had built for themselves log cabins, cleared small fields, and were then cultivating corn, potatoes, and other vegetables. A little incident occurred at this settlement which was so strongly impressed on my mind that it has never been forgotten. In passing a log cabin we saw, at a short distance from us, what seemed to be a milk-house. We steered for it. It was situated below a small spring. On opening it we found it well stored with crocks filled with milk. No living being was to be seen, either at the cabin or about the premises. The milk was too tempting, and as we had been several

days without this luxury we all took a drink, but left a moderate supply for the owners, and deposited, in open view, a full compensation in money. Whether the money was considered a compensation for the milk taken or not we never knew. Our desire for the lacteal fluid for the moment overcame all scruples as to the morality of the thing. We reasoned thus: there was plenty, the woods afforded fine pasture, and they must have a goodly number of cows, consequently we could not be doing them much if any harm. We soon found a path, made by the settlers, apparently used by them in moving out. This place is near where Bloomington now stands. We took the road and journeyed on, satisfied that it must be right, which, fortunately, proved to be correct, as it brought us out at Brownstown, the place we desired to reach, and the one we had passed through in going out.

Between the settlement spoken of above and Brownstown, we passed over, by a gentle ascent and descent, a very high hill overlooking the whole country. On this hill—it might be called a small mountain—we found the chestnut-tree growing luxuriantly, and the huckleberry, full of ripe berries, on which we feasted to our entire satisfaction. These berries were not to be compared with the blackberries we had eaten near Vincennes, for fineness of taste, or as a luxury. They lack that rich pulp that the blackberry affords. At Brownstown we took our outward-bound road, and commenced retracing our steps homeward. What we had fondly hoped to be our last day out, proved to be a rainy one. In the afternoon it rained hard, and when we had reached the point where we were to leave the Brookville trail for Salt Creek, we could not find the track, and had to be guided by the shape of the hills and course of the ravines, and often wandered from our true course. The sun being obscured, we were without a guide, except the general landmarks and the face of the country. Night overtook us in the valley of a ravine, in a dense forest, besides being wet to our skins by the rain, and wandering through bushes, pea-vines, and other vegetation. Meeting with a fine opportunity to get a goodly supply of dry wood, we halted for the night, and soon had a large blazing fire out of a dry sugar-tree that had been broken down by the wind, and shivered, not far from the ground, the trunk still resting upon the shivered stump. Limbs from its top, and some other fallen trees, afforded us a fine fire all night. We dried ourselves before the blazing fire by frequent turning, like turning a spit with meat hung up to roast. With some blankets we had we erected a shedded tent, by means of a pole supported by forks, stuck in the ground, leaving it open toward the fire, and

some four feet high. The rain had completely saturated the ground with water. We cut brush with the large hatchets we had carried with us the entire route, and with this brush we made a bed under our tent. After all was fitted up, and we had partaken of a very scanty supper, we laid down to sleep. The rain had so far abated that it did not run through our tent covering. The fatigue of the day had wearied us, and soon we were in a sound sleep, forgetful of our toil and the inclement weather. In the morning we awoke refreshed and invigorated, and as well prepared for a new day's labor as though we had lodged in the most comfortable hotel. It is astonishing to an inexperienced man with what ease a person accommodates himself to that which the refined would think horrible and beyond endurance. When not overtaxed with labor, and with plenty of food, though it be coarse, and if sheltered from the storm while sleeping, the human system sustains itself in vigor, and against disease, infinitely better than in the very refined society, attended with downy beds, soft cushions, and easy chairs, and highly-seasoned food. These all serve to enervate and unfit man for the active duties of life. Early in the morning we were on the move in the direction of home, which we reached soon after the middle of the day, after an absence of twenty-two days. We were met with enthusiastic greetings from our wives and friends, who seemed to experience unbounded joy at our safe return in good health and feelings. Some days were spent, after our return, in talking over the incidents met with on our travels, the country passed over, its advantages and disadvantages, etc. We had been, the whole time that we were absent, constantly on the move, lodging wherever night overtook us, and camping upon the ground by some spring or brook. Not more than four or five nights were spent in a house. We found the camp generally afforded more comfortable quarters than the floor of the backwoodsman's log cabin, and very often, at night, we were where no cabin was to be found.

The country up the Wabash River had greatly disappointed us. The streams which ran from the back country into the Wabash were low, sluggish streams, and marshy along their borders. The prairies seemed large, entirely too far from timber, and in many places too wet and swampy. The country was sickly, for in almost every log cabin we came to we found some one sick with fever, or fever and ague. The country was remote from trade or market. The only means of getting off the surplus of the country was by flat-boats down the Wabash to New Orleans. To us the country seemed out of the world of civilization and the conveniences of

civilized life, and to hazard health and suffer privations for a lifetime, was not inviting for us; yet, I have lived to know that the country has its railroad along the very track we then took; and the steamboat plies the river during the spring and fall. The country up Busseron Creek was good land, and from where we crossed White River to the settlement on Bean Blossom Creek was a wooded country, with fine land, but so remote was it from market that to us it seemed next to being out of the world. Finally, we concluded that none of the country that we had seen possessed sufficient inducements to render it advisable for us to settle in any portion of it. At this day a good railroad runs from New Albany up near the Bean Blossom, and north to Michigan City, near the head of Lake Michigan; but at that early day such a thing as a railroad was unknown, and the steamboat was, as yet, an experiment, but few being on the Ohio River, even.

To return to our consultations with a view to our settlement. We concluded to examine the Whitewater Valley its whole length, which adventure we immediately started upon, and took our course down the river, as far as Harrison. We then crossed over the Big Miami to Colerain, a short distance below where the town of Venice is now situated. Father Jenks had an acquaintance living there, who owned a large farm situated immediately on the river. This acquaintance possessed the same migratory disposition which was constantly operating on a large portion of the Western population. He proposed selling his farm, which finally resulted in Father Jenks purchasing it. It was situated on the north side of the river, on a wide and extended rich river bottom. Soon after, he purchased a smaller farm, on the opposite side of the river, with comfortable buildings. To this latter place he moved during the fall. His family then consisted of his wife and two sons, John and William, and also a daughter named Ann. His two sons, Samuel and Jesse, both of whom had families, settled on the large farm on the north side of the river. The location, from some cause, proved an unhealthy one to all the connection that settled there. In a few years the family relations were broken up by death. The old gentleman died in August or September of 1819, and the old lady the next year; and in a few years after the wife of Jesse died. Finally the lands were sold, and the remaining portion of the family left and returned to Whitewater. Samuel settled at his old residence, with his two elder brothers, Stephen and Gideon.

The three brothers had, when they first came to the country, purchased a tract of land in partnership, and had never been

divided. They purchased two other farms, and finally divided off. Gideon moved on a farm he had purchased, immediately adjoining their first purchase, where he lived until his death, and where his widow yet lives. Samuel moved to a farm adjoining Gideon's on the east, across the river, where he lost his first wife. On marrying a second time he left a son of his on the homestead, and went to reside on a farm a mile north, on which his wife lived, and where he is yet living. Jesse, John, and William bought land and settled on it, but finally sold out, and they with their oldest brother, Stephen, settled in Wabash County, eight or nine miles north and east of Lagro, on the Wabash River. Ann, the daughter, married John B. Tyler, and settled near her younger brothers, near America, in Wabash County. They now live near where they first settled.

I have thus digressed from my own narrative in order to interest my children, who are all connected with the Jenks family; and, perhaps, at some future day they may take pleasure in knowing something of the early settlement and privations of those who were connected with them by ties of consanguinity. But to return.

After it was settled that father Jenks at length was located, I returned to my brother-in-law's and looked about for a home for myself. The expense of moving to the country, the expenses of travel and of living, had reduced my somewhat small means so that I was limited in my ability to purchase a home. Finally, I found an eighty acre tract of land, situated on Garrison Creek, a tributary of Whitewater River, and within the present bounds of Fayette County. This I purchased, if my recollection serves me correctly, for five hundred and sixty dollars. To enable me to pay for it, I had to borrow of father Jenks one hundred and sixty dollars, for which I gave him my note.

On the 12th day of January, 1817, I moved with my wife and child into a large log cabin, on the land I had purchased the previous fall. It had been pleasant during the fall and the month of December was warm, so much so that the ground had not yet been frozen, and it continued open up to the 10th day of January, 1817. That night it rained, turned cold, and the next day it snowed, so that the ground was covered to the depth of two or three inches on the morning of the 12th. On the 10th I went to our place and built a fire in the cabin. It had been inhabited by the large family of the man of whom I purchased it. The house was eighteen by twenty-two feet, situated north and south, with a chimney in the north end, out of doors, and the door in the south end, opposite the

fire-place and chimney. It had a window midway on the east side. The lower floor was of puncheons, made by splitting out pieces from a log about six feet long, and dressing off the widest side with a broad-ax, and straightening the edges, and bringing the end down to about four inches, and the ends resting on sleepers. In this manner the whole room was floored below. The walls of the house were built of round logs, laid up nine or ten feet high, the logs hewed down inside and out. The roof rested on poles, called ribs, so laid that they rested on logs laid up at the gable ends, and several courses laid, about three feet apart, sloping up to a ridge. The end logs were cut slanting, so as to correspond with the slant of the roof. Upon these ribs were laid boards, called clapboards, made four feet long and from six to nine inches wide, riven by a fro, from oak blocks, sawed and blocked out. Sometimes they were made from ash. A<sup>d</sup> course was laid on the ribs, and over each joining was laid another board, so that there were nearly two courses in thickness, commencing at the bottom or eve, and butting against the half of a small log split in two, and resting at each end on a log running over the sides of the house some two feet, and a pin put in the end logs on the outside of the pole or split log, to keep the shingles from pressing it out. The next course was laid like the first, the top end resting on the rib above, and the lower end overlapping the course below, so that the water was carried off the course above to the one below. In this way three or four courses covered one side of the roof. To keep the boards to their places, weight-poles were laid on each course at a point so that the course above would butt against the weight-pole below. At each end, over the logs of the gable, a block was laid so the lower end went down against the butting-pole, and the weight-pole above rested against the block, and so on up, so that a block lay between each weight-pole. It is surprising how well these roofs turn the water. The cracks between the logs in the walls of the house were chinked by suitable pieces, split out of some soft wood, such as linn, called by some basswood, and driven from the inside, between the cracks, so as to fill them. Sometimes these pieces were six or eight feet long, and again not more than two feet, depending upon the shape and size of the crack. Thus chinked, the outside was well coated in the cracks with well-tempered clay mortar, sometimes with mortar of lime and sand, often a cheaper mode was adopted. The walls were raised with round logs, no hewing, either inside or out, covered, chinked, and the cracks plastered as before stated. Chimneys were formed by cutting out of one end of the house, generally in the center, a space from five to eight feet wide



and about five feet high, and then building a frame or crib, with split pieces, one end shaped so as to go in between the cracks of the logs where they were cut out, and extending out from three to four feet. The outer ends were notched with a piece to form the back of the chimney. This was carried up as far as the logs were cut out, and the chimney finished by small split sticks laid in well-tempered clay mortar, mixed with cut straw, and so laid as to be entirely covered, inside and out. When stone could be obtained a back and jamb were laid up in clay mortar on the inside of the crib, and a hearth was also laid of stone. When there was no stone to be had the chimney-back and jambs, and even the hearth, were made of well-tempered clay, well beaten together, and occasionally beaten while drying. A back wall made in this way, a foot thick and carefully laid up and permitted to dry, lasted a long time. The house we moved into was chinked and the cracks plastered on the outside with clay mortar. The chimney was built in the way described, having stone for the back, jambs, and hearth. It had no upper floor, though round poles had been put in for joists. The door was made with wooden hinges extending across the door, and to the hinges was pinned an oak board riven from a tree and shaved with a drawing-knife. The window, about two feet square, was closed with a shutter, made in the same way as the door. The house was roofed as before described. Having been occupied, it was very dirty; there was a ridge of mud from near the fireplace to the door, nearly two inches thick. This I scraped off with a hoe; then, with hot water and a split broom, the floor and some of the logs were thoroughly scrubbed and cleaned. As before stated, on the 12th, what few things we had for housekeeping, including a year's supply of meat, and a couple of bushels of corn-meal, and a few dried beans, were landed in our new home. These provisions were to constitute our living. It was bread and meat for breakfast, meat and bread for dinner, and the same for supper. As a rarity, we sometimes had bean soup, sometimes we had baked beans, and when cold had them warmed over in a little grease from the meat frying. We had neither tea nor coffee, though generally in the morning we toasted a crust of a corn-dodger until it was browned, and then turned on boiling water, and used it instead of tea or coffee. We had plenty of corn and potatoes from where we had moved, but the weather was too cold to move the potatoes. We had neither chairs, bedstead, or table. I had a large tool-chest that served us for a table, and we had one or two kegs, or rather tubs, and one small chest, that served us for seats. For lodging, our beds were laid upon the floor. All the

stock we had was a sow and pigs, not even a chicken. Besides our log-house we had a log smoke house of some size, built like the house, though there was no chimney or floor. There was about an acre of ground entirely cleared of the timber, and five acres of heavy beech woods cleared, eighteen inches and under, on which there had been an attempt to raise corn. In the fall, before we moved, I had a small patch of wheat sowed.

In this manner we began life. Though destitute of the comforts and conveniences, we were young, our feelings buoyant, and we had plenty of the substantials to eat, so that there was no danger of starvation. Though the weather was cold, and our house large, and without a loft, yet wood was convenient, and by large fires we could keep warm. Soon after moving I was attacked with one of my periodical eruptions of the skin, and for more than a week was confined to my bed, on the floor, being dependent, during that time, to get us wood for fires to keep us warm. In those times we had such things as neighbors. There were then persons who showed humane feeling for their fellow man; there was a mutual dependence, which created a mutual interest in each other's welfare. The first thing after my recovery from this spell of sickness was to get up a pile of wood. A near neighbor, by the name of Isaac Limpus, had a team of two horses. I engaged to make him a sled, and to take for my pay team work. There being snow on the ground, I cut down small timber on the land spoken of as having been partially cleared. The trees had been girdled, and were dead and dry. When I thought I had enough cut to make a day's hauling, I got my neighbor, Limpus, to come with his team and a bob-sled, and haul. The trees had been cut down and chopped off into convenient lengths for hauling. I assisted him in loading, and having but a short distance to haul, we got up a large pile of wood, sufficient to last into the summer. My next job was to get a pile cut suitable for burning, so that in case of sickness or accident we would have a supply of wood ready for the fire. My next object was to make us seats. For this purpose I went into the creek bottom and selected a suitable blue-ash tree, cut it down, then cut into the sides notches, and split off blocks of suitable lengths and widths for benches. With the broad-ax and drawing-knife they were made smooth. Some were made for only one person to sit on, and were made with three legs. The longer ones were made with four legs. In this way we were soon provided with seats; though they were rude, and more humble than cushioned chairs and cushioned mahogany sofas, yet they answered our purpose, and, not being deficient in backbone, we got

along very well without backed seats. Our next object was a bedstead. I found on the place some black walnut rails, which were well seasoned. From these I made a high-post bedstead, which has been in use ever since, until within the last seven years. It was then laid aside, and last fall I presented it to my son Darwin, it being still a good sound bedstead, capable of lasting for many years. Our bedstead made, and well corded, with our bed upon it, we found to be indeed a great luxury. The summer before I had procured some wide boards suitable for making chests. I fitted up a workbench and placed it on one side of the room, and worked up the lumber into chests, which I traded off for such things as we needed. This, with sled-building for my neighbors that were better off than myself, gave me employment until spring, or the time for sugar-making. Though poorly prepared for the business, I undertook it. I had plenty of sugar-trees, but the place was exposed to cattle, and I was destitute of any means for holding the sugar-water, or sap, and there was not a tree suitable for making a large trough. I was forced to take a large hackberry, which proved a tough, ill-grained thing, and required much hard labor to dig out a trough. By the use of the chopping-ax, adze, and broad-ax, I finally succeeded in getting a fair trough, which answered my purpose well; but it was not where I needed it. I was much in the condition of Robinson Crusoe, after he had finished his canoe, made from a large cedar-tree. I had no team to haul it, and was not able to hire; nor did I like to trouble a neighbor; so I resorted to the expedient of laying a pole down on the ground, and then by another, with the use of a block as a fulcrum, I rolled the trough over and over until I got it to the place where I wanted it. Suitable weather for sugar-making came, and at it I went, and succeeded in making enough to answer our purpose until the next year, although the supply was rather small. Our fresh-made molasses was a great luxury. It added much to the enjoyment in eating our corn dodger and corn cakes. The sugar, added to our bread coffee, was a decided improvement, and much relished. Soon after sugar-making I succeeded in buying a cow, to give us milk, for which I agreed to pay nineteen dollars. During the summer I earned the money by building a mill-house, about one mile from us, for one Allen Crisler. I had the cow paid for but a short time when some accident happened to her udder, or bag, by which she lost one-half of it, and in a manner became useless. I had also purchased a few sheep, but they were destroyed. The cow had added largely to our comfort in living, as she had afforded us plenty of milk and butter, and to be deprived

of her was a great loss, as I was without the means to buy another. After sugar-making was over, the spring opened fine, and the last of March I bargained with a man by the name of Winchel to plow for me. The five acres which had been cleared, as before mentioned, were put in oats and flax. Over the oats I sowed timothy and clover-seed, with a view to a future meadow. In payment for this work I built him a loom, which was made out of ash, split out, then hewed and planed. It was an excellent job, but at the cost of much labor.

I had a fine creek bottom, of some ten acres, a portion of which had been grubbed of the underbrush, and I determined upon clearing and fencing five acres of it, to put into corn. The timber had been deadened, and was light, except some large sycamore-trees. Around those I piled brush and built fires, and in this way killed most of them. At last I was ready to roll the logs into piles to burn. It was then the custom of the country for the neighbors to congregate together, and, by hand, to roll logs for each other, and, expecting to have logs of my own to roll, I attended these gatherings. I soon found it very hard work, and not only so, but often badly done, requiring a large amount of labor to burn them. I made a bargain with my brothers-in-law, who had a team, to help me roll my logs, and bargained with another man to assist. I paid my brothers-in-law in corn that I had raised on their place the year before, and in payment to the other man, a Mr. Garrison, I made a corner cupboard for him, an article quite fashionable in those days. The time came, and Gideon Jenks came, with two horses and a chain, and my other man came also. We soon rolled the logs on the five acres into fine good piles. Though the timber seemed light, yet when the prostrated old logs and underbrush all came to be piled into heaps, looked much more formidable than I had expected.

As soon as we were done rolling, which was in a few days, I fired all the heaps, picking up the chunks and throwing them on the piles. In burning many of the old logs burned badly, giving me a great deal of trouble. The team was gone, and my only chance was to burn them in two and roll them together; and, by means of the chunks and small brands burnt them up, finally, after much toil. Often, to get the logs together I had to use a long lever, and roll them as I had my sugar trough. I knew nothing of rail making, so I had to bargain, as best I could, to get the rails made, but fortunately I had only one side and end of the field to fence in. The rails made, and ground cleared, my loom man came, hauled the rails, plowed and laid off the ground for

planting; and I planted it and laid up the rails into a fence. This I did while the ground was being plowed. Thus I got my spring work done. Then I went to work at the corner cupboard I had promised for the labor in helping to roll the logs. I was so fortunate as to get the man (Garrison) for whom I made the cupboard, cherry plank enough to make a table. I finished his cupboard, with which he was highly pleased. The next thing I made for ourselves was a table; for the legs of which I got a cherry rail, hewed them out, and made the whole table in the most substantial manner, framing pieces on each of the ends, it being a plain square kitchen table. This table lasted us for over twenty years. After the table I finished the loom; this was a fine job, with which my friend Winchel was much pleased. We were yet without chairs. I made a bargain with a Mr. Potts for half a dozen common split-bottomed chairs and a spinning-wheel. I think I paid him by making for him a corner cupboard and some other jobs of work. If my memory serves me correctly my son Stephen got the wheels. The chairs I saw last fall at his house. They are yet good frames, and, when I saw them were well bottomed and in use, and had been for forty-three years, though they had been new bottomed several times. I have been thus particular in the details of our commencement in life for two reasons: first, to show how the early settlers struggled with poverty, and the privations incident to the settlement of a new country, and the mode of building; second, that my children and their posterity could know how I began the world with my family, and the toils and privations with which my wife and I struggled. I have exaggerated nothing, and have aimed at a plain unvarnished statement of facts. To contrast that day and the condition of the country with the present, one can hardly realize the change that has been wrought.

During the latter part of the summer, as before intimated, I framed a mill-house for Allen Crisler. Necessity compelled me to turn my hand to any thing that would best enable me to make a living. Late in the fall I closed a trade with Crisler for his mill property, with a small portion of land, giving my land and crop, and agreeing to a balance besides. There was a very good saw-mill, with a separate building; a good stone wall for the first story, on which stood the frame I had put up for a mill-house, with one run of common granite mill-stones, and a bolting chest with a small bolt, which was turned by hand for bolting flour made from wheat. I took my brother into partnership with me. Neither of us were acquainted with the business, and we were under the

necessity of hiring a man who was in the mill, and who understood the business. My brother went into the mill with the hand, and I went to work and enclosed the house. My brother soon learned the art of grinding. I attended the sawmill as occasion required. For about a year we carried on the mills with all the energy we were able ; made improvements, but became satisfied of the fact that we had got a hard bargain, which, being discreet and cautious, we kept to ourselves. The river, which had commenced making for itself a new channel, would, we were satisfied, take the water from the mill, and which ultimately did take place. The man, with whom I had traded, I found had become tired of farming and a retired life. I was soon enabled to trade back with him, so that in the fall of 1818 we were out of the milling business. I was back to the farm, and he to his old quarters, the mill. During the summer of 1818 there was a scarcity of bread-corn in the country. I made arrangements with my wife's connections on the Miami, and obtained several loads of corn, which we ground into meal, and sold during our ownership of the mill. We had made decided improvements, and Crisler had made improvements on the land. He had entered a "quarter," which lay adjoining the "eighty" I traded to him, so that in our trade back I got my old home and eighty acres more land than I let him have ; and, to balance up the account all around, I agreed to do the carpenter work on a house he wished to build near the mill, and designed as a residence, which job I completed in the summer of 1819. This brought me square with the world again, except the money I owed to father Jenks. I owned 160 acres of land, with quite an improvement, but had no team or farming tools to operate with, nor stock. I was compelled to rent my ground, and do jobs of work as I could pick them up. I worked at my trade in Connersville, and did the best I was able to make a living ; but such was the condition of the country and the state of trade, in addition to the low price of everything that the farmers had to sell, that very little money was in circulation. Everything was barter or some kind of trade.

In the summer of 1820 I worked some at my trade, but my periodical disease became so troublesome that I was not able to do much. At times, when I was unable to labor, I employed myself in reading books, which I procured from a circulating library, in Connersville, of which I was a member. During the summer and fall I read Rollin's Ancient History, in eight volumes ; Russell's Modern Europe and America, together with several other standard works. My health continuing poor I came to the conclusion that,

at least for some time, I would not be able to labor. I then engaged to teach a school during the next winter in a log-cabin school-house that stood on my land, and intended to devote my leisure hours to the study of anatomy, with a view that, if my health continued bad, so as to unfit me for labor, I could complete the study of medicine and practice it as a profession. I found the study of anatomy a dull dry study; the more so, as I had neither skeleton or plates to assist me in obtaining a knowledge of the shape of bones or their connections. I was far from being even a good English scholar. The terms used were all new, but I was fortunate in getting a good medical lexicon by which I acquired a knowledge of the technicalities. By this means I was enabled to make a slow and difficult advance in the study. Early in December I commenced my school. It was made up of children from seven to seventeen years of age, all of whom had had very limited opportunities of learning.

A B C's, spelling, and reading constituted by far the most that was taught. A few learned to write, and a very few studied the simple rules of arithmetic. I succeeded in teaching this school beyond my most sanguine expectations, in not only advancing the scholars, but in giving satisfaction to their parents. I not only attended to their lessons, but explained to them the advantages to be derived from good behavior and a mind properly cultivated. They soon learned the importance of this, and it excited a spirit of emulation. Each scholar became interested in endeavoring to excel. I seldom used the rod, but governed them by the more potent power of love and moral suasion, pointing out the advantages of a well regulated deportment and attention to their lessons and good behavior. About this period I purchased of Isaac Limpus fifty acres of land, which was a portion of the quarter section I had previously bought of Herrall. I had disposed of the interest my wife had in her father's estate, and obtained the notes I had given father Jenks for the funds to enable me to complete my first purchase, and got a promise for the means to pay my last purchase. About the same time Congress passed a law changing the mode of selling the public domain, reducing the rates from two dollars per acre to one dollar and twenty-five cents, cash down, in fractional portions of a quarter, and on sales of an entire quarter section of 160 acres, in payments running through several years. This change, and the operations of the United State Bank, produced a great change in all business relations, and greatly embarrassed the country. I was disappointed in getting my money, and had much difficulty in paying for this last purchase. The times changing

and the decline in the prices of land, largely induced by the change in Government prices, made the purchase a very hard bargain. Ultimately I got through, however, and had what was regarded as a good farm. This last purchase let me out to a road that had been permanently located up the creek, and which was much traveled. Some difficulty had arisen between Limpus and myself in regard to the dividing line between us. The place had considerable improvements and a young orchard. To get to the road, settle our dispute about the line and obtain the improvements, were the great inducements I had in purchasing the land. Had I held still and collected the means due for my wife's interest in her father's estate, and vested in the new lands that were brought into market within the limits of what now constitutes Decatur, Rush, and Henry Counties, I would have done far better. But to secure one object we often overlook or lose sight of a far more important one, which we might have accomplished.

In the spring of 1821 my health still remained indifferent, and I concluded, after a short vacation of my school, to teach a summer school, and continue my studies. The school was commenced, but, through the confinement and close application I made, my health declined, though my periodical spells did not trouble me so much as they had formerly, but my general health seemed to give way, and I had to abandon my school, and take more exercise in the open air, to enable me to continue my studies. To facilitate my studies of anatomy I undertook the dissection of squirrels, rabbits, and other small animals. This greatly assisted me in the study of myology, the cellular tissues, circulation of the blood, and the relative location of the different parts, and the difference in the various structures of the living organism. In this way I acquired a tolerable knowledge of anatomy. Although to me it was a formidable undertaking, the progress I made gave me great encouragement; the more so as I came to study other branches of the science. The science of physiology, materia medica, and the theory and practice of medicine, though full of technicalities, and all new to me, yet, with the aid of lexicons, I was enabled to find out the meaning of the words used. The principles embraced and involved in the different branches were highly interesting; so much so that I pursued the study with ardor and much interest. I was poor, and almost without an instructor, though occasionally I met with a physician who would stop and listen to my enquiries, and manifest some little interest in explaining some things, which to me seemed obscure and uncertain.



In this way I spent the major part of my time up to, and into, the summer of 1822.

My friend, Wilson Waddams, had some business in the northern part of Ohio, about thirty miles from Cleveland, which I undertook to transact for him. On the 1st of August, 1822, I started, in company with a Mr. Clark, an old gentleman, who had been a soldier in the Revolution. He was returning to the State of New York to get his yearly pension at the place where he had formerly lived. In this man I found a fine companion, and we contracted a friendship which lasted as long as he lived. We made a stop on the Western Reserve as we went out, and found the inhabitants were of different manners and customs from any that I had ever been acquainted with. They had emigrated from Connecticut, and were of the true Yankee character, close and tight in all their transactions; so much so, I thought, as to be penurious. Their staple production was cheese; for making which the country was well adapted, being a fine grazing country. In traveling I rode a fine looking horse, but he was not hardy, and I thought he was about to go blind, so while here I traded him for another. We were performing our journey on horseback, and the animal I traded for was a hardy tough one, but too light for me. Clark and I continued our journey together until near Buffalo, when we separated, and I went up Cattaraugus Creek, on an Indian Reserve of fine rich land, but finally left the creek, eastwardly, and went into Cattaraugus County, where I had several cousins residing, and many old acquaintances, who were young men at the time I was a young man, and lived in Scipio.

I left for the Far West, and they for the place where they were then living. They had commenced there when the country was new, and a hard rugged country to settle in, with much large hemlock timber. After spending a few days with them I left for further east; and on my way called at the place where my traveling friend Clark had stopped, but after a little chat I journeyed on, and saw no more of him until I returned home to Indiana. I had a brother who lived north of Utica, at a glass factory, which was just going into operation. I stopped and spent a few days with him, and he went with me to see our mother, who lived at a distance of some twenty-five miles. She was living at the old homestead, and with her were living my brother Stephen and two sisters. On approaching the place the old hills and hollows brought back fresh to my mind the scenes of my boyhood. As we neared the house we met our brother Stephen. After a few moments we recognized each other. On his part the meeting was

unexpected and joyous. We soon reached the house and surprised our mother, and it was some time before we could overcome her surprise. Our sisters were out. This was on a pleasant Sunday afternoon, and my sisters had gone out for a walk. Brother Stephen, and the brother who had accompanied me, also left the house for a stroll, leaving me with our mother. The girls soon returned, and entered the sitting-room. They were children when I had parted with them over six years before, but now grown into womanhood. Their features and persons were so changed that I did not know them, nor did they recognize me. A cold and formal conversation sprang up between us, our mother leaving the room without giving us the relationship we bore to each other. Soon after she returned, and finding that we were not likely to soon recognize each other, she gave us a formal introduction. Judge of our surprise. We were mutually astonished and confounded as well as overjoyed at the meeting, and it was some little time before we could recover from the effects of it. I had retained in my recollection the childish looks of my sisters, and could not realize the changes that womanhood had imparted to them. They had evidently forgotten my appearance; and it was several days before I could trace in their countenances any of their former semblance, and realize that they were the same identical sisters; but, as the reserve of maiden diffidence with strangers passed off, the playful smile and confident joke grew familiar, and many of their childish ways became apparent. Such is life with its mutations; we, to a great extent, by long separation, lose those fine and tender feelings or sympathies, even for blood relations, and it is a work of time to fully re-establish them. I had a young brother who was not at home when I arrived, and I was anxious to see him. In a short time he came, and here we were again subjected to surprise. He had grown into manhood, and it was some time before I could recognize him or he me. About ten years after this interview this brother, whose name was Hiram, visited me and my brother Horatio, who resided in this county (Fayette.) After a lengthy and pleasant visit he started for home. I accompanied him as far as Oxford, Ohio, where we stayed all night. In the morning he took the stage for home. I shall never forget this parting. A deep emotion was felt by both, so much so as to preclude words. We shook hands; he entered the stage-coach; his eyes were turned on me as I stood watching him and the coach as it receded from my gaze. The last that I could see of him, his face was towards me, as though to bid me farewell,

which indeed proved to be a last and long farewell, as he died in a few years after.

This brother, though the youngest of the family, except a sister, who was younger, was the most active and enterprising member of the family. It was with him that our mother was living, at the old homestead, when she died, which was not long before his visit to us. Soon after his return home from his visit to us, he pushed his speculations, as a merchant and trader, into Michigan, where he contracted a fever, from which he partially recovered, so as to return to his family, in Herkimer County, New York. He, however, had a relapse, which ended in bilious intermittent fever, of which he died, leaving a wife and one child, a son. His wife died a few years afterward, leaving the child to be brought up by his grandparents, Brown, his mother's parents. This nephew's name is Horatio H. Mason. He is married, and now resides, with his family, on a farm adjoining the town of Sycamore, the county-seat of DeKalb County, Illinois; is in easy circumstances, from the patrimony of his parents and by judicious investments of his own making.

But to return to my mother's home. I had not been there long before it was determined that my mother and I should make a visit to the place where I was born, in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. We started, our conveyance being a one-horse open buggy. The distance was over a hundred miles, requiring a three days' drive. Our route was down the Mohawk, and across the Hudson River at Troy. The weather was dry, and the roads dusty, but during our second day's journey there came up a dark cloud with considerable wind. We stopped at the first convenient house, as thoroughly covered with dust as two persons could be; our clothing was so covered that the color could not be distinguished. After much brushing we got it measurably removed. The gust soon passed over, with only a slight sprinkle of rain. After dusting our buggy we started on again, and in due time we reached our journey's end, at the house of my mother's brother, whose name was Lapham. They were much pleased to see us. His residence was the old homestead of the Lapham family. It was a place that had always possessed peculiar attractions for me. My first visit there was when I was a boy, about ten years of age. My uncle had boys about my own age, and our gambols and sports have always remained fresh within my recollection; but every thing about the place now seemed new to me.

It was in a picturesque location, at the rise from "the interval," or, as we say in the West, "the bottom," of the Housatonic River.

On the highlands near the residence there was a small sand-hill of the most beautiful white sand, evidently the debris from a variety of white marble, with which the hill abounded, that lay back of the buildings.

The house was an old-fashioned one-story dwelling, built on a gentle slope toward the south, so that the cellar in front gave the appearance of a story and a-half. There were two front rooms, and a front door, that opened on to a platform, ascended to and from the east, as the ground on the east was higher than on the west, so that the slope was south-west rather than south. There was connected with the main building a kitchen, wood-house, and dairy-house, with all the appliances for a dairy and cheese-making, for which the farm was well adapted. Immediately in front of the house ran a public highway, yet leaving a small door-yard in front of the house. Not far, but west from the house, ran a beautiful rivulet, fed by springs in the hill. Back over this little stream, which rippled along over pebbles, forming a hard bottom, there was erected a hog-sty, and an inclosure for the swine, and not far distant was the barn and other out-buildings.

After some days' rest and social intercourse with the only family of my mother's brothers and sisters that remained in this part of the country, we visited my uncle, James Mason, my father's brother, who resided in the same valley, some four miles distant, at the old homestead of my Grandfather Mason, where I was born. He was the only relative who lived in the country. Uncle and his wife received us most kindly, and expressed much pleasure on seeing us. They never had any children. He died, leaving a small legacy to each of his blood relatives, myself among the number. With this uncle we spent several days, where I enjoyed myself much.

My uncle was residing in the same house that my Grandfather Mason had built and died in. Many years ago, at the time when I was at my mother's brother's, heretofore spoken of, I was at this place, on a visit with my father and mother, a little circumstance occurred while on this first visit, which is still fresh in my memory, and I think will be as long as I live. One day I took it into my head to examine a small closet my grandfather had by the side of his chimney, over the mantel-piece, containing books. It was a mere childish curiosity, and while I was in the midst of my examination (mounted on a high chair, looking over the books), in came my grandfather, greatly to my dismay. After a gentle rebuke he helped me down, and selected from among the books "Pope's Essay on Man," and gave it to me. How or why he gave me

such a book, so far in advance of my ability to comprehend, I never could conceive; but I treasured it up as a keepsake, and so kept it long after I became a man. But somehow, in the many changes to which I was subjected, the keepsake was lost, to my regret. I had read it, however, over and over again, when grown to manhood, and it was of much service in developing my mind. I often think of this circumstance, so much so that long ago it served as an important lesson—that in making presents to children they should be such things as will be useful; and if of books, they should be such as convey correct information, as impressions in early life, made by those we love and regard, have a lasting effect for good or evil.

After spending some time with our relatives, we took our leave for home. For me it was a last and long farewell, as they have since died, without my having seen them again. On our way home we stopped with a cousin of my father's, Joseph Mason. He was keeping a public house on the Mohawk. We were very well received, and well treated during our stay. He had, when I was a boy, lived or boarded with my father, and taught a school in the neighborhood. I had not seen him for years, as he was absent from the country when I left. Our stay was short, but pleasant.

We continued our course up the Mohawk until near home, which we reached in safety, and were welcomed by my brother and two sisters, who were much pleased at our safe return.

In traveling up and down the Mohawk, on this visit, I had an excellent opportunity of witnessing, for the first time in my life, the operations going on, and the fast approach to completion of a canal—the great “New York and Erie.” The work at the Little Falls was a vast one. For nearly two miles a heavy stone wall was carried, in many places twenty feet high, and sustaining several locks. The canal was literally scooped out of the side of what might be called a mountain, and in some places through solid stone. At the upper end of the wall there was an aqueduct, supported upon arches, all of cut or hewn stone.

At this time the whole work seemed to me a great undertaking. The work on the aqueduct was then regarded by all as a great triumph of art, and was the subject of much talk. The first view I got of the canal was between Rome and Utica, on my way out. This part had been finished for sixty miles, and was without a lock the whole of that distance. As I drove up a bridge embankment I heard martial music in the distance. We rode up on to the bridge that crossed the canal, and listened to the delightful strains

of music, not yet in sight. The spot was a most beautiful one, the time, a fine August evening, with the sun about an hour and a half high. In turning my eyes down the canal, I saw a canal-boat in the distance, from which I found the music proceeded, which discoursed its melodious strains. It was a martial band, and, with its officers in full military uniform, with their ladies in fluttering ribbons and finery, the scene was enchanting. It was the first canal-boat I had ever seen, and was towed by fine horses. The whole affair seemed like some fairy scene. The time of day, the scenery around, all conspired to heighten the charm. The boating party were returning from a drill muster of the militia at Utica. At that day many doubted the success of the work—the canal—and predicted that it would not pay, and would finally be abandoned.

After our return to my mother's I had an attack of my periodical eruption, which confined me some seven or eight days. My brother Stephen's wife was very kind, and seemed to take a special interest in me, as also were my sisters and mother. After I got better, through the advice of my mother, I visited the Sulphur Springs at Richfield, Otsego County, New York, which were distant some eight miles, situated on the Old Cherry Valley turnpike, some four or five miles north of the Little Lakes. These springs were owned by a physician, whose name I have forgotten. He had the water analyzed, and found it to contain medicinal agents, highly beneficial in a great variety of diseases. He had fitted up the main spring for visitors. The water was clear and beautiful, and slightly tinged with a bluish color. He had a bath-house erected while I was there, and I had access to his medical library, of which I availed myself to much benefit. I remained at the springs for two weeks. After leaving them I returned to my mother's, and spent but a few days, as I had greatly overstayed my time. I felt, forcibly, the necessity of returning to my family, from whom I had not heard since leaving home. Those days did not afford the facilities for the transmission of letters that we now enjoy in this year of 1866. I was so constantly on the move, and this in conjunction with the tardy motion of the mails, that I could not even expect a letter from my wife. Occasionally I wrote home, but she was eight miles from a post-office, and it was difficult to get a letter. At last the time came that I must say to my relatives that sad word, farewell. This was a struggle for which I had been preparing. My mother was advancing in years, being fifty-three years old. The distance I was going, so far off, rendered it uncertain as to whether I should ever see her again. The

morning for my departure came, and with a heart too full for utterance, but with a gentle nod, I bade them good-by. This was the last time I ever saw my mother and two sisters, as they departed for the spirit world before I found time again to revisit my native State. From my mother's I went to my much esteemed cousin Scott Wilmarth's, near Utica, and from his house to my brother Almond's, who resided at the Glass Factory. Here for the first time in my life I witnessed the blowing of crown window glass, a process to me, at that time, of great interest. This factory was gotten up on a large scale, with the view of doing an extensive business, but failed.

From my brother Almonds I went to Scipio, Cayuga County, New York, where I had married my first wife. She had several nephews and nieces, who with their father, still resided at their old home. I also visited my aunt, Mrs. Lydia Hussey, her husband and family, and also one of the daughters, who was a young woman at the time I was a young man. She, when young, was a gay and lively Quakeress, and many a sportive hour we have spent in youthful dalliance. She had married, and was living not many miles distant, and I called to see her and her husband, with whom I had also been well acquainted when a single man. There I spent the time most pleasantly. My cousin was still cheerful and romantic, though a mother. Her husband was a companionable man, jovial and full of fun. No two persons could have been better mated than were my cousin and her husband. We talked of by-gone days, and seemed to live our life over again. This delightful interview had to be terminated, however. I left, and have never seen the happy couple since, and have long since lost all knowledge of their place of residence or whereabouts. From Scipio, continued my course westward, crossing the outlet of Cayuga Lake on a wooden bridge of over a mile long. It was built by driving posts, with a pile driver, down into the mud at the bottom of the outlet, and then framing in timbers, on which the floor rested. The outlet was a marsh for miles down. In the Genesee country I stopped at my aunt's, a sister of my mother's. She and her husband were both living. I spent a day with them, and it would have been very pleasant but for a threatened attack of my old complaint. They lived on a fine farm, where they had settled in early life, and in what was then a new country, far from any market. I left their comfortable home for Rochester, on the Genesee River, at its Falls. It was then, and is yet, an important place: I made a hasty visit to the Falls, and also visited the Aqueduct, which was nearly completed, and which was designed to

carry the canal over the river. It was a fine work of art, and was built of hewn stone.

From this place I went to Lockport. This is another important point on the New York and Erie Canal. Here the lights, that extended east from Niagara River, at Lewistown, had to be overcome by nine locks. The work was progressing rapidly; much of it being through solid stone that required blasting. From here I went to Lewistown, on the Niagara River, and stopped with a Mr. Randall, a step-son of my Aunt Rhoda's, who was my father's sister. She was living with her second husband; and it was with this step-son I stayed two nights and one day, being entertained during that time in the most friendly manner. He kept the ferry across the Niagara River to Queenstown. Soon after breakfast I crossed over the river with him at the point where General Van Renssalaer crossed his troops, at the battle of Queenstown Heights, in the war of 1812; the battle in which General Brock fell. My friend Randall was so kind as to go with me over the ground where the battle was fought, and pointed out the spot where General Brock fell. We recrossed the river. After dinner I visited Fort Niagara, which was situated at the mouth of the river, with Lake Ontario, on the east side, and on the opposite side stood Fort George, which was in full view. I returned to my friend Randall's in the evening, and passed a pleasant night. Next morning took leave of my kind and hospitable friends, whom I have never seen since. I proceeded up the river to the Falls. Here I stopped to view the great natural curiosity, which has been so often and beautifully described that any attempt on my part would be useless. There was a large book kept at the hotel in which visitors registered their names. In registering mine I made a maiden effort at poetry, which I shall never forget, and is as follows:

Niagara Falls is a scene  
Majestic and truly sublime;  
There, form'd by the mist and the sun,  
A rainbow, most beautiful, shines.

From the Falls I went up to Buffalo by the way of Black Rock, at which place is the commencement of Niagara River, being the outlet of Lake Erie. At this time Buffalo was little more than a large village, having been entirely laid in ashes by the British troops in the war of 1812. From Buffalo I traveled up the lake; and during the first day I traveled most of the time on the beach of the lake, there being no other road. In Ashtabula County I stopped to see an uncle of my first wife; her father's brother. This then was comparatively a new country. He had emigrated



from Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. This was my first and last acquaintance with the family. I was treated very kindly; and, after many inquiries concerning my wife's father and family, we had much conversation on the comparative merits of this section of the country and the one where my father-in-law had settled. This uncle of my wife had a son, who was a physician, living in a small village on the main road between Buffalo and Cleveland, and not far from his father's. I spent a part of a day with him also very pleasantly. From there I went to see another uncle of my own, my mother's brother, whose name was Benjamin Lapham.

The one I had visited in Adams, Massachusetts, was named George. Uncle Benjamin lived near the village of Chagrin, where he and his whole family were then living, they having moved from Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, a few years before. I had had but little acquaintance with this uncle and his family, but was kindly received and treated in the most hospitable manner. They had several children who were yet single. I enjoyed a two days' visit with them in the most pleasant manner, but have never seen any of the family since, and have lost all certain knowledge of them and their whereabouts.

From there I went to Cleveland, which was then a moderate sized village, and thence I turned south to look after my friend Waddam's business; and, to reach some of the men I wanted to see, I had to travel a mere trail through the woods, across an entire township, a distance of six miles. I was fortunate in finding the men I wished to see; but unfortunate in not being able to make the collections I desired. I, however, succeeded in making a trade with one of the men, with whom I had business, in the exchange of a horse, in which I gave boot, but at the same time got a strong able-bodied horse, though he was slightly ringboned, but not so as to materially injure his traveling. By this business I was led further east and south than the route we had taken in our trip out. The season had advanced into November, and had become rainy. I had yet a long road home, and by far the most of it through a flat beech country; in many places thinly inhabited, and nothing but mud roads to travel over, and nearly all the streams to ford. For several days the rain poured down in torrents, but I was fortunate in having two thick overcoats; yet, notwithstanding this, one day I was wet through to the skin. To accommodate my friend John B. Tyler, who had married my wife's sister, I had, at his request, called at his father's, near Rome, and got a greatcoat which he had left there on leaving home for the West. After

much toil and fatigue I reached home, but I was disappointed in not seeing my wife and children, as they were then absent on a visit to her sisters.

I have failed to mention, in the proper place, two important visits I made while on this tour. One was at Columbus, Ohio. While on our way out we visited the Ohio State Penitentiary. It was the first one I had ever visited. There was not that severity exercised in this prison that I had supposed would be necessary in such a place. The convicts were allowed many privileges; at the same time all was conducted systematically and under rigid discipline. It was altogether a different looking prison from the new one that they have at that place now, which I, with my present wife, visited in the summer of 1859 on our way to New York. The other was at Auburn, New York, as I was returning home. This was a model prison, and to me, at that time, of great interest. I was shown through all its various departments, which were conducted in the most perfect manner. This prison has been the model for nearly all the penitentiaries which have been built since. During this trip I was absent from home more than three months, and though I had seen much of the world before (more perhaps than falls to the lot of the mass of mankind), I never before had been placed in situations where I had had so fair an opportunity of seeing mankind under such a variety of conditions; neither had I ever had the opportunity of seeing and studying men and things as on this trip. It was a lesson that has been of service to me through much of my life since. It was during the summer that the first surveys were made for the main canal across Ohio from Cleveland to Portsmouth. Canaling was the exciting theme of the day. The great inland commerce of New York and the West called loudly for more favorable and cheaper modes of transportation for the heavy commodities of the country. Canals were the order of the day; and, although they fully met the expectations of the most sanguine, yet they now seem destined to yield the palm to the iron track and the iron horse. But to resume.

The next morning after my return home I started in quest of my wife and children; and on the road I met them in the midst of a blustering wind and snow storm, a rather unpleasant condition in which to meet a wife after an absence of over three months. They had made their visit, and were returning to their desolate home, having nearly abandoned the hope of my return. We did not stop for a long parley in the snow storm; but after the first greetings I turned short about, and with my wife and children, for our dear home, where days were spent in talking over the sights I

had seen, and the relatives and friends I had visited. Although I had not succeeded in doing much for my friend Waddams I was able to satisfy him that I had done all that could have been done, and made known to him as to how his business was situated. Soon after my return from my visit I concluded to make the practice of medicine my future business or profession. The neighbors had begun to call on me to attend to their cases of sickness, and I found I had to be a quack in medicine or else place myself in a situation where I could become acquainted with it in a thorough manner. I resolved on the latter, and made arrangements accordingly. Early in the winter I moved to Connorsville, and devoted myself exclusively to the study of medicine, with Dr. Joseph Moffitt, who was an educated physician. He had attended lectures at the medical department of the College in New Haven, Connecticut, and with him I commenced by reviewing anatomy, physiology, chemistry, and all the various branches. During my stay with him I had much practice, which qualified me to treat successfully the prevailing diseases of the country. In the spring of 1824 I moved back to my farm, and prepared to engage in the practice. With that view I went to the city of Cincinnati, and laid in a stock of medicines.

My circumstances were so limited, as to available means, that I was not able to procure a library, and had to depend upon such books as I could borrow. I was so fortunate as to procure from my friend, Dr. Gayle, "Chatman's Therapeutics." I commenced the book, and made written extracts of each article treated of, so that when I was through I had a small volume containing the names of the different articles of medicine used, their dose and effects, and their general application to disease. My practice through the summer more than met my expectations, and I was fortunate in my cases. I attributed my success in a great degree to my untiring application to my business and the close attention to my cases. Whenever I found a case obstinate or violent, I did not trust the administering of active remedies to the ignorant nurses of that day; but administered them, and watched their operation, myself. Although attended with much labor I found my patients did better, and it also afforded me an opportunity of determining the operation and effects of medicine on disease under different circumstances. In this way I studied by the bedside of my patients. This course I pursued for years; and to it I attributed a large share of my success in curing disease and in obtaining practice. I now think it one of the best schools in which a man can acquire a knowledge of medicine. He learns all the minutiae

in disease and the various shades of constitution; by which he learns to determine at a glance, with tolerable certainty, a man's temperament, constitutional abilities; and, by a slight knowledge of the patient's previous history, he can come to a conclusion almost with certainty as to what will be the result of disease on him or the power of remedies in counteracting its effects. There are no pursuits in life where it is so important to understand all the different shades and phases as it is in the practice of medicine.

In the fall, as was usual, business fell off, and I made some improvements in my log-cabin. I put a window in the east end of the house, consisting of a sash, containing nine lights or panes of eight by ten glass. It was the first glass window I had ever enjoyed in a house of my own. We found it a great luxury, as it lighted the room well; and during the winter we were enabled to keep the door shut and to stop up a small opening we had near the fireplace covered with greased paper. It afforded my wife light to sew and me to read by. During the fall I went to the city, procured a few different kinds of medicine, and a number of choice standard medical works, which afforded me reading during the winter, and which materially added to my stock of medical science. Sometime during the latter part of the winter a young man by the name of George Winehel came to study medicine with me, and not long after a young man by the name of Thomas Buchanan, and the following spring another by the name of Jefferson Helm. My practice increased, which afforded me means of adding largely to my medical library, until I had an excellent one for that day. The young men I had with me were men of good minds and close students. I adopted the practice of daily examining each on the branch he was studying. This was of much benefit to me. It not only stimulated me to devote all of my spare time to reading, but those examinations served as a constant review of the different branches as my students advanced in their studies. As they progressed we had frequent controversies on contested points, which only ended in the examination of all the authorities we had at command. In this way we spent over two years in close application to books and in the practice of the profession. The studies and examinations were not as scientific as could have been desired, but they gave sound practical views of the profession of medicine. Although I had considerable business, yet I found ample time for study and reflection. I adopted it as an invariable practice, that when I had a bad case, or one that was new and peculiar, to examine all the symptoms closely, and then on

my return home to examine all the authorities I had that had any bearing on the case. This I found of great use to me, as it assisted me in forming a correct diagnosis of the case, and enabled me to treat it more successfully, besides enlarging my stock of information of which to avail myself in the future. Although I was living on a farm of considerable size I devoted but little attention to it; and such was the condition of the market that great care and much labor and attention were necessary to realize much beyond a plain living. The place around where I was living was so situated that the population was limited, and the country did not possess the requisites for a more dense population, and years would elapse before the number of the inhabitants would be much increased. Many of those on whom I was called to attend were poor and unable to pay. I therefore resolved to change my location.

After looking about, I became satisfied that I could do a good business at a place called Danville, now Fayetteville, within the limits of Fayette County, Indiana. Then came the question how to arrange matters so as to locate there. A man by the name of Isaac Thomas owned a farm of one hundred and twenty acres, on a corner of which a portion of the village was situated. I found, by inquiry, that he had become tired of the place. He was a restless man, fond of little offices and distinction. The location was on the side of the county most remote from the county-seat, and not suited to his views. I approached him and made a proposition to exchange places, and found that he was pleased. But there was a difficulty in the way. My farm was worth more than his, and he had not the means to pay the difference. As soon as I found that he was prepared for the trade, I arranged it so that he could pay the difference by building a business house in the town, which could be mostly done by his own labor, he being a carpenter by trade. The bargain was closed, and he built the house out of hewn logs, with a good shingle roof and good floors, with sawed lumber, and finished in the best style for that kind of building. The front part was finished for a store-room, and had a back room for an office.

The residence on the farm was nearly half a mile from the store-room in town. In the spring of 1827 I moved my family to my new home. The place was situated in one corner of my old circuit of practice, so that I could reasonably expect to retain nearly one-half of the families who had formerly employed me, in connection with the large scope of a tolerably well settled country near the town. The country was new, but settled by an indus-

trious population, who have since then made it a splendid country, and have more than realized my anticipations.

I commenced a new operation, and was arranging to do business on a more extensive scale. I had a little spare means, and arranged with Jefferson Helm, who had studied with me, to obtain some capital, and we were to go into the practice together, connected with which I was to engage in a retail business of such articles as the country needed. With that view I went to the city of Cincinnati and purchased such articles as my means enabled me to invest in, and the country needed; brought them home, and commenced a new business. The country being new, my stock, though varied, was small, and the establishment a new one. Sales were small, and the business not encouraging; but, on the other hand, the practice of the profession was much better than we had reason to expect. The flux, or dysentery, prevailed as an epidemic, and required prompt medical treatment. The disease, though violent, soon yielded, if properly treated in the early stages of it, and our success in its treatment gave confidence, so that we had a fine run of practice.

Fall came, and our business in the profession largely abated. In those days the medical profession had much to contend with. The people had a strong prejudice against physicians. The business of obstetrics was mostly in the hands of old women, and the physicians were only called in in difficult cases, which were but few. The constitutions of the people were generally good, particularly of the younger and more vigorous portion, who had left their native homes to better their condition by settling on cheap lands. Their circumstances being limited, of course it was necessary to use economy by every possible means in their power.

In the latter part of the summer an arrangement was entered into between James Conwell and Judge Gregg, both reputed wealthy, to open a store within about two miles of the town. This, with the failure of Helm to fulfill his contract in furnishing the means he had agreed to, determined me upon closing up what at best afforded but a dull prospect of doing business in selling goods. I was unacquainted with the business, and found that I had not the ability to contend with wealth accompanied with experience.

During the latter part of the summer Doctor Gayle, of Connersville, died, leaving an opening for a physician in that place. Helm went to the town, in order to get into business, but after spending a couple of weeks he came back with the impression that he could not succeed, though strongly of the opinion that I could; and, if I

would go, it would leave him with a fine prospect of succeeding, where we then were. Although I knew that Helm had a strong motive to induce him in urging me away, I was somewhat influenced by him. I felt, too, that Connersville was a desirable place to live in, and the opening was a fair one, though the man with whom I studied was yet in practice there, but was intemperate. I was well satisfied that if I could only succeed in getting into business, I could not only make a living, but lay by money, and soon have a home and a desirable place to live in.

I finally concluded to give it a trial. I went, announced myself, and the prospect seemed fair for success. I therefore concluded to move my family there. The next season proved an unusually healthy one, my practice but moderate, and my expenses considerable. I grew dissatisfied, though I had bought property; but it required considerable expenditure to make it a desirable home. At last I made up my mind to return to my old stand, and one that I ought not to have left. This move would discommode Helm, I knew; but this did not trouble me, for the best of feeling, at the time, did not exist between us, as he was selfish and calculating where money was concerned. His father owned a farm, five miles below town, which he had in expectancy, and proposed a trade. The farm was on the river, and regarded as one of the best in the county. After much parley we closed the trade. I got the farm in exchange for the one I had left, near Danville, by giving five hundred dollars boot. After some delay the old gentleman made me a deed for the place. Early in December I attended the Grand Lodge of Indiana, and was appointed District Master of the entire eastern part of the State, with the understanding that I should visit all the Masonic Lodges in my district, which I did during the winters of 1828 and 1829. Fort Wayne was in my district, and at that time was the most northern Lodge in the State. To reach there from this part of the State was to pass through a wilderness of sixty miles, between Winchester, in Randolph County, and Fort Wayne, in Allen County. There was but one house on the road, and that was on the banks of the Wabash River. The road itself, too, was little more than a mere path. I performed the trip in mid winter, which was much in my favor, as the ground was bridged as well as the small streams with ice.

The country through this wilderness was flat, and in many places swampy. The trace I traveled was then known as the Quaker trace; but since then the woods have been laid off into two counties, Jay and Adams, and settled. I stayed all night, both in going out and returning, with the family who had settled

on the Wabash River. In going out I was entirely alone; but, when returning, I came in with the man who carried the weekly mail from Winchester to the Fort. I had a few acquaintances who had settled at the Fort, and formed others; thus spending the time most pleasantly. While there I formed an acquaintance with the Indian chief Ruchival, who lived in a very good brick house, some miles south of the Fort, on the road. My route lay so that I saw it in going and returning. He spoke the English language very well, and I found him an intelligent man. Fort Wayne, at the time of my visit, was a small place. The old Fort, though going to ruin, was still visible. Visiting the place again in the fall of 1857 I was astonished to see the alteration made. In addition to the Wabash Canal, which was in operation on my first visit, they had the "Wabash Valley" Railroad and the "Pittsburg and Chicago" Railroad in successful operation running through. A small village had grown into a city, in which there was much wealth and fashion.

After my return from Fort Wayne I visited Brookville, Lawrenceburg, Rising Sun, and Vevay, on business connected with the Masonic Lodges in those places. Soon after my return from those last named I began to make preparations to move to my newly purchased farm. I resolved to farm it to some extent on my own account; and, with that view, I made a bargain with a young man, named Stewart, to labor for me for four months, and furnish one horse. I next arranged with a young man, by the name of Jonathan Cox, who had studied medicine with me, and was then with me. He was a young man of fine mind, and had obtained a good knowledge of medicine, though not as scientific as could have been desired. Our agreement was that he should go to the farm with me, practice medicine, and ultimately to take the entire business when I would retire from the practice, as I designed to engage in farming exclusively. I had four sons at the time; one of whom was nearly ten years of age, and I designed making farmers of them. The Legislature had provided for a Probate Court to be presided over by one judge in each county. I was solicited to run for the judgeship in Fayette County. Two of my friends, who were attorneys, living in Connersville, by the names of Oliver H. Smith and Samuel C. Sample, offered me the use of their libraries with instruction gratuitously.

After much reflection I consented to become a candidate before the people for the office. As I had arranged to retire from the practice of medicine I came to the conclusion that if elected, of which there was not a reasonable doubt, the duties of the office



would afford me a pleasant relaxation from the dull round of a farmer's life; besides, giving me distinction among men, should I succeed in discharging the duties of the office well. I was elected, and for five years acted as Judge in Fayette County, realizing fully all that I had anticipated; but circumstances changed my affairs, and I resigned the office. Early in the spring I moved to my new home; Cox, the young man before spoken of, going with me, and the young man Stewart coming on, according to agreement. Farming operations were commenced in due form; eighteen or twenty acres of corn were put in; a small piece of new ground was cleared, and planted in potatoes and melons. The spring was a beautiful one; the open air and rural pursuits rendered us all happy and pleasant. It seemed as though we had stepped into a new state of being, a new existence; every thing we planted grew well, and we had fine prospects for good crops; every thing conspired to render life desirable. Summer came, and with it came some business. I was within the range of much of my old practice and where I was well known; and, although I held out but little inducement, practice constantly increased.

Dr. Cox was living with me as one of the family, and I exercised all my influence to introduce him into business; but he was naturally indolent, and would not take the pains necessary to secure to himself even a limited share of patronage in his profession. The autumn came, and with it came fine crops. I was in the midst of an abundance of every thing pertaining to farm life. I had sold my residence in town, so that, with some additional means, I was enabled to pay the five hundred dollars which I had agreed to pay as the difference between my former farm and the one I was then living on. I was out of debt, and surrounded with all the substantial of life, and with a good farm. The next season Cox left me fully satisfied that he could not succeed. He went to St. Louis, but returned in the fall sick, and remained at my house for some time before he regained his health, and finally settled in Wabash Town. After he left I made an agreement with one Edward Daniels, who had commenced the study of medicine with me, and afterwards had prosecuted it to some extent with Dr. Helm. By the engagement with Daniels he was to come and live with me on the farm, and devote himself to the profession, and attend to the practice as far as it could be done by him. He came as agreed upon; was industrious, studious, and at all times ready to attend to business; but he was naturally modest and retiring. His introduction into business was slow. He was one of those men who underrate themselves, and are thus not

calculated to make themselves conspicuous among men. I had formed my estimate of him, and his probable success, through my personal knowledge of his worth. The business or profession did not suit his health, however. He had a severe spell of typhoid fever, and became discouraged in following a profession to which he did not seem adapted, though he continued with me until I left the farm again for Connersville.

In the year 1832, a young man by the name of Cameron E. Gossett, called and consulted me with regard to his studying medicine. I advised him not to do it; but no argument would prevail with him. He went away, but returned, seeming more determined to engage in the study. He was a young man, with a good English education, of good morals, and industrious habits; but he was poor, without the means even to clothe himself. His long importunings and propositions to do anything and every thing he could for me excited my sympathy, and I consented that he should come and make the trial, which he did. He was a singular young man, but had a ready mind; learned well, and ready to do anything I wanted done, whether it was to catch and saddle my horse, build fires, or any other jobs, all was done with alacrity; nothing seemed to discompose him, yet he lacked the proper balance—needed some one to direct him. He finally became involved in debt, and I urged him to get a school and teach, and in that way earn money and pay up his liabilities, which he did. Afterwards I managed all his affairs for him. He continued with me some four years, and acquired a good knowledge of medicine, and then went into the practice with Dr. George Winchel, my first student; but during his first summer practice he took the bilious remittent fever, in a violent form, and died.

In the fall of 1831 I took a trip to Vincennes to attend a meeting of the Grand Lodge. In this trip I passed over much of the country that I had traveled in 1816. In some places the country had changed; in others, the changes were barely perceptible. In this last trip I crossed the country from Whitewater to the Driftwood Fork of White River. Further north I struck the Flat Rock, at Moscow, and followed it down to Edinburg, and then down White River, by the way of Columbus. All this region had been purchased of the Indians, and settled since our visit, before spoken of. In going down White River we struck our old trail some distance north of Brownstown, and then our way was along our old track, with the exception that we passed through Salem, in Washington County, and from Livonia to Paoli, in Orange. On our first trip we kept more north, through Orleans, striking the

Driftwood, at Hindostan. While at Vincennes I had an attack of my old periodical disease, which came on the next day after I arrived. My sickness precluded my attendance at the meeting of the Grand Lodge. In this trip I was accompanied by my friend Isaac Limpus. We returned by the same route that we went out. On our return home I lost a horse that I had paid sixty dollars for but a few days before I started from home; and, taking it altogether, it was one of the most unfortunate journeys I ever made.

My business as a physician increased continually while I resided on the farm; and I was frequently called professionally to Connersville, and detained for several days at a time from my family. In November of 1832 I was called there and detained in the place most of the time for a month. The typhoid fever was prevailing, and I had several very protracted cases, but I was so fortunate as not to lose a case. Such was the run of my business that I gave up farming and rented my land; and finally came to the conclusion to leave my farm entirely, and settle again in Connersville, and follow my profession exclusively. With that view I purchased a place in the lower part of town, of Samuel C. Sample. It consisted of a very comfortable residence and nearly two acres of ground; a very desirable location, for which I paid a thousand dollars; one-half down in cash and promissory notes, and gave my note for the balance. Mr. Sample had built this property for his own use. It was all new, well built, and the ground nicely fenced in. On the 28th day of March, 1833, I moved with my family, and we had hardly unloaded before I was called a mile and a half above town to attend an obstetrical case.

I had rented my farm to a Mr. Robert Winchel for the term of three years; to be paid mostly in the products of the farm. My family were pleased with their new home, and I engaged in the practice of medicine exclusively. I had no assistant other than the young man Gossett, and it was several months before he assisted me, he being engaged in teaching a school. I continued in this way until February 10, 1834, when I entered into partnership with Ryland T. Brown in the practice of medicine. The next summer was a sickly season; a bilious form of fever prevailing in all its varied symptoms, and a number were very bad or violent cases. The next spring opened with the prospect of considerable business.

It was arranged that young Gossett should go and practice with Winchel, and a young man by the name of James Ford, who had studied medicine, but was not sufficiently advanced to engage in the practice on his own account, and who had made application to us for a situation. We took him, and agreed to give him instruc-

tions ; also giving him the use of our library, which was then large. He was to attend in the office, and have as much practice as we could make it convenient for him, and I was to board him in my family. In May my health became much impaired, suffering from dyspepsia and neuralgia of the face, so that I was confined to my bed for some time, and from which attack my recovery was slow. I was completely prostrated, as there was a lack of nervous force; and, besides all this, I was constantly annoyed by persons calling to see me and wanting prescriptions. To accommodate them I often wrote the prescriptions while lying in bed, and would send them to the office to have them filled, put up, and directed. It was not until September that I had so far recovered that I could ride or practice, though in a number of cases I was taken in a carriage to see my patients, and would have to remain for days at a time, when I was so weak that I was not able to sit up except for a short time. In this way I attended several families, and in some bad cases of fever. As soon as I was sufficiently recovered to ride on horseback I commenced to indulge in my favorite exercise, and gained strength in the most rapid manner, and did much business during the fall. During the summer my health had been such that I did not think I could recover, but that I would ultimately sink.

I had purchased sixty acres of land adjoining my farm, for which I was in debt; and concluding that I would never be able to practice medicine, even if I were to so far recover as to be up and about, and having a good opportunity to sell my residence, I, after mature deliberation, sold it to the Hon. Oliver H. Smith for the same that I gave for it. Late in the fall of 1836 I bought out a drug-store in Connersville, and also a book-store, and soon after a cheap residence, of my friend Daniel Hankins, at a cost of about two hundred dollars. The buildings were old, and were situated on the west side of Main street—now Eastern avenue—between Harrison and Head streets, now Fifth and Sixth.

To this place I moved with my family in November, 1836, and commenced my new business. Early in December I went to Indianapolis to attend the session of the Legislature, having been elected a member of that body the previous August. I left the store to be managed by Dr. Ford, the young man before alluded to. Late in February I returned, and soon afterwards went on to Philadelphia, and laid in a stock of medicines and other articles connected with the business in which I had embarked. Dr. Ford engaged in the practice of medicine on his own account. The season proved to be a sickly one. Ford and Brown were both

taken sick, and I was constrained to go into the practice for a considerable time, until they recovered, so as to be able to attend to business. During the latter part of the next winter I entered into partnership with one Robert Griffiss, who was building and finishing a new store-room. In my anxiety to succeed and make money, coupled with my lack of experience, I had bought too many goods; besides which they were not well assorted for the market. In addition to this I lacked sufficient capital. These were the reasons for my going into partnership. I thought I could, by judicious purchases, so manage as to make the business successful; and would have done so but for the financial crisis in 1837 and the suspension of operations on the Whitewater Valley Canal in 1838. Soon after the new partnership was formed I went East and purchased another stock of goods; then returned home; looked after the store, and to the finishing of the new room, in a manner suitable for our business, which was done in time to receive the new goods. The old stock was invoiced, and then removed to the new house. Our business opened very favorably, and fully up to our expectations; but the suspension of operations on the canal, in the fall of 1839, was disastrous. In August I was re-elected to the Legislature, and the next winter I attended its session as a member. On my way there I went by the way of Madison, Indiana, to attend, by invitation, a railroad invitation, upon the opening of the road from Madison to Vernon. Here we had a jolly time. We took a ride on the new road and cars, out and back; then had dinner in a large pork-house, with overflowing numbers. After dinner the various public works of the State were each and severally toasted, and a speech called for. It fell to my lot to respond to "Whitewater." I never, in all my life, felt more reluctance to speak, nor more conscious of my total inability to do myself justice, than at the time the call was made. It was given the third time before I could arouse myself sufficiently to respond. I was sitting at the same seat where I had dined. The table had been made of loose boards. I mounted it and commenced. After a few words my fears were all dispelled; and, taking it altogether, I considered it one of the happiest efforts of my life. All was stillness. I took good care to stop at the right time; and, when I closed my speech, a hearty cheer went up for "Whitewater," and an extra gun. The oration of the day was delivered by the Hon. Jesse D. Bright, one of the present Senators of Indiana.

From the festival, or jollification, we went to Indianapolis, to attend the session of the Legislature. After the adjournment of the Legislature, I returned home, and in a short time afterward

started East, in company with my friend Colonel Daniel Hanks. We left Cincinnati in the stage coach, and went by the way of Columbus and Zanesville to Wheeling; thence to Fredericksburg, Maryland, and from there to Washington City. At Brownsville, Pennsylvania, the Hon. Mr. Stewart, an ex-Congressman, got into the stage and accompanied us to Washington City. We found him an excellent companion, and a frank, open, communicative man. An incident or two which occurred are still so fresh in my mind that I will mention them here. It was in the latter part of February that we performed the journey. The Ohio River was frozen over, which compelled the land trip. The mountains were covered with snow and ice. From Brownsville we crossed the mountain in a sleigh. We had started from Cumberland in a coach, and in going up the mountain the slow pace of the horses and the monotonous squeaking of the wheels of the coach on the crisp snow lulled me into a sound sleep, from which I was only aroused by the increased speed of the coach while descending the mountain, and by my friend Hanks, who sat on the back seat with me, constantly getting up and looking out of the coach window. It so disturbed me, that on my first awakening I said to him: "What the d—l is the matter?" His reply was: "You would sleep if you went to the d—l." The road was slippery, and not without danger, as we were traveling down the mountain side, and an upset would have landed us a long distance below, and in a very uncertain condition.

At the foot of the mountain the stage stopped and changed horses. We had another mountain to cross, and that in the night, as it was. When we left Cumberland and crossed the mountain we had just passed, my friend Hanks refused to go any farther, but gave me his money, some nine thousand dollars, and his trunk, and then Stewart and I, with one other passenger, proceeded on. Between Hagerstown and Fredericksburg the snow had drifted, so as to make it hard and difficult traveling, and we often got out and walked.

When we reached Fredericksburg it was some time after dark. I called for a separate room, and ordered mine and Hanks' trunks taken to it. Before going to bed, I put the trunks against the door, first locking and bolting it. On the top of the trunks I put the shovel and tongs, leaning them against the door, then retired to bed, with my own and friend's money belted around my body. I was worn out with fatigue. It was the first time I had been undressed and in bed since I left Cincinnati, and we had had a slow and tedious time of it, traveling day and night. I soon fell asleep,

and never awoke until late next morning. When I did awake, however, I felt so relaxed that I had but little disposition to get up. Of all the nights' sleep I ever had, this was by far the soundest; I had no consciousness, and when I did awake it seemed to me as if it was from death. I got up, dressed, ate breakfast, and walked out with my friend Stewart. I had a slight headache, and it was not until next day that I felt entirely recovered. As we sat down to dinner, my friend Hankins came up, having taken the first stage that came after we left him.

We had been detained at Fredericksburg on account of the snow, as it had drifted so that the cars could not run to Baltimore. Toward noon it was reported that the drifts had been sufficiently removed, so that a stage could go on to Washington, and immediately after dinner we took seats in a stage for that place, which we reached soon after night. There we spent a couple of days. We met the Representative of our district, General Jonathan McCarty, and although he was not of the same political party that we were, yet he extended toward us much courtesy. We were by him introduced to the Hon. John C. Calhoun, Hon. Henry Clay, and Thomas H. Benton, besides all the prominent men of both Houses of Congress, and also to the President, Andrew Jackson, in his private room at the White House, he being unwell at the time.

We visited most of the public buildings; the Congressional Library; the Indian Department, where we found a fine gallery of portraits of many Indian chiefs, as well as Indian costumes and curiosities. I felt well repaid for the expense of the visit. I had long desired to see the Capital of the United States and the great men of the nation, and this visit fully gratified me. I found those brilliant men possessing like passions of other men, and though great statesmen, they were often swayed by passion instead of being guided by that sound judgment we at first view would think should ever attach to great minds highly cultivated.

We left Washington City for Baltimore, where we spent two days. While my friend Hankins was making some purchases in goods, I visited the various monuments. Went up to the top of the Washington, and had a bird's-eye view of the city. I had been in Baltimore before, but neither this visit nor any of the previous ones interested me much. While here I saw the Siamese Twins, in a hall, or gallery, of fine paintings.

I took the cars at Baltimore for Wilmington, in the State of Delaware. This is a pleasant place, situated on a small stream

called the Brandywine, and, though apparently small, it is deep, and schooners of considerable size ascend it up to the mills.

From Wilmington we went up the Delaware River, in a steamboat. This was one of the pleasantest trips I ever took on board of a steamboat. The banks of the river were low, and while on the deck of the boat we had a fine view of the country. (In 1854, while going down the Mississippi from Rock Island to Burlington, I was forcibly reminded of the above trip on the Delaware—the same low banks, extending back to more elevated ground.)

In one of our trips East we went from Philadelphia to New York City by the way of Amboy. At this latter place we took a steamboat up the bay to the city. On every side the land seemed but little elevated above the water. I have seldom been in any locality where the beauty of scenery and landscape, with this lovely sheet of water (unruffled by a breeze as we passed up), would compare with this. This was my first and last visit to the city of New York. It was not long after the great fire of 1838, which was said to have burnt an area of over thirty acres of ground. In a few places the fire was yet smouldering. I visited Brooklyn and the Navy Yard, as well as the great city of New York, and found much to admire. I visited the park; the Astor House was not completed. The city was then a mammoth one, but what must it be now, in 1866.

In my last trip East, my friend Hankins and myself left Baltimore in the stage, on a Sunday morning, for Philadelphia, by the way of Gettysburg, Little York, and Columbia. On arriving at Gettysburg, we were much disappointed in not being able to go on immediately. By some means we were detained here until in the night. We never learned the cause, but suspected that it was to enable the hotel landlord to make a bill against us, which he did effectually. In passing from Baltimore to Gettysburg, we crossed the celebrated Mason & Dixon's Line. I was on the box with the driver, and had the pleasure of having the precise line pointed out to me by him. Whether hoaxed or not, we crossed the line, and I have never been south of it since.

We left Gettysburg in a sleigh for Columbia, where we were to take the cars. It was fine sleighing, and though the trip was in the night, it was moonlight, and we had a pleasant time, reaching Columbia in time to take the first morning train for Philadelphia. On the way the car we were in broke an axle, which made a clattering noise; doing no damage, however, except scaring the passengers. The accident so delayed us as to prevent our reaching the city until nearly nine o'clock at night. The distance was about



ninety miles. On the second day after reaching the city I was taken sick. I sent for Doctor Horner, and was copiously bled, which entirely relieved me. I labored under congestion of the brain and lungs, and ran a great risk of losing my life. I had been housed up all winter, but going out into the cold air, and taking much active exercise, caused me to have a ravenous appetite, which I gratified until I had become plethoric. This, with the exposure to the cold, produced the congestion, confining me to my bed for about a week; but as soon as I was able to be out I recovered rapidly, and soon made my purchases. After completing my commercial business, I accepted an invitation from Doctor Horner, who also kindly gave me a ticket admitting me to the lectures and museum of the old Medical College, where I spent several days with much interest, and had the pleasure of hearing Doctors Jackson and Chapman. I had studied closely "Chapman's Therapeutics," from which I had drawn many useful lessons in practice. I was highly gratified in attending these lectures. The museum contained many specimens of anatomy, both in a healthy and morbid state. I was present at a lecture delivered by Professor Hare, the great chemist, who devoted the latter part of his life to modern spiritualism.

After looking through the college, I availed myself of a ticket from my friends, the Yarnells, druggists, of whom I had purchased my drugs, and visited the City Poor-house, which was situated across the Schuylkill River, beyond the city limits. The place occupied ten acres of ground, which were entirely enclosed by a building extending around them. There was a large number of inmates of all classes there at the time, and many of the trades were carried on in the buildings. There was an apartment for lunatics, and quite a large number of both sexes were confined to their rooms. On another visit to Philadelphia, through the politeness of one of the Messrs. Yarnall, I visited the Lunatic Asylum, then under the care and supervision of the Friends, or Quakers. It was located several miles—up the Delaware—from the city. The visit was highly interesting. I was introduced to the House Physician, who took much pains to show me through all the buildings. He also informed me as to his mode of treatment and management of his patients. I found that it was conducted strictly on the humane principle. Insanity was regarded as a disease, and treated accordingly. No pains were spared to afford the inmates of the Asylum pleasure and amusement. A small circular railway had been fitted up for the use of such as could be trusted under a Superintendent's care, to take exercise whenever the

weather would admit of it. A large portion that had been admitted had been discharged as cured. Quite a number were admitted who did not belong to the Friends' Association.

On our return we took the cars for Harrisburg, from which place we took passage in a canal-boat for Hollidaysburg. There we took the railroad and crossed the mountain, by nine inclined planes, some of them nearly half a mile long. At Johnstown, we again took the canal to Pittsburg; thence by river to Cincinnati, and thence home by stage. In my several trips East, I crossed Pennsylvania in almost every direction, by which I saw a large portion of the State. The valley from Harrisburg to Hagerstown is a desirable country to live in.

We received the large stock of goods that I had purchased in the winter of 1838 and 1839, and commenced a fine spring and summer business. The canal was under contract, and the work progressing rapidly; but in the fall the work was suspended, and business became, in consequence, flat. Much of our stock had been sold on credit to men expecting money through operations on the canal; but the suspension of that work, and the State being in debt to contractors, caused the payments, to a large amount, to be stopped, and after they were resumed, much was never realized, and we, as well as others, suffered a loss.

In the summer of 1840, I came to the conclusion that our liabilities would ultimately force us to wind up our business. In addition to this, my partner was not the right man for the place. Many things went different from what I desired, and added to this I had got entangled in politics. I concluded, after an examination of my affairs, that by a sale I could wind up my business and save my real estate, and that would leave me independent. I owned over one hundred and sixty acres of fine river-bottom land, all susceptible of cultivation, besides timbered land, in all nearly three hundred acres. Late in the summer we sold out, and, as we supposed, to good men, and though we ultimately received the full amount that we had sold for, the payment was delayed, much to our injury. Beside this, we had some five or six thousand dollars due us on our books, much of which was never realized.

During that summer I was re-elected to the Legislature, and spent the winter at the seat of Government. About a month after the session closed I received the appointment of Canal Commissioner, which kept me from home the most of my time for a year. Afterward I was elected Superintendent of the Whitewater Canal, which was, however, finally transferred to a Company. In the spring of 1842, I came home, and the office I held as Superinten-

dent of the Whitewater Canal, afforded me leisure to look after my own affairs, which were in no enviable condition. Many debts which had been made in the store were yet unpaid, suits for which had been brought. I paid to one justice, for fees due him and his constable, over sixty dollars, which was more than had been collected on the actions brought. The late firm was yet in debt. To add to my other misfortunes, I had gone security for individuals, for which I was liable in one case to the amount of fifteen hundred dollars. All these circumstances combined, were sufficient to stagger a man of the strongest nerves; but I resolved to work my way out by some means. Early in May, my wife took sick, which was another drawback. Though she was unwell, I felt forced to take a trip and endeavor to collect some debts due me, and in the round got sick myself, and was confined to my bed for a week, from home; but was fortunate, however, in being at the house of a friend. During the summer I made many turns; received horses, and any kind of property, for debt, that I could convert into money, as the best means by which I could collect outstanding claims. I carried on my farm, but it was not very well managed by my son Stephen, who was inexperienced.

In September, my wife died, leaving me with a family of four children at home. It required all the nerve I had to keep up. I had no one to advise with or console me, and such was my condition in business matters that it would not do to impart my circumstances to any one. My old partner had exhausted his energies, and had thrown all the business on me, but by proper management I kept things moving. Within a month after my wife died I was able to make a financial move, by which I liquidated nearly the last dollar the old firm owed. I had, however, individual liabilities that were yet standing against me, and how to arrange them was yet a question. I had means due me, and assets on my farm, but they were not available. The entire business of the country was crushed, everything was at a stand-still. The price of land and everything being at a nominal value, it was next to an impossibility to sell much, if anything, and realize cash. I resolved to get out of debt; but one security was yet hanging over me, and in court. Through the assistance of my brother, I succeeded in selling my farm, early in the winter, thereby getting some money and made a turn, which paid one of my largest debts. I took a quarter section of wild land in Huntington County, at three hundred dollars, and sixty acres of land on Garrison Creek—the amount paid not recollected—and notes for the balance. All that I realized for the valuable farm was estimated at three thousand dollars. The

ready money which I got I took to Cincinnati, and purchased Indiana State Scrip, which was greatly depreciated; and with that I purchased lands in Wabash County, Indiana. One of the eighty acres is that on which my son Stephen now lives, situated a mile and a half from the county-seat, on the north side of the river. There was an improvement on it, of about six acres, and some buildings. I purchased it with scrip, and it stood me about three hundred dollars. I also purchased four forty-acre tracts, north of Ashland, on section sixteen, township twenty-six, range seven. These four tracts cost me five hundred and ten dollars and eighty cents, and were purchased in the winter of 1842 and 1843. In the fall of 1859, about sixteen and a half years afterward, I purchased forty acres adjoining the others, being the south-east quarter of the north-east quarter of said section sixteen. It had been improved. There was a hewed log-house, a small orchard, and about thirty-four acres cleared and fenced in, for which I paid in cash six hundred dollars, and agreed to lift the mortgage that had been given on said land to secure the payment of four hundred dollars, making in all one thousand dollars.

After making these purchases I returned home, and having no other business, I engaged in the practice of medicine again. I had previously purchased of my old partner, Dr. Brown, his library and some medicines, and had fitted up an office in one room in the house I was living in. I had provided homes for my children, and had broken up housekeeping, but had taken in a family, who occupied the balance of my house, and with whom I boarded. I was lonely, and felt but little inclination to do business, but when called upon attended to it.

In May, I married Mrs. Mary Ann Gayle. (For particulars see Family Record.) Our bridal trip was to Indianapolis. We stopped with ex-Governor Noah Noble, and I attended the annual meeting of the Grand Lodge of Indiana. We spent a week in Indianapolis, and called on quite a number of old acquaintances, among whom were the family of ex-Governor David Wallace, whose first wife was an own cousin of my wife; dined with my much-esteemed friend, Governor Samuel Bigger, where we enjoyed ourselves most pleasantly, in a free and social conversation. We also accepted an invitation to a party at my friend Oliver H. Smith's, ex-United States Senator. Our social intercourse during this trip dispelled much of the gloom that had hung over me, but on returning home I met new relations, and entirely new circumstances surrounded me. We had none of my former family about me. My relations were all changed. I had been so long in active life, surrounded

with a family that had grown up with me, but now all those ties that bind a family together were broken. My business all changed, I seemed alone, and without means or employment. I had abandoned the practice of medicine, and lost all taste for it, and yet that seemed to afford the only prospect by which I might make a living. I had, as it were, to begin the world anew, but firmly resolved never to engage in politics or run for any public office. They sweep a man along into a vortex, from which, sooner or later, he emerges in penury, disgusted with mankind, and sickened at his own folly. I passed the summer of 1843 without much fixedness of purpose, practicing when called upon, but could not experience that feeling which is so essential to success. The fall passed like the summer. I felt unsettled; no energy. I felt as though I needed some pursuit over which I could have control, and yet not feel a dependence upon the caprices of men, and upon a profession that I had lost all taste for. In my new family relations I was pleasantly situated. My wife did all in her power to make my life agreeable. I was living with her at her residence, which was opposite my old home. Up to this time I had always had a home of my own, and been accustomed to manage all my affairs, and even a large amount of domestic matters. These things had changed; my new wife had been a widow, accustomed to manage all her domestic affairs, and possessed excellent ability and adaptation for doing so. Thus time floated on until late fall, when the old drug store fell into the hands of my friend Daniel Hankins, in payment for a security debt. He urged me to take the establishment, and on good terms. I thought of the proposition. The business had been tried by different individuals, and nearly all who had tried it had failed. I had my fears, but finally came to the conclusion that I could succeed as well in the business, or better, than in anything which then presented itself. I had practical experience to assist me, and by devoting my entire energies exclusively to the business, I concluded that I could succeed, and making up my mind to undertake it, I closed the trade.

My son Stephen had occupied the sixty acres of land that I had purchased on Garrison Creek. I furnished him the means to farm it; let him have a team, wagon, harness, plows, and a stock of hogs and cattle. But during that year he was so unfortunate as to lose his wife, who died in childbed. He had one child, which he put with his wife's parents to live. He then sold off his crop and stock of every description, including farming tools. Paid his debts, and went to making a living as best he could. The land he had been living on I sold, and gave the proceeds, in part payment

for the drug-store, direct to Hankins. The store was estimated at \$750, and the land, I think, at \$500. I gave a note for the balance, to be paid in one year, which I paid out of money yet due from the sale of my farm.

The drug-store had been shut up for some time, and was in a bad condition. The goods and furniture had been moved out of the house where I had formerly carried on the business with Griffiss. My wife's brother, C. E. Shipley, was then the owner of the old stand, including a residence adjoining the business part of the house, and also the ground connected with both buildings. I made an arrangement with him, by which I moved my family into the dwelling part of the house, and the drug-store into the old business room. As soon as I had all these arrangements made I went to work with a fixed and settled purpose to make money, and determined to make the business of trade my exclusive vocation. I had all the goods and furniture to move. Our old room had been for some time unoccupied, as I said before, and needed cleaning and repairing somewhat. The times were yet depressed, business dull; every one abhorred debt, and the means of raising money were very limited; but, notwithstanding all this, I had resolved to be up and doing, and went to work with a hearty good will, being assisted by my two sons, Darwin and Thomas. We cleaned, and had the room whitewashed; cleaned out the cellar, and fitted up fixtures for barrels; moved and fitted up the furniture in the store; overhauled every thing carefully, examining each and every article; throwing away that which was not good or was useless. Quite a number of toys were in the old concern, which we mended and renovated, so that we had, when through with this part of trade, quite a lot of cheap toys, and a few fancy articles, which, with judicious arrangement, made quite a show. Such articles as we had not time to overhaul and clean up were taken up stairs out of sight. Finally we had our room nicely arranged; but, as Christmas came on Monday, we had to spend Sunday in giving our room the finishing touches, so that on Monday morning we opened out, and the holiday gave us quite a run. Many called to see me again at the old stand and at my old business. The proceeds from the sales of the day were far beyond my expectations. Our toys and notions that had at first seemed worthless sold readily; so much so that we had to go to work and prepare for the New Year's holiday. This came, and passed off favorably. I now felt like a new man. I was in a business that I liked, and was well schooled in. All my surroundings were changed; and during a portion of the time I had my children with me. I felt confident of

success, and brought all my energies to bear towards that consummation; but soon I was prostrated again with one of my periodical spells, which disappointed me much in my arrangements. The store needed a further supply of goods to make a good assortment; and it was not until February that I was able to go to the city to replenish the stock. I finally went. The cash taken in for articles sold, and the means I had acquired from other sources, together with one hundred dollars loaned to me by my brother-in-law, C. E. Shipley, amounted to \$500. With this I replenished the stock in the city of Cincinnati.

Before making any purchases I called on my old friend, Wm. H. Harrison, druggist in that city, who voluntarily offered to furnish me with all the goods I wanted on credit, if I wished it. I thanked him for his generous offer, and replied that I had started business anew, and intended to go measurably on the cash system. I finally made a bill with him, with the understanding that, if it exceeded my "pile," after paying off all the other bills I made, I would be pleased to accept his offer, which was acceded to, and I left my order for the supply which I needed in his line. On settling up all my bills, when I came to take up my bill with Harrison, I found that I had exceeded my amount in cash between fifty and a hundred dollars. I had wagons there, and saw my purchases all loaded up; then mounted my horse, and started for home. In due time the goods arrived safe, and in good condition.

On opening them I found the selection had been well made. I was now prepared to do a snug retail business, and was also enabled to fill orders for the practicing physicians of the neighborhood. As soon as I had the new stock opened I engaged in the final overhauling of the remaining portion of the old stock, cleaning up dirty bottles, old measures, and repairing such as needed it. Early in the spring Griffiss, my old partner, moved out of the residence part of the house, and I moved my family in. I then had all in a compact manner. The store was opened every morning before sunrise, and was not shut until bed-time at night. During meal-time some one always remained in the store ready to attend to customers. At all other times, unless sick or absent purchasing goods, I attended to the store personally. I left nothing undone that would gain me customers or advance my business. My energies, assisted by much experience and knowledge of men and things, all were used as so much capital to carry on my business. I sent by my friend, Col. Hankins, in early spring, an order to my old trading house, in Philadelphia, of the Messrs. E. & C. Yarnall's. They were so kind as to fill my order on time, amounting to less than

two hundred dollars; also an order to my old friend, Samuel Bisphan, for wine and brandy for medical purposes, which was also filled. The debts were promptly met. The country was just emerging from great depression in business matters. The whole country was afraid of debt; bought light, and if they used their credit it was in a very sparing manner. I received my stock from Philadelphia, and, though small, is consisted of choice articles, and such as I most needed. In May I went to Cincinnati, and made such purchases as I found necessary. I was now fully prepared to meet the wants of the country around in my line of business. I had books in connection with drugs, oils, paints, and a great variety of notions, and such odd articles as the country needed, and were not kept by dry-goods' houses. I was not confined to any particular commodity. My object was to sell and make money; and to do so I must meet the wants of the country, which I did. I added to my other stock mechanics' tools, as there were none kept at that time in the place. This soon brought the mechanics around me, and I not only got their trade but found them an excellent means of advertising my stock. They mixed with the people, and in every neighborhood I had a friend to advertise for me.

By all these appliances, together with strict personal attention to customers in the store, I was constantly gaining business. I now and then used our village paper as a medium for advertising; but, after all, I found that strict attention to business—keeping up a good assortment of articles, a plain straight forward, open, and attentive course towards customers—was the best means of getting them, and then of keeping them. During the first year I turned my \$500 three times, and had it at the end of the year for another investment; besides, my stock was enlarged, and I now felt confident of success. I had more than realized my expectations. My wife was of great service to me. She was a business woman, and soon learned the whole run of the store; could keep accounts, and in my absence attend to the business. I was greatly indebted to her for her attention and ability. Besides all this, she knew mankind, and understood all those means that win the confidence of persons in business operations. She had superior capacities, and knew well how to use them to the best advantage, and never failed to use them when necessary, and at the right time. She had no superior, and but few equals. I had one daughter, and she had two. They attended, when necessary, to the domestic affairs of the house while my wife attended to the store. For the first two or three years I had considerable practice among my old



friends in town, and went at such hours in the day as I would be least missed from the store and attended to my cases. This brought me in about what supported our family, so that the profits of the store went towards increasing the stock, so that in a few years I had a surplus over and above the capital necessary to carry on the business. I had another advantage. Quite an amount of old claims of the firm were unpaid. Some of these became good, and men called and paid off their old liabilities. I find, by reference to our old books, that on a final settlement between Griffiss and myself, in 1854, I had collected and settled debts of the old firm to the amount of \$886 04, which were in occasional sums, running through the whole time we were last in the drug business. One-half of this amount belonged to me.

In February, 1850, I purchased of my friend Samuel W. Parker forty acres of land for \$1,500, and of John Murphy I purchased at the same time forty acres more—both pieces lying side by side, situated one mile above Connersville. The same ground I now own, 1861. For the forty acres bought of Murphy, I paid him \$1,700, making in all \$3,200. In the fall of 1865 I sold it for \$8,000. In the summer of 1849 I commenced the main building of the house where I now live, situated in the upper part of the town, on the north-east corner of Western Avenue and Eighth Street, formerly known as Market and Mill Streets. It was finished the next spring. The lot was inclosed, a well sunk, and the house rented. In the summer of 1852 I built the stable, and ran the fence between the stable lot and garden.

In February, 1853, I sold the drug-store to David Rawls and Alexander Morrison. My long and close application to business began to tell upon my health. None of my sons liked the business, or seemed inclined to devote that attention to it which was necessary for success; and to carry it on through the assistance of clerks, and pay rent besides, would take a large share of the profits. Rawls had been my clerk; I found him to be a reliable man, and had no doubt but that he would succeed. The amount I had outstanding, together with the sale of the store, and possessing a house of my own, and the income from the farm I had purchased and paid for, I knew would afford a living, in addition to some means I had to operate with in out-door trades. After the sale I went to work immediately and put up all the back buildings of my "Home Place," and filled up the lot, and in September we moved to it. I afterward succeeded in purchasing the ground south of the house and inclosed it, and which I now have in culti-

vation, and control all the ground west of the street and east of the canal, north to Eighth Street.

My wife was in bad health when we moved to our new home, and had been complaining all the summer. She continued to decline until she died, which event occurred on the 3d day of February, 1854; and in the April following, two months after, my son Thomas died. The autumn before he died he had gone into the confectionary and baking business. I had furnished him \$400 in cash, a portion of which I had owed him. After the death of my wife I made arrangements with him by which he was to live in my house, and I was to board with him and his wife, to whom he had been married about eighteen months. It was my intention to furnish capital and go into the business with him, as far as it could be done, adding to it all kinds of groceries. His death thwarted all these plans. The long and protracted illness of my wife, and then the sickness and death of my son, added to my misfortunes to that degree that I was borne down by them, and my own health became greatly impaired; I lost all relish for business. I rented my house and home to one Paul Barnard, and arranged with him for the board of my step-daughter, Temple E. Gayle, and Ella, an orphan child, taken by my wife Mary Ann to raise. She adopted and now bears my name. In the arrangement I also was to have a room, and board with Mr. Barnard when in town. In May I started away from home and was absent until October.

I have omitted several important events of my life for the purpose of bringing into one or two chapters those events that were more prominently connected with the public. I had naturally large love of approbation, a desire for distinction. This, however, was fortunately coupled with large conscientiousness and benevolent feelings, which prompted me to a faithful discharge of all my responsibilities, and to aim to merit the position to which I aspired. Being deficient in self-esteem, I lacked confidence in my own powers, and only acquired it as I gained the knowledge which confirmed me in my ability. I was deficient in individuality—the power of recollecting proper nouns. To remedy this defect I had to resort to the ideas of association; but this increased the labor of learning anything. Added to this, I was deficient in language, often at a loss for words to express my ideas, hence I was but an indifferent public speaker. Notwithstanding this, I had a strong taste for declamation. Imitation and ideality were well developed, but the lack of language was so much in my way, that however beautiful the idea which presented itself to my mind, I was unable to express it as I wished to. Fortunately I had large caution

which restrained me from committing many a blunder. Had I been early trained and educated, some of those defects would have been greatly lessened.

My mind had not been trained in youth, and when I came to study in after life, I sought more to acquire a knowledge of the principles of things and their practical application, than that which goes to embellish or render a man profoundly learned; hence, in all my pursuits I have been more of a practical man than a conspicuous one. Thus prompted, coupled with the fact that I came to the West an obscure young man, uneducated, and, to a great extent, ignorant of men and things, yet my sagacity soon discovered to me that I was living among a people of whom a large majority were no better informed than myself, and, added to which, their circumstances, in many instances, were not as favorable as mine. I naturally sought to acquire distinction, and gratify my love of approbation. I was further prompted by a desire that there should go back to my native country a reputation for distinction which I had acquired in my Western home.

The first of my being called to military duty in the West was in the spring of 1817. The company within whose bounds I was residing was commanded by Captain Thomas Trusler, a man of limited talents, and still more limited information, but, in his own estimation, a man of some consequence. He was the acting constable for William Helm, a Justice of the Peace under the Territorial Government of Indiana, and afterward under the State. At the first muster I was elected Corporal, but the individual who was elected Orderly Sergeant not possessing much tact or ability, I soon had that duty to perform, and the next year I was elected Orderly Sergeant. I shall never forget an incident connected with this office. I was desirous of relieving myself from carrying a musket or rifle, so I procured of a blacksmith an iron blade about a foot long, and one and a half inches wide, a shank at one end, while the other was reduced to a sharp point, and from the center to each edge hammered on each side to an edge. This I ground and polished perfectly smooth and bright, and inserted the shank into the end of a staff about seven feet long, nicely finished round, from a fine piece of black walnut wood. This formed a nice spear, and when held perpendicularly in the hand, one end resting on the ground, the spear blade showed above the head in a bright and shining surface. The first appearance of this on parade created quite a sensation. It was something new; every one was anxious to handle it, and make some remark about its use as a weapon. All agreed that in close quarters it would answer as well as a bay-

onet. It served my purpose well, as it exempted me from carrying a fire-arm, and was much lighter. It was not in the way at roll-call, and in facing the company it served as the basis of a line. I have given a long story about a little matter.

On the 21st day of April, 1820, I was commissioned Captain of my old company, in the Eleventh Regiment of Indiana Militia. In moving to Connersville, in the winter of 1822, I lost my command as Captain. From that time up to 1832 I served on the Regimental Staff, in some capacity, much of the time as Adjutant, and then as Surgeon. For a short time I served in a Volunteer Light Infantry Company as a private. In the summer of 1832 I was elected Colonel of the regiment. I had two competitors—the Lieutenant-Colonel, Ray, and the Major, Shields.

About this time a man by the name of Chrisler became my bitter enemy. He had been a popular man, but had neither the talent nor application to sustain him. We both lived in the same neighborhood. His only cause for opposition was my growing popularity, and the decline of his. I had, a few years before, beaten a near relative of his in an election for Probate Judge. This man Chrisler, with a friend of his, by the name of Ginn, who was also a bitter political enemy of mine, by perverting a private conversation of mine, sought to defeat my election, and they left no stone unturned in endeavoring to accomplish it. On the morning of the election I was sick, so much so that upon getting up I had to lie down again; but after taking a cup of tea, and a very light breakfast, in bed, it seemed to strengthen me, and I requested Gossett, a young man who was living with me at the time, to harness the horse and put him to a one-horse wagon I had. I afterward got in and went to town.

I was then living on my Helm farm. I stopped at a hotel kept by my friend, Mr. Sample, Sr. I took a room and let it be known that I was there, and requested my friends to call and see me. Early in the day, there was put into circulation my perverted private conversation before alluded to. I had come prepared to meet it, and to also expose the man who had originated it; but before doing so I was determined to force him or his friends to discover or disclose the vile promulgator of the foul slander. I denied it *in toto*, and defied the ability of any man to substantiate the allegation. The charge was simply that I had said, "that no poor man should hold an office." This, at that time, if true, would have been sufficient to defeat any man in an election. It was something I had never said, and the matter out of which Ginn (whom I discovered was the originator) manufactured it was a gross perversion

of truth and facts; and though he deserved exposure and chastisement, I concluded not to expose him unless forced to do so, by his being referred to as the author. On my indignant and positive denial my friends took a bold stand, and challenged the proof of the statement. The election opened warm. From the bold and defiant position taken by my friends, my opponents cowed down and would not expose their man. The election over and the votes counted, I found I had received more votes than both of my competitors together. This was the proudest day of my life. The result of that election gave me more satisfaction and gratification than any before or since. Although the office to which I was elected was regarded at that time as honorable, I cared but little about it, as it was attended with expense and was of no pecuniary benefit; but the triumph over those who had determined to defeat me, constituted the pleasure. It was the indorsement of public opinion. There was another little circumstance in connection with it, which, though unpleasant, yet was amusing, and shows how the human mind may become excited and interested in what may commonly be regarded as common-place matters. In those days it was not only customary, but looked for by the electors, from the candidates for any office, to treat with some kind of ardent spirits. As some of my friends, living on Garrison Creek, where I had first settled, and who had served under me when I was a captain, were about to start for home, they being excited by the result of the election, wanted a stirrup dram. It was arranged, and they were well supplied. Soon after they started there came up one of the heaviest showers I ever witnessed. They were drenched, and as they passed my residence on the farm they stopped. Though wet they were full of glee and hilarity, and wanted more stimulus. All that we had about the premises was a barrel of boiled cider. They imbibed freely of it, and soon were past going home. Daniels, who was then living with me, waited on them, and when he found how it was with them, put their horses away, and showed them up stairs to bed, where I found them next day on going home. I had some hot coffee made for them and a slice of toast, and took it to their room, and induced them to partake of them. This soon strengthened them up, and they left for home. It was a spree—a thing I had never known them to indulge in before. I received my commission, dated the 3d of August, 1832, as Colonel of the Eleventh Regiment of Indiana Militia—a company of cavalry, an artillery, two rifle companies, and one light infantry company, besides eight or ten other companies. Every officer was dressed in full uniform, and we had annually a two days' drill, in

which every commissioned officer, and officers on the staff, and each orderly sergeant were required to attend those drill musters. I found no difficulty in exciting a spirit of emulation, by which each officer tried to excel in the discharge of his duty at the drill, or on days of regimental parade, I think it was in the year of 1836 and 1837 that I was absent from home, at the time the law made it necessary to issue the usual orders for the several days of mustering, for the purpose of being trained. The duty devolved upon the Lieutenant-Colonel, but he failed to discharge the duty, and thus ended the military operations of the Eleventh Regiment, and up to this day such a thing as a military parade has not been seen since. The only exception was, that there was in organization, in the southern part of the county, two light-infantry companies. A vast amount of time and labor has been saved, from what had been a useless waste of time and expense. I have no room or time to enter into the political or moral bearing of this subject, but will leave it, by remarking that I fear it will be a long time before civilization will be so far progressed as to enable mankind to dispense with military force altogether, though I am now much in favor of dispensing with it to the utmost of the public safety. War is brutalizing in all its bearings, though there is much science connected with it, and requires the best talent to conduct it to the best advantage under the more modern appliances; and yet the rank and file are but little more, at best, than tools in the hands of commandants. Although in early life I was fond of military affairs, and took great pleasure in its trappings and exhibitions, yet at the same time I was not averse to distinction in civil matters. But knowing my lack of the qualifications for filling most offices, I was modest in my pretensions. Previous to the organization of Fayette County, that part of which now constitutes a portion of this county, where I resided, was then a portion of Franklin County. I was elected County Commissioner, and served as such for a short time, and until after the organization of Fayette County, having been elected the year previous. In August, 1818, I was a candidate for County Commissioner, at the organization of Fayette County, but was not elected. I had no acquaintance in the northern part of the county, and was living in the extreme southern part. The time was but short before the election, and I made no effort to be elected.

It was a position of much responsibility; the country new; the county small. Money and means scarce. County buildings were to be erected; requiring much skill and good management to successfully carry the matter through. I never regretted the

defeat. Engaging in my profession I had as much to attend to as occupied my time and attention exclusively. Years passed before I felt any aspiration for place or station; but, as before stated, when I moved the second time from town to my farm, in the year 1829, I thought of abandoning the profession of medicine, and I then consented to let my name be used as a candidate at the next August election for the Probate Judgeship; a court exclusively for Probate business. We had an ample law organizing such a court, and it required a certificate from a Circuit Judge of the State to entitle a man to hold the office. I shall never forget the surprise manifested by Judge Eggleston, the Circuit Judge and well known jurist, who then resided in Brookville at the time I applied to him for a certificate of qualification, and it was not without some fear and trepidation that I approached him. He was a Virginian, high-toned, and a learned man, and withal a stickler for forms and qualifications; but I had been reading under the advice of good lawyers, and, besides, I had time to further improve my knowledge, provided I failed in getting a certificate at that time, if deficient in any point in his estimation. The examination would indicate my deficiencies, so I resolved on a trial. We were alone. He took the Statutes and commenced with the first section of the Probate Law; asked the law of the section, both as to statutory provisions and the common law principle involved, etc. In this way he went, section by section, through the whole enactment. I answered correctly every question propounded by him. When through he remarked, "I guess you will do," and left me. When he returned he handed me a highly flattering certificate; and, after a short conversation, I thanked him for his good opinion, and left. The certificate I have lost or mislaid among some of my numerous papers, and also the commission I received as judge. I succeeded in the election without much effort; and, by the Record of the Probate Court, I took my seat on the bench a Judge of Probates, on the 2d day of September, 1829, and continued to serve until after the spring term of the court, in the year 1834, having served five years out of a term of seven, for which I had been commissioned. As a Judge of Probate I acquired high standing, but the office was not a lucrative one, and wholly incompatible with my medical profession, which seemed then to be forced upon me, and afforded constant employment and much better compensation. I consequently resigned the judgeship, but held the office for two years, under the expectation of a change in the organization of the courts into circuits, so that the entire time of the judge would be employed, and the salary increased, and thereby afford a fair

living ; but it was not until years afterwards that the change was made.

At the August election of 1836 I was elected to the Legislature. On the day of the election, and for some time previous, I was confined to my room, and much of the time to my bed, by sickness. I recovered soon, however, and attended the session of the Legislature ; during which I was appointed one of the committee to report the Internal Improvement Bill, that ultimately broke down the State. I never had confidence in the measure, but such was the state of public opinion, and the urgent necessity for some cheap mode of transportation, particularly in the Whitewater country, that the people were willing to hazard almost anything to accomplish their object, and nothing short of an extended system could have been passed. It was provided in the bill that a Board of Commissioners should be appointed to control the management and construct the works provided for in the bill ; and it was further provided, that the Board should put such work under contract as was most demanded and yielded a revenue. But the same influences operated on the Board that controlled the Legislature ; the Board disregarded the express provisions of the act, and put portions of each work under contract, and the State became its own competitor. Engineering advanced to high prices, and the same result occurred in the prices of common labor, and, in short, in everything ; but, notwithstanding all this, no human effort was sufficient to control it, even in the Legislature. The State debt rapidly increased, and no adequate means could be devised by which to pay the interest ; and this hurried the State to insolvency, which finally resulted in the crisis of the year 1839. Here is a fine field for the politician and political economist, but I have not the time to pursue the subject further. As soon as the session closed I returned home, fully satisfied that State legislation was not the field for me, and came to the conclusion that, as it was my first effort, it should also be my last ; but in the summer of 1838 I was urged to become a candidate again, and, although it was against my inclination and interest, yet such was the force of circumstances that I yielded to the solicitations of my friends, and was re-elected and served during the session. On my way to the seat of Government I attended the railroad celebration at Madison. Early in the session I introduced a bill classifying the public works, and connected it with some amendments to the charter of the State Bank, by which the capital was to be increased. My object in the introduction of the bill was not so much to procure its passage as to ascertain the feeling of the "House." It was received by a large



number in the most enthusiastic manner, and passed to its second reading at once, and was ordered to be printed ; but as I had anticipated, when all the bearings of the bill became understood, new combinations were formed, and I never called up the bill. The entire session passed without accomplishing anything definite in regard to our works of internal improvement, which was the all-absorbing subject of the day. A circumstance occurred during the session that I have always regretted, and which ultimately defeated me in an election the next year. Samuel W. Parker, a citizen of our county, was a candidate before the Legislature for re-election as Prosecutor in our Circuit Court. There were prejudices against him ; and, by designing men, letters were gotten up, and forwarded to me and the other representative of the county, intended as instructions to us to vote for another man, one Wm. Daley. I was, at the time of the election for Prosecutor, barely able to sit up on account of bad health, and entirely unfit for business, but attended the election in the "House," and voted as urged, though with great reluctance. It resulted, however, in the election of a third man, by a large majority, over both Parker and Daley. Thus defeated, Parker resolved to go before the people, and, by entering into combinations with the party opposed to him, he succeeded in defeating the regular nomination by the party he had formerly acted with. I had been nominated during my absence ; and on my return, learning how matters stood, I became satisfied that I had as much to lose by a withdrawal as I would by a defeat, so I suffered my name to be continued and was defeated. Although chagrined and mortified, yet, in a pecuniary point of view, I had nothing to regret. I had learned a lesson, also, that there were times when a man should act upon his own judgment rather than upon the advice of his friends under excitement. A politician's life is one of vexation and trouble, and much foresight and sagacity are necessary to enable him to do that which is right and sustain himself in the various conditions in which he may be placed.

In 1840 I made up my mind to procure an election to the Legislature, and then to abandon public life altogether. I kept all my plans and intentions to myself, but in due time commenced my plan of operations. I belonged to the Whig party, which was then in the ascendancy in the county, and managed by the party machinery of a caucus. I had learned the entire routine. Public opinion must be operated on, little by little, and in such a manner as to not be understood as advancing one's own personal interests. The true motive must be kept in the background until the whole plan is well matured, and a strong current set in the right direc-

tion. To do this well much tact is necessary; honest and unsuspected individuals must be operated upon to awaken the public mind in the most successful manner. While the matter is budding much care was necessary in order to have a strong and vigorous growth. An individual must be found that would take a judicious lead. Conventions must be got up in townships; delegates of the right stripe appointed to the County Convention. Then the delegates must be approached in the most prudent manner; the neighborhood must be kept talking in the right direction; and, when the convention meets, some prudent knowing one must be the fogleman; the right man in the chair, and a man in the right place, and at the right time, to make the moves. The nomination rightly made; then heal all the breaches; a wise nod, and keep the ball rolling, with plenty of outside sentinels to give timely notice of any danger. Then the judicious remedy. Thus works politics and political conventions; and he who is ignorant of the machinery stands no chance while contending with or against the wily manager.

I was nominated, and without much effort was elected. A compromise was effected between the factions in the party, Parker filling the vacancy in the Senate, and Caleb B. Smith and myself for the House of Representatives. This made a strong representation from our county, but at a time when no earthly power could effect much. A perfect waste in the public works, the credit of the State ruined, and the State Treasury empty, while a general bankruptcy throughout the West was experienced. Time alone could work a change. Under all these unfavorable circumstances we took our seats in the Legislature; a body, said to have been made up of individuals much above the average talent in our Legislature. My past experience had prepared me to take an active part at the outset or opening of the session; and, besides that, I had resolved on acquiring a standing and a reputation. My first procedure resulted in obtaining the chairmanship of the Committee on the Canal Fund. It was a joint committee with the Senate. I was also on the Committee of Federal Relations, and chairman of a Select Committee on the State Departments. Thus I had a winter's task of hard work before me. The first I attempted was the State Departments. Each of them were receiving considerable salaries, when, under the act creating the office, they were only entitled to four hundred dollars per annum. The office of State Librarian devolved on the Secretary of State, and had been badly managed. I collected all the facts connected with each office, and embodied them in a report, and drew up a bill to regulate each

department by a separate act, and also one creating a distinct office of State Librarian, who should also have charge of the State House and grounds attached to it. The bill and report were in due time made out. The bills passed into acts with but few amendments. Some years afterwards I was at the capital, and visited the State House and grounds, and had the pleasant satisfaction of visiting the State Library, and finding the great change wrought, in the care and good arrangement of the library, growing out of the act. At the time of its passage there was a large collection of valuable State papers and public documents from the United States, lying in a large pile in a room in the old House, on the Governor's circle. The "bill" provided for the overhauling of these books and papers. It also provided for the enlargement of the library-room and the proper classification of the whole library; all of which had been faithfully carried out in accordance with the law; as also had the proper care and attention been paid to the grounds and trees surrounding the State House which was, and is yet, a pleasant retreat on a hot summer's day, with the advantage of a fine promenade to any who may be inclined to indulge in the recreation.

My next report was from the Committee on Federal Relations. At that time there was a large class of politicians claiming the public domain as the property of the States, and our State was deeply interested in the scheme. It was a subject to which I had paid much attention, and was decidedly in favor of it. My friend, ex-Governor Wallace, was so kind as to put into my hands a large collection of facts connected with the subject, which greatly facilitated my efforts in making out the report. Accompanying the report was a joint resolution which passed both branches of the Legislature, and went into the hands of the enrolling clerk, and was lost. I always supposed it was abstracted; but fortunately I had retained the original draft of the report and resolution. I copied them again, and introduced them into the "House," with a statement of the facts. All other business was suspended for the time being. The joint resolution was read three several times, and passed immediately. I then took it to the Senate, who had been previously prepared to receive it. The rules were suspended; the resolution was read three times, and passed. I then got the proper signatures; took it to the enrolling clerk and had it enrolled; and then to the Governor, who signed it. I left it with him. He had it printed and forwarded to the several Governors of the States, as was provided in the resolution.

I next turned my attention to the Canal Fund. I called on the chairman of the Senate's part of the committee, who was a personal

friend of mine, a Mr. Elliott, who is now Circuit Judge, and resides at the county seat of Henry County. The starting point was the record of the Fund Commissioners. We agreed upon the time to commence our labor, and, when it came, we called on the clerk in the office, who offered us every facility. I took the record, and Judge Elliott acted as clerk. I read the record through, he noting the orders; made out the sums borrowed, and the different times when borrowed, and the various amounts, and for what purpose. There were three distinct funds—a loan for the State Bank, a loan for the Wabash and Erie Canal, and a loan on account of the Internal Improvement Act; each having its own distinct character and standing.

After we got through with the record we compared the result with the day-book, journal, and ledger. This through with, Elliott said he would leave me to all the glory I could make out of the matter. To further prosecute the affair an account was kept with each line of the Public Works. The record, in the office at the seat of Government, was not as complete as could have been desired. There was a deficiency in the precise dates in the sales of the Bonds of the State. It was alleged that a more complete set of books were kept in the city of New York. There had been borrowed, by the Fund Commissioners, over \$12,000,000 on the credit of the State, over \$3,000,000 of which was a total loss. The bonds had been sold on credit. The money was to have been paid in installments. The bonds had been parted with, and the payments never were realized in quite a number of instances. Property had been taken as collateral security, and the State was forced to take the property or lose its value. Some of it was valuable, and much of it possessed only a nominal value. All these facts were set out in tabular form, on a large sheet of paper, showing the precise amounts of each, the bonds realized on the amount lost, the amount in property and its kind, and the amount expended on each public work. It was an immense labor, in which I was much assisted by the clerk in the office, whose name was Ray. I also had a written report of nine closely printed pages, showing the condition of the State, her available means, the amount of taxable property, soil, climate, and the production of the soil, and the probable amount, when the works would be completed, with the ultimate results and destiny of the State. To get the facts, on which the written part of the report was predicated, was no small labor; and then to close up such a mass of accounts, and have them balance, was no trifling matter. When I had the report fully made out I submitted it to the Legislature; and, with it, two

“bills” regulating the Board of Fund Commissioners, and the further expenditure of public money, and the disposal of the property of the State held as security. The presentation of the report excited an intense interest; a profound silence prevailed. The Speaker of the “House” was so much interested that he took the large sheet containing the tabular statement and held it up to view, so that it could be seen by each member of the House, accompanying the exhibition with appropriate remarks. Heretofore no full and complete exhibit of the sale of bonds and expenditures had been made out. The annual reports of the Fund Commissioners and Board of Public Works were merely abstracts for the current year. The report I made out, though condensed, was a clear and plain statement of all the bonds sold, the money realized, and amounts expended.

The country had long demanded such a report; and, although a committee on the Canal Fund had been annually appointed, no one had been found willing to undertake the labor of making out a general statement. The report was received, and one thousand five hundred ordered to be printed for the use of the members. The “bills” were also printed, and finally passed. In order that the people in my own county should be fully posted in the matter I made arrangements with the printer for three hundred extra copies of the report; for which I paid out of my own pocket fifteen dollars, and distributed them gratis among my constituents. Notwithstanding all this trouble and expense, in distributing these reports, I was much surprised the next year to hear from candidates on the stump declaring that no full report had ever been made, and if they were elected it should be forthcoming. One Wilson Thompson, a Baptist preacher, was among the number, and such was his influence over the minds of many that I was astonished to find such a large number ignorant of the true state of things. He was a Democrat, and the most unscrupulous man in politics I ever met with. There was nothing too low for him to stoop to, if he could but make it subserve his purpose. He succeeded in being elected, but took good care to never attempt making out the promised report. He was wholly incompetent for the task. Though a shrewd man, he was like most preachers who had long been engaged in sermonizing, dictatorial, making averments without fear of contradiction. If I ever had any doubts as to the propriety of man’s serving the public, with the hopes of immediate reward, they were now dispelled. The amount of labor and thought expended during the past session alone, had it been bestowed upon my own private business would have been made to

have yielded far more than I received. It entirely cured me of the desire for station and place. The report on the Canal Fund so increased my popularity with the members of the Legislature that there was felt much solicitude to elect me Fund Commissioner, but I was ineligible for the position; and, besides this, I did not want the office. It was a very responsible one, and brought the officer into immediate contact with the shrewdest business men, and men well skilled in financiering and all the legal questions connected with stocks, exchanges, and large moneyed operations. It was a situation I felt incompetent to fill with credit to myself and to the public interest. The Board was reduced to one member; to fill which ex-Governor Noble, who was then acting Canal Commissioner, was elected Fund Commissioner. As his election took place at the very termination of the session, that event left a vacancy in the office of Canal Commissioner, to be filled by appointment by the Governor. A large number of members waited on the Executive, and urged my appointment. The Governor declined making any for a time. I returned home in company with Messrs. Parker and Smith. The news of the failure of the State, and the continued suspension of our Whitewater Canal, as well as all other works which had been suspended the fall before, reached home before us, and our reception was cold and indifferent. What a contrast! Four years before the Mammoth Internal Improvement Bill had been passed. Guns were fired, and a general rejoicing was made, and salutes by the firing of cannon, for Smith and myself. In the passage of the "bill," nor in any labor of the session during which the "bills" were passed, had either of us performed one-fourth of the labor we had during the past session, which had been replete with toil, thought, and research; and, in my judgment, we were entitled to far more credit than for our services during the session which passed the Internal Improvement Act. Smith was a candidate for Congress at the next election, and was beaten. I had been at home about four weeks when I received a commission from Governor Samuel Bigger to act as Canal Commissioner, dated the 1st day of March, 1841. This would entitle me to hold until the next meeting of the Legislature, and until a successor was elected and qualified. Although I had a mass of unsettled business I had my former partner to look after the matter; but, by the passage by the Legislature of a new execution law, all collection of debts were measurably suspended. I came to the conclusion that I would accept the appointment. The salary was a low one, three dollars a day. The most of the time I was employed (besides the expense of myself and horse, and

paying tavern bills), as all the public works south of the National Road were under my care and supervision. A turnpike road from New Albany had been finished as far as Paoli. This had to be looked after, and quite an amount of unsettled business with contractors was on hand. The Legislature, the previous session, had provided for arbitrations in certain cases. There was a dam on Eel River, in Clay County (that had cost the State sixty thousand dollars), which was in a critical condition, and required attention. In the meantime a heavy arbitration was had with the Stewarts, who had been contractors for the Pigeon Summit, on the canal, from Terra Haute to Evansville, on the Ohio River. There had been sold to a company, in Madison, a certain amount of State Bonds; the proceeds of which were to be applied to the railroad running from Madison to Indianapolis. This railroad had been finished as far as Vernon, and was in running order, and was run over what was called the "deep diggings," at Madison, twice a day. The grading was finished at a cost of over three hundred thousand dollars. All the freight that went out on the road had to be wagoned two miles up an unpleasant hill. The question of laying a track down through the "deep diggings" came up for consideration, as also the laying of the track north of Vernon. The iron was on hand, and the road graded. Jesse L. Williams, who had been Chief Engineer of the State, was associated with me, and we constituted the sole Board. After my appointment I went to Indianapolis, and had an interview with Mr. Williams. The State had a lawsuit with the former engineer of the Madison road, and the suit was then pending in Jefferson County, at Madison. Williams was a witness in the case. It was agreed that we both should go to Madison, and take with us Thomas Morris, who was then the principal engineer on that road. In going out we went over the "work," and when we got to Madison we carefully examined the finished part of what was called the "deep diggings." It was an inclined plane of nearly three quarters of a mile long. We had been told that there was a similar plane near Frankfort, Ky., and we sent Mr. Morris to examine it, and ascertain its capacity for the transportation of freight. Mr. Williams remained at Madison to attend the sitting of the court and the trial of the State case. I took Henry C. Moore, civil engineer, in the employ of the State, on the Whitewater Canal, and went to New Albany, and over the turnpike to Paoli.

This road had been under the charge of an engineer acting as commissioner. He had built toll-gates on the credit of the road, as it obtained funds by the collection of tolls. I saw the commis-

sioner. He delivered the books and papers over to me, and I made a final settlement with him. I took charge of the road; gave new appointments to all the toll-keepers, except one, which was at a gate not paying expenses. I discharged him, and left the gate open. During the season I passed over this road several times, and finally appointed an agent on the road. We returned to Madison, where we met Morris, who had returned from Kentucky. He soon made out his report. I set him to work, to estimate the cost of laying the track from the depot on the hill to the landing in the town. The iron was on the ground, as were also the ties and spikes. I ascertained from the books, in the hands of the freight agent, the amount of average tonnage per day that was taken from the city to the depot, to go over the road, and the cost of transportation, and then calculated the cost over the iron track when laid, and found that a saving of six hundred dollars per day could be made, and the difference would be constantly increasing. This was a matter of importance. We then ascertained from the Bond Company whether the money would be forthcoming, if we put the work under contract and the iron laid down, and also if we should extend the track west of Vernon. Having obtained assurances sufficient to induce us to undertake the work, we did so, being fully satisfied that the interest of the State demanded it. Many obstacles were thrown in our way, which kept the work back; yet, it was finished in time to enable us to prove to the country and the Legislature the truthfulness of our calculations. Our first plan for transportation on the inclined plane was by a car drawn by horses, though afterwards it was done by an engine. I have been more particular in detailing this matter than I would otherwise have been had not a committee of the Senate, at the next session of the Legislature, censured me for obtaining a small lot of spikes which proved necessary to complete the track. We were short of spikes, and had to resort to the Bond Company at Madison, who refused to furnish them unless at an advanced price. This I was to allow on a bill that only amounted to two thousand dollars. Without them the work could not be made available, and we had no means of obtaining them, only through the Company.

During the year I paid out for the State over a quarter of a million of dollars, and settled numerous disputed contracts. I was actively engaged from early in the spring until the middle of the fall, when I was attacked with bilious fever, in consequence of my labors and exposure, the most of the summer in unhealthy localities, to which I had not for years been accustomed, and I came near losing my life. As soon as I had so far recovered as to be



able to ride, I went to Indianapolis to attend to official business and to assist in making out our report to the Legislature.

Notwithstanding the inquisitorial course of the Senate's Committee in their investigations into the conduct of every agent and individual who had in any way been connected with the Public Works as Fund Commissioner, Canal Commissioner, or as Engineer, and in some cases pushing the matter to such extremes as to create expense to a number of individuals without producing any benefit to the State or the public at large, yet the same Legislature passed bills allowing individuals different sums to the amount of some five or six thousand dollars, which we, as agents of the State, refused to pay, regarding them as unjust. They would not vote the sum direct, but directed us to allow on certain principles or bases, and instructed us to compute the amounts. The sums were paid to hangers-on and lobby members in the "House." Thus goes mankind; and I became heartily sick of public life.

During that session such of the public works as were of much importance, with the exception of what was called the Wabash Canal Charters, were granted to companies. The Whitewater Canal was among the number. Mr. Williams and myself were retained until the 1st day of March, 1842, by which time we had the business mostly closed up. The Board was abolished, and provision made for a superintendent on such lines as were in any part finished. During the summer I was in Madison a portion of the time, and became acquainted with most of the prominent men of the place. Early in the season I had an invitation to and attended a party, which I afterwards found was expressly gotten up to influence my action as a commissioner. Again in the autumn I met Governor Bigger there, and with him was invited to a party. I thought it was merely a compliment, but during the evening I found it was with an ulterior object. The Madison Road and Whitewater Canal were two prominent and deserving works; and, while I was acting in the Legislature, I found it to the interest of our people to act with the Madison interest; that their object was to devise some plan by which these works could be prosecuted by the State to completion. If the State had been able we could not command the vote in the Legislature. The Governor and myself had talked these matters all over long before, and understood each other, and were well satisfied that the only alternative left was to give the works to companies that would take them. So we soon enlightened the Madisonians. These men were the sharpest, shrewdest men I had ever met with. They could drive a stronger bargain than any set of men I ever had to deal with.

In the fall of 1857 I was standing in the Union Depot, at Indianapolis, into which came some seven or eight railroads, and, while waiting for a train to go out, I was ruminating upon times gone by and the then state of things. In the spring of 1842, after the adjournment of the Legislature, I had had conversations with a number of the leading men who were devising ways and means to complete the railroad from Madison to that city, and they stated that they did not see how they could ever make it, and that the part to be built was comparatively a cheap road. They did ultimately get it through by a flat rail; and in the space of fifteen years there was running into that depot several hundred miles of railroad. Besides these, there was one from New Albany to Michigan City, across the entire State, from north to south, and one crossing the northern part of the State from east to west, and one crossing the entire State from Toledo, down the Wabash Valley into Illinois, in the direction of St. Louis. So times change. Individuals accomplished that which the State failed to do, showing the utter folly of the State undertaking those works of public improvement. It is true that railroads have entirely superseded canals, except in a few more favorable localities.

Individuals are influenced by individual interest, and a few men manage the whole business. It is different with State works undertaken by legislation; for, however cautious they may endeavor to be, they are more frequently managed by selfish men who seek the places only to put money into their own pockets, at the expense of the State. Men who are shrewd, when once in office, are hard to be disposed of; and thus dollars upon dollars are expended to subserve self and friends, and often combinations are secretly entered into, militating against the public good. But few men are to be found so strictly correct as to manage a public matter as they would their own; and it oftentimes occurs, as I have known, that selfish and unprincipled men will combine against even an honest man and faithful public servant, and will slander and abuse him until they succeed in getting him removed, that they may get some tool of theirs in his place, and this is all done in such a manner as to deceive the honest and unsuspecting. Man is a curious animal; too often influenced and controlled by unholy motives, and in the end ruins himself. "Honesty is the best policy," after all, under all circumstances, and is sure to bring things out right at last.

During the winter I had an attack of pneumonia, which came near sending me to my long home, and probably would have done so but for the kindness of my friend, Jesse L. Williams, who took

me to his house, where I had a room and a nurse. I was kindly treated and cared for.

On the 1st day of March, 1842, my time as Canal Commissioner expired, and the Governor issued to me a new commission as Commissioner of the Whitewater Canal, I having been elected by the Legislature, notwithstanding the Senate Committee's Report. The Senate gave me a large vote, and was the means of my election. I cared nothing about the office, only as an endorsement of my conduct as Canal Commissioner. The commission was dated 1st of March, 1842, and was for two years; but, before the summer was over, a company was organized, and I delivered over to them the canal and instruments, books, papers, and all connected with it, as directed by law. Thus ended my public life. I was now comparatively out of business. I had a farm, but was not living on it; my wife was sick, and I was at a loss what to do. I finally concluded to offer my services as clerk for the new company; but my course, in the organization of the company, had been such as to excite some distrust as to my availability in carrying out some of their schemes, and I was rejected. It proved one of those fortunate occurrences, beyond their immediate foresight, that sometimes happen to men. The charter was a favorable one, and for a time everything seemed to augur the most favorable results. Individuals invested funds with the expectation of realizing large profits, and seemed to be in a fair way to do so, but from bad engineering the canal was laid too low. The work was cheaply built; an unusual freshet did immense damage, requiring large expenditure to repair it, and many individuals lost largely by the operation, and now it very little more than keeps itself in repair. Had I been connected with the work it is not improbable that I would have been totally ruined. On being defeated for clerk I finally resolved to never engage in any business but my own, and adhered to this resolution with one exception. For a time I was President of the Junction Railroad, but soon found that would not answer my views and interests, and consequently resigned a station I had rather reluctantly accepted.

In my boyhood I somehow became enamored with the Masonic institution, and why, I never could tell. I was so situated that I had no opportunity of making application for admission to the Order until after I emigrated to the West, and then, not until after a Masonic Lodge was established at Connersville, Fayette County, Indiana. On the 11th day of September, 1820, a dispensation was granted by the Grand Lodge of Indiana to eight brethren, to hold a Lodge at Connersville, and on the 27th day of September, 1820,

they met, and, accepting the dispensation, were installed as a Lodge by John Tipton, Grand Master, John Sample being installed Worshipful Master. On the 11th day of September, 1821, at a meeting of the Grand Lodge at Corydon, Indiana, a charter was granted, and Harvey Bates was appointed Worshipful Master, and on the 10th day of October, 1822, at a meeting of the Grand Lodge at Corydon, the old charter, being on paper, was surrendered, and a new charter, on parchment, was granted, and Abner Bailey appointed Worshipful Master. The style, name, and number of the Lodge were, Warren Lodge, No. 15. Said Lodge has continued under the last-named charter, and is in successful operation at this day (January, 1866).

On the 8th day of December, 1820, I was initiated in said Lodge. I took the degree of Fellow-craft in the said Lodge on the 26th day of December, 1820, and the degree of Master Mason in the February following. In the following June I was elected Junior Deacon. At the time I joined the Masonic Fraternity I was living on a farm, about eight miles from Connersville, where the Lodge was held. In November, 1821, I was elected Senior Deacon. In the winter of 1822-3, I moved to and resided in Connersville, and in the June following was elected Junior Warden. The next December I was elected Senior Warden, but prior to the next election I moved back to my farm. In the fall of 1827, moved back to town. On the 8th day of December, 1827, I was elected Worshipful Master, and was re-elected, from time to time, until June, 1832. I was again living on the farm in the country. In December, 1833, was again elected Worshipful Master. March 28, 1833, I moved back to Connersville, where I have continued to reside ever since. From the time I was first elected Worshipful Master, in December, 1827, until December, 1847, I served twelve years as the Worshipful Master, and in 1856 or 1857 served another term of one year as Worshipful Master.

I have neglected the Masonic usage in dating, which would be by adding 4000; thus, the present Masonic year would be A. L. 5866. In December, A. L. 5849, A. M., I was elected Treasurer, and continued to serve in that capacity until the 7th of June, 5851. May 6, I was made Chairman of a committee to serve with Samuel W. Parker and Henry Goodlander, as a Committee on Building, and continued to serve until the hall was finished where the Lodge now meets, in the third story of the building known as the Town Hall. I procured the draft of the house, and besides superintended the whole affair until the room was so far finished that the Lodge occupied it as a Lodge-room.

From the time I was initiated until the present, I have been a member, with the exception of about three years. I have served in the Lodge in every capacity, except that I was at no time the regular Secretary. The Lodge record will show numerous and lengthy reports made by me, on finance and other matters.

In the year 1823, in December, I represented Warren Lodge in the Grand Lodge, and was appointed District Master, and visited all the Lodges in Eastern Indiana, eight in number, extending from Fort Wayne to Vevay, on the Ohio River, and with but one exception was most cordially received, and that was at Vevay. This Lodge had fallen into a disorderly course—had not met for some time. I saw a few of the members, but was not able to get possession of the jewels or furniture. It was thought that a record of the Grand Lodge had been left with the Lodge, but I could not get it. Twenty-two years afterward it came to light. It had been stowed away in the garret of the Lodge Hall. Mr. Keen, who had been Secretary of the Grand Lodge, and also a member of the Vevay Lodge, proved an unworthy man, and had probably concealed the record.

I visited the Lodge at Fort Wayne in midwinter, traveling through a forest of fifty or sixty miles, coming across but one house in the whole distance, and that was on the Wabash River. The only road was a path, the underbrush being cut out so that a wagon could pass. I was kindly received by the brethren at Fort Wayne, and treated in the most kind and hospitable manner.

In December, 1829, I made my report to the Grand Lodge, which held its session at Indianapolis. At this session of the Grand Lodge I was elected J. G. Warden, and, at the meeting of the Grand Lodge in October, 1830, in the absence of the G. M., Deputy, and S. Warden, the duty of presiding devolved upon me, and during that session I was elected and installed Worshipful Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Indiana. The Grand Lodge adjourned, to meet the next year at Vincennes.

On the second Monday in October, 1831, I went to Vincennes to attend the session, but was taken sick the night after reaching there, and was unable to attend the meeting. At a meeting of the Grand Lodge, at Indianapolis, I reported, as a committee, a Grand Constitution for the Grand Lodge of Indiana, which was adopted on the 25th day of December, 1833. Said copy was written with my own hand, and without the assistance of any one. It was continued as the Constitution of the Grand Lodge until the year 1849, when it was revised, and an almost entirely new draft made. The constitution which I presented contained many new and important

changes. It embraced a clause, giving per diem allowance to representatives from subordinate lodges and to such grand officers as were not representatives. An amount of one dollar and fifty cents per day in going to, attending, and returning from the sessions of the Grand Lodge. A sum barely sufficient to cover expenses at that time. Said amount was paid out of the Grand Lodge Fund. It provided also for District Master, whose duty it was to attend the subordinate lodges in certain cases. They were to act under the direction of the Grand Lodge; and, in its vacation, under the instruction of the Grand Master. At this time, in this State, anti-Masonry was at its height. Many lodges had suspended work, but nine lodges were represented at this meeting, and others were much reduced in numbers, leaving a few fearless spirits and true men to keep alive our beloved and much slandered institution. The opposition it met with, however, had the effect to purge it of the mere hangers-on, and of individuals who had sought the degrees and membership mainly to advance their own selfish purposes.

Some time previous to the adoption of the new constitution II. Gregg, Grand Treasurer, had died insolvent, leaving the Grand Lodge minus of funds. This, with the tardy payment of dues from subordinate lodges, caused the Grand Lodge to be without funds for some time. I took the copy of the newly adopted Grand Constitution, with an abstract of the proceedings, and had them printed at Connersville. Warren Lodge advanced the funds to pay the expense of printing.

The adoption of the new constitution, together with the vigorous measures adopted and carried into execution by the few faithful members and surviving subordinate lodges, soon removed the rubbish, and laid the foundation, on which has been built the present flourishing Grand and Subordinate Lodges. Nine lodges, with their few members, were represented at the session of the Grand Lodge in A. L. 5833. They have increased, so that at the session of the Grand Lodge in May, A. L. 5860, their number was two hundred and sixty-eight chartered lodges, and one under dispensation, with nine thousand seven hundred and twenty-seven members. Such is man; too often swayed by passion. To-day he wears his blushing honors; to-morrow falls like autumn leaves. May this not be the case with our present prosperous Fraternity!

At the session of the Grand Lodge in 5833 I was again elected Grand Master; and again, the 26th day of December, 5838, and continued to be re-elected until the session of 5845. To avoid a re-election I failed to attend the meeting of the Grand Lodge.

The number of lodges had so increased that the duties of Grand Master were considerable; and I was so much pressed with my own business that it required the whole of my time. I served as Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Indiana, in all, nine years. At the session of 1843 I opened it with an address, calling the attention of the Grand Lodge to such action upon numerous subjects as in my opinion claimed their attention. This was the first effort of the kind that had ever been made in that way in this State; but it met with such a degree of favor that it has been continued at each session ever since. At the session of 1844, I not only delivered an opening address, but reported a plan for a school, which was received and printed, and may be found by reference to the printed proceedings of that session. Although quite a number of years have passed since that time, and I have devoted much thought to the subject, besides having had a wide range of observation, I am but the more fully convinced of the importance of the plan, and its great interest to mankind; but it should be under the judicious management of an individual or joint stock interest. For the lack of time and space I must omit its insertion here. At the session of the Grand Lodge, in A. L. 5850, I was the representative of Warren Lodge in that body, and again in A. L. 5856. I also attended the session in 5860, but not as a representative. Thus I have given my connection with the Masonic Fraternity, from my initiation up to the present time. I have omitted many pleasing incidents that went to fill up the cup of pleasure, and were of much interest in many respects; and there were some occurrences which were unpleasant, though not without their lesson of instruction. Life, in any situation, is not exempt from its trials, although we may enjoy its pleasures, too.

I was made a Royal Arch Mason in the old Chapter in the City of Cincinnati sometime about the year 1837—the precise time I do not recollect—and soon after took the Council Degrees of Royal and Select Master at Richmond, Indiana, and the Degree of Past Master in the Grand Lodge of Indiana in 1828. The Degree of the Order of High Priesthood I took at Richmond, Indiana, during the session of the Chapter at that place for instruction. Companion Hacker, President of the Council of High Priesthood of Indiana, was present and convened a Council of High Priests. I received the degree on the 23d day of June, 1858. In the year 1850, I, with sundry other petitioners, petitioned the Grand Chapter of Indiana for a dispensation to establish a Chapter at Connersville, which was granted, and I took an active part in its organization.

In due time we received a Charter, and the Chapter is yet in successful operation. I occupied several stations in the Chapter, among which was that of High Priest, the first officer in the Chapter; and now hold an office in the Grand Chapter of Indiana. In the year 1856 I was among the petitioners for a Council of Royal and Select Masters, which petition was granted by the Grand Council of Indiana, and in due time we received a Charter. The Council was duly organized by companion William Hacker, Grand Puissant of the Grand Council of the State of Indiana. I have served in several stations in the Council, and am at this time, the "Thrice Illustrious," the first officer in the Council.

Here I might stop: but to proceed farther I will say, that the degrees which I have taken, as above given, I regard as the summit of Ancient Craft Masonry. The degrees which belong to what is called the Encampment, are of comparatively modern origin, and grew out of the Crusades; and are a religious, military Order, ingeniously gotten up, and connected with the Ancient Order emanating from the ancient Jewish Scriptures, modified by science and the religion of Jesus Christ. The Order of Knighthood, as it existed in the Thirteenth Century, was a good thing, and it is probable that the present state of society in Europe, as well as the advancement of the arts and sciences, are largely indebted to the Knights of Malta and the Knights Templar, in staying the hand of the Moslem from entering Europe and introducing their barbarous customs and worse religion. I have examined the Monitor, or text-book appertaining to the Ineffable Degrees of Thirty-Three, and think them of comparatively modern date, and had their origin in the fertile brains of men who were anxious to dazzle and amuse the credulous mind. I may be wrong in these conclusions, but think not, after much reflection.

The thinking and reflecting mind will naturally ask, What evidence have you of the antiquity and importance of the degrees which you have taken? We have no positive evidence of the facts of their origin; much of it depends upon inference and tradition, coupled with historical events both sacred and profane. The learned Dr. Oliver, in his "Historical Landmarks and Other Evidences of Free-Masonry," in two volumes of over four hundred pages each, labors through a great multiplicity of books and learned inferences to show the antiquity of the Order; and not only this, but the meaning of its symbols and their application to man's religious wants, and marks the distinction between genuine and spurious Freemasonry. From this great amount of learned research and mass of facts presented to the reader, we can condense



the whole into a few plain and simple propositions: First, That there is an invisible, supreme, self-existing intelligence, termed God; a spirit, to whom adoration is due from man through his intellectual powers. That principle termed *God*, had a sacred name which was used by the ancients in the most sacred manner, and was only known to a few. That all true worship or reverence was direct from man's intellect to God, without any intermediate agent or image. He further holds that this sacred name was lost during the Babylonian captivity of the Jews, and was only recovered after their return by permission of Cyrus, and while rebuilding the Temple of Solomon. Second: The several degrees of Masonry teach all the moral obligations of man, and are symbolized in conferring the degrees, and taught in the Masonic Ritual. Third: The cultivation of the arts and sciences are indispensable to a correct knowledge of nature and of God. A knowledge of architecture, geometry and astronomy are essential to man's happiness; to teach him the sublime truths and manifestations of God. Fourth: The necessary conclusions to which the foregoing brings us is, that man is a social being, and mankind should be a band of brothers. Every man owes a duty to himself, to his fellow man, and to God; hence it is that every well-regulated Masonic body is a charitable institution. It is true that Dr. Oliver is of the opinion that the ceremonies used in some of the degrees are typical of Christ, the Savior of the world. This opinion of his, I think, exists more in his fertile imagination than in fact. Be that as it may, each one is left to draw his own inferences from the premises. Anderson, in his work giving the Ancient Charges, (and who is regarded by all well informed Masons to be the most correct in giving the most ancient usages of the Order that is now extant) evidently and clearly proves the institution as being of Jewish rites and ceremonies, reduced to a system at the building of King Solomon's Temple. There is but little doubt but that as civilization advanced that there were some modifications in some of the rites and ceremonies. Even in more modern times there have been modifications in language; and at this time the classification of the ceremonies of each degree, and the arrangement of the ritual, are more clear and comprehensive than at any previous time, yet the great fundamental truths are the *same*, and will endure as long as time and eternity.

It will be asked, If such be the principle of the Masonic institution, how does it happen that the members of the Fraternity do not give more evidence of its influence? Three reasons, with minor ones, may be given why it is so. First: Some men are

so constituted by nature or education that they are incapable of understanding those sublime truths, or to practice their teachings. Second: At best it is difficult to so guard the portals of the Masonic sanctuary as to wholly exclude this class of men from gaining admittance to the rights of the lodge-room. Third: It is too often the case that the members of a Masonic body fall into a lax habit, and individuals are placed in the different offices who are ignorant of the lectures appertaining to the several degrees, and hence are incompetent to discharge the duties which devolve on them. It falls to the lot of but few men to be in every way qualified to take the lead in any association of men. It is a rare quality. If there be a lack of qualifications, or courtesy and dignity of character in the presiding officer in any association, the members lose that interest which is so essential to the well-being of the association, and there is no situation where it is more important than in a body of Free-Masons. Lacking these qualifications, lodges fall into a state of inattention and indifference to those great principles taught by its ritual, and are influenced by other surroundings, and if they be bad, the Mason, like other men, becomes more or less tainted by their corrupting influences. I know of no association or institution of men, outside of a well-regulated institution of learning, where a young man could be better trained for the active duties of social life, than in a well-conducted lodge-room. Men, in all ages of the world, have had their select associations, or regularly organized bodies; many for good, and a few for bad purposes; and when we come to investigate these various associations, as it is done by Dr. Oliver, one is surprised at the large number that have attempted to imitate, or are similar to that of the Masonic Order. This tendency to form small associations of men should teach us the lack there is yet in being able to gratify man's social nature and well being. This deficiency exists in governmental law, in religious institutions, and in family relations. Man must progress to a much higher plane of thought, before these wants are supplied. He must be better informed as to himself and his relations to all that exist in nature, and possess the ability to use the forces of nature to minister to his actual wants.

Now, at this writing (February 28, 1868), I am the principal officer of the Chapter, No. 18, at Connersville, also the first officer in the Council of Royal and Select Masters. I have recently read a recent Masonic work, a General History of Free-Masonry in Europe, translated from Emanuel Rebold, M. D., by J. Fletcher Brennon, which puts quite a new face on the history of the Masonic institution. It does not rob the institution of its antiquity. It

was remodeled at Rome seven hundred years before Christ, and was an institution of much learning, and rendered valuable service to the Roman Government, and was carried into England by the Romans, and became an important institution in that country; and in the year 1717 it underwent another important change, by which it dropped its operative character and became a speculative institution, by which the social feelings, and moral obligations, and charity were strictly enjoined, and the study of the sciences strongly recommended. The above work is well authenticated, and traces back man's history, and shows that in all nations, and in all times, secret societies have existed, even in very remote antiquity.

Thus I have gone through the more prominent events of my life, up to the year 1854. Most of it has been written while I was in bad health, and at a time when I was amid surroundings which were exciting, and calculated to take up much of my attention. I commenced this work in 1857, but never could find time to look at my manuscripts, or more than to occasionally think of the subject; and, when I resumed the task this winter, I had not the time to digest any particular subject-matter, but began and penned down such as presented to my mind and memory at the time; hence the lack of proper arrangement, perhaps. If I should live a few years longer I may revise it, and introduce such anecdotes, as well as other matter, as may interest and amuse. My object has been to leave to my children such a biography of my life as might be of interest and benefit to them and their children.

In the spring of 1854, late in May, I, with my friend Elisha Vance, left Connersville for the West. At Indianapolis we met the following gentlemen, who were to accompany us, viz.: Dr. Wm. Fielding, of Sidney, Ohio; Dr. Krider, of New Lancaster, Ohio; Dr. Solomon Simpson, from Near Rushville, Indiana; Messrs. L. Thomas and George Hibben, of Rushville. We left Indianapolis on the 17th day of May, 1854, for Chicago, where we spent Saturday and Sunday in looking over the city. On Saturday night we visited "Oriental Lodge"—Dr. Fielding, Dr. Krider, and myself were Past Grand Officers—and were received with due form and ceremony. Dr. Simpson and Mr. George Hibben, who were also Masons, visited the lodge with us. We there found an intelligent body of the brotherhood. The next morning was a cool one, so that the fire in the bar-room of the hotel where we were stopping (the Matteson House, corner of Randolph and Duane streets) was very comfortable. On Sunday we went to the Norwegian Church. The services were in the Norwegian language, and were solemn and impressive, although we

could not understand the language. After the service was over the preacher descended from the pulpit, and, seeing that we were strangers, approached us very kindly, and addressed us in the English language. We found him to be a very courteous and pleasant man. Among many other things he informed us that there were settled in the Western States about one hundred thousand Norwegians. In the afternoon of Sunday several of us attended service at a Universalist Church, and listened to a good sermon. We found much in Chicago to interest us. The city is on low ground, on each side of the Chicago River, and extends from the lake, up each side of the river, for miles. The streets, instead of being bouldered or paved, are covered with thick pine plank, as are also the side-walks. Such is the lowness of the ground, that cellars are only one or two feet deep, and are then covered with cement, and plank are laid on which the walls are built.

On Monday we took the cars for Rock Island. The day proved to be a pleasant one. Went by the Rock Island Railroad, through Joliet to La Salle, at the point where the canal from Chicago intersects the Illinois River. On my return trip I was detained at this place over half a day, which afforded me an excellent opportunity for viewing it. There is a large basin; the most of which is artificial. Canal boats lock down from the canal into the basin; and steamboats come from the river into the basin, and often unload into canal boats, and *vice versa*. A short distance above the town the "Illinois Central Railroad" crosses the Illinois River, as also does the canal on the north side of the river. The bridge is a long one, being seventy feet high, with a high embankment at the south end of a mile in length. The town is not large, but seemed to be doing a considerable business. The bridge at this place, and the embankment, had been finished during the summer in my absence. It was a superb structure. The track was on the top of the bridge. The bridge was covered with plank, and over that a covering of tin, put on well. Back from the river, on each side, are high bluff hills, filled with fine stone. At this point we left the Illinois River for Rock Island on the Mississippi River. Most of the way the road was over a poor sandy prairie. The afternoon was most beautiful, the sun shone bright; and after we had crossed Rock River, and emerged from the timber, we had a clear view to the Mississippi. The road strikes the river at Moline, a manufacturing town at the head of Rock Island, and then runs down almost parallel with the river, for three miles, to the steamboat landing at Rock Island City, which is on the east side of the river. Not one of our party had ever before seen the "Father of

•

Waters," and it was with much difficulty that we restrained ourselves from shouting before the cars were stopped. As soon as we were out of the cars there went up one universal shout. A passenger steamboat, bound for Burlington, had steam up, awaiting the arrival of the train. We went immediately on board, secured our state-rooms, and paid our passage to Burlington. The sun was yet an hour high, and we ascended to the hurricane-deck to enjoy the scenery along the river as we passed, which was most beautiful. The boat proceeded down the river to Muscatine, where she laid by for the night. After supper we retired to our state-rooms and berths, and enjoyed a delightful night's sleep. We were up and out betimes in the morning, and in time to see the town; but the boat was soon under headway again, and we steaming down the Majestic River. Below Muscatine there is a plain some twenty miles long, and in some places six or seven miles wide, covered with grass. In going down this point I was reminded of my trip on the Delaware, between Wilmington and Philadelphia. The principle difference was in the lack of farm houses, and the appearance of those domestic comforts, found on the Delaware. Before 10 P. M. we landed at Burlington, and went to an hotel. Here I parted with my friend Vance, who went on down the river. The remainder of our party had determined on a trip to Fort Des Moines, and as soon as we were landed, and our baggage taken to the hotel, we looked for the stage office, and found that we could go at one o'clock. This gave us time to look about Burlington. There is a deep ravine, with a wide mouth, that reaches to the river on the Iowa side. The town is built on each side of a small stream that runs down from the hills. The bluffs are high and rather steep. The town extends up, and a portion is on the hights. Immediately after dinner the stage drove up, and we took our seats for Des Moines, seven of us in all. A Mr. Hubbard, from Rushville, had overtaken us at Chicago, and was then with us. We soon wound out of the ravine, and ascended the highlands on a plank road. For some distance our way lay along the timbered land, from which we emerged into a beautiful prairie, on our route to Mount Pleasant, where we took supper. This place is beautifully situated. From here we crossed Skunk River, which, at the point of crossing, is a low, 'dirty, sluggish stream, and reached Fairfield late in the night. Soon after we got out of the coach the horses became frightened and ran off with it, doing much damage to it. The hotel where we stopped was full, and we took a berth on the floor, using our carpet sacks for pillows, and thus we got a little sleep. Early next morning we were

off again, so that we had but little chance to see the place, which was said to be one of considerable size and business. We reached Ottumwa for dinner, passing Agency City, at which place there had been for a long time an Indian agency. Ottumwa is situated on the Des Moines River, and is the county seat of Wapello County. Much of the way we traveled along the route of the present railroad from Burlington to Ottumwa, its present terminus, being ninety miles from Burlington.

We left this place for Eddyville, sixteen miles up the river. At this point we left the river for Oskaloosa, distant fifteen miles, which we reached before dark. This latter place is beautifully situated on a prairie on the dividing ridge between Skunk and Des Moines Rivers. We left early next morning for Pella, distant eighteen miles, passing over a beautiful prairie country, well watered with small streams. Pella is a pleasant town, though not to be compared with Oskaloosa. It is the center of a late emigration of Germans, who have settled at this point with their pastor, and has all the appearance of that thrift and industry so common to the Dutch Protestants. This place is on the dividing space between the two rivers before named, and the road follows the same to Fort Des Moines over one continuous prairie, the center of which is from three to six miles to timber. We reached Fort Des Moines on Thursday, about sundown, the 25th of May, 1854, having left Burlington on Tuesday, at half-past 1 P. M. Thus we had traveled one hundred and fifty miles in two days and a half, being the distance between the two points. The season of the year was favorable for good roads over the prairies. Fort Des Moines is situated between the Raccoon and Des Moines Rivers, at their junction. At this point there was formerly a fort, which was garrisoned by United States troops, who occupied both rivers at their junction. Quite a number of the log-houses, which had been used as barracks, were still standing, as well as remains of the fort. Upon arriving at the Des Moines River, opposite the town, we found that the rope to the ferry was broken, and the stage could not cross over, so we took our baggage over in skiffs. At Fort Des Moines I met with my friend Samuel Reese. He had lived in Connersville, but was then engaged as clerk in Cassidy & Co.'s Land Broker's Office. They did an extensive business. I also met at this place James Test, a son of Judge Charles Test, of Indiana. James was living at Council Bluffs, and was engaged in law and the land agency business. He was then on his way to a Democratic Convention, and was elected that summer Senator in the Iowa Legislature, from Pottawattomie County, where he re-

sided. We remained at Fort Des Moines during Friday, Saturday, and Sunday, affording us a fine opportunity of seeing the place and forming acquaintances. We also visited the Masonic Lodge while there, and were well received.

On Monday morning we paid our bills, and took our seats in a hack for Council Bluffs City, stopping at Adel, the county-seat of Dallas County, situated on a branch of Raccoon River. Here we had breakfast. From this place we took a westerly course, crossed one or two branches of the Raccoon River; crossed the dividing ridge between the waters of the Des Moines and those which empty into the Missouri River; striking the Nishnabotona, and following down into Cass County, reached Iranistan after night. Here we met with several gentlemen who resided at New Paris, Ohio, and who had been up the Missouri River into Kansas, then up the river to Council Bluffs, and were now on their return home, crossing Iowa. They gave a glowing account of Kansas, although they had seen but little of it. The Territorial Government was not yet organized, and there were no settlements of the white people in the country.

Early next morning we left for Council Bluffs again, which place we reached at eleven P. M. the 31st day of May, 1854. In passing from Fort Des Moines to the last-named place, we passed through Dallas County, crossed the corners of Guthrie, Audubon (which had not yet been organized), Cass County, the county-seat of which had not been located, and out of this county into Pottawatomie. We crossed from east to west. On this route there is great diversity of soil. From Fort Des Moines to the dividing ridge which separates the waters of the Missouri from those that empty into the Mississippi, may be said to be excellent land, and well watered, but entirely too large a proportion of it is prairie, and too remote from market; for even when railroads are made, the expense of transportation will lessen the price of all agricultural products. Along the Nishnabotona there is some very excellent land, but a great lack of timber. After passing the summit the country is broken, and the land had the appearance of being poor, and even barren. From Iranistan to the Bluffs much of the country is broken and high rolling land, the soil loose and sandy, and, under cultivation, liable to wash. When we passed through, the country was but thinly settled, and then only in the most favorable situations.

Council Bluffs City is situated on the east side of the Missouri River. Three miles from the river, at the "Bluffs," at a point where a small stream, called Indian Creek, comes in from the

back country down through a deep ravine, which widens as it approaches the bottom, the hills are timbered with scrub oak, mixed with some other timber. This point is the old Mormon settlement, and was known, while they resided at the place, as Kanesville. They had built up quite a village at the entrance of the ravine, and had also built a small mill on the creek, and though they had other settlements, some ten and twelve miles off, this was their head-quarters. They had a large wooden building, substantially built, which they used as their place of worship, and called a temple, which was not far from the creek, and just within the entrance of the ravine. Nearly all these people had left the place for Salt Lake, previous to our visit there, having sold out their squatter claims for small sums. These purchases proved profitable to those who made them, as this place became the point where the outfits were procured, not only for Salt Lake, but for California and Oregon. When we were there, there were large establishments containing the various articles, including provisions, necessary for that purpose. These supplies were mainly received by steamboats, which brought them from the lower river, and while I was there several outfits were purchased for Salt Lake. As soon as the lands were surveyed, and the great body of the Mormons had left, a large tract was laid out for a city, lying west from the main portion of the Mormon village, but adjoining it. At the time we were there, quite a number of very good buildings had been put up, some of which were of brick. The hotel at which we were stopping was a very good two-story brick building, tolerably well finished, and had quite a stylish appearance. There were several young ladies boarding at this hotel, who were not only well dressed, but intellectual and accomplished, and possessed much refinement of manner. I think they were Eastern women, and engaged in teaching. Much of the society at this place was not only orderly, but possessed intelligence. I attended Church, where we had a sermon by Doctor Krider, one of our traveling companions. The meeting was held in the old Mormon Temple, before alluded to, and was well attended, and I never saw a more attentive congregation. The people were not only cleanly, but well dressed—more so than one would have expected of a people living on the very outskirts of civilization. The place was said to contain 1,500 inhabitants.

We had been in the place but a few days until it was arranged that we should cross the river into Nebraska, making the arrangement with a man who had formerly lived at Brookville, Franklin County, Indiana. He was residing at Council Bluffs, engaged in



the law and land agency business with James Test, before spoken of, and a young man by the name of Cassidy from Connersville, a son of Mr. Simon Cassidy. As we were going into a country where no inhabitants were to be found we required an outfit. This was all arranged by Mr. Hadley Johnson, the gentleman before alluded to. We left the city early in the morning in a common road wagon, and went directly east, three miles to the river, which we crossed in a steam ferry-boat, owned by a company that were engaged in the city speculations of Omaha. Our crossing was opposite the site of the city. We then took the California road, and proceeded on our way until within a mile or two of the place we were aiming to reach. The country was rolling, and, the day being pleasant, we often got out and walked. Sometimes we would ascend a rise, that seemed to be above the common level of the country, for the purpose of getting a more extended view if possible. Towards the west not a tree or shrub was to be seen; towards the east the eye could trace the course of the river by a streak of timber along its borders. At 12 M. we stopped by the road side and lunched. After leaving the California Road we pursued our course towards the river, and were so fortunate as to strike the point we desired, namely, the real Council Bluffs, where Clark and Lewis held their council with the Indians, and where the United States Government built and occupied Fort Calhoun. The spot is a delightful one, on a bluff bank about seventy feet high, and which had the appearance as though the river had at no great length of time previous washed the banks of the bluff; but at this time there seemed to be a wide low bottom, timbered with cotton-wood, which constituted almost the entire timber of the country. We found what had been a fine road, leading up the bluff from the bottom lands, and extended for some distance down the river to a fine tract of land. Among the remains of the old fort we found the old arsenal, which had been built mostly of brick and with a few boulders. A considerable portion had been taken away. We found a small black-locust grove, which had evidently been planted out during the time the fort was occupied. We also found a large asparagus bed and horseradish, although at the time of our visit it was almost choked with the common prairie grass. Occasionally we saw pieces of fencing posts, which gave evidence that a considerable field at one time had been enclosed with a post and rail fence. There was fine water to be had from a spring not far distant. The plain on the bluff is about a mile wide, back to a gentle rise, of between twenty or thirty feet, and then it descends west, running up and down,

parallel with the river for some distance. As night approached we looked out for some convenient place with wood and water, and which we found about half a mile below the site of the old fort. This location is said to be twenty-five miles up the river from Council Bluffs City. After locating our camp, and procuring wood and water, we built a good fire. I took upon myself the making of the coffee. We had a fine large coffee-pot, and plenty of ground coffee that had been well roasted. I put a good supply of the coffee into the coffee-pot, and then nearly filled the pot with water, and put it on a bed of fine coals, keeping them renewed until the coffee was well boiled. Having spread a large cloth on the ground we put on it a good boiled ham with cheese, bread and butter, and for each person a tin cup from which to drink our coffee. After the coffee was sufficiently boiled I set it off the coals, and poured in some cold water to settle it. After standing a short time I filled each cup, and we took our seats around the cloth, every one sweetening his coffee to his liking; some using a small lump of butter in lieu of cream, and which I found to improve its flavor. While some were engaged in preparing supper others were fixing our tent. We had a tent-cover, and by means of forks stuck in the ground, and a pole laid on them, and sticks from the ground to the pole, and then putting our tent-cloth on this frame, we made a fine shelter from the heavy dew that fell. Each one had a blanket in which to roll himself; and this, with a good fire immediately before our tent, enabled us to spend the night pleasantly, although we were in an uninhabited country, except by the Indians, who yet held possession of it. After supper and a few anecdotes we rolled ourselves in our blankets, and laid down to rest. The only disturbers we had were the musketoos; but, with the assistance of our pocket-handkerchiefs, we succeeded in keeping them off our faces. Morning came. We breakfasted as we had supped, and then started out on our mission, each of the party laying his claim and fixing his corners by stakes, and with a pencil writing our names, claims, and its number; and, had things turned out as we then thought, our claims would have been respected, and some of the party would now be residing there. Our locations made, we started on our return. We concluded to return by a different route; so we left the California Road some twelve miles above Omaha, and crossed the river at the point where had been old Mormon quarters, called Winter Quarters.

There has, since we were there, been a city laid off, but the name of it I do not recollect. At this point there was a steam ferry-boat, and we were detained an hour in getting over. After

crossing the river we passed over a wide and extensive low bottom ; a portion of which had been covered with fine cotton-wood timber ; much of it, however, had been cut down. This wide bottom lay between Pigeon Creek and the river, but the most of it was subject to inundations. We crossed the creek, and proceeded over a high ridge of land that lies between Pigeon and Indian Creeks, and reached the city about 9 P. M. Our party held a consultation, and the conclusion was that Dr. Krider, myself, and Thomas should go down the river to Fort Leavenworth and out into Kansas Territory, while the balance of the company would return by the way we had come.

On Monday, June 5th, Dr. Krider and myself, with some others, obtained a wagon, and crossed the river at Omaha ; went up through the city site, and took the road that led down the river twelve miles to the Mission Station. This is a beautiful location, in a wide and extensive plain, which we struck three or four miles back of the river, and followed down to the station ; on the upper side of which, and not far distant, the high river bluff puts in and breaks the dull monotony of the plain. The Mission is a cluster of two-story hewed log-houses, substantially built, and well pointed with lime-mortar ; the bank, a short distance above the Mission, affords fine limestone. We introduced ourselves to Mr. Hamilton, who had charge of the Mission, and found him an intelligent and pleasant man. He called in a large class of boys and girls from ten to fifteen years of age. They were Indian children of various tribes, and were clean and decently dressed in plain clothing. When we first went in we found several of the girls engaged in knitting, and a few sewing. After being called in they, in a quiet and orderly manner, at the request of Mr. Hamilton, sang two or three hymns with good music. We had not the time to hear any lessons from books, but learned that they, after becoming accustomed to this new mode of life, learned well, though it was more difficult to confine the males to study than the females. The Mission was under the management of the Presbyterians, and controlled as a family. There were thirty Indian children at the station when we were there. Connected with the Mission was a farm, on which they had stock which supplied them with milk and butter, etc. Judging from what we saw and understood from Mr. Hamilton, everything was conducted in an excellent and orderly manner, and in such a way as to not only teach them religion, but the arts of civilization, by practically demonstrating its advantages over the precarious and uncertain mode of life of the Indian naturally.

About half a mile above the Mission was an Agency of the Missouri Fur Company, under the management of a Mr. Sarpee, a Frenchman. This agency was a depot. The goods trafficked in the fur trade were brought up the river and deposited here, and then sent to outposts. Furs were collected and deposited at the agency. A small retail establishment was kept open here, for trade with the few inhabitants who resided in the neighborhood, and from the Iowa side of the river. A little below the agency is another crossing for emigrants bound for California and Salt Lake. The day we were there a new appointed Judge, at Salt Lake, who had resided in Iowa, and whose name I have forgotten, crossed at this point with his family, and a large stock of merchandise, bound for Salt Lake. I saw his family. They were well provided for making the trip. In the immediate neighborhood of the agency there were several Indian farms, on which were patches of corn, beans, and potatoes, with a few other vegetables. Upon inquiry, I found that the Indian owners were too lazy to cultivate even these little patches. They hired men connected with the trading-house to plow the ground, and the squaws chopped out a few weeds. These Indians had a few summer lodges at this point, which, to us, were a curiosity. They were made of poles, ten or fifteen feet in length, set on end in a circle, twelve or fifteen feet in diameter, leaning together at the top. These were covered on the outside with tanned buffalo skins; the fleshy side out. When fire was used the smoke ascended, escaping at the apex of the cone or top of the lodge. There were a few winter lodges in the neighborhood, made in the bank or bluff, that rose from the river bottom. The place selected was in a kind of cove; the lodge occupied the recess, and a fence, or rather a kind of wall, was constructed from each point, and crossed in front of the lodge, leaving a doorway in the center, which opened into a kind of courtyard. We tried to get permission to go in, but were refused, the reason being given that, such was the superstition of the Indians, that if it was known that a white man had been in without their presence and permission it was doubtful if they would ever again inhabit the place. The lodge, from all we could see and learn, was built after our plan of out-door bank cellars, built up with logs covered with earth, a doorway in front, and a hole left near the bank for the smoke to escape. In these dens they burrowed, as it were, in winter; yet well suited to the lazy, indolent, and careless life of a savage. How revolting such a mode of living would be to a man who had enjoyed the comforts and intelligence of civilized life! In this neighborhood we had the pleasure of seeing the manner in

which they bury their dead. The Indian was said to be seated on the ground, and covered with a buffalo robe, and then encircled with a wall fifteen or eighteen inches thick, built with the turf of the prairie, and carried up in the form of a sugar loaf. We saw several places where this custom had been observed, as something like half a dozen individual mounds were near each other.

About six miles up the valley, west of the river, on a small creek, is the Omaha Village. This, for the want of time, we did not visit. It was at that period the head-quarters of all that remained of the tribe of the Omahas. We saw quite a number of them about the trading point, and a more lazy, spiritless looking set of human beings I never saw. I had seen many Indians in Indiana and in the State of New York, but these Omahas were the most inferior of any I ever saw. Their form and size indicated strength and activity; yet their actions indicated cowardice and displayed a great lack of energy. I was informed that this tribe was once a powerful one; but, by wars with the Siouxs, they had been reduced in numbers to a small band, and had by their misfortunes been brought to their present humiliated condition. At Council Bluffs I became acquainted with their chief. He was not a full-blooded Indian. He was a man of medium stature, and well educated. A few years after our visit he was killed on the plains in a fight with their implacable enemies, the Sioux, not far from the Elkhorn River, while on a buffalo hunt. In a recent treaty with the United States they were to move to a reservation up the Missouri River, in the northern part of the territory. A short distance below the Mission Station, Major Gatewood, the Indian agent, had his quarters in a fine pleasant location. We had an interview with him. He was a citizen of the State of Missouri, and was an intelligent, plain, unassuming man; and well fitted for the position he occupied. From him we gained much information respecting the interior of the country, especially south of the Platte River. He informed us that that portion of the country was much the best, and also that there was a valuable salt spring in that region, and that stone-coal had been found as well as iron-ore. From him we learned, too, that the cholera on the river below was then raging, as he had just received letters from his former residence in Missouri, and at the same time he also informed us that he had been superseded as Indian agent by a man from Iowa, whom I afterwards saw and was introduced to by a friend who was well acquainted with him. Neither by intelligence nor address was he so well fitted to fill the station as his predecessor. Major Gatewood informed us that he had no doubt but that

it was through the influence of Atchison, United States Senator from Missouri, that he had been superseded, as they were not on as good terms politically as men are sometimes. Such is politics, "You serve me and I will serve you." The Mission is about three miles above the mouth of the Platte River. We strolled from place to place until a late hour in the day; and, then returning, reached the ferry barely in time to cross, after having passed an interesting day, and where we could have spent many, with pleasure and benefit. We, in due time, arrived at the hotel where we boarded, and were ready for a good supper, of which we soon partook.

By the treaty with the Omaha Indians they had the possession of the country until fall, so that none but United States officers had any right in the territory. To get possession of the site where the famous Omaha City was to be built, those who were interested were endeavoring to get a post-office appointment at the place; and, before we left, the Indian agent gave assurance that, if they could get the consent of the Omaha tribe, they would not be molested. So arrangements were soon made, by giving a small bonus to the Indians, by which the people were permitted to enter the territory along the river; also including the city site; but not a house, nor so much as a shanty, had been erected in Omaha City when we left. Our interview with Major Gatewood determined Dr. Krider and myself in returning by the way we came, at least as far as Fort Des Moines; but our companion, Thomas, resolved to go further in, and did go, and returned safe.

We were at Council Bluffs City, and in the neighborhood, from the last day of May till the 10th of June, 1854, which afforded us a fine opportunity to form acquaintances and acquire a knowledge of all the country for many miles up and down the river. While at the trading station, near the Mission, we learned from Mr. Sarpee, the Indian trader, that he was acquainted with Indians then living, who stated that when they were young men, they had waded the Missouri River opposite the station; and Sarpee, who had been for a long time acquainted with the river, said that he was decidedly of the opinion that the stream was wearing its channel deeper and becoming narrower. He thought that in time the Platte would deepen, so as to let small steamboats pass up for some distance. The main bluffs of the river are two hundred feet high, and the river has evidently cut its channel down this distance. From hill to hill it is from two to five or six miles wide. The bottoms are low, and are beds of sand mixed with some alluvial soil. The cotton-wood grows very rapidly where it gets a hold.

The stream rises to a considerable height in the spring; and the current being rapid, flowing at the rate of some eight or ten miles per hour, it is no uncommon thing for the river to cut across some bend, and cut an entirely new channel for itself. This is favored by driftwood obstructing at some point, and throwing the water back and out. It seems that this constant changing and shifting has washed out all the finer particles, and left these beds of sand. While at Council Bluffs my friend Krider and myself took a buggy one afternoon, and went up the river, some three or four miles, to see a curious spring. It issued out of the bluff near its base; and the water was so charged with lime that it petrified everything about it, and even formed stone in a honeycomb form. It was in a kind of cove, and a short distance above we entered a kind of amphitheater that stretched out into the bluff. My friend ejaculated "Alps on 'Alps arise." It was a beautiful afternoon. We had hitched our horse; and, after visiting and emerging from the cove, we took our seats on a fallen cotton-wood tree. While seated there he gave me the particulars of a visit he had made to Coons' spirit rooms, in Ohio. He gave me a plain and simple statement, of what he said were facts. There was, in the room of a moderate-sized log-cabin, a string of sleighbells hanging against the wall; a base and tenor drum, and a violin, that were played without any visible agency, the bells joining in the concert. At his request vocal music was added and joined with the instrumental, and each alternating separately. His remark, I can not forget, was, "The music was unearthly," excelling anything he had ever heard. He had a good ear for music, and understood its principles. At his request, what seemed like a human hand, was plain and visible to him, and which touched his face and then his forehead. Previously he had been at the same place with a few intelligent gentlemen, but did not succeed in getting any manifestation. Sometime afterwards, at his own village, he took a letter from the post-office, and, on opening it, found written in pencil, "If Dr. Krider will be at Coons' spirit room (naming a particular day) he will be interested." He immediately prepared and left home, telling his family that he would be absent for some days, but left without letting any one know where he was going. As he neared the place he fell in with some of the same men who were there with him before, and this remark was made to him, "You are going to be humbugged again;" laughed and went on. When there they looked the room over to detect, if possible, machinery, or any means of deception. The room, which was the only one in a small plain log-cabin, was floored, and with a counter running nearly across the room, leaving

a space at one end so as to go backward or forward of it. Every precaution was taken that could have been to avoid deception. They then seated themselves, and so divided the "Coon" family that a portion were under the immediate observation of the visitors. In this manner he got the foregoing manifestation. Dr. Krider is over fifty years of age; is a man about six feet high, and well proportioned; fearless and incredulous, and a disbeliever in Modern Spiritualism, and is well educated.

We returned to our place of sojourn well pleased with our trip. During our stay at that place we met several times with members of the Masonic Fraternity who were preparing to petition for a lodge to be located there, and found among their number a few well informed Masons. While there we formed the acquaintance of Mr. Babbitt, Secretary of Utah Territory. He was returning from Washington, where he had been, to see the President on business connected with the Territory. He was said to be a Mormon, and had with him a spiritual wife; and, before we left, he started with a fine train for Utah. A Mr. Williams, of Fairfield, Iowa, land speculator; James Test, and several others accompanied him as far as Elkhorn River on a kind of jollification. They had encamped for the night. By some means some five or six of their horses were stolen, and among them Williams lost a fine span. It was believed that it was done at the instance of some men whom Babbitt had had dealings with and not treated well. The morning we started we saw Babbitt in town, and spoke with him. He was making arrangements to procure more horses. Some two or three years afterwards he was killed while on his way from the Bluffs to Utah, and it was thought to have been done by the Danite band of the Mormons for some infidelity to the Mormon faith.

At three o'clock, on the morning of the 10th of June, 1854, we entered the coach, on our return, having bid our acquaintances good-by the day before. We reached Iranistan that day, being Saturday. This place is situated on Indian Creek, a moderate-sized mill stream. There was a saw-mill and a small grist-mill at this point; also a blacksmith shop and a small store; a good tavern-house up, partially finished and occupied, and also a few private residences. One great difficulty in all this country is the scarcity of lumber. On the margin of a few of the streams black walnut is found. At Council Bluffs almost the only timber they had was cotton-wood. There was a lumber-yard of pine that had been brought up the river from St. Louis, which was selling at sixty dollars per thousand. Some of the partitions in some houses were thinly studded, and then covered with a thin factory muslin



nailed to the studding, and doors were of the same material. In this way were the partitions of our tavern building made at Iranistan. When we stopped at night my friend Dr. Krider had a very sore eye. I made a poultice of bread soaked in sugar of lead-water, and put to his eye, and the next morning it was much better.

Here the coach laid over for Sunday. How to pass off the day became a question. We learned that there was a Methodist meeting about two miles off, on the Nishnabotana River, so we concluded to go. It was a fine June morning, and we set out on foot. After walking a mile we reached Indian Town, consisting of a cluster of log-cabins; one kept as an hotel, a small store, and a post-office. Here we found an intelligent merchant from Washington, Pennsylvania, who was on a tour of pleasure and speculation. He went with us to church. The meeting was held at a private dwelling, a double log-cabin, not far from the east branch of the Nishnabotana, and not over half a mile from the county seat of Cass County. The man of the house where the meeting was held was from Rush County, Indiana. My friend Dr. Krider delivered a fine discourse, and which was so considered by our new acquaintance, who said that he had visited the best churches in Philadelphia, and had heard the celebrated preachers, but he never heard a better sermon. Our host asked Dr. Krider and myself to remain to dinner, which invitation we accepted, and were well entertained. He had a fine location, and a saw-mill was being erected not far from his house. As the sun began to sink in the west we took leave of our kind host and hostess, strolling off from the direct road to gather strawberries, with which the prairies abound in places. For some distance our route lay along the edge of the prairie adjoining the timber. After supplying ourselves with strawberries, which we found very good, we rested under the shade of a sapling oak, and enjoyed ourselves in conversation on the merits and utility of the Masonic Order. Dr. Krider was well-informed on all matters connected with the institution, having taken the Ineffable Degrees of Thirty-two, and had been Grand Master of Ohio. In this conversation he said he had taken the first degree as an anti-Mason, but found nothing wrong in it; and went on, from degree to degree, until he went through, and now was strongly attached to the institution. The sun had descended low in the west, and we made our way back to our hotel. This was a fine region of country, but too remote and destitute of timber.

Monday, June 12th, after taking breakfast before day, we took the coach and the road. On reaching the Nishnabotana we found that the bridge was gone. There had been a very heavy rain, and our friends, who had left us at the Bluffs, had been detained here some two days. The stream was down, and the crossing bad, except at a ford some distance above. We got out of the coach, and crossed on some trees that had formed a drift, and wound our way up to a house owned by a Dr. Ballard. The coach crossed at the upper ford. We stopped at Troublesome Creek for dinner; at the same place we had stopped in going out. There was some fine land in that section. Stayed all night at Bear Grove. Started soon in the morning, and reached Moore's—eighteen miles—for breakfast. Here our Pennsylvania friend left us. From this point to the fort, which we reached before sundown, we found to be a good country. A portion of our return route was not the same as that we went out by. Four miles before we reached the fort Dr. Krider stopped with an acquaintance. We were strangers to each other when we met at Indianapolis, but soon formed a familiar acquaintance; and now we had been together twenty-five days, and most of the time traveling together, that acquaintance was of no ordinary character. I took a deep interest in the man, and he seemed to reciprocate it. Where one went the other followed, and when we parted it was with great reluctance and regret. I never saw him afterwards. He took sick soon after reaching home. I wrote to him, and he answered; but he lingered in his illness, and died, in the bosom of his family, during the ensuing autumn. We had an agreeable company, and it seldom falls to the lot of as many men to be as harmonious as we were. Many were the jokes we passed, and gleeful hours we whiled away, as we passed beautiful groves and green prairies, inviting man and civilization.

On arriving at Fort Des Moines I found three of our traveling companions there: Dr. Fielding, Messrs. George Hibben and Hubbard. Dr. Simpson had left for home. Hubbard and Hibben were engaged in looking up speculations in land. I made arrangements with a man by the name of McHenry, a surveyor, to go into the country with me to hunt land to enter. I also hired a man with a wagon and horses to take us. On Saturday morning, the 17th, Mr. McHenry and myself, and a man by the name of Watson, from Michigan, whom I had fallen in with at Iranistan, and who had traveled with us to this place, started out of town, crossed the river, and went up and out from the river. After we had got some miles from town Mr. Henry remarked, "that we must re-

member that we were going to hunt one-dollar-and-twenty-five-cents per acre land, and that we could not step off of such land into a hotel for meals and lodging." This was the first reminder of our situation. We had not provided ourselves with so much as a cracker to eat; and even our teamster had wholly failed to lay in anything for himself or horses. It produced a momentary damper; but we were soon as gay and cheerful as hearts could be. The day was a fine one, and we were not out of sight of cabins now and then. We had a point in view, some fifteen miles from the fort, which we reached about eleven or twelve o'clock. It was at the head of a small creek. There had been a heavy rain the day before, and everything was flooded. Every little stream was full, as well as all the little swampy places, with which the country abounded, and were called cat hollows. Where the water was not too deep these places were filled with a large kind of rushes; and, in the larger ones, the center was a pond of water, with deep black mud at the bottom. Many of these places could not be drained; except at much expense. We arrived at the land we desired to see. It was an open and extended prairie. We soon found the corner, and, setting the compass, took sights on two lines. From this point the land had a lovely appearance, and I thought we had found all that we desired. There was a small stream running up into the tract, and looked as though it would afford fine stock water. The land laid beautifully. I requested the surveyor to remain at the corner with his compass. I took the course of the line, and started, and measured by stepping. I soon reached the creek or little branch where it crossed the line. It looked sufficiently narrow to enable me to jump it, though the opposite bank was overflowed. I gave the spring, but fell short of landing on the bank; pitched over into the water, and was wet from head to foot. I clambered out; took out my pocket-book and watch, and found that they were not injured; but my boots were filled with water, and all the forepart of my clothing was wet. I secured my pocket-book and watch by rolling them up in my pocket-handkerchief, which happened not to be much wet. Having got out on to dry land I pulled my boots off, emptied the water out, and put them on again; then went on following the line for nearly half a mile, which I was able to do under the guidance of the surveyor by the motion of the hand. I then turned, and crossed the quarter, over to the other line, and was greatly disappointed in finding crawfish holes; which was a sure indication of clay and a cold soil. The afternoon began to wane, and we left on a route that afforded us an opportunity to see other vacant land in the direction towards a settle-

ment, which we reached a little before sundown. I called at a house, and desired entertainment for our party for the night. The man was engaged in covering a smoke-house, and referred us to his wife. She was taken by surprise, and said, "she did not see how she could accommodate us. The storm, the day before, had blown the roof off of the house, and that they had just got it on again; consequently the house was very dirty." Her woman's pride was in the ascendancy. I told her we did not care for dirt; that we were hungry and wet from rambling through the low grounds of the prairie. She observed, "that she was not fixed to lodge us." I told her we could lay on the floor. She at last consented, and went to work at once to get us a supper. In due time it was prepared. Fine hot biscuit, fine ham, eggs, lettuce and radishes, and the best cup of tea I had drank since leaving home. We needed no condiments to stimulate our appetites, as we had eaten nothing since breakfast. Our teamster, in a pet, without any cause, drove on to another house. We engaged a son of our kind landlord to take us the next day, although it was Sunday. We started, but not without food for the horses and a lunch for ourselves. Before leaving I asked the old gentleman for our bill, but he again referred us to the old lady. She could not make up her mind what to charge us. We had supper, breakfast, and tolerable lodging; beds made upon the floor. There were three of us. I took a silver dollar, and laid a gold dollar on the silver one; then placed them by the old lady's plate as she was eating breakfast, asking her if that would do. She opened her eyes as wide as "little moons," and said that she was satisfied if we were. The team being ready we started; and, after much wandering over the prairies and wet ground in attempting to follow lines, we at last passed a ridge, and reached a slope to the Des Moines River. In the distance we saw a house, and made for it. Our surveyor was acquainted with the owner; and after getting a drink of good cool water (which we had not had since morning, as there was no water but such as we got from the ponds on the prairie), and pumping our host all that we could, we started off again; took a line, and, after a two miles' halt, we found desirable land for both of us.

As night was approaching, we could only give it a hasty examination, but were sufficiently satisfied in our own minds that if we got it we would get a fine bargain. We turned our course back to our quarters of the previous night, which we reached some time after dark, and found the good folks in bed. They got up, however, and prepared supper for us, and the next morning a breakfast. I found that this family, whose names were Koon, had lived

at Richmond, Wayne County, Indiana, and had moved from there to the Wabash, not far from Terra Haute, then into Warren County, Indiana, and from there to Wapello County, Iowa, and from there to their then present home in Polk County, Iowa. They had a tolerably comfortable hewed log-house, and a fine farm, made up of timber and prairie. Here they had raised a family, and spent nearly a life-time on the very verge of civilization. After breakfast their son geared up the horses, and bidding our host and hostess good-by, we left for the fort, which we reached in time for dinner, but looking hard, long-bearded and dirty. We paid the young man some four or five dollars, which was more money than he had seen for many a day, and which pleased him greatly, and we parted.

On our return to our hotel, we met a party of men who were connected with the "Slack-water Improvement" of the Des Moines River. One was a Mr. Clark, from New York, and a Mr. Hunt; also, a Mr. Gillespie, the agent of the State of Iowa for the water improvement. They had just returned from an attempted trip up to Fort Dodge. As they were about starting up, they gave me a pressing invitation to accompany them, which, however, I declined. There had been heavy rains, and much of the way lay along the river bottom, and the mud was deep. They returned without making the entire trip. There was a New York company that was about to undertake to build the "Slack-water" from the mouth of the river to its source, and the object of their visit was to satisfy themselves as to the practicability of the work. The company was organized, and had a contract with the State to finish the improvement, which had been commenced by the State. The new company went to work, and accomplished considerable, but finally abandoned their contract, and in all probability the work will never be resumed. It will be entirely superseded by railroads.

During my absence land-hunting my traveling companions had left for home, so that on my return I was alone. As soon as dinner was over, and I had been shaved and put on clean clothes, I took steps to be fully satisfied that the land we had selected, or the number, was correct. As soon as the office was open next morning, I entered a quarter section, it being on a township line. There were over one hundred and sixty-three acres. As soon as I had made the entry, I strolled up on the hill, into a neighborhood that I had not been in. On this elevated plain there was fine clay, suitable for brick, and a kiln was then being made. We wended our way down to the river, where was a bed of fine coal,

then back to town, passing a saw and grist-mill on the Des Moines River. The next morning I made up my mind to enter a half-quarter of land adjoining the quarter I had already entered. This gave me, in one tract, two hundred and forty-four acres, which I regarded as choice land. Early in the day a friend of mine, a Mr. Sylvester Scofield, arrived. He had left Connersville two weeks before. I spent several hours with him, and borrowed fifty dollars from him, for which I gave him a check on the Fayette County Bank, at Connersville. He left on his return trip.

I had now seen much of the country, and formed some very pleasant acquaintances at the fort, and had purchased all the land I intended to. It had not been my original purpose to purchase any, but finding that which I did, I was confident that some day it would pay well. I began to think of returning home. My board bill was a dollar a day, and it was difficult to get boarding by the week. We had paid a dollar a day at Council Bluffs, and at all places where we had stopped. We paid about six cents per mile for stage fare, and our meals and lodging would average nearly a dollar a day more. I went to the stage office, and engaged my passage to Ottumwa, but soon after I met Mr. Cassiday, the Receiver in the Land Office, and an acquaintance of mine. He requested me to go with an agent of his, who was a depositor of the money taken in at the Land Office at that place. The deposit was to be made at Keokuk. I told him I had taken my passage for about half of the way, where I designed to stop. He still pressingly insisted upon my going with his depositor as far as I went, and even went with me to the stage office, and had my passage money refunded. On the morning of June 22, having bade my friends at Fort Des Moines farewell, I got into a light carriage, drawn by two horses, and in company with Cassiday's depositor, whose name I have now forgotten. We crossed the river by the rope ferry, and took the same road that I, with our party, had gone out by, and stopped at Mitches, fourteen miles distant, for dinner. We had a large sum of gold with us. It was put in a case made like a carpet-sack, and was locked and fastened securely, being handled by a strap, fastened so that it could be carried like a carpet-sack. It was a good load to lift for one hand. We made it a rule, when we stopped, to leave this in the buggy, or carriage, covered over, and one of us to keep in sight of it, and not far off. At night, when we stopped, it was always at a place where the house was well known, and the box was put in charge of the landlord. All the receipts of the Land Office were in specie, as no kind of paper money was allowed to be taken. We stopped for the night at a

place called Fairview, which we reached before dark, although we had traveled thirty miles. Fairview is a few miles east of the site once selected for the capital of Iowa, and is said to be the exact center of the State. We passed through the place, which was in an open and extensive prairie, and was several miles from any timber.

We stopped at Samuel D. Philbrick's, who was formerly from Oxford, Ohio, and was an own cousin to my son Thomas' wife. We soon became acquainted. His father and mother were living with him. The old lady was sick, and I was invited into her room to see her. She was aged, and had been infirm for some time, and was much debilitated, and nervous, and had fever occasionally. She died some months after. Mr. Philbrick kept a post-office at his house, which was seven miles west of Pella. He had a fine farm, but it was some distance from any timber. We left, and passed through Pella and Oskaloosa, and though it had been only about a month since I had stayed all night there, it had, in the meantime, been much improved. A fine quarry of good stone had been found, which was a great addition in the way of building material. They had good clay in the neighborhood, and from the river they obtained oak and black walnut timber. The surrounding country was splendid, and the people were stimulated by the prospect of two railroads, which, by the way, they have not yet got; however, it was the county-seat of Mahaska County, a fine large county, and they were building up a city. Everything was excitement and bustle.

We passed on, and stopped for the night at Kirkville, a small village on the Ridge road. We had traveled forty miles that day. Next morning, after breakfast, we started on, and reached Dahlonaga early in the day. I stopped there, and bade my traveling friend good-by; we had spent the time very pleasantly in our drive of over two days. Stopping at a hotel, I made inquiries for my friend Charles Kimball, and found that he lived the next door from the hotel. This place had been laid out as a town, with a view of making it the county-seat of Wapello County. It had a public square in the center, but it was then lying open as a common, with the road running diagonally across it. There were streets on all four sides of the entire square, and more or less building on each side of it. There were also several stores and mechanics' shops, and one public house. The town is rather pleasantly situated on the Ridge road, between the Des Moines and Skunk rivers, and four miles north of Ottumwa. While at the hotel in this place, I had occasion to go into the yard adjoining

Kimball's garden, and saw the old lady, Mrs. Sharp, the mother of Kimball's wife, driving some pigs out of the garden. I hailed her, but it was some little time before she recognized me. As soon as she did, however, she at once approached the fence, and seemed delighted to see me. I had taken her by surprise, she having no idea of seeing me there. She at once gave me a pressing invitation to come to their house. I accepted, with much pleasure and gratification, and went into the hotel, got my carpet-sack, and left. Kimball and his wife had rode out that morning, and were not expected to return until some time in the afternoon. This family had formerly lived in Connersville, where I had been their physician, and, consequently, we had been on the most friendly terms. The old lady and I had a long conversation about Connersville, and of the loss of my wife and son Thomas, of old times and old acquaintances. I felt myself to be, if not exactly at home, at least in most pleasant quarters. After dinner we went to her son Jerrod's, who lived within a mile, on a farm. Here we had another long and familiar chat, which seemed like living my life over again. Although I had, for more than a month, been constantly excited by new scenes, some of which were very pleasant and interesting, and in consequence of which my health had greatly improved since leaving home, I had not met with that warm friendship anywhere that I met with here. To fully appreciate such a meeting, one must realize it. I had been traveling with strangers, who, 'tis true, had treated me with much kindness, and life had passed pleasantly, but here I was among friends whom I had long known. They not only received me with a smile, and warmth of welcome, but in that disinterested manner that alone betokens real friendship. We returned to Mr. Kimball's. Late in the afternoon he and his wife returned, and seemed much pleased to see me. We had another long talk of old times and things. I found, in this vicinity, several persons who had emigrated from Fayette County.

I called several times at the house of John Hedrick, Esq., who was then living about two miles from Dahlonga. I had known him in Fayette County. He was an intelligent man, and had been a Senator in the Iowa Legislature. He owned a fine farm, on which he was then living. Here also I was most kindly received. On Sunday, while at Mr. Kimball's, he and I went to Agency City, six miles distant from Dahlonga, to attend a quarterly meeting of the Methodist Church. This place had long been an Indian agency, and also the residence of the agent, Mr. Street, who held the office under the administrations of John Quincy Adams and



Andrew Jackson. He died, and was buried here beside the celebrated Indian chiefs, Keokuk and Black Hawk, both of whom had long resided here. There is a monument erected near their graves. Mr. Street and these two chiefs had been great friends; and, by an understanding between them during their life-time, the three were buried side by side. The Street family inherited a section of land adjoining the "Agency;" a bequest of Keokuk, the chief. This I learned from a son of Mr. Street with whom I became acquainted while at Dahlonga. I also became acquainted with another son of Street's. His residence was in Ottumwa. He had been appointed in the Land Office at Council Bluffs, but by a change in the Administration at Washington he was superseded. At the time I became acquainted with him, at Council Bluffs City, he was connected with the ferry and the speculations in Omaha City. His brother, William Street, with whom I became acquainted at Dahlonga, but whose residence was Oskaloosa, was engaged in merchandising, and was then on business at Dahlonga. One pleasant evening, at Mr. Kimbalis, he gave me the whole history of the Black Hawk War. A more villainous transaction seldom occurs than that of the whites in the origin and prosecution of this war. Some years before the war, several chiefs who belonged to the same tribe with Black Hawk, went to St. Louis, and there got into a drunken frolic; and, while on the spree, they were taken advantage of, and a treaty was made by an Indian agent residing in that place. They always denied having made the treaty. This treaty, as made, ceded certain lands belonging to the tribe, (and if my memory be correct, it was on Rock River). The time expired that they were to hold possession, and they were ordered off, and went. They settled in Iowa. In the spring of the year, in which the Black Hawk War took place, that celebrated chief was urged by his warriors to return to their old homes to make sugar and raise a crop of corn and beans. The country was not settled by the whites, so a small party of the tribe returned to their homes. A party of the Illinois militia were sent into their neighborhood. This was unexpected by the Indians; and, when they learned of the presence of the armed force, they sent three of their number with a white flag to have a parley with the officers. They were fired upon, and two of the number were killed. The survivor made his escape, but returned again, so that he could see their encampment. It was now the turn of the white men to be on a spree, and all was riot and confusion in the camp. The surviving Indian returned to his party, bearing the tidings of the death of his comrades while carrying the flag of truce. This inflamed and

incensed the Indians. He narrated the condition of the whites on an open prairie, and the few Indians who were fit for war were soon off. Understanding the country well they kept under cover of a piece of woods that lay along the creek reaching out on to the prairie. The small band passed along the woods out of sight until they reached the open prairie in full view of the whites. They then traveled in a small circle, keeping some of their men all the time in view. In this manner they induced their enemies to believe that the party were numerous. This accomplished, they made towards them, and by their yells they made the air hideous, which so frightened the whites that they mounted their horses and fled. In fleeing they had either to fight their way through the Indians or pass through a swamp. They preferred the latter; but, in passing through the swamp, some lost their horses by their becoming mired, and some of the men their lives. Thus began the Black Hawk War; the result is well known. After General Scott passed from Chicago to the Mississippi, Mr. Street, the Indian agent, met him, and arranged the plan to secure Black Hawk. By his intercourse with the Indians Street knew in what neighborhood Black Hawk could be found. This celebrated Indian was not a war chief; he was a civil chief by hereditary descent. Street sent a small party of Indians for Black Hawk, and they brought him in. Black Hawk was not in any of the battles. William Street was with his father at the time Black Hawk was captured and surrendered to General Scott, and was well acquainted with the chief after his return to the tribe. Street said, "that he, in point of goodness, was one of the best men he ever knew." I have given so much of this war as has never before been given to the public, and as related by one who had every opportunity of knowing the whole history as well as being a man of high standing for truth and veracity, and one, too, who had been mostly raised with the Indians, and was well acquainted with their manners and habits, although he had the benefit of a fair English education. But to return to the quarterly meeting.

The day was a fine summer's day, and the crowd was a large one. The village, though of considerable size, contained no house sufficiently large to hold the crowd, and there were no woods in the immediate neighborhood. It was arranged that the meeting should be held in a steam-saw and grist-mill. The mill was crowded to overflowing. I was surprised to see so large an assembly of decently-dressed and well-behaved individuals. The first sermon was by a man from Illinois, on the death of Christ, and I see by my notes that I thought it a weak affair. The next

discourse was by a Mr. Brooks from Muscatine. His text was from Proverbs, "Get wisdom." The object of the sermon was to advance the interest of a college, ten miles from Chicago, on Lake Erie. He delivered an able and interesting discourse, which was well calculated to awaken an interest in learning as well as for the college.

On our way home we stopped at a house surrounded by a grove of young trees. The afternoon had been very warm, so we took a seat in the grove, and had a good cool drink of water from a fine well. We remained for some time luxuriating in the pleasant shade. I thought that I had never seen a spot where the shade of small trees was as cool and delightful as this. The sun was fast sinking in the west, so we started on again, and were glad to reach home in time for supper. I was at my friend, Mr. Kimball's, for over two weeks, and during the most of the time it was very warm. On the 3d of July the thermometer ranged ninety-seven degrees above zero, and I have seldom felt the heat so oppressive. The spring had been cold and backward, and it was cool during the most of June. The heat was so oppressive that most of the time I felt but little inclination to go out, and therefore spent considerable time in writing home to the newspapers and to friends. Kimball kept a horse and buggy, and when the weather was cool we rode out. This afforded me an excellent opportunity to see the country. We went several times to Ottumwa, and attended the meetings of the Masonic Lodge there, which were well conducted by well-informed Masons. I formed a number of pleasant acquaintances in Ottumwa. In our rides through the country we called on persons whom I had known in the Whitewater Valley, and spent some very pleasant hours with them. This region of country was a delightful one, with its small rich prairies and fair proportion of timber, besides abounding in stone-coal.

Monday morning, June 10th, I packed up my clothing preparatory to leaving. Soon came the parting with my kind friends. To have any idea of such a scene one must realize it. Feelings, emotions, sensations, operating, on the softer sympathies of the heart at parting with kind friends whom we never expect to meet again on earth, are awakened, which language can not describe. Among these friends there was a young man, a school-teacher, whose parents resided in Ohio. He was a kind-hearted and interesting young man, who had been attacked with hemorrhage of the lungs. I prescribed for him after unsuccessful treatment from resident physicians. My prescriptions were, not only successful in stopping the hemorrhage, but he soon rapidly gained health and strength

again. He called to bid me good-by, and wanted to know the amount of his bill; but, when I told him that "all I charged was that he should, whenever opportunity presented, render a kind office to an unfortunate fellow-being," his noble heart overflowed with gratitude. Months afterwards I met this same young man on the cars at Rock Island. I had forgotten him. He came and accosted me with much warmth of feeling, and told me that he had had a return of the hemorrhage; had been unsuccessfully treated, and was going home, perhaps to die. At La Salle he came and awoke me. It was in the night, and I was to get off here; and, had it not been for him, would have been taken on. We shook hands, and with deep emotion parted. It was a last parting, as I have never heard from him since. To return. My friend Kimball had his horse geared up; we jumped into the buggy, and with a nod of the head and wave of the hand I bade one and all good-by, and we started to Ottumwa, where I was to take the stage, but found that it did not leave until night. Kimball had some business to transact about a mile below town. I went with him and returned. We then parted. He left for home, and I on my tour. The emotion and sensation I felt in parting with him are yet fresh within my recollection. I went to the stage office, paid my passage to Farmington, and then hunted up my friend Harlan, at whose house I had spent a day. He was originally from Connersville, and was a carpenter by trade, and then at work in town, but I soon found him. He invited me, and I accompanied him to his house on the hill, where I took dinner and supper. After an early supper I took leave of him and his kind wife. They had both lived in Connersville, and I had known them before they were married. At 10 P. M. I took the stage coach. It was filled with passengers, and the curtains were down, yet I had to put on my overcoat to be comfortably warm. The changes in the atmosphere were often sudden, and this was one. We stopped at Liberty for breakfast, twenty-one miles from Ottumwa. Liberty is quite a good-sized village, on the Ridge Road, from Keokuk to Fort Des Moines. Leaving this place we passed through Birmingham and Winchester, two small villages; and I stopped at Primrose, forty-two miles from Ottumwa, and twenty-eight from Keokuk. The place was a small affair. Most of the country we had passed through, as far as I could judge, was a fair country. Much of it too flat, however, and would not compare with Wapello County.

I took dinner at Primrose, and hired a man to take me to Farmington, six miles, on the Des Moines River. Farmington is quite a business place, but had overgrown itself, like most of the

Western towns. I found that my friend Dr. Clifford lived on the opposite side of the river on a farm. Crossed the river on a very good frame bridge, and reached his house. The doctor and his wife were from home, but I found his daughter there, and spent the time with her until the return of her parents at sundown. I was most cordially welcomed by the doctor and his wife. I had long known the doctor, though but little acquainted with his family. He had dealt with me for ten years while I was in the drug business. He had left Fayette County early in the spring with his family, and I had promised him a visit, but had delayed so long that he had given up all hopes of seeing me. The next day we spent in talking over old times and viewing his farm. He was building a house, and was full of business; but most of the time, for several days, I went with him while he was attending to his affairs. Sunday morning I went with him into town to church, and heard a Presbyterian sermon, but could not say much in its favor. We went home for dinner, but in the afternoon went back to town and called on General Swasey, who invited me to stay all night, which I did. In the morning I got up and looked about the town. In the afternoon I was taken sick with the bilious fever, and, though not bad, I was completely prostrated, and kept in my bed for a week. The General was very kind, and nursed me like a brother. I shall never forget him for it. It was the first day of August before I was able to go out. I had intended to have started on my return home the day after I took sick, but was disappointed. The weather turned excessively warm and dry. Much of the time the thermometer in the middle of the day ran up to one hundred and six degrees above zero in the shade. The thermometer was one of McAlister's make, of Rochester, New, York, and was seldom below eighty degrees above zero in the shade. I was boarding in a frame house, and during the day the doors and casings would feel quite warm. On the 16th of August I ventured to go with my friend, Dr. Ephraim Clifford, in a wagon, to Keokuk. Stayed there all night, and returned next day. In returning our road lay so that we were on a high bank some four miles west of Nauvoo. It being in the afternoon, the sun in the west, and Nauvoo east, on a high bluff on the east side of the river, we had a fine view of the temple, and much of the town.

The Temple was a high building of white limestone, and presented a fine appearance. We reached home that night after dark. The weather was much cooler, and I regretted much that I had not taken my baggage and pursued my route towards home. On

the 25th I went, in company with General Swasey and two other gentlemen, to Keosauqua, distant from Farmington some twelve or fourteen miles. This place is the county-seat of Van Buren County, and is situated on the north-west side of the Des Moines River, on the side of a hill, and is a considerable town. At this place they were building a dam across the river, and a large lock for steamboats to pass through. In going out we crossed the river about two miles above Farmington, and went out on to the open prairie. For some distance, however, we were in a thick undergrowth of hickory, oak and plum bushes, freighted with ripe plums. Wherever there are woods in this part of the country, there is the plum bush, so low that one could stand and pick them off. One of our party had lived in the country for sixteen or eighteen years, and said that he knew this place when it was all an open prairie.

On our return we took another route, and passed through many thickets, where the road was worn down, and the small growth so thick that it was difficult to get through with a wagon. On the return trip we crossed the river at Bonaparte, a short distance below a dam and lock, but it was dark, and we saw but little. It was said that there was a good flouring mill and a woolen factory in the place. We returned, but it was some time after night.

The day previous to going to Keosauqua, I went two miles down the river from Farmington, to a place called Salubra. This place had been settled by Abner Kneeland, with a few associates from Boston, Massachusetts. Kneeland was the originator of the *Investigator*, a paper printed in Boston, and now conducted by William Lloyd Garrison. He not only edited the paper, but was the author of several works on religious matters, entertaining the views of Thomas Paine. He was sentenced, and confined in a Boston jail for blasphemy, in some publication in his paper. It was a great mistake on the part of the clergy, for it only secured the publication of the paper more strongly. This settlement on the Des Moines River was intended for the establishment of a little colony of Free-Thinkers, for the propagation of their peculiar opinions unmolested, and for the enjoyment of more fraternal feeling. But it proved a failure, as all associations have, so far, done. Kneeland had been dead several years. His widow, with a small family, was living on the old homestead place. She was a plain woman, and manifested much goodness of heart. She was his second wife, and he her second husband. They both had fam-

ilies, and had several children after they were married, and they were all living in that neighborhood.

I formed many acquaintances in and about Farmington. There was a Masonic Lodge there, and the Master called upon me while I was sick. I did not visit the lodge, as it happened not to be in session when I was able to attend. I became acquainted with a Mr. Knight, a Campbellite preacher. He was a most excellent man, preaching every Sunday, and working through the week, leading a good, orderly life.

Most of the time I was here I was in bad health, and oppressed with the excessively hot weather. The drought was severely felt. Although I was kindly treated by all with whom I became acquainted, I did not experience, myself, that warmth of feeling that I did with many in other places.

Farmington is located on the Des Moines River, about thirty miles from Keokuk, and three miles of the north line of Missouri, in a fair region of country. Not far above the town a dam and a lock had been commenced, but are not yet finished. Six miles below a fine dam and lock had been completed. From this last point up to Ottumwa the river-bed is rocky, and the hills abound in fine building stone. The place had been of mushroom growth, and like many other Western towns, was on the wane. In the vicinity of Farmington there are a number of fine coal-beds, though the strata is not thick.

The Des Moines River, at Ottumwa, and all the way below, to near its mouth, affords an abundance of fine water power, and, as capital increases, will be used for manufacturing purposes. The country is well adapted for sheep-growing, and the day will come when this will be a wool-growing and manufacturing country. While at this place I had a fine opportunity of learning much relative to the Mormon characteristics. My friend General Swasey was a man who had seen much of mankind. He was a Vermonter by birth; had resided in Boston, Massachusetts, and had had charge of hands in the employ of the United States, when working on fortifications in Boston Harbor; had lived in St. Louis, and was a Senator in the Iowa Territorial Legislature, besides holding the office of Brigadier-General in the Iowa Militia, and had the command of the troops during the controversy between Iowa and the State of Missouri, on the subject of the boundary line between Iowa and the latter State. General Swasey was well acquainted with Joseph Smith, the great Mormon leader, and with many other Mormons, and at the time they left Nauvoo many of them stopped in the neighborhood of Farmington, the whole body crossing the

river at this point at the time they emigrated to Council Bluffs. There were a few scattered about the country at the time I was there, and it was still the crossing point for those who were bound for Salt Lake. They went up between the State line of Missouri and the Des Moines River, taking the road and crossing the Missouri River at the Mission Station, in Nebraska, above the mouth of Platte River. From all I could learn from General Swasey and others, I came to the following conclusion: that the main body of the Mormons were honest and sincere in their views of religion; but they were bigoted, and many of them ignorant, and, as is common with ignorant men, enthusiastic in their religion. Swasey was a liberal-minded man, and was not wedded to any particular notions of religion. He told me that, in his interviews with Smith (and he had several) he had sought to learn the man's character, but it was a difficult matter. He was a still, shrewd man, and it was seldom that he gave an opinion about any thing. He was easy and courteous in his manners, engaged readily in conversation, but seldom came to a point. He lived at Nauvoo, in a good house, comfortably furnished, and had a good library, and was conversant with books, evidencing that he was a reader. A few remarks which he made to General Swasey gave evidence that he had drawn around him, and that unexpectedly, a mass of people whom he found it difficult to control. He stated that his people were never satisfied unless they were engaged in the all-absorbing subject of a Temple wherein to worship and perform all their religious rites. They seemed willing to undergo hardships, and even privations, so that their hearts' desire of having a Temple should be realized, giving evidence of the strong religious feeling that seemed dominant with them. That there were bad men among them there was no doubt; but the society was peculiar, living as one great associated body—a theocratic body. They acknowledged a head, yet each held his own opinions, to a greater or less extent. They had met with persecution, and their feelings were soured against all who were not of their own faith, and they tolerated, consequently, a much looser course of conduct among their members toward what they termed the Gentiles than they would otherwise have done. During their stay at Nauvoo the doctrine of polygamy had not been openly avowed. They did not regard their extra wives in the same light as the mass of mankind. They treated the subject in a spiritual light, and when their union was with more than one woman, it had to be conferred by the Church, as a spiritual affair, to raise up children to the Lord. Whatever might have been their original view of the matter, their residence



since, at Salt Lake, gives strong evidence of licentiousness on this point, as well as many others. However pure the motives of many of the members of this Mormon Church might have been, the mass were so shrouded in ignorance and a religious fanaticism, that all the higher and nobler feelings of human nature were lost and buried in a blind submission to religious duty, and they were led and controlled by their leaders by pandering to two of the strongest passions of man's nature, the gratification of their animal passions, and a morbid religious feeling.

Prairies, another subject, claimed my attention while on this tour. We had not been in the stage three hours after leaving Burlington before the question of the cause of prairies came up, and all agreed that the old theory of their having been occasioned by fire would not do. Almost every day for hours the subject was discussed without coming to any conclusion. I took much pains to notice the ravines; the earth taken out of wells; the margins of all the streams we crossed, particularly along the Missouri River. I also noticed, with much care, all the places where we passed timber land; noticed the soil; and, while at Farmington, I had the opportunity of seeing Mr. Owen's lengthy Geological Report of a considerable portion of Iowa. The result of my observations brought me to a fixed conclusion that the prairies of the West never had any timber, and that they may be separated into two great divisions, the wet and dry. Each of these may be subdivided into various degrees. The wet ones, from a march, through the various degrees, up to a simply moist condition. The dry ones, from a proper degree of moisture up to the dry sterile soil. These different conditions have been produced by the changes that have been going on in regard to the surface of the earth in different localities. The first great change which I shall call attention to is the formation of the great Mississippi Valley. This Valley is bounded on the south-west and south by a chain of high lands stretching across Tennessee, and eastward in Pennsylvania, dividing the waters that flow south into the Atlantic from those that find their way into the Mississippi, and then into the Gulf of Mexico. The rim of the basin on the east is along the ridges of the Alleghany Mountains, north, until it strikes a ridge of high land that separates the waters that empty into the lakes and those which find their way into the Gulf. This ridge forms the northern rim of the basin, stretching from the east, north of a direct course, until it strikes the Rocky Mountains, separating the waters which flow into the Mississippi and those that flow into Hudson Bay. The west rim of the basin was a

ridge of high lands that lay east of the Rocky Mountains, stretching from the north, in a south-westerly direction, until they united with the high lands, which lie south of the Mississippi River. In tracing this rim around we find a tolerably defined limit. What may have been the more primitive condition is and must be left to conjecture. How far volcanic action was an agent in producing these ridges is difficult of solution. It is evident that the Rocky Mountains are volcanic, and extending north to an unknown limit, dividing the waters of the Pacific from those of the North Atlantic. It is not improbable that the great chain of lakes, stretching from the north-west eastward, and emptying their waters into the Gulf of St. Lawrence, may have been extinct craters of volcanoes; and, at some time, the route of these lakes may have been a low mountain ridge. It is evident that a considerable portion of the Hudson River emptied its waters eastward into the Gulf of St. Lawrence. A ridge of high land separates the waters of the Connecticut River from the Hudson; and, crossing the latter river at the high lands on the Hudson, extend up west, separating the waters of the Susquehanna from those of the Mohawk. To this may be added another ridge, crossing the Mohawk at the Little Falls, causing the waters of that stream to have once flowed into the St. Lawrence. From the various formations to which I have alluded, it is evident that great changes have taken place in the earth's surface in that portion which now constitutes the United States. There has been upheaving of some portions and depressions of others. To my mind it is evident that at some point on the Mississippi the land has been depressed, and the waters that once formed a great inland sea, in what now constitutes the Valley of the Mississippi, have been emptied into what constituted a portion of the Gulf of Mexico. As before intimated, a ridge of land lay east of the present range of the Rocky Mountains. This is evidenced by the Chimney Rock, and the irregular formations which extend from the Upper Missouri, southward. This range, from some unknown cause, has been broken down, and the debris have been swept by the action of water to the eastward. The finer particles, with vegetable matter, which it gathered, were swept along, and now form those rich alluvial lands that constitute the center of the Great Valley; while the coarser particles were left farther back, forming those great plains that are crossed in going from the Missouri River to Pike's Peak and to Salt Lake. When the waters were drawn off from this great basin a vast amount of soil and vegetable matter was carried off and deposited in the Gulf,

forming much of the country that now constitutes the State of Louisiana and the great bottom land in the Valley of the Mississippi. The various streams that are now in the Valley were formed while the waters were passing off, and have been constantly wearing their channels deeper until they are some two hundred feet below the common level of the land intervening between the streams. If we go on to the table-land we find, as the name indicates, much of it flat, and in many places wet, and covered with a coarse grass; in some places small pools of water, the bottoms of which are a bed of mud, made up of a vegetable matter, evidently accumulated from the surrounding country. These places are various, and give evidence that changes are yet going on. Traveling a few miles one will find at this time a great variety of grass from that which is produced in water to a more perfect grass produced only on dry land. When the water was first drawn off there was a vast surface of mud, produced by the action of the water on the debris, in connection with the vegetable matter produced from aquatic plants and grasses which grew in the more shallow waters. It is asserted by Humboldt that the first production of vegetable matter on soil is moss, and this is succeeded by a more perfectly organized vegetable production. I have seen, on the banks of the White-water Canal, this process exemplified. At the first level above Connersville the entire bank was about five feet. The cut was in a soil made up of debris, clay, and vegetable matter. One season the water was drawn off during the hot weather. There were places along the bank that had been covered with water, which, when left exposed, presented a surface of mud. The particles composing it were extremely fine. In a few days this fine mud seemed to be covered with a gelatinous substance, which served as a matrix, and in a few days more exhibited a green appearance, which, in a short time, had grown into a very fine moss, so that when the water was let in this moss grew to be two or three inches long. The next season it was succeeded by a water-grass. This grass so increased that in a few years it greatly impeded navigation. This was on a small scale. Now, we have only to extend the scale of operations, and we have a prairie, in all the conditions in which they are found, from the small pond, surrounded with the flag, water-lily, and water-grass, up to the short fine grass, to be found on those of dry land. Let this grass accumulate, become very dry, and fire be put to it, and very soon a large district of country is burned over; but, notwithstanding this, very often the roots of this grass are uninjured, and they sprout up, and the ground becomes covered again with the grass, which,

in time, undergoes the same process of burning. Thus, for a succession of ages, has continued this round. The reader will ask how does any portion of the country ever become covered with timber. The answer is clear and obvious to those who have observed the belts of timber that are to be found along the water-courses. The first growth is such as requires or thrives best in moist soil, as the willow and cotton-wood. These are protected from the fire by the water or moisture of the soil. On the side hills and dry places there springs the hazel bush. At first this forms a thick mat, and is a wall, as it were, against the fire. Back of these, and sometimes in their midst, are to be seen the hickory, oak, plum-bush, and gooseberry, which last two everywhere abound wherever there is any wood growing. They were so plentiful that, during our trip in June, we were constantly supplied with the fruit at all the hotels where we stopped. In some places the plum bushes are so fruitful that in favorable seasons large quantities are gathered. All that is necessary is to keep the fire from those places where the ground is covered with these bushes, and you soon have a forest. In many places where we passed we found where the fire had killed small trees and shrubs, but they had again sprouted from the roots, and thrown up stems. Thus there seemed to be a warfare between the fire and the growth of timber. In some places where the bushes were killed, year after year, large green roots were to be found, called stools. These throw up a cluster of shoots, and kill the grass from around them, and they continue to grow in spite of the fire. As soon as a spot is covered with bushes the grass leaves. In this way, in places, considerable forests are formed. There seems a tendency in nature for one kind of forest to supersede another; hence we have the variety of timber that is to be found. The inquiry will naturally be made as to how the grass became fired before the country was settled. There probably never was a time when lightning did not play its part. The fine dry grass is easily fired; and, when once ignited, it would not be long before a whole section of country would be wrapt in flames, and only obstructed by some considerable stream of water. I think no intelligent man who will examine the formation of prairies with care, will doubt the correctness of these views as to the formation of those vast prairies to be found in the West. Another question arises. If this theory be adopted, whence or how came the timber. But two theories can be adopted with any plausibility. "Like begets like;" the seeds of the various growth are carried by the wind and by water; and, thus being gradually diffused or scattered, are,

under favorable circumstances, propogated. Another method may be adopted, and that is, that the germ of all vegetable life is in the earth, and all that is wanting are certain favorable conditions to cause it to germinate and become fully developed. There are many facts to sustain this latter position. Or they may both be active at the same time. To sustain both positions many arguments could be adduced, but I will not pursue the matter further, as my object was to show by what means the prairies were formed.

On the 5th of September, 1854, (a very hot day), I got into a hack at Farmington, having, the day before, bade all my friends good-by, except General Swasey and his family. To part with these kind friends, by whom I had been so kindly treated and cared for, was no easy matter. I was too full for utterance. Taking each of them by the hand, with a heartfelt clasp, and with a silent nod of the head, I left. I have had some correspondence with them by letter, but never expect to see them again in this world. The old lady, Mrs. Swasey's mother, who was very kind to me, departed this life last fall, and has gone to her long home. The hack took the road to Keokuk, but was different from the one I traveled in with my friend Dr. Clifford. We had gone some six or eight miles before we cleared the belt of woods along the Des Moines River. The heat was very oppressive, and I regretted having started, but as we reached the open prairie (there having been a slight shower, followed by a fine breeze), I soon felt much relieved. The hack took a route, striking the Des Moines at Margo, opposite St. Francisville, Missouri, which place was situated on the bank of the river. We reached Keokuk at 10 P. M. I met with Mr. Henry Rariden, and went with him to the "Iverson House." The next morning I felt much better, and Rariden and I went out together, and visited a great many places, and met several old acquaintances whom I had known in Indiana; among them was Mr. Hugh Wooster, who had formerly lived in Connorsville. We visited a steam saw-mill, situated below the city, on the Mississippi River. It was owned by a Mr. Hyatt, from Milton, Indiana, and did a large business. It had a flooring-machine connected with it, an upright saw, and a large buz-saw for sawing plank, and several for cutting lath. The whole was driven by one engine; propelled by steam; produced by burning the sawdust and the bark, leaving much of the refuse for stables, which was sold for city use. The mill was supplied with pine logs, rafted down the river, from Minnesota and Wisconsin. In the afternoon we took a carriage, and went up the river four or five miles along the

falls or rapids. These falls prevent the passage of steamboats in a low stage of water. There were two aground, lying there, at the time of our visit. There is a bottom between the river and a high bluff that runs up parallel with the river from the city. A wing dam, at the head of the rapids, could be thrown up so as to turn the water into a canal along the base of the bluff, and thus create an immense amount of water-power; and, by proper machinery, water could be pumped up on the bluff above the city, and made to supply it largely with water. After gratifying our curiosity we returned to Keokuk. In the evening I was introduced, by Henry Rariden, to several of the Professors of the Medical College, located at Keokuk, and found them gentlemen of intelligence, communicative, and plain in their manners. The college buildings are snug and convenient ones; far better than I had expected to find in such a place. This was not the only public building. The city contained several churches and a large three-story brick building for a graded school. The Roman Catholics had a fine institution a short distance from the city, and a female school in the city, in a fine two-story stone building of octagon form, or eight square, and otherwise curiously constructed. The city at the time I was there was said to contain five thousand inhabitants. There were quite a number of fine three-story brick stores, and a few good residences. The city site is a singular piece of ground; irregular shaped and broken. They were making extensive improvements in sewers; cutting down steep places, and filling up low ones. Some of the finest building stone I ever saw is to be had in the immediate vicinity of the city. It is a white lime-stone, solid and durable. Sixty thousand dollars had been expended in the city improvements on their streets the summer I was there. Since that time they have laid a railroad up the river, and another from the city to the Des Moines River, as far up as Keosauqua.

On the morning of the 7th, at four A. M., I took leave of my friend Henry Rariden. He was a son of James Rariden, whose wife was an own cousin of my second wife. After taking leave I got into the stage for Wapello, Louisa County, and stopped at Montrose, situated on the river, opposite Nauvoo, twelve miles from Keokuk. Here we breakfasted. Montrose is a small town at the head of the rapids, and said to be a pretty hard place. Nauvoo was in full view, on a high bank on the opposite side of the river, three-quarters of a mile distant. Twelve miles from Montrose, we reached Fort Madison, a snug town of 3,000 or 4,000 inhabitants, situated on the bank of the river. There is a narrow bottom, sufficient for one street, at the upper end of the town.

The Iowa Penitentiary is here located. It is a very extensive building, surrounded by a wall.

Here we left the river, and traveled along the brakes between the bluff of the river and the prairie. Reached Burlington for dinner, twenty miles from Fort Madison. Here we left the river, traveling for some distance along the timber, and then took the open prairie. Twelve miles from Burlington is Dodgeville—a one-horse affair, and on an open prairie; it had a post-office, however. Three miles further on we stopped at Mr. Matthias Ware's, a brother-in-law to Joshua Heizer, of Fayette County, Indiana. Here we took supper, and I had a long talk with Ware about Heizer, with whom I was well acquainted. We were fifteen miles from Wapello, which place we reached between nine and ten P. M. There had been rain, and the night was cool and damp. The house where we stopped was full. Wapello was the county-seat, and it was court-week. I had to occupy a bed at the head of an open stairway. In the night I waked up cold, and next morning was quite unwell. I had an acquaintance living in the place, a Doctor Taylor, who called to see me, and invited me to go home with him. I most gladly accepted his invitation.

The next day I had a shake of the ague, but by the free use of quinine I had no more. For several days, though, I was under the weather, and weak. I remained here a week, for the purpose of recruiting my health and settling some business with the Doctor, who had formerly lived at Waterloo, in Fayette County, Indiana. He owed me a bill for medicine. He had lost his first wife while living at Waterloo, and had married a second one since he came to Iowa. She was an Eastern "school-marm;" had been sent out as a school-teacher. She was a high-toned woman, and had treated me with much kindness.

While I was there I visited the lodge and found a number of interesting Masons. I also formed the acquaintance of a Doctor John Bell, and found him a very pleasant and interesting man. Wapello is the county-seat of Louisa County, Iowa, situated near Iowa River, some distance from its bank. It is a pleasant village, steadily improving, and it was said to have a good country around it. Back of the town from the river there was a fine prairie, three miles wide. Upon the whole, the place was a pleasant one, though I should think it was not a healthy locality.

On Friday morning I took leave of my friend Doctor Taylor and his kind family, and took passage in the mail coach for Muscatine. Nine miles from Wapello we reached a small village named Grand View. It, as its name implies, is a most beautiful

location, on a high rolling prairie, and overlooking the country in every direction. It seemed to be the center of a rich country of as fine land as I ever saw.

Eight miles before reaching Muscatine we struck the great plain, or river bottom, extending from Muscatine eighteen miles down the river, and which was from eight to twelve miles wide. In crossing this plain we found a low, sluggish bayou. Along the edges of this there was some rich land, but most of this plain is said to be but little else than a bed of sand. These beds of sand seemed to be formed by the action of water washing out the finer particles and carrying them down the river, in flood time. As we were going into the city we crossed the bayou again. It puts out of the Mississippi just below the city, in a deep, narrow, filthy-looking channel, but a heavy bank had been thrown up across near its head, for the purpose of a railroad crossing, which has since been finished. We reached the place before dinner, but I was compelled to remain until night before I could pursue my route. After dinner I took a stroll over the city. It is situated on the west bank of the Mississippi River, at its great western bed. The city site is above high-water mark, but the bottom is barely wide enough for two streets, and back of the place, is a high broken bluff. Some of the streets are cut through high ridges. The earth removed in cutting is used in filling up the hollows. In the upper part of the city they were building two large and substantial school-houses, as graded schools. Besides these buildings there was a fine Court-house, and several churches, a few good residences, and a large number of fine stores. The place had an air of business, and contained, in 1854, 5,000 inhabitants. At a little after eight P. M. I left for Blue Grass, distant twenty miles. The night was cold, with moonlight. Our course lay along the brakes back from the river, sometimes crossing points of prairies. The whole route seemed to be through a fine farming country. We reached Blue Grass at half-past twelve at night. I stopped with my old friend, John Perrin, and, without much ceremony, they showed me to a bed. I slept soundly, and the next morning arose feeling better. After breakfast Mr. Perrin handed me a number of letters I had had directed to his care, and after their perusal I had a long talk with the "Squire" and his wife. They were old people, both nearly eighty years of age. I had been acquainted with them for over thirty-five years. They had formerly resided in Fayette County, and had only been living in Iowa a few years. At their house I was warmly welcomed, and



felt at home, being treated with all the kindness that heart could desire.

The next day was Sunday, and there being no Church we spent the day in conversation, except during the time I was writing a few letters. On Monday I went with my friend Perrin to Davenport, a distance of twelve miles, in an open two-horse wagon. After transacting some business, for which my friend came, and strolling over the town awhile, we left for home. In 1854 Davenport contained between 7,000 and 8,000 inhabitants. It is situated on the west bank of the Mississippi River, opposite the lower end of Rock Island, and has a good landing. Here the river bottom is wider than at Muscatine, and the bluffs back of the city are not so high—yet too high for comfort; besides, it requires much labor to cut streets through them. Quite a number of good residences are along the bluff. A short distance from the city, on the high land, they have a college, and in the city there is a fine large building where they have a graded school. There was the usual complement of churches, and a large number of fine stores, and also a variety of machinery for mechanical purposes. I visited this place again in the fall of 1857. The improvements that had been made in the interval were surprising. A fine banking-house had been erected by Cook & Sargent; the front was of hewn stone, brought from Joliet, and was of an excellent quality. The bridge across the river and the point on Rock Island had been finished; the railroad track laid, and continued on to Iowa City.

On Tuesday, September 19, 1854, I went with Doctor Carpenter (an old acquaintance, formerly of Connersville) to see some patients of his, and also wrote several letters. On Wednesday Doctor Carpenter and I rode out to Walcott, a distance of five miles from Blue Grass. This place was on an open prairie, eighteen miles long, and ten or twelve wide, of rich and fertile soil, and situated between Cedar River and the bluffs of the Mississippi. Quite a little town had sprung up at this point, although there was no timber near it. The railroad from Davenport to Iowa City ran through the place, and the entire length of the prairie. The Railroad Company had built a fine hotel and depot. We enjoyed the pleasure of going up on the top of the hotel, on which was a balcony. The view from it was beautiful, the green prairie stretching out for miles in every direction. In the immediate neighborhood of the town there were a few large corn fields, some with as much as a hundred acres in one field. I met here with a number of old acquaintances, who were trying their fortunes at this new place. All the lumber used in these buildings was brought by

wagons, some fourteen miles, and from Davenport. Plenty of stone-coal was to be had within five or six miles.

We returned to the Doctor's for dinner. His first wife was a daughter of Squire Perrin; she had raised a family. He was then living with his second wife, at Blue Grass. I spent the afternoon with Doctor Carpenter and Squire Perrin. Blue Grass is a cross-road town, five miles from the Mississippi, on the road between Muscatine and Davenport. It was a handsome location, just on the edge of the prairie, and near the timber of the brakes of the river. It had a post-office, store, and a blacksmith shop, and they were building a tavern, and had a Baptist church nearly finished. I was there again in the fall of 1857, to see my old friend Perrin and the Doctor. The place had improved some in the interval.

I now had been in Iowa since the 23d of May, 1854; within two days of being four months. Had seen much of the southern part of it; and, with the exception of Farmington, every place I visited was on the high-pressure principle in prices. New towns and corner lots, and choice quarter sections of one-dollar-and-twenty-five-cents per acre land, was all the talk. In many places the prices were above old settled places in other States. It was amusing to hear the views on corner lots and large cities that were to grow up. The crowd of emigration was great; and, in sections where vacant land was to be had, there were good chances for a man with limited means to obtain a home. Thousands of acres, however, were entered that year that, after a lapse of seven years, could not be sold at an advance to pay interest and taxes, and corner lots can now be had at half the price they were then selling at.

On Thursday, September 20, I bade my friends good-by, and took my seat in an open wagon, with my friend Perrin and another man, for Davenport, which point we reached in time for dinner. We dined with Mr. Sargent, (a son-in-law of Squire Perrins), who was living in a splendid new house, which, when fully finished, and the grounds properly graded, would cost him twenty thousand dollars. He had already expended seventeen thousand dollars on it. After dinner we went into town. This Mr. Sargent was one of the firm of Cook & Sargent, bankers, who, as I learned in 1859, failed in 1857. They built the fine banking house of which I have before spoken. They, not only engaged in the banking business, but speculated in lands and town property, and were at one time regarded as very wealthy. Another instance of the folly of overtrading and wild speculations. My friend Perrin transacted the business he came for, and we took leave of each other. He started

for home, and I crossed the river, to Rock Island. As I could not leave in the cars until 5 P. M. I strolled about town. This place is also a county-seat, and situated on the east bank of the river. It is a fine town, doing considerable business, and is pleasantly situated, with one exception, that back of the town is low ground, and in wet seasons is swampy, requiring a good large sewer to carry off the water. In the fall of 1857 I was here on a visit to my friend, Wells E. Lawrence, Esq., who was then living at this place. During the several days that we were here I visited every part of the town. Among other shops and factories there was a large establishment for manufacturing plows. This establishment and fixtures had cost forty thousand dollars, besides stock and materials for carrying on the business. We went up to Moline, three miles distant, at the head of Rock Island. This is a manufacturing place. Here was another large shop for manufacturing plows, and also a manufactory for making buckets and wash-tubs on a large scale; a chair and bedstead factory; flouring-mills, and various machine shops, saw-mills, etc. A large quantity of pine lumber was sawed out of this point. The logs are rafted down the river from Wisconsin and Minnesota. The place contained three or four thousand inhabitants. Most of the machinery was propelled by water-power, furnished by the river through a bayou, in which there is considerable fall. Stone-coal is in great abundance in this region; worth, when delivered in Rock Island City, eight cents a bushel. From the various advantages possessed by Davenport, Rock Island City, Moline, and Rock River, which empties into the Mississippi, a short distance below Rock Island, the time must come when these points will be the center of a large business which is already considerable. In 1857 these places were said to contain twenty-four thousand inhabitants. I got into the cars, and met with the young man, Mr. J. B. McBrown, whose residence was in Logan, Ohio. This was the young man I spoke of, at Dahlonega, as having hemorrhage of the lungs. I reached La Salle at 10 P. M., but was detained there until next day, 1 P. M., when I took the cars, on the "Illinois Central," for Mendota, sixteen miles. Afterwards took the cars to the "Junction." Passed through Aurora, on Fox River, and several other small villages at the different railroad stations. Most of the route is through an open rich prairie country. Aurora is situated on Fox River, and is a place of considerable business. Much of the distance from Aurora to the "Junction," the railroad runs along Fox River, which is a low, flat, dirty stream. The banks on either side, as well as its bed, is a rich alluvial soil, giving the water of the

stream a black color. This is the case, from Aurora up to the boundary line of Wisconsin, along which I traveled in the year 1857. I arrived at the "Junction," a distance of about one hundred miles from La Salle, at 5 P. M., and left at 6 P. M., going by the "Dixon Air Line Railroad to Courtlandt Station. Here I took a hack for Sycamore, a distance of four miles, and arrived there at 8 P. M. Stopped with my nephew, Horatio H. Mason, the son of Hiram Mason, my deceased brother. I found my nephew and his wife well. They had not long before buried their only child, who was about three years old. Horatio had moved there the spring previous from Herkimer County, State of New York, where he was born, and his father also. The next morning we strolled about town. Sycamore is the county seat of De Kalb County, Illinois. My nephew had purchased a fine farm, on the west side, adjoining the town, and had erected a fine new house, but had not moved in. He was preparing to do so though, and did move while I was there. After our walk my nephew geared up a couple of horses, and hitched them to a light spring wagon. We then jumped in, and drove off, in a south-westerly direction, over a beautiful rolling prairie, a distance of eight or ten miles, and stopped for dinner at a small town on the "Dixon Railroad," a pleasant station, and where considerable improvements were being made in the way of building houses, etc. After dinner we turned our course eastward, over a fine country, to Courtlandt Station; then back to Sycamore, where we arrived at 3 P. M. We had traveled a distance of about twenty miles. The roads were splendid, and much of the distance was over a prairie country, with not a stick or stone to impede our passage. There is something peculiar in traveling over a fine prairie road. There seems to be a kind of elasticity in the ground, especially if the road has not been long used so as to become thoroughly worn and beaten. Horses and carriage seem to bound over it with great ease, and miles are soon passed over.

The next day was Sunday. In the forenoon we went to church to see the fashions and the people. Came home to dinner, and at half-past one in the afternoon we went to hear a temperance lecture on the physiological effects of intemperance. The lecture was a good one, as was also the one we had heard on Saturday night. Both were delivered by the same man. The audiences at the lectures, and the congregation at church, were neat looking and orderly. After the lecture we harnessed the horses, and took another drive in a different direction, going north, and then east. We returned about sundown, having rode ten or fifteen miles. After eating supper we went to hear the close of the temperance

lectures. This last one was that given to us in the Bible, and was delivered by the same man who gave the others. It was very well delivered, but was not as interesting as the first two. Monday I spent most of the day in reading and writing letters home, though in the afternoon I assisted Horatio (my nephew) in moving to his new residence, where we slept that night. On Tuesday I went into town with Mary Eliza, my nephew's wife, and sat for my picture, a daguerreotype, which I presented to her. The weather had turned cooler, and I felt like having a chill, but took quinine and kept it off. In 1857 I visited this place again, with my third wife. The town had improved somewhat, and I found my nephew and family still residing on their lovely farm, to which they had moved when I was there in 1854. Horatio went with us to see a cousin of mine who had married Mr. Briggs Thomas. She was a daughter of my uncle, Isaac Mason.

We left Sycamore on the 26th day of September, 1857, for Courtlandt Station; thence east to the "Junction;" thence on the Galena Railroad to Elgin. Here we took the "Fox River Valley Railroad" to Richmond, a town on the railroad, and on a branch of Fox River, one mile from Mr Thomas'. There we procured a conveyance to our relatives, whose farm we reached about 4 o'clock P. M. I had not seen them for forty-one years. My cousin was about four years my junior. We had, in our youth, been raised on adjoining farms. It required but a short time to renew old acquaintance, and to recall the associations of our youthful days, and found dreams of the future. In the mutations of time she had grown to womanhood, and married in the neighborhood where she had been brought up, but afterwards moved to where they now live. She was born in Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, in the same place where I was born, and I think in the same house. Afterwards our parents settled in Warren, Herkimer County, New York. I left home a single man; married in Cayuga County, New York, and then moved to Indiana, and settled in the White-water Valley. She and her husband settled in the extreme northern part of Illinois. We were, consequently, several hundred miles apart. The evening was spent until a late hour in talking over by-gone times and our present relations. She had raised a large family. Most of her children were living near her. I had raised a family by my first wife, and was living with my third. These many changes afforded abundant matter for conversation.

The next day was Sunday. We soon arranged for a drive, and my cousin's husband hitched a pair of fine horses to a good comfortable carriage, and he and his wife, and myself and wife, got in,

and started over a fine prairie road. We bounded off at good speed, and were soon over the line dividing Illinois from Wisconsin. Our travels alternated between prairie lands and timber. After quite a circle in Wisconsin we returned, stopping at, or rather passing through, Genoa, by which town the railroad runs. It is two miles above Richmond, in Wisconsin. From here we took another circle eastwardly, passing a Catholic church, built in a little grove of timber, and through Richmond. After crossing the railroad and river we ascended to a fine level spot of ground. On the north side of the road stood a neat Presbyterian church; and on the bench, on a still further rise, was a grave-yard, neatly fenced in and arranged. Here we stopped, and took a stroll over the grounds of the burying lot. Stopped at a grave; at the head of which had been erected a neat white marble slab. The grave was that of a husband who had left a widow to mourn his loss, and which she visited weekly to pay her devotions to, and shed her tears. Before we left the grounds she came from the church to her wonted place, near him whom she had fondly loved. We left, and I seldom have had such mingled emotions as during this day's drive. We had driven over beautiful prairies and through shady groves; had passed through villages, and by the church, where solemn religious services were being performed, and had lingered in the grave-yard, the final resting place of man's mortal remains. This, and the sorrowing widow at the grave of a beloved husband, widely contrasted with the lovely scenes we had just passed through. But such is human life! We are joyful when all is pleasant, and weep when sorrow overtakes us. A week after this I wrote an article for our country village paper on the scenes of this day. (I have not the article now at hand or I should insert it, for it was one of the best productions from my pen). It was written after returning from a Universalist church, where we had listened to a good sermon. We reached the home of my cousin for late dinner. The afternoon was spent in conversation and in calling to see several of my cousin's children living near.

The next morning we took our departure for Sycamore. Although our visit had been a short one it seemed as though we had lived over a life-time. On our return, about half way between Richmond and Elgin, the train stopped at a brick-yard, where the brick are made which are so celebrated at Chicago. The bed of clay is near the river; over the surface of which there are about two feet of alluvial soil. Beneath this is the bed of clay some six or eight feet in depth, and underneath this again lies a bed of gravel. It differed from any bed of clay I have ever seen, being

of a yellowish cream color, and, when burned, changes its color but very little. The brick are very solid and heavy when burned. I had not the time nor the means of determining how this clay or alumine differed from other kinds. This region of country had the appearance of being a fine farming country, and well watered by small streams. The trip was an interesting one in the renewal of old friendships and acquaintances, the meeting with relatives, and in viewing many new scenes.

We reached Sycamore late in the afternoon. Some days after we attended the County Fair at that place, and a few days after that we left for Fulton, on the Mississippi River, and went down to Rock Island, to our friend Lawrence's, before spoken of.

To return from this digression. On Wednesday, the 27th of September, 1854, I left Sycamore with my nephew and his wife. They had arranged their business, and then closed up their house for a trip back to Herkimer County, New York, on a visit. At Courtlandt we took the cars for Chicago, passed through Geneva, the county-seat of Kane County, and also the "Junction." This latter place is at a point where the railroads diverge—one going south-west, through Aurora, to La Salle, dividing at Mendota; another going to Galesburg and Quincy. One, called the "Galena," takes a north-westerly course; the "Dixon Air Line" going directly west, through Dixon to Fulton, on the Mississippi. From the "Junction" we went direct to Chicago, where we arrived at half-past nine A. M. The distance from Sycamore to Chicago is about fifty miles. Most of the road goes through a fine farming country, although by far the largest proportion of it is prairie. The facilities for obtaining lumber from Chicago are such that farms are chiefly fenced in with pine boards and cedar posts.

We spent the afternoon in looking about the city. I had been absent from the place four months, and found great changes in the way of buildings. Stone of an excellent quality for building purposes was procured at Joliet. Bricks and good pine lumber, in great abundance, were obtained from different places on the lake, at low prices, which afforded fine facilities for building. Among other buildings a fine large depot had been erected on the lake beach, by driving piles of eighteen or twenty feet long, in rows, cutting them off level on the top, below the water in the lake, and laying plank on the top of the piles. On this was built a heavy stone wall, forming the massive walls of the depot. This was a most superb structure, and very large.

Chicago is destined to be a city of much importance, though situated on an unfavorable spot of ground. No better is to be

had, however, in its vicinity. A large area of country, of rich and productive lands, is necessarily dependent upon the city.

The next morning, Thursday, the 28th of September, I took leave of my nephew and his wife, they bound for Herkimer County, New York, and I for Michigan City, and home. In passing down the lake, on the railroad (which runs not far from the lake), the surrounding country is either swampy or barren, and is very little inhabited. Michigan City, in 1854, was a poor location and apology for a city. It was a bed of sand, and in places was thrown in considerable hills by the wind from the lake, which is scarcely visible from the city in consequence. The train stopped here for breakfast, then left for Lafayette and Indianapolis. There is a great diversity of land between the city and Lafayette, south of the city. For a considerable distance it is a barren country, and for some distance before crossing the Kankakee (one of the principal branches which form the Illinois River), the land is low and flat, and, in consequence, is very difficult to drain, and is made up of a rich alluvial soil. The stream is low and sluggish, so much so that it requires close observation to tell which way the water runs. Soon after crossing the stream the road lies along a poor sandy ridge of land, and, though low, yet is sufficient to divide the waters that flow into the Tippecanoe (a branch of the Wabash) and those which flow into the Kankakee. The whole of this region of country is thrown into sand ridges; now and then a sand plain, and frequently swamps, are met with. The soil is warm, and in wet seasons produces much better than it indicates, especially wheat.

I was in November, 1856, over a considerable portion of this country, and entered lands. I reached Indianapolis after night, and next morning took the cars for Cambridge, and thence by back to Connersville, to my residence. I there found Temple E. Gayle, my step-daughter; and Ella, an orphan child, whom my second wife had adopted and I was raising. They both manifested great pleasure at my return. I had been absent four months. They were boarding with a Mr. Paul Barnard and his family, to whom I had rented my house and grounds. The two girls were the only members of my family I had left with me. Although deprived of many of those family ties that go to make life pleasant I felt again at home, which affords such a pleasing contrast to strange scenes and strangers. My inhabitiveness is small, and, although I am rather inclined to the romantic, yet I have large adhesiveness. I have long trained my mind to economize, and, at the same time, to pay strict attention to all those things necessary



to make life comfortable and supply the actual wants of our nature. I found the comforts of home above all else; and, although I had lived but a short time at my present residence, still it was my *home*. I had fitted it up with much care, yet plainly, having studied comfort and convenience rather than ornament and show. It was where I had intended to spend the evening of my life in retirement, free from the turmoil of active public life and contentions with my fellow men; but the loss of a loved companion, and also a son soon after, together with impaired health, had changed my designs, and I had sought in the romance of the Western wilds and the broad prairie to drive away my grief, and with a hope of restoring my health and buoyant feelings. I returned, but had only partially succeeded. My sickness on the Des Moines River, and my long stay in consequence of my slow recovery, had done much to retard the restoration of good feeling; yet home, sweet home, was a pleasure. I was unsettled. A family was living in my house. I had for a long time desired to visit my relatives in the State of New York, and to see the places of my early childhood and youthful years. With a view to this trip I visited my only blood relative, my brother Horatio Mason, who was then living on Garrison Creek. Besides him and family I had none in the West. We had a very pleasant interview. I narrated the events of my Western tour, which were full of interest to him and his family. He readily consented to take the Eastern trip with me, and we made our arrangements accordingly.

On Monday, the 17th day of October, we left my house, Temple E. Gayle going with us. We took the stage to Cambridge, and there took the cars for Columbus and Newark, reaching Newark late in the afternoon. Stopped at the principal hotel in the place, which we found crowded, as the Ohio State Fair was being held near the town. The next day we visited the Fair grounds, a mile or more from town, within an old Indian fort or fortification. It had the appearance of great antiquity, and was extensive, with an earthen wall and ditch, all of massive structure. I have seen many of those ancient fortifications. This one seemed the most formidable. It had an opening towards the east; and the canal, from Cleveland to Portsmouth, runs along in front of the opening, near which runs a stream of water. The grounds possess a deep interest. Who can give us truly their origin and cause? By whom, and when constructed, and for what purpose? Probably a fortification; but, after all the investigation it is possible to command, they are involved in darkness, as but little beyond conjecture can be formed. That the builders of those ancient relics were far

behind the present state of civilization is evident from the stone-axes and flint arrow-heads found in considerable quantities in and about these fortifications. Even these may be deceptive as indicating the character of the people who built these fortifications; for these improvements may have been made long before the advent of the race of Indians, who inhabited the country at the time it was discovered and settled by the ancestors of the present inhabitants, and I am strongly inclined to this opinion. The discoveries made by Stevens in Yucatan indicate a higher order of civilization than the present race of Indians manifest, and similar improvements to those in Yucatan are to be found within the limits of the south-western portion of the United States, and extend along the water-courses, into the interior, as far east as the north-eastern portion of Ohio. Some years ago I saw in the "New York Tribune" an account of the travels and discoveries of a Catholic priest in the interior of South America, and the discovery of an ancient race of people, who had had some ancient books and manuscripts, which he promised to give to the world. I have not seen anything further about it, however. The legends given us of the Incas of Peru, and of the rude civilization of the Peruvians, together with the ruins and fortifications before spoken of, all had one common origin, and were in an advanced state of civilization, which, however, has been superseded by the wild tribes found in North America. I should have included the City of Mexico, though the civilization of the people of Mexico seems to have been different from that of Peru. They seemed better acquainted with the mode of working gold into ornaments; while the Peruvians excelled them in agriculture. Their religion appeared to differ; for, while the Mexicans offered human sacrifices to their gods, the Peruvians had a different mode of worship.

To return to the "State Fair." It was well attended, and the show was favorable for the season of the year. I formed a number of very pleasant acquaintances while there, though our stay was a short one. While there Thomas N. McQueen came. He is now the husband of my step-daughter, who was with me at the time. They were married the next March. I placed her in his care, and took leave of them; and, with my brother, left in the cars for Cleveland, which we reached at night. Then took the cars for Buffalo, and thence for Utica. At Utica we left for our cousin, Scott Willmarth's, who resided about three miles out of the city, at Deerfield. This distance we walked, carrying our carpet-sacks; and, although it had been thirty-two years since I had traveled this road, the most of it was quite familiar; and the house was so

little altered by the hand of time, and the location was so familiar, that I recognized it immediately on coming within sight. My brother was more wearied by the walk than I was. After meeting our cousin a few minutes renewed our old acquaintance, although I think I would have known him and his mother even among strangers. His mother was my father's sister. When a boy of twelve years I boarded three months with my aunt, and went to school with my cousin, who was within twelve days of being three months older than I. We remained with them until after dinner the next day. I had a long conversation with my old aunt, eighty-two years of age, who still retained all her faculties, with the exception that she was hard of hearing. My cousin stammered, and it was a little unpleasant holding conversation with him. Our visit ended. We bade our aged aunt farewell, which proved to be a last farewell, as she died two years after. Our cousin Scott took us to the city, where we parted, he returning home and we for Herkimer County, on our way to Warren, to see an old uncle and the place where we had been partially raised. At the town of Herkimer we took a hack and crossed the bridge over the Mohawk River to the village of Mohawk. This is a very pleasant place, on the south side of the river, and on the great New York and Erie Canal. Here we were so fortunate as to get a private conveyance through a neighbor of our uncle's who lived about seven miles out. We reached his house about dusk, and found them in their usual health. The next day was Sunday. Our cousin, John Mason, took his team, and we drove past the farm where we were raised and over a road that seemed as familiar as it was to us in boyhood. About two miles from our uncle's we stopped a few minutes at David Starkweather's. He and myself had been apprentices together. We did not get out of the wagon, but exchanged salutations, and passed on, soon coming to the graveyard where our father, mother, a brother, and sister were buried side by side. There was erected, at the heads of their several graves, a plain neat marble slab, with appropriate inscriptions. This was well calculated to awaken the recollections of our youth, and of the days when the whole family surrounded the same hearthstone, amid the prattle of the younger children, while the older ones were indulging in their wonted pleasures: all cared for by kind and tender parents. After remaining some time at the grave of our parents I strolled off alone over a neat but rather an irregular burying-ground, and stopped at the head of a well kept grave, where was erected a neat marble slab. Across it, near the top, was this impressive inscription, the single word, "*Mother.*"

It at the time struck me as being singularly expressive; why, would be rather difficult to explain. This inscription on a tombstone was new to me. It called up anew the fond recollections of childhood. Below this was the name, "*Ward.*" She was the mother of a large family; a Low Dutch woman, kind and good. I had, when a boy, with a younger brother, spent many a night at her house with the family until bed-time, when we would then leave for home, which was about half a mile distant across the fields. There was a considerable ridge of high land, which prevented a view of the two residences, and which we had to cross. On our way home we would walk up the hill as fast as our strength and little legs could carry us; the summit gained, we ran down the other side as fast as we could go, thinking all the time of the "spooks" and "hobgoblins," which were generally the subjects of the old lady's evening stories. A few years later—my mind more matured—I learned the great error of these false notions and the tendency they had in filling the young mind with erroneous opinions. These notions are a palpable wrong; a superstition well calculated to block the path to rational thought and the elevation of the human mind. What a contrast to that rational thought, founded on the relations which all things bear to cause and effect. But to return.

After we had satisfied ourselves at the grave-yard we took our seats in the conveyance, and went to see our cousin, James Mason, John's brother, where we dined and spent the most of the afternoon. I spent the night with my old chum, David Starkweather. We talked over the days of our boyhood. Next day he took his horse and buggy, and we passed most of the day in traveling over the roads we had tramped when we were "'prentice" boys. Passed a number of buildings that we had worked on when apprentices. In our round we struck the old Cherry Valley Turnpike, leading from Albany to Manlius Square. This road lies between two small lakes, called "Little Lakes;" yet they each cover over one hundred acres, and abound in fine fish, particularly pike. The waters of these lakes empty into the outlet of Cooperstown Lake, whose waters, with others, formed the Chemung River, the head waters of the Susquehanna. From this place we directed our course back to his house. I enjoyed the trip much, as we passed over country which had once been familiar, and I had not seen for nearly forty years. After our return I called at a house in the neighborhood where my nephew, H. H. Mason, was (whom I had visited at Sycamore, Illinois), and spent some time with him and his wife at one of her connections. I then returned, and spent the

night with my old apprentice friend. The next morning he brought out his horse and buggy for another drive. We went off in another direction, and over roads that were familiar to us in our boyish days. Near 12 M. we stopped under a horse-shed, at a "public-house." These sheds are common at all taverns in the State. They are wide, so that a horse and buggy, or horse and sleigh, can stand under shelter from the storm, and so arranged that the horses stand at a rack and manger. My "'prentice" friend fed his horse, and we went in. Here he met with acquaintances, such as like to loaf about dram-shops. Unfortunately he, too, had become fond of a dram, and often became "tight," as a "Hoosier" would say. I left him to enjoy his glass, while I took a stroll along the road, and entered a grave-yard near, well set in grass and fenced in. At the head of nearly every grave there was erected a neat white marble slab, with the name of the departed one engraved upon it. I strolled about the yard for half an hour, reading names, which were once familiar to me. Nearly all the older portion of the neighborhood I there found hushed in that sleep which knows no waking, and resting within their silent mansions. The history of their mortal remains were soon read. I returned to the tavern, and with some persuasion I got my friend off. We had about three miles to ride to my uncle's. We there took leave of each other; he tolerably "boozy." I had an engagement to a party at the house of a man I had known in my boyhood. I went, and met there my nephew, his wife, and half a dozen other persons. We spent the afternoon very pleasantly, and arranged to take a trip of eighteen or twenty miles. Myself and brother went to our uncle's, and spent the next day with him. He was an old man, some seventy-six years of age. He had been married twice, but had no children by his last wife, who was also dead. His family consisted of his son John, who was an old bachelor, and four daughters, all old maids. The next morning we took leave of our uncle and the girls, our cousin John and nephew, H. H. Mason, accompanying us. John, with a pair of horses and light spring wagon, took us the trip before spoken of. We passed through Herkimer, the county-seat of Herkimer County, to the town of Fairfield, and about four miles from Fairfield Academy to the place where our father first settled soon after I was born, and where my brother Horatio was born. I had not seen the place for more than forty years. Oft and again I had desired to see the spot where I remembered the first gambols and sports of my childhood, and the spot where the old log-cabin school-house stood, in which I was taught my A, B, C's, by an old pedagogue, whom I learned to hate more than I

learned my lessons. When within a few miles of the farm the road as well as the old landmarks, the hills and dales, began to look natural to me. We stopped at a house near the spot where a Mr. Nathaniel Brown had lived when I was a boy. Brown was an old bachelor, and had afterwards married a girl who had lived in my father's family. This Mr. Brown was a distant relative of our father's. Upon inquiry we found a son of my old acquaintance, Brown. From him we learned that his father and mother were both dead; and, although I told him who I was, and that my brother and I were from Indiana, and going to visit the old homestead, the Russell Mason family, he was unsociable and uncouth in his manners, and seemed glad to be rid of us. I returned to the wagon. The rest of the party had not got out. I told them to drive ahead and I could guide them to the spot. I would not stop with such a cold and stupid fellow as I had found our third cousin to be. This all occurred on the top of a considerable hill, which we had to descend, and at the bottom of which was the site of the old log-cabin school-house. The house was gone, and the place considerably changed. Near this point I knew that the old road turned off which led to the farm, which road we soon found. The rest of the company thought I was mistaken, but I urged them on. It was only half a mile, and we soon reached the spot where once had stood our father's old log-house. The house, as well as the old log-barn, was gone; but the little hill that sloped to a small creek bottom, and the creek, were still there, as well as several other well-defined landmarks. Although my companions doubted my knowledge of the spot, they admitted that, if I could point out and find the old well and the old chimney foundation, they would believe me.

We got out of the wagon, and found a man at work not far off; and through him got feed for our horses. Then for the search. I soon found the old well. It had been filled with bowlders, but by removing a few the old wall was distinctly traceable. Then for the old chimney. On the spot where the house had stood, there was a pile of bowlders and rubbish, but, by a little labor, we soon found the foundation of the chimney and that of the house. We then went in the direction of the old barn, crossing a "swaley" place, over which had been a bridge in former years. After passing this, it was rising ground to the barn. Between the house and the barn, a little east of the direct old path, there was, when I was a boy, a granite bowlder of considerable size. I have many a time heard my father tell of his boiling sugar water, with his kettles hanging against the rock for a back log. This spot had been a

great favorite of mine. It had been, as it were, a central spot. Time and again, when in my then far distant home, had I longed to see the old boulder; but, alas! it was gone. We found one, however, farther north, that had not been entirely removed. When my father lived there it was in the woods, but the ground had been cleared since then, and this was now in the open field. It had been much shivered by heating and then pouring on cold water, which method shivers the rock. This rock was a Sabbath day's journey for us children, but never had the pleasant associations of the first one. I now have specimens of this second rock, which I brought away with me as mementoes. The place where the old barn had stood was marked by a well, which our father had dug and drained to afford stock water. This well I had forgotten, but my brother, though nearly four years younger, recollected it, and narrated circumstances that brought it all fresh to my memory. There was another circumstance which struck me with much force. There was a triangular-shaped piece of bottom land along the branch at the foot of the hill, which was in the woods when we lived there, and was one of our play-grounds. It was now cleared but not fenced in. At the time of our visit it seemed a poor, insignificant spot; but to us, when children, it appeared to be large enough for a considerable field.' There were quite a number of young hemlocks growing along the "branch," and I selected one for a cane, which I have yet, as a memento or memorial of the spot of my childhood sports. The visit to this locality, from which I had been removed at ten years of age, and which I visited but two or three times afterward until I was nearly sixty years old, affords a lesson of great interest in the importance of making correct impressions on the young and tender mind. Here were impressions which had been made on my mind more than fifty years before, and which were still fresh and strong in my memory. I will give yet another circumstance. We crossed the "swale," from the house to the barn, and in going over the ground, although it was covered with grass, yet the direction seemed plain, and on our return we, by accident, found the old bridge. On closer search being made, several logs were found buried in the mud and covered with grass, which logs I have not a doubt but that our father had put there. But as I have, in an appendix to my *Lecture on Education*, shown the importance of the proper and early training of the mind of children, and of associating the instruction with pleasant surroundings and correct teachings, in accordance with facts and truthful principles, I will not add more here. We may differ widely as to the mode and manner in which impressions

are made, and the mode in which impressions are called up, yet the closely-observing mind is fully aware of the tenacity of those early impressions; so much so that they can not, under certain circumstances, be obliterated, although the judgment may be convinced of their erroneous character. (See the Essay on Intemperance, on the concatenated trains of motion as connected with the mind.) Before we had finished our examinations the sun was on its westward course, and we were without our dinner, and with no hopes of getting one until we reached the village, some seven or eight miles distant. There was no family living on the place, and no habitable house. A barn, used as a store-house, was the only building. We took leave of this, to us, cherished spot, and for a time the little scrapes and fond recollections of childhood, and were off to the village. We reached it in due time, and after getting something to eat, strolled about town. Our cousin John introduced us to a Mr. Clelland, county clerk. His father had been a warm and decided friend of mine when an apprentice. I found him a free, frank, open-hearted man. Soon after my introduction to him he said: "Mason, for us to differ is unnecessary; I know you to be an old Line Whig; and I am an old Line Democrat." He had learned my politics through his father, with whom I had corresponded; and, while a member of our State Legislature, I had sent him many documents. Clelland joined our party, and accompanied us to the new court-house and jail, which we found to be fine, substantial buildings, with all the modern improvements. The jail was not only admirably secured, but divided into fine, secure cells and well ventilated. The old court-house and jail were entirely removed, and the new ones were on other ground. From there we went to different parts of the village. It had been so altered and changed that very few spots were at all familiar to me. The railroad had been located and laid on the south side of the village, and much change had been made to suit this new improvement. This village is situated on a fine level spot of ground, three-quarters of a mile from the Mohawk River, on the north side, and nearly half a mile from West Canada Creek, which empties into the Mohawk. The former of these streams was rapid and wild, arising in a high broken country, north; the hills extending to near the Mohawk River. After sundown we returned to our hotel. Our cousin John obtained from the landlord a fine rooster, which he had taken a great fancy to. He then took leave of us, and returned home, and we took the cars for Rome. At this point we again took the cars, on the Watertown Railroad, for Pierpont Manor, in Jefferson County, State of New York, where we arrived at a little before



12 M. At the depot we met our brother, Stephen, who was then keeping a hotel in the village, and was at the depot with his carriage. My nephew, Horatio, was well acquainted with him, and they recognized each other immediately, and shook hands. I had not seen him for thirty-two years, and my brother for quite a number of years. We had all changed; the hand of time had not only silvered our hair but changed our features and persons.

The meeting on his part, and our meeting in a crowd at the depot, was unexpected to us. Soon after our recognition, and the emotions induced by the unexpected interview were over, we got into the carriage and went to his house, where we had an introduction to his family. I had seen his wife about a year after they were married, but she had changed so much that I did not recognize her. A short time after I requested our brother Stephen to drive us some ten miles to a fishing point on Lake Ontario, which he consented to do; and off we started, passing over a fine undulating country, with occasional fine small streams of water. Much of the soil was mixed with sand, reminding me of the alluvial lands of the Western country. When within two or three miles of the lake, we crossed a slight elevation, covered for several rods wide with bowlders of various sizes, but none very large. We halted on this ridge. As far as the eye could reach, each way from us, the land had the appearance of once having been the lake shore. From here to the lake the ground was descending, and several small streams flowed into the lake. They were low, flat streams, widening into marshes. The whole taken together only confirmed me in the opinion, that the ridge spoken of was once the beach of the lake, and the more so as we approached nearer to it. Quite a ridge was formed a short distance from the water, and within view considerable banks of sand had been drifted into piles by the wind, while the continuous ridge had evidently been thrown up by the action of the waves from the lake. We stopped where a few scattering saplings were growing. I got out, leaving the company to secure the horses, while I made my way direct for the waters' edge. It was a beautiful, clear afternoon, with the sun shining brightly, though inclining toward the distant west. For a number of feet from the water there was a lovely border of sand. The lake was perfectly calm. Far off in the distance I saw a small speck which seemed to be in motion, no doubt a boat going up the lake.

Here I saw the same phenomenon that I witnessed at Chicago on looking upon the surface of the water—that which seemed to be an elevation of it, and which several of us had failed to account

for. I stood on the sand near the water for several minutes looking at this phenomenon. I recollected that rays of light were reflected at the same angle as the incident ray. The sun being rather low at this time the reflected ray would be at a more obtuse angle, and this apparent elevation of the water at a distance was somehow occasioned by the reflection and refraction of the sun's rays upon the surface of the water. I laid down on the sand with my head resting on it, but a few inches above the water, the apparent elevation of the water disappeared, and in proportion as I elevated my head the apparent elevation again appeared. Not being a thorough mathematician, nor well skilled in the science of optics, I can not fully explain this illusion. There was not a fisherman at the spot, but there were one or two ice-houses standing where they kept their fish. Most of the piscatory tribe caught at this place, our brother informed us, were white fish, which are caught by what is called "gill nets." These are made of fine stout twine, the meshes being about an inch and three-quarters square. The fish run their heads through these squares, and their bodies not being able to go through, they attempt to back out but are caught by the twine of the meshes catching in the gill, and are there held fast. These nets are about five feet wide, and from a quarter of a mile to a mile long, or of any desirable length. They are carried out on the lake by a row or sail boat, and set by means of stakes. When set they remain twelve or twenty-four hours, and are then drawn in by the boat and the fish taken from them.

Our stay at the fishing ground was not long. We started for home, but by a different route from that which we went, though over equally as good country. We went up the lake to near a stream which was the scene of operations by the British Navy during the War of 1812, the name of which I have forgotten. We did not reach my brother's till after dark. Ate our suppers and arranged to go to Sacket's Harbor next morning—a distance of some thirty miles. Our party consisted of my brother Stephen and his wife, brother Horatio, our nephew, Horatio II., and myself. We went by railroad and were soon off, going over a far better country than I expected to find. We reached the bay on which the town is situated. Here was the scene of great military operations in the War of 1812. It was a place I had ever felt a great curiosity and desire to see. To reach it during the war was no ordinary task, it being at that time a wilderness, with many cedar swamps and much of the country being low and flat. Half of the year the roads were almost impassable. From Rome to Sacket's Harbor is from seventy-five to one hundred miles. The bay, at the

harbor, is near the outlet of the lake, and is large and capacious. A promontory, putting out into the lake for a considerable distance, renders the bay lockland, protecting the harbor from the winds. A large ship was lying there, well covered by a house. It had been built for a war ship, but was never launched or finished. There was a hard-fought battle at this point, but we had not time to go over the ground, which is situated on a side hill back of the town. Many of the barracks and the arsenal were yet standing. The town is small, and but little business is done there, the railroad to the place having been abandoned, business being done lower down, at Cape Vincent, on the Watertown Railroad. I have never been to Waterford, but it is said to be a place of considerable business and a manufacturing place, and is situated on the Black River, which empties into the St. Lawrence.

We left the Harbor, and returned to my brother's for dinner; spent the afternoon in conversation, and arranged to leave the next morning. While here my brother's wife was very anxious to introduce me to a widow, who was a great favorite of hers, but in the evening I felt quite unwell and declined the interview. We were up the next morning, which was Sunday, between three and four o'clock A. M., and our brother Stephen, with his horses and carriage, took us to our brother Almond Mason's. We stopped at Pineville, with a son-in-law of our brother Stephen. We had taken with us a large fresh whitefish, which was cooked for our breakfast. We had driven some fifteen or twenty miles, and our appetites being well sharpened by the ride, we ate a hearty breakfast.

Pineville is situated on the Salmon River, some twelve or fifteen miles from its mouth, on Lake Ontario, and in Oswego County, in the heart of a country largely timbered with white pine. The soil is sandy, though it produced fair wheat when new. The town was of considerable size, and had water power, and in the early settlement of the country did considerable in the lumber and fish business, as the river abounded in salmon. A Mr. Rice, the father of my brother's son-in-law, had a large tanyard at this place, and had made quite a snug fortune, giving evidence of what enterprise and energy will do if properly directed. He began here when the country was new, and turned everything to good account. (The thermometer at this place was, on the morning we were there—October 29, 1854—fifty-eight degrees at seven A. M.) After a stay of an hour we left for our brother's, which we reached a little before night, and found them all well.

There were five brothers of us that grew up to manhood, and

were men of families; four were living, and now were, once more, altogether. With us was our nephew, the only representative of our deceased brother. Our meeting was a great pleasure. We seemed to live our lives over again. We rehearsed the scenes of our boyhood, and those through which we had passed since we were all together last, which had been forty years; part of our number, however, had met thirty years before. We spent the evening, until a late hour, in conversation.

The next day we strolled over our brother Almond's small farm, of sixty acres. He had raised a family of six children, only one of whom was living at home. Two lived in Michigan, and one in Broome County, New York, not far from Binghamton, but was on a visit to his father at the time we were there. He had two daughters, who were living ten or twelve miles from him. His youngest son was a minor, and was living at home with his father. This brother was now in a comfortable condition to live. We spent the day most pleasantly. The next morning we parted, never, all, to meet again on earth. Brother Stephen returned home, and Brother Almond went with us, accompanied by his son, with his team. He took us to the railroad station, on the west side of the Oswego River, nearly opposite Fulton, which is on the east side.

We waited but a short time for the cars from Oswego City, and then took our seats for Syracuse. Here we were delayed, but at last we reached Canistoto, fourteen miles from where we designed going. We either had to wait until some time next day, or hire a private conveyance. Our nephew, being a New Yorker, soon found a team, and we set off. It was moonlight, but cloudy, and we had not gone more than five or six miles before it commenced raining, and we had rain the remainder of the route. In due time, however, we reached our destination, James R. Combs', a brother-in-law; he having married our sister. It was eleven or twelve o'clock at night when we arrived, and were somewhat wet and tired. We said but little, except to let him know who we were, exchange salutations, and then to bed. The next morning I arose feeling much better than I expected. We had a good breakfast, and felt all right. I had never seen Mr. Combs before. His wife, my sister, had died about two months previous, leaving an infant. I took a walk, and had a long conversation with him as to the cause of the death of his wife, and found that it was from derangement of the heart and a wornout constitution. We were both widowers. I told him that I had been married twice, and had seen much of the world; and, however he then felt, he would find living alone to

be a lonely state of existence. He had children grown—two sons, who had gone West; and a daughter, a young woman grown, who was then taking care of her mother's infant. His wife had had eight children; all were living, and all but the two sons, before spoken of, were at home. Maria, the eldest daughter, had the care of her father's house. He was so kind as to procure a copy of the daguerreotype of his wife, our sister, and presented it to Horatio and myself. Under the circumstances we had a pleasant visit. Early next morning—having spent one day with him—Mr. Combs provided the means for taking us back to Conistoto, to the railroad; and, taking leave of the children, we started. At the depot we parted with Mr. Combs, and he proceeded homeward; while we departed for Syracuse, where we parted with our nephew, Horatio II., he going to Herkimer County, to his wife, as they were preparing to return home to Sycamore, Illinois. We also parted with our brother Almond; he returning home, and we proceeding to Buffalo on our route home, *via* Buffalo, by railroad, to Cleveland. While on this route there was a break in the connection of the train at Erie. When the cars stopped I was asleep in the hindmost end of the car. When I awoke I found the car empty. I was surprised, and much feared that I had been left. My carpet-sack was under the seat, and, gathering it up, I started for the train, which was yet there. I pitched into the first car I came to, and got a seat near the door. I soon found that there would be a crowd of passengers, as the train from New York to Dunkirk had missed connection. A large number of passengers were here waiting to go on, and this had caused the delay, as more passenger cars had to be added to the train. This alone saved me from being left. It was night, and I slept most of the way to Cleveland, where we stopped for breakfast. My brother came to me and said he was suffering from an attack of that difficulty of the urinary organs, which eventually caused his death. I gave him directions how to proceed, and told him "I thought he would soon find relief; but, should he not, then we would stop and I would procure such means as I knew would relieve him." He followed my advice and succeeded. We then took breakfast, and went aboard of the train for Columbus; thence to Dayton, where we stopped and procured something to eat, it being the first since breakfast. Here we took the train for Cambridge City. Then by hack we reached home. We were just thirty-two hours from Syracuse, New York, to my own house in Connersville, Indiana. My brother Horatio left the next morning for his own home. We had been absent three weeks within two days. On our whole

round we had traveled not less than fifteen hundred miles; the most of it by railroad; meeting with no accidents, and but one temporary delay. Thus I had spent the summer and fall, mostly from home. The spring of that year was cold and backward, and rather wet. Corn, in the Whitewater Valley, was unusually backward; but by the middle of June the weather turned warm and dry, and continued so until autumn, which latter season may be said to have been favorable.

After my return from New York I prepared for winter. In a few weeks Mr. Barnard moved out of my house, and the girls and I commenced housekeeping, and spent the winter pleasantly at our own fireside. The winter may be regarded as having been rather a cold one. I had intended to have spent the remainder of my life as a single man; but I found that Temple, my step-daughter, had made up her mind to marry. This would interfere with my housekeeping arrangements; and, the idea of living with any other family than my own, I could not endure the thought of; consequently I began to look about for a wife, and finally married Deborah Hankins, on the 23th day of February, 1855. She is ten years my junior, and I had long known her. She had never been married before. We were married at her sister's, near Williamsburg, Clermont County, Ohio. A few days afterwards she collected together the few things which she had for housekeeping, and I sent them to the depot of the Hamilton and Dayton Railroad, at Cincinnati, to be shipped to Cambridge. We then took the omnibus to Cincinnati, where we stopped a couple of days. We called to see my son Rush, who was at the time with Mr. Theodore Oskamp, who was then doing a large wholesale and retail business as a jeweler and watchmaker, and kept a number of hands repairing watches; of which branch of the business my son was foreman. We took the cars at Cincinnati for Cambridge, and from there, in the stage, home. In a few days our goods arrived. I had purchased a year's supply of groceries in the city, which came up with the other goods. Previous to our marriage we had entered into an article of agreement, by which we each held our own individual property; each in our own right. My wife had a yearly annuity of three hundred dollars, and a small landed estate, which she has since sold, and loaned the money until it was increased to two thousand dollars; the annual interest on which she now uses. Temple was married in March, and with her husband left for Galesburg, Illinois, where she still resides. My family consisted of myself, wife, and Ella—thus, for the third time, with a new family.

I spent the spring and summer in cultivating our garden and in making repairs about the premises. Late in the fall I engaged with William H. Houston to wind up the business of his grocery and provision-store. Houston had been a partner with one James Miller, who was a reckless business man, without ability to manage business operations, and consequently failed; at the same time involving Houston to the amount of over six thousand dollars over and above all assets which came into his hands. Here is a striking evidence of the importance of a man's understanding thoroughly every part of a business in which he engages. Miller had been bred to the latter's trade; the financial part of which he had never learned or understood. For a time he continued the latter's business in connection with the other; but, greatly lacking financial capacity, consequently involved himself beyond his income. He was a poor judge of men, and selected clerks to attend to his retail trade who were not competent. His books were not well kept. There was a lack of order and system in all his affairs. He dealt in perishable articles, which often resulted in loss, and allowed his expenses to exceed his income. At last he lost his credit, and failed. A stock, invoiced at five thousand dollars, was transferred to Houston, being the odds and ends of a heterogeneous mass, including a large amount of perishable and unsalable articles, with a bad room to do business in, and at an unfavorable season of the year, and the house in bad repute. It was an up-hill business to do much with it; but, by strict attention and careful management, it was made to clear expenses. It also served as a place to do the business of settling up old accounts, and sometimes turns were made by which an old account was liquidated. In others arrangements were made by which time was gained, and money raised from the sale of old stock, which was done by piecemeal. At the end of about six months the entire stock was disposed of, and the old debts liquidated; to do which, however, Houston had to create a new debt of four thousand dollars. Miller left for Fort Des Moines, where he started another business, which he managed in his old reckless style, and failed again. While settling up this business for Houston, a man by the name of Alexander Morrow, a hatter by trade, was employed to dress up a large lot of hats which were on hand, and to sell them to country stores in adjoining counties. I found him to be a close, tight, yet prudent man; well acquainted with his trade. I proposed to him a business in a hat-store. There was no store of that kind in the place, and no hats manufactured. He lacked ready capital; I had plenty for all the purposes of the business, and therefore told him that that

should be no objection. In the month of July, 1856, I started to Clermont County, Ohio, with my wife, on a visit to her relatives; and left with an understanding with Mr. Morrow that I would write him at what time I would be in Cincinnati on our return home, and that, if he concluded to go into the business, he was to meet me there. We made our visit with my wife's relations and old acquaintances, and had a very pleasant time. I wrote Mr. Morrow, and sent him a check for money. We met in the city, purchased a stock of hats, and cashed the whole bill, as he had succeeded in raising some money. After purchasing the stock Morrow returned home. We stayed a day longer. My son Rush and his wife called at the "Gibson House," where we were stopping, and stayed sometime with us. It was the last time that I ever saw my son.

We came home, and in a short time our stock came on, which we opened in a small room. The stock was light, but we had made arrangements in the city by which we could, at any time, replenish by order. This proved an excellent arrangement, as we could always keep up the styles and save the risk of an accumulated stock of unsalable hats. During the whole time I was in this business with Morrow we managed it so as to buy almost exclusively for cash. By so doing we got a discount of five per cent.; equal to ten per cent. annual interest. (This was the difference between doing a cash business and selling on credit.) By the payments in cash, although we had to sell a large portion on credit, we added a capital from time to time until I found we had as much in the business as we could make profitable. Morrow was rather a narrow-minded man; looked close to even five cent pieces. I was too old a man to engage in a new and doubtful business, and was contented to do a small and certain one, and hence did not seek to extend it beyond what would in the course of trade naturally flow back to us. I soon found a way to invest my surplus capital, advantageously, in land. As soon as Morrow found that he had the means to carry on the business alone he became anxious to dissolve partnership with me. He had, by a lucky trade, got into a good location to carry it on—where we had removed to—and was increasing it. I found that to continue with him would be attended with much unpleasant feeling, so I concluded to go out of the concern if I could come to reasonable terms with him. After much discussion and parleying I closed out with him by taking, as my share, a house and forty-six feet of ground (over one-half of a town-lot), and one hundred and fifty dollars in his obligations.



This was on the 17th day of February, 1862; since which time I have not been in any business.

In May, 1853, I purchased of Wm. Watton fractional portions of two lots lying south of my present residence in Connersville. There was another portion of a lot which I did not procure until the 28th day of January, 1857, which I obtained by a deed from Wm. Conner, a son of the original owner. Early in the spring of 1857 I improved the canal bank, inclosed the ground, and planted it out in fruit-trees, strawberries, grapes, gooseberries, raspberries, currants, etc. The fruit-trees are now producing considerable fruit. The ground had never been cultivated. I not only gave it a thorough plowing, but trenched it nearly two feet deep, and to a portion of it added manure, by mixing it with the soil in trenching, proving most conclusively the advantages of thorough and high cultivation. I had tried the method in my garden, north of the house, which resulted in making a fine rich soil out of poor ground, with which a large portion of the garden had been filled. This deep cultivation admits of much higher manuring than shallow, especially in dry seasons, when heavy manuring would dry up vegetation. I have tried this for the past eight years, and am well convinced of its utility. The ground once well broken up, deep, never becomes consolidated as it was before being broken. In my garden it is so loose that I can sink a spade at least sixteen inches, with one hand, especially in the spring. I am well satisfied that a garden well arranged and deeply plowed by two good horses, followed by two more, with a good subsoil lifting plow, so as to loosen the ground twelve or fourteen inches deep, would pay well. To do this, on a farm, the garden should be long and narrow, and every third or fourth year it should be subsoiled with a lifting subsoiler, going a little deeper each time. Currant, gooseberry and raspberry bushes should be planted three feet from the inside of the fence, and, if desired, clear around the garden. It would pay well to trench the ground three feet wide and two feet deep, in ordinary soils, with a good coat of well-rotted manure thrown in the bottom, and then with alternate layers of earth and manure, until the trench is filled up and the bushes set out. But this last should not be done until after one or two heavy rains, so as to settle the ground.

All vegetables raised should be planted in rows, and cultivated with one horse and a plow, or some good cultivator. The ground should be well and deeply stirred, and kept free from weeds, none of which should ever be permitted to go to seed. All the manure that is used should be well rotted, or what is better, composted. Late in the fall, or, as soon as the vegetables are off, it is best to

cover the ground all over with a light coat of straw, or, what is better, leaves from the forest. If straw is used, it should be raked and burnt up previous to plowing. That portion of the garden where Irish potatoes are raised should be but lightly manured, if any at all. By this process a good garden, with all kinds of vegetables, in great abundance, can be raised.

On the 17th day of September, 1857, I left home, in company with my wife, on a tour North and West. We traveled entirely by public conveyance, in fact nearly all the route by railroad, going by way of Indianapolis to Wabash Town, on the Wabash River. This was our first day's journey. We arrived there about ten P. M. For the lack of connection between railroads, we were detained five or six hours at Indianapolis. I was deprived of the pleasure of rambling about the place, on account of a neuralgic affection of the right hip, affecting my entire right leg, from which I was, years before, recovered. I was, at the time, and for some time afterward, quite lame.

The next morning after our arrival at Wabash I called on several old acquaintances, of whom I had many in town. After breakfast, and I had made my calls, I engaged the landlord to take us and our baggage to my son Stephen's, who lived a mile and a half out of town. We found him and his family all well. He was sowing wheat at the time, near the road, but left his son with his team. He then came to the road, and went with us to the house. I never saw any one so pleased to see another as he was to see me. I had not seen him for about ten years, and he scarcely knew how to express himself in manifesting his pleasure at our visit, although he had been apprised of our coming and was expecting us. In the afternoon we, with my son and his wife, called on my old friend Colonel Rose. We had acted together as members during one session of our State Legislature. He represented Union County, but had afterward straggled off to his present location, on a fine farm, on the Wabash Valley Railroad. We also met here an old friend, Levy Thomas and his wife. Took tea with the Colonel, and spent a few hours very pleasantly. Next morning Stephen took his wagon, which had nothing but a wood-bed, and hitching his horses to it, we started for John B. Tyler's; passing through Wabash Town, we took the road to Ashland, which passed through land I had purchased in the winter of 1843. I had not seen it since I made the purchase. I found it of a better quality than I had expected. Meeting with a man by the name of John T. Saylor, I made a bargain with him to deaden all the timber on the east side of the road, on an eighty-acre tract, which I designed for

my son-in-law, William Kilander. He was to cut down all the saplings and deaden the remainder, except rail timber, for which I was to pay him one dollar per acre. The trees were to be deadened the next spring. On measurement it was found to be twenty-eight acres. Saylor's lived on an adjoining eighty-acre tract, which I designed for my son Darwin. From there we went to Mr. Tyler's, a mile east of Ashland. We found them well. Tyler's wife was a sister of my first wife. We spent a very pleasant evening in renewing our old acquaintance, as I had not seen them for over fourteen years. The next morning, after breakfast, we started for Eel River, a distance of nearly twenty miles, to see my son Darwin. On our way we passed through Lagro, a small town, of considerable business, on the railroad and Wabash Canal. We reached Jesse Jenks' before dark, and stayed all night with them, sitting up till a late hour, in talking over old times. Tyler and his wife went with us to their son William's, whose farm adjoined his Uncle Jenks'. Soon after breakfast next morning we started to my son Darwin's, who lived about two miles off. The day was misty. On approaching his house he met us at the road, and was so completely overcome with joy that he shed tears, and it was some time before he could speak. We went in and he introduced us to his wife. I had not seen her since she was a child, although she was Darwin's own cousin, his mother's brother's daughter. I had not seen him for several years. His wife's father, William Jenks, lived close by and soon called to see us, and we spent the day pleasantly in social intercourse. The company left, and I had a long conversation with my son. He was very poor and lived in a log-cabin, but it was finally arranged between him and his brother Stephen that he (Darwin) should move and live on the land with him, which he did some weeks afterward. He alone was the cause of all his misfortunes. The next day quite a number of the Jenks' connection called to see us. They all seemed greatly pleased at our visit, and begged us to remain and make them all a visit, but I had made different arrangements, and could not gratify them. There were four of my first wife's brothers who were living in the neighborhood; three of whom, with a portion of their families, called expressly to see us. The extremely kind manner in which they received us rendered our visit very pleasant. I had not seen any of them for more than twenty years. All had families, and a portion of each were grown to be men and women. Stephen Jenks was nearly seventy years of age, and had just married his third wife. He was my first wife's oldest brother, and the oldest but one, a sister, of the family. He had raised a large family, the

most of whom were married. I became acquainted with him in the year 1814. He was remarkably fond of a rifle, liked the sport of hunting squirrels, etc., and said he could see to shoot squirrels yet. Two years after this visit I saw him again at his own house. He still loved to talk about his rifle; but, poor man, he was past killing game, having had a slight attack of paralysis. Some few months after he died.

We bade Darwin and our connections good-by, and left for Jesse Jenks'. He was another brother of my first wife. We spent the night with him, and found much to talk about, although we had conversed until a late hour two nights before. Next morning, after breakfast, we bade them farewell, and left for my son Stephen's again. His family welcomed us warmly on our return. We stayed until late in the afternoon next day, when Stephen took us to Dr. Ford's, in Wabash Town. The Doctor had been a student of mine, and we spent the evening very pleasantly. We next morning took the cars for Fort Wayne, went to a hotel for dinner, and took the cars again for Chicago. I have previously given a description of the appearance of this place, as well as of several others which we visited during this trip, and therefore need not repeat them. It was one o'clock A. M. when we reached Chicago, having been detained some time at La Porte, waiting the arrival of a train. We put up at the Globe Hotel, on the west side of the river. The next morning we took a walk and went down the river opposite the depot. Owing to my lameness I was not able to walk far, and, besides, the want of time prevented my hiring a conveyance. This part of the city had greatly improved since I was there in 1854. We took the cars on the "Dixon Air Line" Railroad for Courtlandt Station, where we arrived at 12 M., and hired a hack to take us to Sycamore, to my nephew's, H. H. Mason's. Reached there at 1 P. M., distance four miles. Found them well and glad to see us. The night before, September 23, 1857, we had frost. Left there on Monday, October 5, 1857.

During our stay we took the trip up Fox River, before mentioned, besides a number of drives about the country, receiving every attention we could reasonably desire from a relative. My nephew took us to Courtlandt Station, where we took the cars for Fulton, on the Mississippi. On reaching there, the steamboat on which we had designed going was just rounding out, and we were left, so we went to the "Demont House." This was a large building, constructed with most of the modern improvements, and with sufficient accommodations for a large city patronage. It had two hundred and fifty rooms. On the first floor was a large drawing-

room; and in the third story there was fitted up a large ball-room. On the second floor an elegant bridal-chamber had been richly furnished. The whole building was well furnished throughout, and admirably arranged. While there we ascended to the top of the building to a large and fine balcony, from which we had a "bird's-eye" view of the village and the country over the river. The village was neatly laid out on a fine spot of ground. Lyons, on the opposite side of the river, had the appearance of being a snug town. Clinton, two miles down the river, seemed to be a fine thriving place. These last named places are in Iowa. The population of Fulton at the time we were there was said to be two thousand five hundred. The Episcopalians, Baptists, and Presbyterians each had a church. There was a Methodist society, but they had no church. On the opposite side of the river there were two roads commenced; one from Lyons to Cedar Rapids, and the other from Clinton to Iowa City. The country from Courtlandt Station to Dixon, on Rock River, is mostly prairie, and much of it, along the road, not good. Dixon had the appearance of being a considerable town, and is situated on each side of Rock River. From this point flatboats were run to New Orleans. Here, too, the "Illinois Central Railroad" crosses the "Air Line Railroad," underneath the latter. On either side of the river, at the town, there is a high and rather bluff bank. From this point to Fulton, we passed over a fine country and through several small, neat villages. Soon after stopping at the "Demont House" I drank some ice water, but shortly afterward became very much depressed in consequence, and had to lie down. I, however, took freely of the compound spirits of lavender, which, with some tea and toast, relieved me, so that I got a very fair night's rest. The next day I felt about as usual; and after dinner we took leave of our kind host, and went on board of a steamboat bound for Rock Island.

The stream was low. Down near Rock Island there are rapids on the river, filled with bowlders. The boat laid up for the night and we did not reach Rock Island until after breakfast next morning, although a distance of only forty miles. It would be difficult to describe the country between Fulton and Rock Island, but from the number of small towns on either side of the river it would seem to indicate a fair one. On landing at Rock Island we met our old acquaintance, Mr. Wells Lawrence, who soon procured a conveyance and drove us directly to his house, where we spent the day very pleasantly. At this point the railroad from Chicago (by La Salle) crossed the river at the foot of Rock Island by means of a fine bridge, which, at the time I was here, in 1854, had not yet

been commenced. While here we again made the trip into Iowa, as before given. On Monday, the 12th of October, 1857, we bade Mr. Lawrence and his family adieu, and have never seen them since.

We then took the cars for Pond Creek and to Wyandot Station, on the "Chicago and Quincy Railroad," about forty miles from Rock Island. Here we took the cars for Galesburg, where we arrived at 5 P. M., having passed over as fine country as there is anywhere in Illinois. At the depot we met with McQueen, who had married my step-daughter, Temple. I hired a carriage which soon took us and our baggage to his house, where we met Temple, who expressed much pleasure at our arrival. Galesburg is situated on an open rolling prairie. In the north-western part of the town it is more broken, and there is an accumulation of water from a large water-shed, which inclines to a common center and passes off into a small ravine, and becomes, at times, a considerable stream. The buildings are scattered over a large space of ground, the central portion being the only part of the place in which they are compact. The general character of them is also much better than most of the towns in Illinois. The railroad runs along the highest portion of ground at the south and south-east sides of the place. Galesburg is somewhat noted for its institutions of learning. There is a large school and buildings under the superintendence and management of the Universalists; also a large college under the management of the Presbyterians, and there are several fine Presbyterian churches. There are also several small manufactories located here, one exclusively for the manufacture of "Corn Droppers," which are said to answer an excellent purpose for the business on the prairies. While there I visited the Masonic Lodge. They had a very snug room, and there were a number of intelligent Masons. I also attended one of the churches which was well filled. The sermon was delivered by one of Henry Ward Beecher's brothers. Although it was a very good discourse, yet it was not to be compared with his brother Henry's, whom I had frequently heard at Indianapolis. The day before we left I went to Knoxville, four miles from Galesburg, McQueen going with me. Knoxville is the county seat of Knox County, and on the railroad to Peoria. We went over by the railroad and came back in a wagon. The town is small, though they had a very good court-house, besides several stores and a few mechanic shops. While there I called on the widow of Gardner, the man with whom I learned the carpenter and joiners trade. She was living in comfortable circumstances with two of her daughters,

one of whom was a maiden lady. She had another daughter who was married and living in Galesburg. I had not seen her for upwards of forty-three years. Our meeting was like that of strangers, and it was some time before we could realize our former acquaintance. Having spent an hour with them, and an opportunity offering for us to ride back, I left, probably never to see them again. We had a pleasant visit with Temple and her husband. Tuesday, October 20th, we bade them good-by, and by railroad proceeded in the direction toward home.

With a few exceptions, the country between Galesburg and Peoria is very fine. Peoria is situated on the west bank of the Illinois River, and in the center of an extensive coal region. The coal is of an excellent quality. The town had the appearance of doing considerable business, and was said to be quite a manufacturing place. It has the advantages of steamboat navigation, as well as the railroad, which is now open from Burlington on the Mississippi clear across the State to Logansport, where it connects with the "Wabash Valley Railroad." In its route through Illinois it crosses the "Illinois Central," the "Chicago and St. Louis" Railroads, and the Chicago branch of the "Central." As we stopped but for a short time at Peoria, we had but little opportunity of seeing the town. The land on the east side of the river is low and flat, overflowing nearly every freshet, and extends for some distance out.

We left Peoria east on the "Extension," thirty-three miles to the crossing of the Illinois Central. The lands may be said to be of good quality, and tolerably well settled. From this, however, sixteen miles, to the crossing of the Chicago and Air Line Railroad, to St. Louis, is thinly settled. This point is on the "Grand Prairie" almost out of sight of timber. A large town plat had been laid out, and several buildings had been erected and others were being built. Stone was brought from Joliet, and lumber, including post and fencing boards, from Chicago. Stone coal was obtained from near Peoria, which served them for fuel. From this point east to Gilman's Station, on the Chicago Branch of the Central, where this extension road was to cross to Logansport was, at this time, the terminus of the road. On this last portion there was but littlesettlement, being one continuous prairie, without timber, stone, or water. The railroad company had bored a number of Artesian wells, which were overflowing, and bid fair to afford an abundance of water. This was generally reached within about one hundred and fifty feet. We reached Gilman's Station at 6 P. M. The only accommodations at this place were a small depot and an indifferent

farm house, a short distance off, at which we succeeded, however, in getting a fair supper. We then returned to the depot where we were detained until 1 A. M. I put a board on some nail kegs, and lying down on it took a nap. At last the long-expected train arrived. We got on and proceeded to Mattoon, eighty miles distant, which place we reached at 5 A. M. The moon shone brightly, thus giving us an opportunity of seeing the country, which had the appearance of being very fine. We passed through Urbana, and several other towns, which seemed to be promising places. Took breakfast and dinner at Mattoon. Our stay there afforded us a fine opportunity to look about and see every nook and corner of the place, which is situated on rather high and gently undulating ground. Quite a village had sprung up here in the open prairie. The railroad from Indianapolis through Terre Haute and Alton to St. Louis, passed through this place, crossing the Chicago and Cairo Railroad in the village. It is said to be a fine, rich country for a considerable distance around, and bids fair to become quite a business locality. At half past 12 M. we took the cars for Paris, passing through Charleston, the county-seat of Coles County. Arrived at Paris at 2 P. M. Paris is the county-seat of Edgar County, Illinois, and extends east to the State line. We had several acquaintances there, but my main business was with Josiah T. Smith, a carpenter, who had lived in Fayette County, and failed, being two hundred dollars in my debt. He had a contract for and was, at the time we visited that place, finishing two large churches, a Methodist and Presbyterian. They were almost finished and, as was usual for him, he had sunk money on both the jobs, so that my call was fruitless. This is a place of considerable size, located in the center of a fine country. They had a flourishing school at the time we were there. A Mr. Nelson, a teacher from Connersville, had gone there to teach, but finally had engaged in other business. The next morning after our arrival we called on him, and remained until after dinner. He was very pleasantly situated, in the north-western part of the town, on one or two acres of ground, which he was improving in good style. He had a neat, comfortable house, and all was in a condition to ultimately make a desirable home. We were most kindly received and entertained. The afternoon previous we had made several calls on old acquaintances, and were warmly welcomed.

On the 20th and 21st of October were the first frosts of the season there, being nearly three weeks later than at Sycamore, where my nephew resides, which is in the more northern part of the State. Paris has four churches—Methodist, Presbyterian, Bap-



tist, and Campbellite, or Reformers, and also three schools, one under the management of the Presbyterians, and another under the supervision of the Methodists, and a third is a Union school. Preparations were being made to build a large school-house. We left at 2 P. M. on the cars, and proceeded east through Terre Haute, a fine town on the east side of the Wabash. Passed through Greencastle, where the Methodists have a college. From that place to Indianapolis there is, on an average, a village to every ten miles, and, taken altogether, is a moderately-good country. We reached Indianapolis at half-past five P. M., and there took the cars for Cambridge, where we arrived at eight P. M. As there was no stage going down that night, we procured a conveyance and went to our friend Whippo's, at Dublin, where we spent the night and next morning most pleasantly. Reached home at four P. M. October 23, 1857. We had been absent one month and ten days. Found all safe, our faithful Dutchman, Ishmann, who lived on the opposite side of the street from us, with whom we had left the care of our house and grounds, had kept all right.

Upon returning from our Western trip, we prepared for the winter. I spent the greater part of my time at the hat-store, and the remainder at home, in writing. In July, 1858, I left home, accompanied by my wife and Ella, in our carriage, and made a visit to my wife's relatives, in Clermont and Brown counties, Ohio. I formed some new acquaintances, and had rather a pleasant visit. We went by the way of Hamilton, leaving Millcreek Valley at Glendale. Went through Sharon and Montgomery, striking the Little Miami at Milford; from there to Batavia; thence to Williamsburg, near which place my wife's connections lived. The country over which we traveled, from Millcreek to Milford, is broken and hilly, with small streams, the beds of which are limestone. The hills seemed to be filled with loose limestone while the land is clayey. It may produce good wheat, and tolerable grass, but for corn I think it poor. On our return we came by the way of Cincinnati, stopping at the United States Hotel, then kept by my old friend Wm. Arnold. We reached there in the afternoon, and remained two nights and one day. I called upon a number of my old friends, at their business-houses, and enjoyed a social chat with them, after which I drove over a considerable portion of the city, in our carriage, and called, with my wife and Ella, at the Orphan Asylum, from which Ella had been taken. We found it a well-regulated institution. We left Cincinnati for home, by the way of Harrison. I had not traveled this road for more than ten years. Many places were new to me,

and though the country is broken and hilly, the soil is tolerably good, and, by high cultivation, produces well, and its being so near the city, enables the farmer to pay high prices, thus remunerating him well for his hard toil.

From the city to Harrison there is a first-class turnpike road, and so located as to run, a large portion of the distance, on a ridge, rendering the road crooked, but tolerably level. Here we have the evidence of the importance of being near a good market and fine road, and there are but few sections of country but would amply repay for the construction of a good macadamized or gravelled road, and where the road is not used by many teams, the gravel will do if not more than twelve feet wide.

We stopped at Harrison for dinner, at my old friend Jerrold's, where, in former years, I had been in the habit of stopping, before the time of railroads, and it seemed like old times. We had a good dinner, and a sociable chat, and then left for Brookville, where we staid all night. Court was in session, and it being not yet dark, I went into the court-room, and met with many old acquaintances. I was invited to take a seat within the bar, which I accepted, and remained until court adjourned. We stopped at a new hotel, and being well acquainted with the father of our landlord, had a fine time with him. The next morning we left for home. The day was very hot, and our horse seemed to feel it sensibly; so we drove slow, arriving and stopping at our friend Wm. H. Houston's, and after taking dinner, and spending a few hours with them, we proceeded on home, where we found all safe.

September 18, 1858, we left home, traveling in our own private conveyance, for the Wabash, and drove to Mr. Michael Gronendyke's, a distance of forty miles. Gronendyke's wife is an own cousin to my present wife. They seemed pleased to see us, and treated us very kindly. In our trips backward and forward through that part of the country we have always made this a stopping-place. Gronendyke had a farm of one hundred and sixty acres of land, well improved, with a large and commodious barn, out-buildings, etc., and a house well arranged, though not as large as such a farm required. His family consisted of but three children. He was an excellent farmer, and an orderly and systematic man in everything.

Leaving Gronendyke's next morning, we passed through Chesterfield, direct to Alexandria, and reached Jonesboro, where we staid all night with a Doctor Spence, with whom I was slightly acquainted. The next morning we left for Mr. John B. Tyler's, passing through Marion, the county-seat of Grant County. This

place, as well as Jonesboro, is situated on the Mississinewa River. Reached Mr. Tyler's for dinner. The country, after leaving the river, for two miles is very hilly, and after reaching the table lands the country is not only flat, but too wet the greater part of the year.

We were well received at Tyler's, and had a good dinner. I became acquainted with Tyler in 1819, before he was married, and we have been on excellent terms ever since. We left soon after dinner for my son Stephen's, whose house we reached a short time before sundown. Found them well, and glad to see us. In a few days we returned to Tyler's, stopping on the road at the farm now called the Kilander Farm; closed up some business, and hired a deadening of eight acres, to be cleared and fenced for fifty-six dollars.

On the 23d September we left Tyler's, he and his wife leaving home with us—traveling in their own buggy—for the Eel River country, for the purpose of visiting the several Jenks' family, who all seemed well pleased to see us, and took much pains to make our visit agreeable. We found John Jenks sick, with a low grade of typhoid-fever, and in a dangerous condition. He, however, ultimately recovered, but his illness was followed by cataract in both eyes. I saw him again in the fall of 1863. He could then see to walk about, and do some work, but with difficulty. We found the wife of William Jenks with an attack of palsy, of which she died the next summer. There had been a considerable number of cases of typhoid-fever in that section of the country, the season having been hot and dry. We find in that region good land, but it is too flat. While at Wm. Jenks' I got a white blackberry root from one of his neighbors; and, from William himself, some native strawberry plants. Brought them home; planted them out; they have done well, and bear fine berries, but small. The blackberry is almost a total failure.

On the 26th we started back. J. B. Tyler had a chill that morning, and was not able to leave with us. On the road we stopped at Peyton Daniels, an old acquaintance. Obtained from him a raspberry root; native of that country, though such as I had seen growing in the State of New York. It bears a large red berry of very fine flavor, and is said to do well there. I brought them home; planted them, and they grew well, but in 1833 they had not as yet produced berries; why, I can not tell. They increase by sprouting from the root. We stopped at Dr. Greenberry Steele's for dinner. His wife had lived in my family during the life-time of my first wife. They had a good farm, but were yet

living in their log-house. We have often stopped there when passing, and are always well and kindly treated. From there we went to my nephew's, Warren, and his brother, Alonzo Mason's, who live on adjoining farms. Found them well, and in a fine way for making a good comfortable living. These brothers are sons of my deceased brother Horatio. Warren has been ever since this visit my regular business agent in Wabash County. The night before we arrived there was frost sufficiently heavy to nip the corn. There was also frost four nights previous.

On September the 27th we left. Our horse being lame I left him; and, taking one of Warren's, went to my sons, Stephen and Darwin. Darwin was then living on the farm with his brother Stephen. The next day we went out on the Fair grounds, and at night I attended the meeting of the Masonic Chapter, in Wabash Town. The day following Stephen and his family, Darwin and his family, with myself and wife, all went to the Fair; and again the next day, where I met a large number of old acquaintances, who had moved from Fayette County. Wabash County had been largely settled from the Whitewater country; many of whom were from Fayette County. Among others, of my old acquaintances, I met Edmund J. Kidd. He and myself had been intimately acquainted ever since the year 1820. I have seldom spent a half-hour more pleasantly than I did with him. We were very nearly the same age. He was an honest, high-minded man, and without guile; a man in whom confidence would not be misplaced. He was above mediocrity in point of intelligence; and, taken altogether, was one of nature's noblemen. He died about three years afterwards. The Fair was largely attended, and the exhibition a good one for a new country. The show of stock was fine, and the ladies' department was very creditable. An excellent address was delivered by a young man of Wabash Town, and attentively listened to. The people were plain and orderly, and it was a pleasure to mix among and converse with them. The Fair, late in the afternoon, was suddenly broken up by a heavy shower, and it continued to rain more or less for several days.

October 1st we bade our sons and their families farewell, taking Stephen's oldest son with us to Wabash Town. I purchased some books and two pocket-knives—one for each of the boys—and sent the books as presents to the children of the family, and have done so yearly ever since. We then went to Alonzo Mason's, and stayed all night. The next day Warren went with us to the Kilander place, and I gave him directions as to how I wanted it improved. I designed building a log-house; but, although the lumber was

procured, the house has not yet been built. He left for home, and I for my brother-in-law's, John B. Tyler, where we stopped all night. The next morning I geared, and hitched my horse to the carriage, and was strapping our trunk on behind it, when Tyler said he "wanted to make a bargain with me." I told him "that he would have to be quick, as we had a full day's drive before us. He then proposed to sell me his farm. This proposition surprised me very much. I had not been over the farm, and knew but little about it. I asked him his price. He said four thousand dollars, and that he would take some wild lands I had in part payment, and the remainder in cash. I replied that I would think of it; and, if favorable, we conclude the trade by letter. With this understanding we left for home, stopping in Jonesboro for dinner, at Dr. Spence's, and then left for an old acquaintance's—half a mile west of Alexandria—where we arrived while yet the sun was an hour high. The land from Jonesboro to Alexandria is very variable. From Jonesboro to Fairmount—a small town on the road—is good. Fairmount is a fine Quaker settlement. These people never locate on poor lands. Their order, by habit and thrift, teaches them the advantages of good locations. South of Fairmount, for a number of miles, is a flat, level, marshy, clayey country. In the neighborhood of Alexandria the lands are much better. We found our old acquaintances well, and living on a fine farm, with one of their sons, who had sold a good farm in Fayette County, a few years previous, and had purchased here; and, in so doing, he had greatly improved his circumstances; at least as far as wealth was considered. We remained all night with them; and next morning, after breakfast, left, well pleased with the renewal of former friendship. We passed through Alexandria, and took the road down Pipe Creek. Some good land lies along this creek, though it is a low, flat stream, and the ground marshy along its margin. At some future day it will probably be cleared out and widened, and the land will then be valuable. We crossed over to Chesterfield. The land between Pike Creek and White River is high and undulating, being favorable for farming purposes. Chesterfield is a small and rather dilapidated looking place, although situated near the Bellefontaine Railroad. We took dinner at this place, and then went to my wife's connection, Gronendykes'. They were glad to see us return. Our horse being lame, again, we stayed all that day and two nights with them, and on the morning of the 6th we left for home. On reaching Dublin we stopped with our friend Whippo's family, who warmly welcomed us, and where we had a good time. The next day we arrived at home, and found

all snug and safe. We made arrangements for the coming winter; got in wood, and garden stuff, etc. I spent most of the time at the hat-store.

On our way home, I thought of the proposition of my old friend Tyler, and afterward wrote to him and Warren Mason concerning it. Instructed Warren to see the farm and give me the cash value of it, which he did. I then wrote and made Tyler a proposition. He answered that if I desired it I might consider it a bargain. I made out the deeds for two hundred and forty-six acres of rich prairie land in Iowa, sixteen miles from Fort Des Moines, up the Des Moines River. I assigned and sent him the certificates for two hundred acres of land in Jasper County, Indiana, one thousand dollars in money, and my note for one thousand dollars, payable in one year. I was to let him have the place on rent until the next fall. He made me a deed, dated the 15th day of January, 1859. Thus was this trade closed, but it is doubtful, even now, which had the best of the bargain. I have now had possession of the place four years.

Early in the spring of 1859 I decided to take a trip to (as I might almost call it, my native State) New York, where I was raised. With that view I made my arrangements accordingly. I planted my garden, built a new and substantial fence around the north garden, six feet high, which is yet a good one. I permitted my son-in-law, William Kilander, with his family, to move into my house, to take care of it and the garden. Made arrangements with my partner at the store, so that I could leave; but it was not until the 16th day of June that we were prepared to do so. On the morning of that day we took the stage for Cambridge, and then the cars for Columbus, Ohio. Passed through Richmond, Dayton, and Xenia. Reached Columbus at 2 P. M. We had previously arranged for our stopping with an acquaintance by the name of Lynch, who kept a private boarding-house in the city. At the depot we met R. B. Lawrence, an acquaintance, who was boarding at Lynch's. He soon procured for us a conveyance to the house. We were met and kindly welcomed by the family. After we were fairly domiciled I went to the large Union Express Office, where my friend R. B. Lawrence was one of the principal managers. He introduced me to all interested in the establishment, which rendered me free and easy. The office was within full view of the State House (which is said to be the best in the United States) and grounds, which are the most elevated in the place. While here Mr. Lawrence was kind enough to accompany us to the State House, and with us visited all the principal rooms in the building,

including the library. We ascended to the dome, from which we had a bird's-eye view of the whole city, and far beyond in every direction, the State Penitentiary, Insane Asylum, Deaf and Dumb Asylum, Blind and Idiotic Asylums, and also the Sterling Medical College. All these buildings appear to be fine structures. The State House was not yet entirely finished, though the Halls of the House of Representatives, Senate, and Court-room, were finished in fine style. The Library, though not finished, had a large collection of books. The main building is large and built with cut limestone. The floors of the various rooms are marble, laid in Mosaic work. The building, for its size, is too low by at least ten feet. It is situated in the center of a fine square grass-plat, well inclosed with a fence. In the rear of the State House, but not far distant, an artesian well was being bored at the expense of the State, and, at the time we were there, had been sunk about two thousand feet four inches. It then stopped in sand rock, and is abandoned. I have several specimens of the rock, bored through at eighteen hundred feet, and also have in my possession two interesting Reports of this well, and the geological strata passed through. The subject of artesian wells is very interesting. Their success depends upon the dip of rock or clay. The dip or inclination of the rock or clay must be such as to incline from the surface downward, and at the same point which is higher than the top of the well, so that the pressure of the water will elevate a stream at the point where the boring is done, and when resistance is removed the tendency of water is always to a level.

While at Columbus we visited the penitentiary, in company with one of the Wardens, who was boarding at the same house that we were stopping at. He took much pains to show us every department, and gave us explanations, whenever we desired, concerning anything connected with the prison. Various branches of mechanical labor are carried on there. The cells are within the main building, which is of cut stone, and is three stories high, the cells in each story. The plan is on that of the Auburn Penitentiary, of the State of New York. A visit to this prison richly repays a man, and many an important lesson may here be learned. While at Columbus we visited Wolcott, a medium as well as an artist. He stated to us that he had produced in pencil-drawing seventeen hundred likenesses of individuals who had once lived on earth, but who were in the spirit world at the time the drawings were made. This number had been recognized by the relatives of the departed. His plan was this: A person desirous of getting the spirit likeness of one deceased must, through some medium, get in communica-

tion with the departed one, and have him or her agree to sit for a likeness at Wolcott's on a particular day, at a certain hour; then write him your wish and the time agreed upon. He would then sit at that hour, and if the spirit appeared as indicated he took the likeness. At the time we were there, Wolcott had lost his powers as a medium, but was a firm believer in spirit existence and the individuality of persons in the spirit sphere who had lived on earth.

Columbus is a fine place; streets wide, well graveled, and sidewalks well paved with brick or stone. Some of the streets are finely ornamented with shade trees. It is a desirable place to live in. We left there a few minutes after ten A. M. and reached Cleveland at half-past two P. M., having traveled on an average of thirty-four and a half miles per hour. Much of the country through which we passed may be said to be poor. We stopped at the "Vanguard House" on Lake street, near Ontario, with a family of our acquaintance, who kept a boarding-house for the special accommodation of "Reformers" or Spiritualists who wished to stop in the city. We spent the afternoon in visiting the Public Square and several other places of interest. The former is rather an interesting place. It occupies quite a large space of ground for a square in the city, and lies back on the second street from the lake. It is well planted and arranged with a variety of shade trees, and there is also a fountain of water surrounded by an aquarium, in which were water lilies growing. The old court-house was on one corner of the square, but they were building a new and handsome one on the north-west corner. On the street north of the square a fine new church was being built, and on the east side was a large new building belonging to the United States, in which was the post-office and the United States court-room, etc. These buildings, as well as a number of private dwellings, are built of a fine quality of sandstone, sawed into blocks, and beautifully laid together. The most of the retail trade is done near the public square, while the heavier branches are carried on at the mouth of the river, in the western part of the city, at which point is the harbor, and it is also the center of all the railroads. Not far from this is the Marine Hospital, a fine building. On the west and opposite side of the river is Ohio City, and also the Water Works, which supply the entire place. Both places are included within one corporation, and do considerable business. The next day was Sunday. The morning was a fine, lovely one. We attended a meeting of Spiritualists. Their speaker had left, and the meeting was thinly attended. A social hour was spent in conversation,



however, on the subject of the new philosophy. After dinner we, with another gentleman and lady, took a walk on Euclid street, which runs in an east-south-east direction from the public square. We walked at least a mile and a half; the street seemed to extend to a great distance, how far we could not tell. It is a broad one, straight and level, and over ground in which sand predominated largely. It was most beautifully ornamented with a variety of shade trees planted between the street and sidewalk, while a second row is set out within the inclosures. It is a street in which the principal residences are. The buildings are set back about forty or fifty feet from the street, and the front yards are beautifully decorated with shrubbery, etc. We returned for some distance and took a street which led us into the entire eastern part of the city, and by a Roman Catholic church and buildings. This part seemed to have been newly laid out; the buildings were small and inhabited by a low class of Irish Catholics. At last we reached our stopping place, weary and worn out with our long walk. The next morning I went with Mr. Cridge, our host, into the south-western part of the city, to see a new kind of mill, which hulled the wheat and ground it into flour, ready for use, without bolting. It happened to be shut up, and I was disappointed in my object. We then turned towards the lake, after visiting which we wended our way back to my boarding-house. This city is well named in being called the Forest City, as almost every portion is adorned with shade trees, viz.: the sugar-maple, elm, quaking-ash, soft maple, linden, or basswood. Euclid is the most beautiful street on which I ever walked, except when at East Hartford, on the Connecticut River.

Monday, the 21st of June, 1859, we bade adieu to our acquaintances, and took the cars for Buffalo, along the lake shore, passing through a large number of villages and over some fine country, reaching Buffalo at 5 P. M., and stopping at the "American House," on Main street. This is a fine hotel. Immediately after supper I called on C. D. Griswold, editor of the "Sunbeam," a paper devoted to Spiritualism and Reform. I found him an intelligent, open, frank man. He gave us an invitation to attend a circle with him, which we accepted. I returned to the hotel and we prepared to go. He called for us and we went to a Mr. Wortman's, No. 300 Michigan street, where we had an interesting time, although the demonstrations were not as strong as I have witnessed sometimes. I formed the acquaintance of a Mr. Rathburn, who was a guest at the circle, but resided at No. 24 Carroll street, and had a long conversation with him the next morning. He was

a firm believer in modern Spiritualism. The next day I addressed two letters to persons in the spirit world, and carefully sealing them in an envelope, left them with Griswold to hand to a Mr. Farusworth, a test medium, to answer, without opening the envelopes. Some three weeks afterward I received the answers with my letters, the seals, five in number, unbroken. The questions, five in number, were all answered, but not so definitely as to prove it to be a complete test to a strictly logical mind. Early the next morning we took a walk on Main street as far as Pine Hill; visited the market and public square, which latter had a fountain and basin decorated with the water lily.

We had not time to visit much of the city, though we had a hasty view of much of the place. The streets are well paved with a slate-colored lime-stone, set on edge, and many of the streets are ornamented with shade trees. At 3 P. M. we took the cars for Niagara Falls. In going to the cars we saw a portion of the city that we had not seen before, and a fine wall at the outlet of Lake Erie, which served as a breakwater. A great change had taken place in the city since I was there thirty-seven years before. In consequence of the completion of the New York and Erie Canal a large business was done at this place. There was a transshipment from the canal to the lake, on which an extensive business was done to this point, and many of the interior towns and villages made this a center of trade. The city grew rapidly; but the more modern improvement—the railroad—carries much of the trade by, though it still does considerable business. We reached the Falls a few minutes after 4 P. M., and stopped at the "Cataract House." Engaged a carriage and driver at one dollar per hour, and started down the river, two miles, to the great Suspension Bridge. Paid one dollar toll to cross over and back. Then proceeded, on the Canada side, up to the falls. That side of the river affords by far the best view of them, especially if you ascend to the top of a house three stories high, with a terrace, which is there for the accommodation of visitors. From that point the view is magnificent. The building is a substantial one; kept, with all the allurements that art could devise, to extract money from the pockets of its guests, and in every possible form to beguile the thoughtless or unsophisticated.

There is obtained from behind the fall of water a white mica, which is manufactured into fancy articles of every possible form, and kept for sale at this place as well as on the American side. This mica, when fresh, is very neat and pretty in appearance; but, in the specimen which I have had for nearly five years, the action

of the light and air seems to cause it to crumble. From this place we went back from the river, one and a half miles, to Lundy's Lane, where Scott and Gaines fought a hard battle in the War of 1812, in which both were wounded, and taken across the river to Buffalo. On going to this place we passed through a gap, in a considerable ridge of land, lying parallel with the river. Soon after passing through this gap we came upon the ground where the American Army encamped the night before the battle. The ground is ascending from the river to the high ground where the battle was fought, which is a beautiful ridge, and then is descending to the east and west. Lundy's Lane comes in from the west, and took its name from a Quaker, named Lundy, who owned the land through which the lane ran. On the summit of this ridge there is a high tower; four square in shape; built of timber; the top of which is reached by a kind of winding stairway. Here I met a Frenchman, whom I found to be a brother Mason. At the time of the battle he was in the British Army. He pointed out to me the various spots where the battle raged the fiercest. On the top of this tower there was a spy-glass mounted on a tripod, and when the atmosphere was clear a considerable circle could be described. The monument which had been erected to the memory of General Brock, a British officer, who fell at Queenstown Heights, six miles down the river, could not be seen with the naked eye; but, with the aid of the telescope, it could be seen distinctly, or as far as a strip of intervening woods would admit of. It being nearly night, and the sky hazy, we hastened down, and took our departure back to the river by a different road from the one which we went out on, and struck the road along the river at the Clifton House. We recrossed the river on the Suspension Bridge, and returned to the hotel we were stopping at. The Suspension Bridge is a great curiosity, being two hundred and twenty-five feet above the water, and eight hundred and twenty-eight feet long. It is built entirely of iron, with the exception of the flooring for the wagon passway, which is directly under the railroad track. This passway is supported by large round iron bolts, and so braced that horses walking over—attached to a wagon or carriage—do not cause any vibration perceptible to any one while riding across. The whole structure is held by two large iron cables, made of small wire twisted together in such a manner as to form a round body like a rope. Those cables are supported by two high piers; one on each side of the river, and built on the solid bed of limestone, which lines the river on either side. Some distance back of each of these piers the end of the cables are sunk deep in the

ground, and, being fastened, are then weighted down with stone to a level with the top of the track. These cables pass clear over the river, and are stayed at each end by a large wire cable, fastened to the main cable on each side, and is then carried back to the bank, and secured at an angle of about forty-five degrees. There are bars of iron crosswise, and braced in squares, so as to prevent swinging. On the top of these crossbars is the railroad track. About half way, between the bridge and the falls, was the place where Blondin crossed the river on a slack rope (walking and performing many wonderful feats on it, of which the newspapers were full) a short time after we were there.

After tea we crossed over to Goat Island, and rambled down to near the falls, and along the west shore. About dusk we returned to the hotel. After resting we walked out and visited several stores, where a great variety of fancy articles were kept for sale, and where those who were fond of curiosities, and had the means, could amply gratify their tastes. Returned to the hotel and settled our bill preparatory to leaving the following morning on the 5 A. M. express train for Utica. Our bill, from the time we left Buffalo till we left on the train for Utica, amounted to ten dollars and forty cents. Thirty-seven years before I had visited the place on horseback from down the river. Since that time a very great improvement has been made in buildings, and the most fastidious men and women of wealth can now be gratified. It is true, however, that the poor man can also trudge about in his own humble way, and see all that is to be seen, eating his lunch, meanwhile, as best suits him.

At the appointed time we took the cars, and proceeded eastward. Breakfasted at Rochester, and reached Utica a little after eleven o'clock A. M., a distance of two hundred and eleven miles. From Buffalo to Utica we are almost constantly passing through cities or villages. It is astonishing! the vast improvements that have been made since 1822, when I traveled on horseback over nearly the same route. Then the canal was not finished as yet, and a railroad had not been thought of. Since then the canal has been enlarged, and a double track rail has been laid along the route of the canal, and four passenger trains per day pass over the road, besides a number of freight trains.

I succeeded in getting a horse and buggy immediately after arriving at the city of Utica, and with my wife went out three miles north of the city. Took dinner with my Cousin Scott Willmarth, and had a long conversation with him. He was living with his second wife. His mother and first wife had both died since I was

there in 1854. His family had grown up, and all were married and had left except one son who, with his family, was living on the farm, and tending it. We returned to the city in time to take the 3 P. M. accommodation train for Herkimer. Owing to our own negligence, and the failure of the conductor to tell us, we were carried to the "Little Falls,"\* where we had to wait for the accommodation train going up. Although this was a great piece of negligence, and one that a man should not be guilty of, yet it afforded us an opportunity of seeing a place which was interesting, and one that I had not seen for thirty-two years. It had improved greatly in the meantime. At this place, as the name implies, there is a considerable fall in the river; and, in the early history of the country, boating was done on the river, and lockage was at this point. Here the canal is on one side of the river and the railroad on the other; all within a narrow valley between two high hills. The canal is supported on the river side by a heavy stone wall for two miles. In some places it is fifteen or twenty feet high. The canal is scooped out of the hill, or, rather, mountain of rock. There are, I think, three locks within this distance. The railroad is cut through solid rock about the same distance as the canal wall. Crystallized quartz is found here in considerable quantities from a very small size up. It is a romantic place, and, to the geologist, one of interest. I have but little doubt but that the hills once met at this point, and the river flowed westward. There is but one lock on the canal for nearly seventy miles west; and, since my recollection, boats were run out of the Mohawk into Wood Creek by a very short canal, and from Wood Creek into the Oneida Lake, the outlet of the lake being into the Oswego River, and that into Lake Ontario. The entire valley of the Mohawk might have once been a lake, as hills of considerable height run along each side of the river, up nearly to Rome, above Utica. There it widens out into a large plain. The whole of the Mohawk Valley is an alluvion deposit, and the bottom of the stream is a bed of black mud. Little Falls is quite a manufacturing place, and susceptible of being enlarged. At last, soon after dark, the cars arrived, and we took the back track to Herkimer; there taking a hack for Mohawk,

---

\* Whoever may have visited the Little Falls, on the Mohawk River, will have observed that the hills on either side were of nearly the same height, and look as though they had been rent asunder. Along the country, even up to Rome, the hills on each side are high. The water, dammed at the falls, would easily have flowed into Lake Ontario. As the river now is it is sixty miles on a level, and flows from the head of the Mohawk into Wood Creek. A short canal unites the waters of the Mohawk and Oneida Lake, which empties itself into Oswego River, and that stream into Lake Ontario, and that into the St. Lawrence River.

across the river of the same name. We went to a hotel, where we put up for the night.

The next morning I rambled about the place for awhile, and about 9 A. M. my nephew, H. H. Mason, called to see us. He was then on a visit, but had formerly lived in the place, and felt much at home. I called, with him, upon some of his wife's connections, and had the pleasure of being introduced to them, and of taking his wife by the hand. On our first acquaintance I was pleased with her, and that pleasure increased with our acquaintance. After dinner we got into the stage and left town, in the direction of my old uncle's, and stopped at a hotel three miles from his house. We soon succeeded in procuring conveyance, in an open wagon, to his farm. On our arrival we found them all well, and glad to see us. Spent the afternoon in talking over events which had transpired since I was there in 1854.

We reached my Uncle Isaac Mason's the 23d day of June, 1859. The next day my Cousin John Mason and I roamed over the farm, looking at the crop, which to me seemed worthless, as the crops were farther advanced when we left home than they were here. There is a diversity in almost everything met with in traveling from Indiana to the middle portion of New York, from the scenery—which in many places is not only beautiful, but romantic in the extreme—to the variety in vegetation. This early in the season strawberries had ripened and gone before we left home; at Columbus they were abundant, and also at Cleveland and Buffalo; it was a week later that they ripened at my uncle's; thus we had a continued succession of strawberries for a month. After I returned home in the fall, I found by letters from my Cousin John that the crops on the farm had made a fair yield, especially oats and peas. It is a remarkable fact that crops in Northern latitudes require much less time for growth and maturity than in the more Southern. Corn is said to ripen in ninety days from the time of planting—that is, as far North as it can be cultivated.

On Saturday, June 25, I went, with Cousin John Mason, in a spring wagon, to mill, and while his grain was being ground we drove to the Richfield Springs and Schuyler's Lake, which latter is about a mile wide, and several miles long. It is supplied from among the head-waters of the Susquehanna. The lake abounds in fish, especially the pike. The Springs are celebrated as a watering-place. On our return we called on Cousin John's Brother James, and partook of a late dinner, and then returned home. The next day he and myself, with my wife and one of my uncle's daughters, visited another son of my uncle, named Alanson, where we spent the day pleasantly.

In the afternoon my Brother Stephen, who lived at Pulaski, came to Alanson's with one of his daughters, an unlooked-for meeting. We returned to my uncle's, but my brother and his daughter remained with our Cousin Alanson. The next day he and his daughter came up to uncle's in a buggy. Uncle Isaac's farm joined the one which our father had owned, and where we had been mostly raised. I proposed to Brother Stephen to go in his buggy over as much of the old farm as he could, particularly the wooded part, which included the sugar-camp, where our father had often made sugar from the sugar-tree when we were boys, and where I cut my right foot, nearly severing the big toe at the joint, with two others, when I was a few months over ten years of age. He consented, and we started first for the old sugar orchard. Our first object was to find the place where we used to boil the sap, called in the West sugar-water. The woods were considerably altered. We found two places which had been used for that purpose. They looked so much alike, and the old trees that had been our landmarks being gone, we could not decide on the precise spot. We roamed all over the woods, however, but nearly all of our old favorite trees were gone, and their places filled with a younger growth. There were about the same number of sugar-trees as formerly, but the birch, of which there had been a number of considerable size—eighteen or twenty inches in diameter—were gone, and had not been replaced by others. The ramble over our old playgrounds was a rich treat to us. These grounds extended to the top of a ridge that overlooked another farm, owned by a neighbor by the name of Ward, who had children about our age, with whom we had once associated.

The buildings once familiar to us were gone, but the spot was well marked by two little branches of water, which pointed out our old playground, and where the house had stood. We got on the fence dividing the two farms, and sat there for some time, recalling the sports and scenes of our youthful days, which are still fresh in my memory, giving another and strong evidence of the importance of favorable surroundings for youth, intellectually and physically. In most instances it stamps the character for all our after life.

After dinner we went about three miles to my Cousin James Mason's, where we met several acquaintances, and had a regular set-to on Spiritualism. Returned to uncle's in the evening. The next day all the connections, including my nephew Horatio H. Mason, with his wife and little daughter Florence, and several old acquaintances, met at my uncle's and spent much of the day. Had

a fine dinner, and a good time generally. This method of renewing old friendships with acquaintances and relatives, is not only pleasant, but exhilarating, and breaks through the dull monotony of every-day life; and, if not carried too far, serve as bright spots, in looking back upon, to enliven the mind, and relax it from the dull care of after years.

We had arranged for the next day a trip to the Richfield Springs, the watering-place before spoken of. Our party consisted of myself and wife, Cousin John and his sister, Brother Stephen and his daughter, our nephew, H. H., wife and child. We started soon in the morning, reached the Springs early in the day, bespoke dinner at 12 M., and drove to Schuyler Lake. A good house was kept there, which was a place of resort for pleasure excursionists on the lake. In this amusement we did not indulge, for want of time, but returned to the hotel at the Springs and had our horses fed. We visited the springs and bath-rooms, and some of the pleasure-grounds, and then dined. A heavy shower came up while we were there, but it soon cleared off. We met there an ex-Governor of New York, and his wife, who was there for her health. He was a plain, elderly gentleman, pleasant and companionable.

Soon after the shower ceased we left, taking a different road home. I had visited the place in 1822, and had passed it several times before any attention was paid to it, or the qualities of the water were known. There were, at this time, three or four large hotels, or boarding-houses, and it was quite a village. The use of the water, which is strongly impregnated with sulphur and the sulphate of soda, was first brought into notice by a physician, who analyzed it, and then purchased the grounds and improved them, which were previously little else than a quagmire and cedar swamp, on one edge of which was the main spring. The analysis of the water of these springs, as given by Prof. Reid, of New York, is as follows: Bi-carbonate of magnesia, per gal., 20 grs.; bi-carbonate of lime, 10 grs.; chloride of lime, sodium and magnesia, 15 grs.; sulphate of magnesia, 30 grs.; hydro-sulphate magnesia and lime, 2 grs.; sulphate of lime, 20 grs.; solid matter, 152.5 grs.; sulphureted hydrogen, gals. 20, 6 inches.

After leaving the Springs we passed near the Little Lakes. This neighborhood was a valley lying between a ridge of hills. We turned a northerly course instead of east, which course we had been traveling. On ascending to the high land we stopped and took a view of the surrounding country. I have seldom, if ever, seen a place as picturesque. Hills after hills were seen, with gentle



slopes, for half or three-quarters of a mile, to a plateau or bench; then rising from this, another hill, oftentimes cleared even to their summits, and mostly set in grass, while many a spot was dotted with cattle, sheep, and horses. Some few of these hills were crowned with a sugar-loaf of considerable size and height. We were on the summit of one that divided the waters which empty into the Mohawk from those that meander their way along to the Susquehanna. It was in the afternoon; the sun was about to sink below the western horizon, and presented everything in its most beautiful and charming light to our view. The atmosphere was perfectly clear, and everything was seen distinctly, even to a great distance. The valley from which we had come was visible in many of its winding spots. When a youth, I had frequently been over these grounds, and they were always interesting to me, but never before did they cause that thrill of delight which I experienced on this occasion. The sun shone bright, and the improvements which had been made, all contributed to heighten the interest and beautify the scene. We had an agreeable company and a fine flow of feeling prevailed, which may have enhanced the interest; for I have noticed through life that much depends upon the mood we are in as to the degree of pleasure the surroundings afford. A few miles further on we ascended a much higher hill, with a northern view. The other had been mostly a southern. Here we had a splendid view of a valley, extending nearly to the Mohawk, called "Payne's Hollow." The timber had been cleared off, and the valley presented a beautiful appearance. We could see the high lands for miles beyond the Mohawk River, though there was not the same variety as the former, nor were they so rich in romantic beauty.

We reached my uncle's about sundown, well pleased with our day's ride. Our nephew stopped at a sister of his wife's. We had planned a visit to my father's first settlement in Fairfield, but the inclemency of the weather prevented, and my brother and myself had to forego that pleasure, probably forever.

During our stay we had quite a number of visits, in the way of small parties, where we formed new acquaintances and renewed old ones. I shall never forget the last one. It was at Mr. Ward's. His father's land adjoined my father's, and he was still living near our old homestead. It was on Saturday. I was not well, yet I had to keep up appearances. I had rendered myself conspicuous, a kind of center of attraction. I was anxious to accomplish this, as I had left that part of the country as a very ordinary boy, and felt solicitous to make what little I had learned show to the best advantage. It gratified my naturally large love of approbation.

The company left, the house became quiet, and we retired to bed. The next morning, arose and having breakfasted, we spent the day in quietude until late in the afternoon, except that I wrote one or two letters. It was a great relief. In the evening we went to my uncle's. The weather had been very changeable all the time we were there; some days hot, thermometer up to ninety degrees. We had frequent rains, but generally clearing off with frost. There was a frost on the 1st day of July so as to make the tops of fences look white with it, and in some low places the leaves of corn were bitten. Monday, the 4th of July, there was a light frost. We spent most of the day quietly at my uncle's, though in the morning we heard the roar of cannon, both at Herkimer and Little Falls. This latter place was about fifteen miles distant, and the former eight.

Now came the counterpart; we were about to leave my uncle and his family, which were the same in number as when I visited them in 1854. My uncle, Isaac Mason, was the only one of my Grandfather Mason's family who was living, and he was in his eighty-second year. He was hard of hearing, but otherwise comfortably off; was able to be up, walk about, and go to his barn and stable. He had always been fond of a good horse, and retained his fancy yet. He had two—one fifteen and the other sixteen years old—and seemed to be as solicitous about his old horses as himself. I was about to bid him good-by, with the strong probability that I would never see him again. Cousin John was to take us to his brother Alanson's. We were ready to start. I took the old man by the hand, he was calm, and I could hardly discover any emotion in him, while it required all my firmness to bid him good-by. I shook hands with the four girls and we left. Three of them have since paid the debt of nature, and are no more on this earth; and my uncle died the 18th of July, 1866.

Arrived at Cousin Alanson's before night. He lived on a broken farm between my uncle's and Mohawk. Had two hundred acres of land, a large portion of which was cleared and mostly in grass, well watered. His business was cheese and butter-making. He milked twenty-five cows. In the evening, at milking time, the cows were driven to a large cow-shed, well roofed, but open all around; consequently it was cool and airy. The shed had a good floor which was kept clean and neat. The cows being all milked were then turned loose and driven back into a pasture near. Not far from the shed was a dairy-house with two rooms; one shelved off for keeping the cheese, or rather curing it, and the other contained all the apparatus for making and pressing the cheese.

Everything was kept in the most cleanly order. Considerable skill is requisite in the manufacture of good cheese. A variety of processes have to be gone through, each requiring care and skill. After the middle of September, and during October and a part of November, in most seasons, the cheese manufacture is exchanged for butter-making. The time and amount are regulated by the market for the two articles. Late in the fall the cows generally all go dry, except those giving milk for family use. Cheese and butter-making is reduced to a regular and scientific course, and much skill and care are necessary in the management of the cows during both summer and winter. Cousin Alanson was living with a second wife. I never had had any acquaintance with any of his family, although I had known him when a boy. We were kindly received and treated. The next morning we took leave of the family, Alanson sending one of his sons with us to Mohawk, where we parted with him.

At this place we met my nephew, H. H. Mason. After some conversation with him, we bade him good-by, and took the "bus" for Herkimer, and the cars at 10 A. M. for Utica. On crossing the Mohawk bottoms, on the 5th of July, I noticed that the corn was not over ten inches high. Reached Utica before 11 A. M., and obtained a carriage and driver to take us to my Cousin Scott Willmarth's, where we remained until the 8th of July. During our stay, we rambled over our playgrounds which we had when we were boys and I boarded with his parents and went to school. These rambles called up many an interesting scene that we had enjoyed in our youthful sports. Late one afternoon we took our old path to the school-house, and saw a large granite boulder—which was one of our old landmarks—in a field, which we crossed to cut off the right angle of the road. Here is another evidence of the importance of making correct impressions in early life, for the impressions of childhood become stamped upon the mind's entablature and are interwoven with our very being, continuing and influencing all our after life.

My cousin's farm was situated on a side hill, facing the south, and considerably above the Mohawk River. Nearly half a mile from his house, up the side hill, there were several granite boulders, one of which would weigh several tons. I succeeded in getting a small portion of it, and have it now. These boulders, no doubt, belonged to what geologists term the "drift period." One day while here Cousin Scott, with his wagon, took us and his wife to Utica, and all over the city. It is a beautiful place, though irregularly laid out. The canal and railroad both pass through it;

the railroad runs near the river, while the canal lies back, where once was a swamp. Considerable business is done here. There is a woolen and cotton factory, also some fine residences, with the usual number of churches of different denominations. Some of the streets are beautifully set in fine shade trees. During our visit the subject of by-gone days and our ancestors came up. Scott's wife made us a present of a saucer which had belonged to my grandfather, and was more than a hundred years old; also a linen pillow-slip, which had been spun and made by my Grandmother Mason, which we still have as mementoes. The time arrived for our departure, and we took leave of our cousin's wife, his son and wife, and family, and at 12 M. he took us to Utica, where we parted, he for home and we on the cars for Rome, passing through Whitestown. From Utica to Rome is sixteen miles, over a beautiful country. Rome is a desirable place to live in. Here we were detained two hours. This afforded us time to look about and see the place, although the sun was hot and oppressive. At this point the Black River Canal comes in and connects with the New York and Erie, and a railroad from Watertown connects with the New York Central. The heat was so oppressive that I felt relaxed, and did not see as much of the place as I would otherwise have done.

Before taking a final leave of this region of country, I will say a few words concerning the enemies of the farmer. In every place we have been east of this, all of the cleared lands are, more or less, infested with the Canada thistle and the white and yellow wild daisies. Of these last the white was considered the worst. They have strong roots, and in some pasture-fields at a distance they looked as though they covered the entire ground, yet a considerable amount of grain grew between the bunches. They send out a large number of branches from the same root, and each branch has other branches, and during the latter part of June are in full bloom. There seems to be no way of getting rid of them. Thoroughly plowing the ground and planting in corn greatly reduces the number and amount for the time, but they soon become as thick as ever. They do more damage to the crop than the thistle. This weed, the thistle, seems indestructible. Each leaf is armed at the end with a stiff, sharp briar, and can be handled when grown only with leather gloves. The seed is blown, with the blossom-down, to a great distance, rendering it very difficult to guard against them. By digging them up as soon as discovered for a time keeps them down, or mowing them three or four times a season lessens their number as well as their injury to pasture

lands. The hay seems but little affected, as stock soon become accustomed to them.

We left Rome forty-five minutes after 3 P. M. for Richland Station, on the Watertown road, forty-one miles. Reached there at half-past 6 P. M. From Rome to Richland is a poor, God-forsaken country, either sand-banks or cedar-swamps, and in places where it was settled the crops were very light. We stopped at my brother Stephen's, who then kept the "Salmon River House." This place, Pulaski, is on the east bank of the Salmon River, six miles from Lake Ontario, at the mouth of the river, and is the half shire town of Oswego County. It has a good court-house, a fine building for a graded school, a number of churches, and several mills; also a foundry, and a number of mechanic shops, a post-office, and a number of stores for retail trade. We found my brother and family all well. He had but two sons living, and they were both with him. The oldest was married and keeping house, but also assisted his father in keeping the hotel. The youngest, much of his time, was at school. He had but one single daughter, who was about sixteen years of age, and was a sprightly girl, possessing a fine mind. She was then living at home, and was afterward married, in the summer of 1863. The oldest son went into the Army of the Potomac, and was in several battles, but afterward was detailed to hospital service, and finally died, of camp diarrhea. While we were there his eldest daughter, Mrs. Rice, came from Albion, Michigan, where she resided, bringing with her her youngest child, a girl, five or six years old, named Katie. She was an interesting little girl, and I often teased her by calling her a little Wolverine. My pet, his daughter Amelia, who married a Dr. Gibson, also came there, a few days before we left, with her little son, about three years old. She and her husband had been living at Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, but were then living not far from Niagara Falls. She was a fine-looking woman, but very much fatigued, at the time, by her journey. Thus we had the pleasure of seeing all my brother's children that were living. He had had one daughter who died in Michigan, leaving two children.

While here we took a trip to the Falls on Salmon River, twelve miles above Pulaski. On our way up we traveled near the river. Much of the distance was through a hilly, broken country. Some of it possesses highly romantic scenery, which it would be very difficult to describe. We stopped near the falls, at a house; put up, and fed our horses, and then started to the falls. Our company consisted of my brother Stephen, his wife, and daughter Candace, and myself and wife. On reaching the falls we found the hills

narrowing down near the stream above the falls. There was a small bottom on the east side, which was the one we were on. On going up this bottom we found a good shady place, and seated ourselves where had been some celebration or pic-nic. We had brought our lunch along, and at this spot we stopped and ate it. Above the falls there was but little water running in the stream. The bed was stone from one side to the other, and there was a perpendicular fall of one hundred and eleven feet over a mass of hard sand-stone of an excellent quality for building purposes. During the middle of the day it proved to be oppressively warm. Immediately below the falls was a deep narrow gulf. On the east side the land was level, but on the west there appeared higher ground in a ridge running parallel with the river. All that seemed lacking to make it highly interesting and romantic was a large volume of water sweeping over the precipice. At times, however, it is said to be of fair amount. We left for home by a different route, passing through Pekin and Moscow—two small snug villages—and over a much better country than we had come, though much of it is too sandy. At the falls we found a mixture of timber; hemlock, with now and then a pine, which was constantly changing as we passed along. On our return route we stopped at Richland Station, with a brother of Stephen's wife, who kept a retail store. It was still hot, and he soon had for us a large pitcher of iced lemonade, which was highly refreshing. After resting a short time we returned home. One day while here I was invited to take a ride with an acquaintance, Norman L. Roots, and started to go to a village of considerable size—and rather a pleasant place—called Mexico, situated twelve miles from Pulaski, on a small stream of water. The day was a warm one; thermometer up to eighty-six degrees Fahrenheit, in the shade, at Mexico. We stopped at a hotel for dinner. Here I was introduced to several prominent men; among whom was Avery Skinner, who had been a Judge of the Court and a Representative in the State Legislature. Had the heat not been so oppressive I would have enjoyed the trip much. We returned in the afternoon by the same road that we went out on, and over a tolerable country; indeed much better than any I had seen in that part of the county before. I paid three visits to the lake while here. One was with my brother to get fresh fish; another, with my wife, at which time we went down on one side of the river and returned on the other. The United States Government at one time made an appropriation for a break-water at the mouth of the river, but it was never finished. Schooners came into the mouth of the stream, which is low, flat,

and deep, so that they went up three-quarters of a mile or more, to where a city had been laid out on a grand scale, and quite a number of buildings had been put up. When we were there the place was in a dilapidated condition, and all their golden dreams had vanished into air. It beat the West in visionary schemes of speculation in corner lots! On our return myself and wife stopped with a Mr. Douglas, a Spiritualist, to whom I had been introduced in Pulaski. Put up our horse, and stayed for dinner. He was a considerable farmer, living on his farm, and had quite a large family about him, several of whom were grown up. We spent some three hours with them, and were treated with much attention. He was a firm believer in Spiritualism, and related quite a number of strong manifestations, which they had witnessed, and which were very interesting. A strong friendship sprang up between us. We yet have the white strawberry which I afterwards obtained from him. He cultivated quite a large garden. Saw the family several times while at Pulaski. We returned in the evening to my brothers. On the Friday before we left we went with my brother, his wife, and daughter, down to Port Ontario, the city before spoken of, to see a brother of Stephen's wife, whose name was Doane. Took dinner there, and ransacked the city over. In our rambles we saw Orrin E. Dwight, postmaster of the place, who cultivated a vegetable garden as one of the means by which he made a living. In the fall I procured from him white currant bushes, white raspberries, and a variety of onions called multipliers. The white raspberry has done but little good, as the winter kills them. The onions have done well; by planting one onion they will multiply at the root to six or eight.

We returned in the evening. While at this place I visited Pulaski Lodge No. 415, and was received with due honors as Past Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Indiana. I found the lodge made up of a number of intelligent, orderly men. I had traveled considerable, and been in many places, and had seen much of mankind, but in no place where I had ever visited, or been for two weeks, had I had as much attention paid me. A large number of the inhabitants were intelligent and courteous. There were residing in the town an ex-Member of Congress, an ex-Member of the Legislature, several intelligent physicians, one or two editors, a correspondent of the New York Tribune, several attorneys at law, besides merchants and mechanics. My brother sustained a good reputation in the place, and he gave me at once an introduction, and in such a manner as to give me ready intercourse with the most prominent men. The position I had occupied in life soon

became known, and I was solicitous to sustain myself thoroughly, not only on my own account, but on my brother's. I had a constant round of subjects to discuss: medicine, politics, philosophy, business pursuits,—including finance—religion, and modern Spiritualism (of which latter I found quite a number of believers among the well-informed); these, with all their collaterals, including Freemasonry. There was scarcely a day that I was not engaged with some one. My brother keeping a public-house, with a fine open porch in front, and having a good sitting-room, independent of the bar-room, afforded a fine opportunity for persons to call and spend an hour or so. The weather, while we were there, was very changeable; some days extremely warm, and others cool enough for a fire. All combined taxed me to my utmost capacity, bodily and mentally. Although at times it was extremely pleasant, yet there were others when I would gladly have foregone an interview. I had remained longer than I had expected to, and fixed a day for our departure. I took leave of my numerous friends; and, though reluctantly, yet the idea of relaxation was desirable. The day came, and I bade my brother's family farewell. He and his daughter, Mrs. Rice, accompanied us in his carriage. I have often, since that visit, looked back and thought of the place and circle of friends with much pleasure, and many a time would have been glad to spend a social hour with them again. The night before we left my brother's wife made this remark to me: "We have kept a public-house for a long time, and have had many guests, but in no instance have we had an individual with us who drew around him such a crowd as you have, and that, too, of our best citizens."

On Monday, July 25, 1859, we left. Early in the morning we had a shower of rain, but it soon had the appearance of clearing off. We started, though there was a damp, cool atmosphere; however, the sun shone out, and the day proved a fine one. We drove twelve miles to Joseph Wilson's, an old acquaintance, who had lived near our father's and was a boy with us. My brother had not lost sight of the man, and still kept up his acquaintance. Wilson was Superintendent of the Poor-House, a mile or so from Mexico. Here we stopped until after dinner; recalled the scenes of our boyhood in conversation, after which he showed us through the building. Here we saw a number of unfortunate individuals, among whom were several who were insane. There was in course of erection a new brick dwelling, to be used by the unfortunate class of humanity, whose end is to be the recipient of charity for life. Connected with the institution was a well cultivated farm. Soon after dinner we left, and reached Brother Almond Mason's



at half-past five, P. M. Passed over a moderately fair country, and by a different route from any we had ever traveled before.

Brother Almond was living on the same farm on which he lived in 1854, when we visited him last. We found them well and glad to see us. The meeting was a very pleasant one. My brother having some business three miles from home the next morning, took his wagon, and we three brothers, Stephen, Almond, and myself, went off together and enjoyed ourselves very much. In the afternoon we visited a son of my brother's, and also a brother-in-law of Almond's. The next morning it was cool, having rained the night after we got there. Brother Stephen and daughter left for home. In the afternoon I wrote a number of letters home. We remained with Brother Almond over two weeks. While there I was confined four days by an attack of my old disease of the skin, and though unfortunate in being sick I was fortunate in being at my brother's. He took particular pains to make our stay with them pleasant, and although I was sick a portion of the time, we enjoyed the visit greatly. Took frequent rides to various places, among which was one a full day's drive. We started, after an early breakfast, south six miles, where we struck the outlet of the Oneida Lake, then turned east up the river to the lake, and crossed the river on a bridge into Brewerton, a considerable village, where we stopped. I returned to the bridge to see the lake and contemplate the great change which had taken place since I had grown to manhood. The lake and its outlet was the connecting link of water communication from Schenectady on the Mohawk, about twenty miles from Albany on the Hudson River. Here was land carriage. Then from Schenectady by water up the Mohawk into Wood Creek; out of that into the Oneida Lake; out of this through its outlet, the Oneida River, into the Oswego River, and thence to Lake Ontario. On the Oswego River to Fulton there is a fall, and there was another land carriage of about two miles. On this route was transported all the articles of commerce between the two points and to the intermediate points. Even in the War of 1812, soldiers, munitions of war, provisions, and arms were transported by large pirogues, as the best and cheapest mode of conveyance.

Some sixteen miles south of this there was, at the time I was here, the great New York and Erie Canal, and a first-class railroad; and since then a double track has been laid. There connects, near Syracuse, with the Great Canal, a canal running down the Oswego River to the lake. What a change, and that in forty years! This lake is twenty eight miles long and about two wide.

Several small steamboats are now used on the lake, and used as tugs to tow canal-boats up and down the outlet into the canal. A large business is done between this point and Syracuse in cord-wood, sawed lumber, shingles, staves, and hoop-poles. The country around the lake and along the streams is a peculiar one, abounding in cedar swamps, while intervening there are considerable ridges covered with a great variety of timber—hemlock, with here and there a pine, chestnut, beech, some ash, and birch. The drier swamps afford pine, and some of them the swamp ash, out of which hoops for barrels are made. Barrel-making is a great business all over this region of country, both for flour and salt, which latter is made in large quantities at Syracuse, both by boiling and solar evaporation. Syracuse is one of the largest manufacturing salt places in the United States. The salt is made from the salt water obtained by boring artesian wells. From Brewerton we continued a southerly course, passing over a medium country and through several cross-road villages. We stopped at Clay Corners, which is ten miles from Syracuse. There we took dinner, and started home by a different route, through a very variable country as to the quality of the land. A number of families lived in this region who had removed from our old town, several of whom we called on.

The time for us to leave drew nigh. The kindness of my brother and his family toward us rendered our departure a reluctant one. There was one circumstance which occurred while here I have neglected to mention. My Brother Almond had, by some means, got possession of many of our father's books and papers, including a large number of my letters and papers which I had left with our mother. I spent half a day in looking over my early letters to the family, both from the western part of New York and from Indiana. These interested me much, especially an old diary I had kept while an apprentice, and which embraced the prices of articles of clothing, etc.; among which was two dollars and fifty cents for a common wool hat, and the best hat I ever had had until I went West.

On the 10th of August we left; my brother and his wife going with us in his light spring wagon to Fulton, on the Oswego River, then down the river to its mouth, where the city of Oswego is situated on each side of the river, and had then a population of eighteen thousand inhabitants. It contained twenty-one large mills, and two large starch factories. A new court-house was in progress of building, it being a half-shire town. The outer part of the court-house walls were of blue limestone, lined inside with

brick. A fine United States building, in which was the Post-office, Custom House, and a United States Court-room, a plain, substantial building. Quite a number of churches, and some fine private residences. About half way from this place to Fulton, which is ten miles, there is a large starch factory, said to employ one hundred hands, and a flouring-mill with twenty-one run of stones. It makes flour enough in one day to load a large canal-boat. These buildings are at a splendid dam, for the use of the canal—the mill at one end and the factory at the other. These establishments, as well as those at the city, are supplied with wheat and corn from Canada, Michigan, and Ohio. The upper starch factory is exclusively for making corn starch, the slop being used to feed stock. At the upper part of the city there is a heavy dam thrown across the river for the use of the canal, and to furnish the water-power for the mills and a variety of machinery. Below the dam the breakwater at the mouth of the river constitutes the harbor. A large amount of pine logs are towed across the lake in rafts by a steam tug from Canada and sawed into lumber, and then shipped on the canal to various points. At the mouth of the river, on the east side, there is a fine large fort, built, it is said, at a cost of half a million of dollars. It has an arsenal, magazine, stone buildings for barracks, and a good stone building for officers' quarters, also two fine wells, which supply an abundance of water. The wall, from the bottom of the entrenchment to the parapet, is nearly thirty feet. I saw seventeen large cannon, but only one of them was mounted. There was a large strong double gate-way giving entrance to the interior of the fort. Some distance from the front part of the gate-way, on the outside, there was a large mound, with barely room between that and the outer wall for a carriage-way. We crossed on a bridge some distance above the fort. On the side on which it stood, a short distance from the river, there were a number of quays, where canal-boats could load or unload, and load or unload into, or from schooners or steamboats. These quays, or slips, run out several rods into the river.

After we had crossed, we went down to the lake shore, at the west end of the breakwater, which is a massive wall built of large stone and grouted solid. But, solid as it was built, the waves of the lake had done it considerable injury, and it needed repairing. The wall was of considerable length, extending nearly across the mouth of the river. Near to the wall on the west side the waves had washed a huge pile of pebbles of all sizes, and of a great variety of colors and shapes, but mostly oval, and which by the action of the waves were worn smooth. I spent an hour selecting,

and had gathered a bushel; I then selected again and took them with us. On the east end of the wall was a light-house, to indicate the entrance to the harbor.

Here we have the evidence of the vastness of the powers of human intellect when properly assisted by labor and skill. The immense wealth accumulated at this place makes it an important and interesting point. Oft and again has my mind reverted to this day's stroll, and the thoughts it awakened of science and civilization.

The country along the river, up nearly to Fulton, appears barren. Hills extending in many places to the water's edge, and, though they are covered with a forest, yet they look poor, and are too uneven in most places to be cultivated. From Oswego we went out on the west side of the river, some seven or eight miles, to a son-in-law's of my brother's (where we stayed all night), and were warmly received and kindly treated. Here I again sorted our pebbles; again, and then again, and brought home with us a fine portion of them, which we have yet. The next morning we took a walk of a mile or more to a brother of Mr. Blodgett's, my brother's son-in-law. We had learned that his brother's family were Spiritualists, and this was the object of our visit. On our arrival part of the family were leaving, but we stopped, and had a conversation with the mother, and a daughter who was a medium. We had a short sitting, but circumstances did not seem favorable, and we left, though not without being satisfied that the family were converts to the new philosophy. They had not mixed with other Spiritualists, but had confined their examinations within their own circle. This Mr. Blodgett commenced here poor. He had purchased eighty or a hundred acres of—what I should call poor—land in the green wood; had commenced to clear it, and had built a log-cabin on it, when he married my brother's daughter, who was poor. This was about sixteen years before. He now had a good, comfortable frame-house, wood house, barn, and shed, with ground cleared sufficient to support his family. This he had effected by his own labor. He had considerable hemlock timber, which he made available by selling for lumber purposes. They had three children, but his wife was not stont. I give this as an instance of what industry and economy will accomplish. After dinner we left to visit another daughter, Mary Ann, who had married Mr. Parker Dexter. He had gone West, into Iowa, to Clinton, on the Mississippi River, where the family now reside. We found them living comfortably in a snug house of their own. My niece, Mary Ann, was a pleasant woman, and had a good mind.

She had five children; all struggling to make a living. After breakfast we took our leave of her and her children, all of whom had treated us very kindly. The whole country, from Oswego City to near Fulton, I should call a hard country to live in, if one had a living to make out of the soil. Arrived at Fulton; crossed the river over a long bridge, below a very heavy dam which was being rebuilt, below the old one, of fine large heavy stone. This dam is to serve for lockage at this place, and for water-power for some six or seven flouring-mills, a paper-mill, and a considerable amount of machinery, and one or two saw-mills. There is here quite a declination requiring several locks. The water runs over a bed of solid lime-stone, which extends more or less to the lake. This is a place of considerable business. We here got our trunk, which we had left on our way going down to Oswego City. My brother recrossed the river, at the head of the falls, to the railroad depot, a little above the city, on the opposite side of the river. This road runs from the Oswego City to Syracuse. Here we parted with my brother and his wife, probably to never meet again on earth. We took the cars for Syracuse, and they returned home. On reaching Syracuse we had to stop at a hotel to wait for the accommodation train from Buffalo. After dinner the cars arrived, and we went aboard, and proceeded on to Canastota, where we took the stage-coach—going to Morrisville—to Mr. Combs' a mile out of town. It had rained from ten in the morning until night, and was still raining when we reached our destination, where we were warmly welcomed, however. We found my brother-in-law living with his second wife, a most excellent woman. No one could be more kindly treated than we were while here, and we made their house a stopping point during our stay in that section. Combs took us to Eben Blakeman's, who had married a niece of mine—daughter of my sister Mercy, who had married a Mr. Brown. Blakeman and his family lived at a village called, in early times, Log City, but now known by the name of Eaton. A few days previous they had called to see us at Combs', though they stayed but a short time. We had broken the ice. They were living in good style, and we were cordially welcomed and well treated. I soon got acquainted with Blakeman's wife, whose given name was "Florilla." She was very much like her mother when she was a girl; retiring in her manners, and slow in forming new acquaintances. Near the village was the county poor-house, which we visited. There were one hundred and twenty inmates. Among the number were eight or ten lunatics; some of whom were confined in cells. The largest proportion of

the lunatics were females, and some of them were pitiable objects. A few were raving mad and boisterous. To one who had never seen a lunatic it would seem impossible for a human being to become so totally bereft of reason and common sense. Here was another instance of the ignorance of mankind, and inattention to health and disease. There is but little or no doubt but that the most of these unfortunates might have been saved by timely treatment and care. There was one woman who occupied a separate apartment. She was over seventy years of age; yet she still maintained a dignified bearing. She was above the medium in size—tall and well proportioned. I was induced to inquire into her history. She had been well raised, it was said; had been married, and had had children, and had been in good circumstances, but her husband died, her children became profligates, and finally robbed her of her last dollar, and she was consigned to the poor-house. Another lesson of instruction; and, although so humiliating in its character, yet it is worthy of deep reflection, and teaches the importance of correct action in all things. Attached to the buildings was a farm of three hundred acres, which was in a good state of cultivation, and well managed, and furnished milk, butter, grain, and vegetables for the inmates; and such as were able to labor were required to contribute their services. We spent an hour here, which was full of instruction. There was a splendid fountain in the back-yard of the buildings of excellent water in great abundance for all purposes.

We passed through the village, and found it an active thriving place. There was a woolen-factory, and several machine-shops, and also a foundry. A small stream of water ran through the place, and towards the west. A little out of the village there was a grist-mill; the stream here having a fall of some fifty feet. There were also the remains of the old buildings of an extensive distillery, hog-yard, and pens. The owner of this property, whose name I have forgotten, commenced here, in early times, in moderate circumstances, and by his thrift and industry had made a large fortune. The place was well selected; his mill-power excellent, with every advantage of water at a trifling expense. I visited his house, and was introduced to him by Mr. Blakeman. He was living in a good large brick building, on the hill, above his mill and distillery; had a fine garden, and in its center was a fountain, supplied by a water-ram. The fountain had a jet-pipe, which threw the water several feet, in a jet, terminating in fine spray. The whole garden, which was inclosed with a snug iron fence, could be watered from the fountain. Everything about him seemed

to be arranged for utility and convenience. It was this cast of mind that engineered his fortune, and I regarded it as a misfortune that such talents had not been turned to some more useful pursuit. He had quit the business and turned a part of the buildings into workshops, and his sons were all pursuing other avocations. To carry on this large establishment he had had to obtain his corn from Ohio. In places, in that region of country, the business was profitably carried on at the time we were there, the grain being obtained from Ohio. I passed through this place in 1815. It was then truly named Log City, for it contained a few log-cabins only, on either side of the road, in a valley between two considerable hills, and with the country but little else than a forest for miles. I was on my tour to Cayuga County, where I had lived two years before I went west to Indiana.

The changes that had been made in the country had so altered everything, as well as the village, that I could not find a trace of its early times. My niece had on a visit to her house a sister-in-law, a sister of her husband's, who was an intelligent woman. I got into conversation with her upon various subjects, phrenology, mesmerism, and spiritualism. She had the photographs of two of her sons, men grown; one an artist or portrait painter. She handed them to me and desired me to give their characters. Here was a difficult and delicate task. For some time I had, for my own amusement, paid considerable attention to practical phrenology and physiology by the actual examination of living heads, and from Dagnerreian and photographic likenesses, and found that in a large majority of cases I could judge pretty correctly. I took the pictures and asked for a short time to examine them. There was something decided about them, that was apparent at the first view, yet I was anxious to be correct, and carry conviction of my ability to give accurate character of mental development. The physiological department was more difficult, as the back part of the head was not well shown. She had left the room, and returning asked if I was ready. I answered by taking first one and then the other, and giving in detail the general character of each. She was surprised, and said that they were given to the life.

I am now well satisfied that a person of proper mental developments can, by practice, give the true character of any one, and very accurately give the physiological one also; but it is in this, as in everything else, much practice is necessary, yet with care the examiner will seldom make a mistake. I went to a photograph gallery and sat for my picture, which I presented to my niece. She had but two children living, a girl some twelve or fourteen,

and a son about three years old. The latter has since died. The next year they moved to Charleston, Coles County, Illinois, where they owned valuable property, settled near a stream on which they had mills, took the ague, and returned to New York, where she has since died. Thus passes human life. Oft when we think our cup of happiness is nearly full, it is dashed to the ground by relentless destiny, and nothing but the fragments are ours! I corresponded with her frequently while they lived at Charleston.

We returned to Combs', and next day he and his wife went with us to Cousin John Lippett's, about eight miles distant. In reaching there we crossed the canal from Binghampton to Utica, where it connects with the New York and Erie. This canal was originally designed to reach the coal mines in Pennsylvania, but had not been finished on that end. It runs through a broken and uneven country, and is said to be crooked, and in many places is fed by artificial lakes made in cedar swamps. These cedar swamps are very common through this whole country. They are generally a low piece of ground of from fifty to a hundred acres, surrounded by hills, in some instances entirely around the swamp, and in a few having a pool of water in the center. The beds of these swamps are a deep alluvial deposit, but when cleared and drained make excellent meadow land; but there is too large an amount of vegetable matter for wheat or even corn in a dry season, as they dry up. Few neighborhoods in all this region of country but have those swamps. They are upon the uplands and along water-courses and rivers.

I had never seen Cousin John Lippett before. He was a man about forty years of age, living on his farm in Solsville Township, Madison County. His principal farming business was hop raising, for which his land was well adapted. We found him engaged in getting in his hay. The sun that day at noon was hot, the thermometer at seventy-five degrees above zero. At dinner-time he spent a couple of hours with us, and I found him to be a man of mind above mediocrity, and his mind well stored with useful knowledge. During the session of the Legislature in 1864 he was a member of the House of Representatives of the State of New York. We stayed all night with him—Combs and his wife having left for home in the cool of the evening. The next morning we went over his farm. I was struck with a patch of teasels he was cultivating near his house. They are an article used by the woolen manufacturers; and he said they yielded him a fine profit on the labor bestowed. Having finished his hay, in the afternoon he took



us back to Combs', his wife going with us. She was an intelligent, thorough-going woman. They have no children.

On our return we struck the Cherry Valley Turnpike, not far from where my Uncle Barker lived (the man who married my Aunt Marcey). The house and ground around it looked natural to me. This had been one of my stopping places in early life. The country had greatly changed. The canal (before spoken of) was east about half a mile. The afternoon being pleasant we had a most delightful ride, and an exceedingly agreeable conversation. I have had frequent correspondence with him ever since. At Combs' we parted with him and his wife, they returning home. The next day we went with Combs and his wife into town, and beyond to the grave-yard, where we visited the grave of my sister. Her husband had erected a fine marble tombstone at the head of her grave. The burying-ground was in a pleasant location, near the town of Morrisville, the county-seat of Madison County, New York. From the grave-yard we went into town and called on an acquaintance of Mr. Combs', by the name of Stephens, who was Sheriff of the County. He had a splendid garden, especially in the floral department, and took much pains to show us around it. It was of considerable size, about one acre of ground, in a high state of cultivation, and was beautifully hedged in. Returned to Mr. Combs'. The next day my niece and her husband called and spent the afternoon with us, and then bade us good-by, as we were to leave for home on Monday, the 22d August, 1859.

It was the 20th of June when we entered the State of New York at Buffalo. We had therefore been in the State two months, and had passed over a large area of country. The weather had been very changeable—rain and frost predominating, with occasionally a hot day. Harvesting was not commenced until August, about the 15th. The grass, one of the principal crops, was light, owing to a dry May. The region of the State in which we were might be said to be the center of it, but in point of fertility not equal to that portion called the Genesee.

The commercial facilities of this State are great, but, after all, butter and cheese constitute the principal productions. There are a few counties which produce the hop very well, and when prices are favorable the business of hop raising is highly remunerative. Madison is one of the counties I speak of, and Herkimer is another; but to conduct this business successfully requires considerable outlay. In the first place the roots have to be procured a year in advance of the crop, but as they are planted with corn, between the hills of corn, a fair crop of the latter is raised. The next year

they require poling, which is quite a job. For this purpose the tamarack or hackmatack is procured from some of the swamps, and many are brought from Canada. Cedar poles are also now used and are obtained from the same places. They require the size of but three to four inches in diameter and from eighteen to twenty feet long. When the hops are gathered the vines are cut at the ground, and the pole is then pulled up. The hops are gathered into boxes made for the purpose, of equal sizes. The poles are stripped of the vines and then stacked on end, in an upright position, so as to form a cone some eight or ten feet in diameter at the bottom, and there they stand until wanted the next spring. The hop requires careful cultivation, similar to corn. The vine has to be well trained to the pole, and proper care taken in distributing the male plant, by which fecundity is secured, as the plants have their males and females, like all other plants. After the hops are gathered, they require a good dry-house, constructed for the purpose, where they are kiln-dried. On the top of these houses is a rotary ventilator, with one side open, so that it moves as the wind shifts. This is said to be important. The plants once well set, properly trimmed, manured, and cultivated, last for a long time on the same ground.

The time for our departure drew near. Combs' family was about the same as when we were there in the fall of 1854, except that he had married his second wife, who had several children, one of whom lived with them. Maria had married and left them. The youngest child which my sister left had grown to be a sprightly little girl. The unabated kind attention of Mr. Coombs and his wife to us will never be forgotten. They made me a present of a small sugar-bowl that had been my mother's, which I shall keep as a sacred relic, and will leave it to some one of my children, with the hope that it may be preserved with care, and go to some one of their grandchildren. The hour for parting arrived. The stage stopped at the door for us. We hurriedly made our adieus, and left, probably never to see them again. Such is life in this migratory country. We reached Canastota, fifteen miles, before 12 M. Upon inquiry I found that the "Accommodation Train" would reach Buffalo a short time before the afternoon "Express Train," so I came to the conclusion to take tickets through to Columbus. We had intended to have stopped at Syracuse and waited for the "Express Evening Train," but we had no acquaintances nor the time to see more of the place than we had already seen, consequently we seated ourselves in the "Accommodation Train." It was a fine afternoon, and we found it pleasant, as short stoppages

at nearly every village, and they were numerous on the route, gave us a glimpse of each place. We did not reach Buffalo until after dark, but in time to get a good supper at a restaurant though. After seeing our baggage on board of the train for Cleveland and taking passage in a sleeping-car, we were soon off, and I was soon sound asleep, and it is seldom that I have had as good a night's rest. We reached Cleveland at the break of day, where we got a fair breakfast, then took the "Express Train" for Columbus. At that place we took the cars to Cambridge, reaching that town at 3 P. M. Were detained at Cambridge an hour, hired a hack, and reached home at half-past 6 P. M. From Mr. Combs' we were thirty-five and a half hours, traveling a distance of six hundred and fifty-eight miles, twenty-seven of it by stage. Our entire expenses home, fare, sleeping-car, and passages, were thirty-seven dollars and thirty-two cents.

On arriving at home we found that the weather had been and was yet very dry, and considerable sickness prevailed, mostly ague. Seldom have I known the atmosphere as unhealthy as it was when we reached home. Our business at the hat-store required my attention, and I devoted my time to it, and our stock being low, my partner went to the city and laid in a new supply of goods, which we received and opened. Our County Fair came off, as usual, and our sales increased during that period. After it was over I made preparations to go to the Wabash, and would have started in a few days, but one day, about 1 P. M., I was attacked with a chill at the store. I left for my house, the chill increasing and continuing for some time after I got home. I had bricks heated, then dipped in water and wrapped in wet cloths, over which was put a dry one; they were then put to my feet, legs, and back. These, with hot tea, soon relieved me, but during the chill I suffered much. By sweating freely, and taking two-grain doses of quinine, until I had taken twenty grains, brought me all right again in a few days, except that I was considerably weakened.

On the 5th of October, 1859, I, with my wife, took the stage for Cambridge, on our way to the Wabash; thence took the cars from Cambridge, by the way of Indianapolis and Peru, to Wabash Town. It was nearly night when we left Indianapolis. We stopped at Noblesville for supper. Soon after we passed Tipton the locomotive and tender ran off the track, and pitched into deep, stiff mud, experiencing no other injury than being "stuck in the mud." Here we had to stay until a hand-car ran up to Peru and had another locomotive sent down. It was daylight before we reached Peru. The night was cool, and we were without the

means of having a fire. I was weak, and apprehensive of taking cold and having a relapse. I managed to keep warm by wrapping myself in my overcoat and blanket and lying down, occupying two seats. I got a good night's sleep, and in the morning I felt well.

We reached Wabash at 10 A. M. A fair was being held near town, so we went direct to the fair-grounds. Met with my two sons and a nephew, through whom I had effected a trade for some land to fill out a quarter section known as the Kilander Farm. I found all right except the title. I employed a lawyer to examine the records and make out a deed. This accomplished, I felt at ease. The next day was to be the last day of the fair. It had been well attended, and the exhibition was a creditable one. I remained over night in town, with my friend Doctor James Ford, which enabled me to look after my business. The day was a favorable one, and in the afternoon I delivered an address on agriculture and the importance of agricultural schools. I was more successful in an off-hand address than I expected, so much so that I was complimented by my friends. At night I attended a meeting of the Chapter, and conferred two degrees. After the meeting of the Chapter I went to the Doctor's and staid all night. Next day went to my son Stephen's.

The morning after that I had a long talk with my son Darwin in relation to his living on the farm which I had purchased of his uncle, John B. Tyler. We finally agreed upon the terms. He was to cultivate the land; I was to furnish everything, even to his meat and bread. For his labor I was to give him a certain portion of what was raised. Some time during the next November he moved on the farm, and commenced operations. I made his cousin, Warren Mason, my agent, to transact my business—not only on the Tyler Farm, but on the Kilander Farm. Darwin had no power to buy or sell. He was to do the labor, and we had a written contract to that effect, and had it recorded. In the afternoon we went to Warren Mason's, and the next day to the Kilander Farm, Warren going with us.

From the farm we went to Ashland, where I closed the trade for the land before spoken of. Got a deed, and paid \$600 cash down, and was to pay \$400 of a mortgage on the land, given to the Sinking Fund of the State. Thus I consummated a trade which I had been seeking to make for seventeen years.

From here we went to my friend Tyler's, who was yet living on the farm which I had purchased of him. While there I went all over the farm, and examined it well, finding it about as I had expected. Some days after this I arranged with him to leave the

place. Purchased part of his stock and feed. We then returned to Warren Mason's, and he, with his wife, took us out into the Jenks neighborhood. Warren had a half sister living out there. He returned the next day; we remained, and made our usual round of visiting, and then returned to Alonzo Mason's. While there I made all the arrangements with Warren to manage both farms, and left money with him for the purpose. Then returned to my son Stephen's; spent a few days with him and Darwin, and then left for home on the railroad, reaching there the same day, namely, the 27th of October, 1859.

While in the Wabash we frequently had frost; some so severe as to freeze the ground. We prepared for the winter. Much of that season I spent at the hat-store, and the remainder in writing. The ensuing summer was spent between the garden and the hat-store. During the succeeding fall Darwin came to Connersville to get a wagon which I had purchased, and myself, wife and Ella went back home with him in it, at the same time taking some furniture. I found that he had done a good summer's work, but the farm was much out of repair, and I at once hired a hand to assist him in fixing up the old barn, make rails, repair fences, etc. After everything was under way we took the team and started over the Wabash to Eel River to make a visit among the Jenks' connection. After making them a moderate visit we left for Darwin's again, stopping at Lagro to get a barrel of salt and some other articles, then went on, and reached his place, where we remained some days. I assisted him in putting up several gates and in repairing fences; thus improving the appearance of the farm much. Darwin took his team and hired man, and with myself, Debby, and Ella went to Wabash Town, where the County Fair was then being held. We remained but a short time, as I had in working made several sores on my hands, which took on an erysipelatous inflammation, and had become painful. From the fair we went to my son Stephen's; found all well. By prompt applications of sugar of lead, dissolved in hop water, and taking an anodyne of paregoric and compound spirits of lavender, I slept well; and by the use of warm tea, and plenty of bed-clothes, I perspired moderately all night. Notwithstanding all this, however, I was laid up for three days, and had to dress my sores with Peruvian bark. Left Stephen's on Monday, the 8th of October, and reached home that day. The annual election came off on Tuesday. I was anxious to vote, and did so. The winter passed in the usual round of a small business.

On the 20th of May, 1861, I left home for Lafayette, Indiana, to attend a meeting of the Grand Council and Grand Chapter. I spent the time very pleasantly in these Grand bodies. Dined and supped with my old friend and fellow-student, Dr. O. L. Clark, whose company I enjoyed very much as well as that of his family. Daniel Mace, an old acquaintance, called on me at the lodge-room, and took me home with him to dinner, where I met his wife, with whom I was also acquainted. After dinner we had a most interesting sitting (she being a medium), in which I got a communication from my second wife, Mary Ann. The Grand Council and Chapter closed that afternoon, and I took the cars up to Wabash Town. Met with a Mr. Mason Thomas, and went home with him at half-past 10 P. M. Went to bed in an upper room alone, where I had another communication from my second wife, which was quite satisfactory. After a visit to my two sons, and attending to some business, I returned home, and spent the summer in the usual round of business.

September 26, 1861, was the National Fast-day. We started again for the Wabash. On our way out we stopped at Pierce Burton's, of Anderson, the county-seat of Madison County, Indiana. Burton married a daughter of an own cousin of mine, George A. Lapham, of South Adams, Berkshire County, Massachusetts. He was superintendent of a railroad, and was also an express agent. I saw him and his wife, and wife's mother, who was also a second cousin of mine, and whose maiden name was Brown. I had never seen either of these people before, and it had been forty years since I had been in Adams, or had seen my cousin George. An acquaintance, however, was soon formed, and we had a very pleasant time of it. The next day after our arrival we visited a military camp of a thousand men, who had just volunteered for the Union Army; but soldiers' life and encampments had become common, and they now seemed to partake more of a serious character. The novelty had passed. It was the second year of the rebellion, and there seemed to be a deep-seated determination to put it down. The whole country felt an interest in the matter. Every mind was employed to devise means to sustain the Union. A few were to be found to whom the name of copper-head was given; but the country has survived the shock; the main power has been crushed; the bondman made a free man. It is to be hoped that the breach will be healed, and the Republic in name be one in reality, and the whole world convinced that liberty and political rights can be sustained, and the road opened to all for fame, intelligence, moral worth, and greatness.

On our way back from the camp we stopped at an old acquaintance's of mine named Clifford. The family were strong Spiritualists; and we had a fine social chat, though short, on Spiritualism and matters and things in general. The next morning my brother, Horatio Mason, overtook us, and we all left together, after bidding our friends good-by, for a season. We then started for our children's residences on the Wabash. Reached my son Darwin's at dusk, and stayed all night. Next morning we both left, and went together as far as the Kilander farm. After looking over it we parted; my brother for his sons Warren and Alonzo's, and my wife and I going back to Darwin's. The weather was cold; so much so that I found my overcoat quite comfortable, and we had a blanket over our knees besides. Tuesday, October 1, 1861, was a little warmer. Found that the box on the buggy wheel was loose, and fastened it, went to Wabash, and then on to my son Stephen's. Left my wife there, and then went back to Wabash to a carriage-maker, who repaired my buggy wheel in the best manner. I then returned to my son's.

On the 3d of October we went to the fair, which was well attended, and the exhibition of agricultural products, as well as nearly all kinds of stock, was commendable. I promised them a speech the next day, but the rain prevented. On Saturday, after a heavy rain in the morning, we started, with my brother and his wife, in our buggies, and proceeded through Lagro, on our route to Eel River. Lagro is a small town on the Wabash River, where they have also the canal and a railroad, but the people lack capital or enterprise to make it what it might be made, though the place does considerable business. We stopped for dinner at Dr. Greenbury Steele's, who was expecting us. Here we were pleasantly entertained, although he was a copperhead. His early prejudices overcame his better nature. From here my brother and I soon parted; he going to Mr. Flinn's, a son-in-law, while my wife and I went to Jesse Jenks, and found all well. Sunday morning it rained, but cleared off early, and we went to Mr. Flinn's to dinner, where we met my brother and his wife, and enjoyed ourselves very much. After dinner we went to Mr. Jacob Singers', who had married a daughter of Stephen Jenks. Spent a few hours with them pleasantly, and then returned to Jesse Jenks. We visited a large number of the Jenks' families. Found them well; and, in main, doing well. On the 8th of October, 1861, we returned to my nephew, Warren Mason's. On this trip we met with several accidents, having broke both traces of the harness and one shaft of the buggy. At Warren's we met my brother

again, and all of us went to Wabash Town, where I made arrangements with Dr. Dickens to operate on my grandson Philip (Stephen's son) for gravel, or stone in the bladder. Returned to Warren's, and my brother started home. The next day we left for the Kilander farm and Ashland, where I had my harness repaired, and then to my son Darwin's. The day following we went again to see my old friend J. B. Tyler and family. Found them in their usual health. He was in the seventy-first year of his age, and we saw nearly all of his children and grandchildren. It was so cold that there was ice, but we returned to my son Darwin's, and prepared to leave for home. Early on the morning of the 16th of October we left Darwin's, and passing through Marion, Jonesboro', Fairmount, and Alexandria, reached Anderson at dusk, and found our friends about the same as when we left them in going out. We spent the night and until after dinner the next day with them, and then bidding them good-by we started for my wife's relative, Michael Gronendyke's. Reached there at dark. We left Gronendyke's for home, which we reached in due time, finding all safe. During the ensuing winter but little of interest transpired, except that in the month of February, 1862, I dissolved partnership with Alexander Morrow in the hat-store business.

May 21, 1862, left home for Indianapolis, to attend the meeting of the Grand Chapter and the Grand Council. Met with both, and delivered a valedictory address before them, which was well received, and they made me a life-member of both Grand bodies. After their adjournment I took the cars for Wabash Town. Went to the Recorder's office and had a mortgage canceled that Scott had given me on the land I had bought of him. I called to see my son Stephen and family; found all well. Then went to Warren Mason's, my agent. With him I went to the Kilander farm, and from there to the Tyler farm. The stock and crop looked well. We returned to his house, where I stayed all night, and the next morning went back to my son Stephen's. Saw Darwin there and had a long talk with him about his farming and the method of managing. He started home with his family and I went with him as far as Wabash Town, where I called on Colonel Hannah, by a previous agreement. Stayed all night and was most kindly treated by him and all the family. Left early next morning for Indianapolis. Immediately on arriving at that place I went to the Land Office, on business for my brother, in regard to some public land he had purchased. In the afternoon I went to the Grand Lodge, was put upon the Committee on Grievances, and had an arduous duty. Read to the Grand Lodge my farewell



address, which was well received. On Wednesday the Grand Lodge was closed, the members leaving for home, all well pleased with the session. I reached Dublin that night, and home the next morning, finding all well. I spent the summer in looking after and cultivating our garden, and keeping things in repair.

September 18, 1862, myself and wife again made a trip to the Wabash. We started on what was to us a new route from Connersville. Went through Harrisburg, Bentonville, and Louisville, and then turned off from the road and went to Spiceland; then through Greensboro', Cadiz, and on to Middletown. We stopped at our friend Fentress', near Greensboro', where we stayed all night, and had a very pleasant time and enjoyed ourselves much. The following morning we left and went to Anderson, where our relative Burton and family reside. Here I met my cousin, George Lapham, who lives in South Adams, Massachusetts, and whom I had not seen for just forty years. The meeting was highly interesting, though entirely unexpected. His daughter had been on a visit to Adams, where her father resides, and had spent the summer there for the recovery of her health, after her confinement. She and her child, a fine boy, had just returned. We reached there late in the afternoon, and remained over the next day and night. During that time George and I had frequent and long conversations on early life and the events of the past forty years, the present, and the future. He was a Second Advent man in religion, a soul-sleeper. Occasionally he would intrude his religious opinions, but I cut discussion short each time by simply saying that "we differed widely in religion, and it would be time badly spent in arguing upon a subject on which both our minds were fixed; that we were both old men, and no ordinary conversation on the subject would change either of us, but would, most likely, lead to ill feeling; I desired to enjoy the short time we would be together by conversing upon such topics as would interest us in the most pleasing manner." The time came for our departure, and we separated with the best of good feeling. It was a last and long farewell, as he died in October, 1865, of typhoid fever, at his home in South Adams, Massachusetts. We left our friend and relative Burton, his wife, and father-in-law, early on the morning of the 21st, for my son Darwin's, forty-three miles distant, and reached there at sundown, finding all well. The next day went to my old friend J. B. Tyler's, where we stayed all night. The day following we left for Warren Mason's; took dinner with him and then went to Alonzo Mason's for tea. Came back to Warren's, and closed our annual settlement, as agent for me in the two farms. The next morning

we left for Eel River, the Jenks neighborhood. Found our connections all well. We made about our usual visits, but, in addition, Jacob Singer took a ride with me to Manchester, some four miles distant on Eel River. Manchester is a pleasant little village, with several stores, and a mill or two. The land on the east side of the river for two or three miles is too sandy. The town is on a fine sandy plain, on the west side of the river. From there we went up the river three or four miles to Liberty Mills, which is rather a dilapidated village. There was a public sale of stock and farming tools near the town, so we stopped awhile and found all the usual accompaniments of a Western vendue. There seemed to be a ready sale and plenty to sell. The country on the west of Eel River may be said to be a fair farming country. We left the sale and returned to Mr. Singer's, and then went half a mile further to Mr. Fliun's, the one who had married my niece. Took tea with them, and had a good time, except that one of the children was sick. The next morning we went to Jesse Jenks', and met a large number of Jesse's family connections and others; had a good time generally and parted in friendship. With a few it was a final parting in this life. The next morning we left for my son Stephen's. On the road we called on our old acquaintance Dr. Steele and family. Reached my son Stephen's, and found his wife in bed, in confinement; mother and child were doing well. We called on Mr. Honeywell, who resides north of town on the plank road. He lives in a low, marshy locality, and has a small farm of this wet land. He invented a machine for making "draining tile," and had burnt one kiln and laid some of the tile, which bade fair to answer a valuable purpose. They are the common round tile, from one and a half inches in bore up to six inches. The machine is for moulding the tiles. He had a fine strawberry bed, the cultivation of which he understood well, and had that year made three barrels of strawberry wine, of fine flavor and good quality. It was made in the same manner as we had made it, only in a much greater quantity. He put about sixty pounds of white crushed sugar to each barrel of forty gallons, then put in of ripe berries as he had them to spare. In a few days they yielded their juice to the sugar, and floated on the top. In this way he, from time to time, put in of these ripe berries until the barrel was full. When the berries had yielded all their juice and were floating on the top, they were taken off and put in a cullender to drip, and when done they were thrown away. The labor is not much, but it is all important that when entirely cleared of the berries the wine should be racked off and bottled, or put into a clean cask. A little experience will soon

enable any one to make an excellent article. Mr. Honeywell had a great number of plum trees. To prevent the ravages of the curculio he made a large circular canvas, from ten to fifteen feet wide, funnel-shaped small in the center, and extending from the tree all around some ten or fifteen feet. Then the tree was jarred with a stick, made for the purpose, with a kind of cushion on the end, so that a blow from it would not injure the bark of the tree. The trees were all gone over every morning early, the curculio all shaken off, and the canvas well shaken; the curculio were then killed or well buried up. In this way he raised good crops of plums.

The County Fair came off while we were here. During the time of the fair the weather was more or less rainy, the attendance small, and the articles exhibited scanty in quantity. I had promised to make them a speech, but the weather prevented. While here my son Stephen was quite unwell, with a kind of dumb ague, but quinine and brandy cured him. One of his little boys was unwell, but cured with about the same treatment.

On the 9th we bade Stephen and family good-by, and went to my son Darwin's, who was then on the Tyler farm. Spent several days with him, arranging the business of the farm. On Tuesday, the 14th, left Darwin's for Anderson, where we found our relatives all sick; consequently, we went to a hotel and put up. The next morning we called and rendered them what assistance we could, much of it only in the way of advice. My Cousin George Lapham had left for his home in Massachusetts. We bade them farewell. It was the last I have ever seen of any one of them, for in a short time afterward a sister of Mrs. Burton's came out to Indiana, and took her home with her to Massachusetts, where she died the next January. She was of the lymphatic temperament, and possessed, naturally, weak and feeble powers of digestion.

From this place we went to my wife's connection—Gronendyke's—where I had a long conversation with his son, Amos Gronendyke. The next winter he went into the Federal Army as a lieutenant, where, as I learn, he ended his life in the service of his country.

Friday, 17th of October, 1862, we left Gronendyke's to visit our friend Fentress and family. On arriving there we found all well. Fentress has a daughter who is a medium. Had a sitting with her, and got in report with my second wife, Mary Ann, and with a promise for another sitting. Saturday, 18th, we had frost, so as to actually freeze. We went into Greensboro', to a Reformers', or

Spiritualists' meeting, and stopped at Mr. Thomas Reagen's. Went to meeting, and had a good lecture from Mrs. Cuppy, of Dayton, Ohio. Stayed all night at our friend Reagen's, who was then on a hunting tour in Jasper County, Indiana.

On Sunday morning we again went to meeting. The Reformers have a snug, neat house, built by a Reformer by the name of Henshaw, who was formerly a Quaker, and who made a present of it to an association of Spiritualists in Greensboro' and its neighborhood. For the morning hour there was a conference meeting. At these meetings each and every one present may speak, provided there be time. Sometimes these meetings are protracted for two or three hours. At this morning's conference I spoke on education, based on phrenology. My short lecture was well received, and the day was pleasantly spent, both in the forenoon and afternoon. Mrs. Cuppy delivered a lecture in the forenoon, and also in the afternoon. The meeting was closed that afternoon. I stayed all night at Mr. Fentress', but my wife, not being well, stopped at Mr. Reagen's. We had a sitting at Fentress', but got no communication.

The next morning I called for my wife, and we proceeded on to Knightstown, to visit friend Hill, where we met a number of our friends, who had stopped for dinner. I was here introduced to Mrs. Carr, who is a test clairvoyant medium. We stayed all night with Mr. Hill, who is not only a Spiritualist, but a horticulturist, and had made money at that business. He has twelve acres of ground in a high state of cultivation. For two years in succession he had a fine lot of peaches, which brought him, as he informed me, \$4,000. He has, besides, of sweet potatoes and sprouts, a large number, and raises two or three hundred bushels, generally, besides other things. The next morning I obtained from him a couple of grape roots, and some small plants, and then bidding him good-by, left for Dublin, where we arrived in time for dinner at our friend Smith's, whom we had promised to dine with. Here we again met a crowd of Reformers, or Spiritualists, the most of them returning from the meeting.

In the afternoon I called on quite a number of my old acquaintances, especially Mrs. Whippo, who had lost her husband, with whom I had long been acquainted, and was on the best of terms of friendship. We here met with Mrs. Carr again, and through much persuasion she was induced to remain. I had a short sitting with her, and though in a crowd, she said much that was interesting to me. Later, however, we sat in a large circle, but her attention was called to me. I took a seat so as to be able to

hear her, although at some distance from her. In this sitting she gave me a case in a manner well calculated to at least make a strong and decided impression on the mind. Addressing herself to me, she said: "Doctor, there is a woman standing by you; she is dressed in an old-fashioned cap, tied under the chin; has on a three-cornered handkerchief; is spinning flax from a distaff, and is cooking dinner in an old-fashioned outside chimney, pots and kettles on the fire." Directly afterward she said: "There is a man close by you. Oh, what a face he has! Oh, how the blood runs! You have been cutting or operating on it." I had not thought of the case for years. The description she gave awakened anew the recollection of the whole affair. All had transpired as she described it, both as to the dress and appearance of the woman, and the man's face. The circumstances were these: About thirty-five years before, this man applied to me professionally. He had been afflicted for a long time with polypus of the nose, and he also had a son laboring under the same disease, although it was not so far advanced as his own. I had operated on the son for it, and had afforded him much relief. The old man was so confident of my being able to relieve him, that he persisted in his desire to have me treat his case. He lived some distance from me, and it did not suit me to attend him; so he got an old cabin near me, where he and his family stayed for some time, or until I fully satisfied him that his case was past remedy. He went home, and in a few months died. This clairvoyant was about thirty-five years of age; was born in Warren County, Ohio, and had lived many years in Iowa, and by no possible means could she have known any thing of the case or circumstances. The next morning she had a sitting with my wife, and gave her a history of several of her relatives, as remarkable as the case she gave me. Soon after breakfast we left for home, which we reached in due time, and found all well except Ella, who was slightly indisposed.

On the 15th of November, 1862, we left home for Samuel Jenks', living east of Laurel. Stopped at my brother's, took dinner, and went on our way. Arrived at Jenks', but he was not at home. His wife informed us that Mrs. Murray, a daughter of Samuel Jenks, at Metamora, was anxious to see me; and it not being yet night we drove down a little below the mouth of Duck Creek to their house, where we stayed all night. I had not seen them for at least fifteen years. We found Mr. Murray a pleasant man, and a ready talker on all common-place subjects, including politics. I found him a good Republican. His wife had a difficulty with her right breast, being a case of fungus hematomas, and which caused

her death about twenty months afterward, though previous to that event I saw her at my home. The next day Mr. Murray and his wife went with us to her father's. It had been some fifteen years since I was at Metamora last. The town looked dilapidated, and the floods had injured the bottom lands. We spent the day pleasantly and renewed old acquaintances. Mrs. Murray was a niece of my first wife's. It was three years after this visit before I paid Samuel Jenks another one. Late in the fall of 1865 I visited him alone. He had lost his second wife, and was living with his two daughters whom he had by her. I stayed all night and had a long talk with him. After breakfast the next morning he got into the buggy with me, and we drove about three miles, going through Laurel and old Somerset, to see the widow of Gideon Jenks. It was a fine day and we had a very pleasant visit. I went up the hill, which is about one hundred and fifty feet high, which lays back of the old log-cabin, where I spent the most of the first summer after I came to Indiana, but I had not been at the place for over thirty years. It was considerably altered, but the rugged hill had resisted time, and to a great extent, the hand of man. The land on the top of the hill was good, and a large field had been cleared. From this site I had a fine view east and north, which was dotted over here and there with improvements, although the general aspect of the country was considerably broken.

In this visit I was much gratified. These visits to old localities always serve to recall early associations and the scenes of early life, when all our hopes and feelings beat high; and, if the mind has been properly trained, to shun idle and vicious pursuits, and taught to love all that can be made to elevate and dignify the human intellect, and provide against mishaps and the wants of advanced years. We review afresh our whole life, and then how sweet are the recollections of joyful hours spent with agreeable companions, and in looking forward with high hopes of ascending in the scale of intellectual endowments, and at the same time increasing our personal comforts. These visits, though several years apart, were both made late in the fall, as winter was approaching. I returned to my home and spent the winter in attending to the cares and every-day necessities of a household. I have never kept a servant or any kind of hired help to attend to the small matters of a family.

Spring came, and with it the usual round of cares in the way of a garden. Vegetables, and a great variety of small fruit of all kinds, I had in abundance, besides a great variety of flowers; but

now, this 8th May, 1866, after a severe winter, I feel the infirmities of age drawing on, and notwithstanding that my taste would incline me to greatly enjoy my beautiful flowers, fine vegetables, and tree and small fruit, including grapes, the question, or rather the struggle is, between taste and the labor necessary to preserve and produce these things. They are luxuries, but the pleasure arising from them is hardly an equivalent for the toil in producing them. Though partial to grapes, yet between the blight, mildew, and frosts of cold winters, I have been poorly, very poorly, compensated for their culture. I think I shall bid the Isabella and Catawba farewell, and am too old to spend my time in experimenting with new varieties, though I have the Delaware and two other varieties that I shall try a while longer.

I have already, perhaps, been too tedious in common-place matters, but when we reflect that the every-day affairs of life constitute by far the largest share or portion of our existence, we should look to these for the greatest sum of our happiness. It is to the domestic circle around the hearthstone. There should be associated with this a well-selected library for the means of improvement and acquiring knowledge of all things. It is with these surroundings that we may then look for the sum total of human happiness, and to prevent monotony we should so arrange it as to have some cherished friend to call now and then and spend a social hour, and dine or sup with us, and then we should return the compliment; and when we become old, have the means to fall back upon, with leisure for reflection, and when too feeble to follow the past vocations of life, we may have the means to amuse and interest us in other ways.

I spent the summer of 1863 in the care and cultivation of our gardens, up to September 19th, when we left home for the Wabash, and made our usual round of visiting. Went among our old friends, the Jenks', and also to my sons and nephews. The season had been very unfavorable for crops, especially for corn. The spring had been wet and the summer dry. Wheat was moderately good, but corn was almost a total failure. I sold off considerable stock, and then had to buy feed to save the rest. We left my son Darwin's for home on the 17th of October. At the time we left cattle and hogs were nearly worthless, owing to the scarcity of corn and feed. In addition to the drouth, there was frost during the latter part of August and early in September, which injured the corn crop. We stopped at Gronendyke's all night, and the next day proceeded on toward home, which we reached safely; having traveled forty miles, making ninety-six miles in two days.

We found all right at home. Spent the winter in attending to our domestic affairs, and in making a few visits in the neighborhood.

May 13th, 1864, myself and wife left home for Greensboro', to attend a meeting of the Reformers or Spiritualists. We stopped with our old friend Fentress, and attended the meeting, which was a moderate one, and which closed on Sunday late in the afternoon. We went home with our friend McGuffin and stayed all night. His wife is a very pleasant lady, and our visit with them was a very agreeable one. After breakfast we left his house and passed through Knightstown to Dublin, where we dined at our old friend, Mrs. Whippo's. She was not at home, but we were kindly received by her daughter and son. From there we returned home, and on the 18th of June, 1864, I went to Cottage Grove and attended a Reformers' meeting of two days. It was very well attended; Mr. Frank Wadsworth was the principal speaker. His discourse on Sunday was, "Comparing Philosophy with Religion." I noted in my memorandum-book at the time that it was one of the most logical discourses on the subject that I had ever heard. It was free from sarcasm, and was plain, straight-forward, argumentative; and, however persons might differ with him in opinion, they must admit that his argument was fair, open and logical. I spent two days at this meeting very pleasantly. My old friend Dr. Hill and one of his daughters came home with me and took dinner with us. We had a good time, but toward evening they left for home.

The subject of religion and religious views had occupied my thoughts for a life-time. I was brought up in the dogmas of the Baptist creed. At fourteen years of age I began to think and reason for myself. At twenty I became pretty well established in liberal sentiments, and have remained a Free-thinker; well satisfied that right wronged no one, and wrong doing could not result in good. As to futurity, or after the being in this life was ended, I had no fears, nor had I any distinct ideas about conditions. I was well satisfied that to *do* and *say* that which was *right*, was the best for all while here. About the year 1850 I heard much about the Rochester Spirit Rappings, which excited my curiosity; and finally they came into our own county, where I had an opportunity of not only witnessing the operations but of investigating the matter. There are two things of which there can be no doubt; first, that there are raps and many other evidences of physical force; and, secondly, that that manifestation of force is accompanied with intelligence, and that intelligence is, in the main, given in a plain,



systematic manner and truthful. Let the influence be what it may, it has the power of influencing individuals in various ways; but when attended to in a serious and thoughtful manner it always refuses to engage in that which is wrong. It uniformly teaches, that the dogma of a lake of fire and brimstone is a humbug, and that individuals who once lived on this earth will have an identity and an intelligent and separate existence in the eternal world; that this state of being or existence is to individualize matter, through which intelligence is individualized, and that man will have a conscious state of being in what is termed a spirit-being. It further teaches the law of causation; that there is positive good and negative evil, that all nature is made up of positive and negative principles. There is a beauty and harmony in it which is admirable, and its philosophy is irresistible. If we do not have this spirit existence, we have much to learn in regard to ourselves and our present state of being.

On the 20th of September, 1864, I took a trip to Wabash alone. Went by railroad, and visited my son Stephen and some friends in Wabash Town, also my nephews, Warren and Alonzo Mason. Afterwards went to see my old friend J. B. Tyler, and remained with him all night. They all seemed pleased to see me. After breakfast next morning went to the Kilander farm, found things at rather loose ends. From there I went to a Mr. Siders, who had agreed with my agent to rent the Tyler farm for the next year, and requested him to see me the next day at the farm. My son Darwin had in November, the year before, volunteered in the Union Army, in a cavalry company for three years, and left the farm and stock, much of it to go to loss. It was so managed that the farm was tended by one Asa Tyler, my first wife's nephew; but I was forced to sell all that was on the place, and rent the bare farm. I had advertised everything for sale, and on the first day of October, 1864, I sold all the stock, farming tools, and some hay, amounting to over \$700. In this farming operation I had lost largely. I hold the farm yet, and have had it very much improved. As soon as the sale was over, I left with Warren Mason for his house. I had a laborious day with him settling up. Closed up the sale, and left the notes with him to collect when they became due. From Warren's I went with my son Stephen to his house. On Monday, October 3d, Stephen took me to Wabash where I took the cars for home, and arrived after 6 P. M., finding all well and glad to see me. I spent that winter as I had the last four or five previous ones.

In the spring all was preparation for a trip, West and North, to

spend the entire summer; and, on the 23d day of May, 1865, we took our seats in the omnibus for Cambridge, and then to Richmond and Logansport, which latter place we reached about 4 P. M.; stopping at a hotel over night, and hunted up old acquaintances. Found my old friend Bartlett, and had a long talk with him. He called again after early supper, and went with me to see Dr. Justice, whom we found at his office. My wife was with me. I also met with Thomas Helm, who had lived, and gone to school, in our town. He was then teaching in the High School at Logansport. While residing in our town he was much in my drug-store, and I had furnished him with books. He seemed greatly pleased to meet with me. The next morning we rambled over town. I had never been in the place before in daylight, and was much pleased with the location. It fully met my expectations. All it lacks is capital and enterprise; with which it must, and will, make a place of considerable importance. It has water-power in great abundance, and the advantages of railroad facilities in every direction, and fine timber for the manufacturing of all classes of agricultural implements, with the means of sending them in every direction. The country, from Richmond to Logansport, is singularly diversified. I have been over much of it, from Richmond to Anderson, but from there to Logansport it was all new to me; much of it flat. About 9 A. M. the cars from Toledo came in, and we took them for Peoria. As we were going to the cars we met with my old acquaintance, John O'Kane, whom I had not seen for years. He went in the cars with us to Peoria, where he resided. We spent the most of the time on the route in conversation. He is an intelligent, well-read man, and a preacher of the Campbellite or Christian community. From Logansport west to the State line was entirely new to me. The country is much better than I expected. The day was a cold, drizzling, damp one, and we were passing over a flat country, which had the appearance of being very wet prairie land, though occasionally the land seemed high enough. There was more improved land than I expected to find. The grass had grown to a considerable height, and quite a large number of droves of cattle were herded along this line until we got some distance into Illinois. We reached Peoria about dusk, crossing the river on a drawbridge. There are two of these bridges at this point. Peoria is quite a large city, but it was too late at night when we arrived there to see much, and we were off too soon in the morning to see more than a few houses along the track of the railroad. The morning was cool, and the main object we had then was to keep warm. The country, for some distance

west of Peoria, is broken, and not interesting. Peoria is in the center of an extensive region of excellent coal, and the river is navigable above as far as La Salle. As we approach near to Knox County the land becomes fine, and this county may justly be regarded as the finest in the State. We reached Galesburg early in the forenoon, and stopped with McQueen, who married my step-daughter (a daughter of my second wife's), and remained with them until Monday, the 29th of May. During the time we saw much of the place, and I visited two different Masonic Lodges on two different evenings. On Sunday, late in the afternoon, we took quite a walk with Mac and his wife, and went into a portion of the city settled by the Swiss. Everything looked clean, neat, and orderly; indicating thrifty citizens. They had a plain, neat church, though rather small. In our round we visited the more thickly settled part of the city. As we were passing by a splendid church, which was being opened for service, we were induced to stop and look in. The inner part of the building was more splendidly finished than the outside, and was the best finished of any I had ever seen. We were invited to go in, but excused ourselves by saying we were transient visitors, only walking out for pastime.

Galesburg has a population of over ten thousand inhabitants, and has a fine College, and Female Seminary, under the management of the Presbyterians, and a fine College under the direction of the Universalists. It was originally designed, exclusively, as a seat of learning; but being the junction of two important rail-railroads—one from Peoria to Burlington, thence to the Des Moines River, at Ottumwa; the other, from Chicago to Quincy, and a branch to Keokuk—it has become quite a manufacturing place. The inventor of the "Corn Planter" has a large factory here for manufacturing his "Planters," while there are quite a number of other shops of considerable size, besides large machine-shops, for the use of the roads, at the extensive depot of the Junction. The location is in the heart of a fine area of prairie land. There are a number of churches besides those before mentioned, and there is also a full share of stores of every kind and variety. From this place we went to Keokuk by the way of the junction of the Quincy and Springfield Railroads; crossed the river, at Keokuk, in a steam ferry-boat, and immediately took the cars up the Des Moines, so that we had no opportunity of seeing the city, as a hill rises near the bank of the Mississippi concealing it from view. We stopped at Farmington, thirty miles from Keokuk. There is very little to interest the traveler in going over this portion of the road. We

crossed the river at Farmington, and went out to my friend Dr. Ephraim Clifford's, and spent a week with him. Here I had the misfortune to be unwell for a couple of days during the time. This, with the numerous business engagements of the Doctor, prevented our going out together but very little, though I was in town several times. The place had rather declined since I was there in 1854. Saturday, June the 4th, 1865, the Doctor geared up his horse and spring wagon, and he and his wife, and myself and wife, got in, and, crossing the river, went into the village. Called on the widow of General Swasey, with whom I boarded when sick in 1854, and by whom I was so kindly treated. While we were at her house word came that her brother had been badly stabbed in the side in a quarrel with a man with whom he had had business. This broke up our visit, of course, and it was not renewed. Dr. Clifford and I, both, were invited to call and see the wounded man, which we did, although they had called in the family physician. He had reached the house before us, but had waited until our arrival. I was formally introduced to him, and he at once invited me to examine the wound, which I did. It had been inflicted by a hook-bladed pocket pruning-knife. The point had been struck in a standing-up manner, hitting the first floating rib, and extending upward, over the second rib, up to the third. The men were standing face to face, and, as the blow was given, the knife not only went upwards but was drawn forward, so that an incision fully three inches long was made. I used my forefinger as a probe in making the examination. The doctor in attendance was inclined to think that the knife had penetrated the cavity of the thorax; but, from all the circumstances, I could not come to that conclusion. The breathing did not indicate it, although the cavity between the first and second rib, and between the latter and the third, would seem to indicate that condition; but the effusion of blood, and the retention of the glutinous portion, might close the opening, and it would have been wrong to break that up; hence I desisted. Then the question was as to the mode of dressing. It was decided that it was best to close the wound, as far as it could be done, with adhesive straps, and then use a compress and bandage, so as to get, as far as possible, a union by the "first intention." The doctor finally consented. He had the fish-glue adhesive plaster, and cut it into narrow stripes, and sufficiently long to extend at least three inches beyond the wound, putting them on edge to edge. I managed the wound, and the doctor the straps. The cut was most admirably closed, and the straps secured by cross-straps. A thick pledget was made, about four inches square,

and then wet in cold water and laid over the wound, and directions given to be kept constantly wet, and the patient fed on light diet. At the time of receiving the wound he was in full health, and by the wound he had lost but little blood. This was on Saturday afternoon, and on Monday morning the use of the cold water was left off, and he was comfortable. He had been kept as much as possible on the left side, the one on which the wound had been inflicted. By letter I learned that he was not confined a week. I have been particular in giving the whole of this case to show that by proper treatment, however simple, a bad case may be managed successfully, and do well. The success in this case was in adapting the treatment to the condition, and giving nature full power to do her work; and, though the treatment was plain and simple, it proved successful. The case might have been different had the individual been in bad health or had lost much blood. In such a case different treatment would have been necessary.

Sunday, June 4th, and night succeeding were much the hottest of the season. The last of May was cool and dry. We bade our friends good-by and took the cars for Pella, eighty-six miles distant. Along the Des Moines River the country is broken and hilly. The bottoms, most of the way, are narrow, and the hills high until we reach Ottumwa. Then the bottoms widen and the hills lessen in height. The country from Keokuk up the river for eighty miles is a fine sheep country, and is being well stocked. At several points on the lower Des Moines River several woolen factories are doing a good business. It has fully realized my expectation in 1854. The country back from the river is a fine, level, prairie region, though not so level as in many other places. We reached Pella at a quarter before 5 P. M. We then took the stage for Fort Des Moines, distance forty miles, which we reached within a few minutes of 2 A. M., so that we had but little opportunity of seeing the country, but we had an agreeable company and a fine ride notwithstanding. Pella had improved largely since 1854. I had business to transact in Des Moines, which occupied the greater part of my time, yet I was over the most of the city. Some very fine improvements, in the way of buildings, had been made since I was there last. The hotel at which I stopped when here in 1854, and which was regarded at that time as the best kept house and the best building of the kind in the place, was a mere pigmy to the Savery House, which is four stories high, covers the fourth of a square, and fronts on two streets. One day while I was there James Miller, a man with whom I had business on

account of William H. Houston, procured a buggy, and we went out into the country a short distance, to see some land that Houston was interested in. Going out and coming in I had an excellent opportunity of seeing the State buildings and grounds. The location is a fine one, the ground descending in every direction. It overlooks considerable country, and in time will be a lovely place. Much grading, however, will be necessary, and a large outlay for public buildings, also, as the present ones are only temporary. The business part of the place is between the Des Moines and Raccoon Rivers, and will always be so. Everything is being done here on the high-pressure principle. Prices of property are now up to the anticipated prices of some twenty years hence. The valley of the Des Moines, above the city, is well stocked with timber suitable for wagons and all kinds of agricultural implements. A large business can and will be done at this point, and in this line a considerable business is even now being done. Fort Des Moines is an incorporated city and includes within its limits three miles, east and west, and four miles north and south; a considerable portion is dotted over with residences. We had quite a number of acquaintances in the city, who invited us to dine and sup with them, which we did, and had a very pleasant time, especially with Abraham Boice, a man upward of eighty years of age, whom I had known well for nearly fifty years. We dined with James Miller, had a fine dinner and a good time. Boice and his wife were also there. While we were at the Fort there was a Convention, attended by delegates from every part of the State, the object of which was to devise means for a permanent home or asylum for the orphans of Union soldiers in the late war. The Convention was largely attended, and the final result, as I have learned since, was the purchase of a spacious building in Fulton, on the Mississippi, which had formerly been built for a hotel. In the Des Moines valley, as well as elsewhere, the trees and bushes were infested with a worm called the "measuring worm." In many places the apple trees were entirely stripped of their leaves by these insects. The plum bush was not spared, and in some places the oak suffered, especially the small bushes.

On Friday morning, between 4 and 5 A. M. we took the stage for Nevada, thirty miles north of Fort Des Moines. We had taken our passage and paid our fare (twenty-three dollars and sixty cents for myself and wife) to Clinton, distance two hundred miles. On our route to Nevada we traveled over a diversified country, of hills, dales, timbered land, and prairies, and crossed several streams of water, the head branches of the Skunk River, and some of the

branches of the Iowa, It had been very dry weather, but in the forepart of the night it had rained very hard, and the whole of our route was soaked with rain. The morning was cloudy and damp. The country over which we passed would make a fair farming country, but not as desirable as many other places. Reached Nevada at 1 P. M. Steam was up on the train, and we were hurried from the stage-coaches to the cars, and then hurried off without ceremony or dinner. Fortunately, I had provided for it at the Fort, in bread, cheese, crackers, and dried beef, so we fared well. Reached Clinton about 8 P. M., and went to a hotel. Early the next morning we found our relatives and moved our quarters. The country from Nevada to Clinton is mostly prairie, and is the best body of land, for the distance, over which I ever traveled, and is, in the main, well watered. This country must become one of the best farming regions in Iowa. The advantages of the railroad is everything to the country, although it is an open prairie, and to a great extent destitute of timber; yet at the Mississippi the best of pine lumber can be had at moderate prices, as also cedar for posts. Vast quantities of lumber are rafted down from Wisconsin, in the shape of pine logs and cedar posts, which are sawed by steam all along the river; and where there are accommodations into the interior of the country by railroad, the people are not only supplied with lumber at moderate prices, but are afforded facilities for sending off whatever surplus there may be. This road opens a direct trade with Chicago, East to Boston and New York, or from the interior to Clinton, and then by the river to New Orleans, and from thence to Eastern ports or to Europe. Although this country, a few years ago, was inland, and remote from market, it is now in the midst of it. Besides, the road is extending West, to be connected with the great Pacific. It is to be extended this summer (1866) to the Missouri River, and onward west until it connects the great "Pacific Railroad" at some point in Nebraska. This route must and will be at least *one* of the great thoroughfares from the East to the Pacific. It is on a direct line from Boston to the north line of Nevada and California. Thus far the road has been built by the energies of its contractors, and by such resources as they could command. The views here expressed may seem visionary, but I think otherwise, and go still further, and say that Clinton is bound to be a considerable city; and were I a younger man I would risk all I have in investments in the place. I was at this point in 1857, and then again in the spring of 1865, and was astonished at the improvements I saw. There was an extension of the railroad, and a splendid drawbridge; the road bringing in the products of

the back country for two hundred miles, and then returning into the interior with lumber or materials all ready prepared, by machinery, for building houses, and this beside fencing-lumber and shingles. This must and will always be a considerable shipping point on the river. I lacked, at the time I was there, ready capital, or I would have made purchases of real estate. From this place we went down the river to Cordovia, sixteen miles, my wife having acquaintances living there. I went back into the country and saw some good land, and also some entirely too low and wet.

Cordovia was laid out some years ago, and a town commenced with a view to its being a place of some importance. There was a considerable point of land putting out into the river, and the latter making a short bend, formed a kind of cove or eddy that served as a landing for boats. The town seemed to have been commenced at the point, and a ferry had been established connecting with a town on the opposite side of the river, in Iowa. The ferry is still continued, and considerable crossing is done there. This place was much affected by the wind blowing up sand and injuring the gardens and buildings, so much that this part of the town was entirely abandoned, with the exception of a stone warehouse, which was in use when we were there in 1865. After spending a week at this point we returned to Clinton.

I paid several visits to Lyons, which is two miles further up the river. It is quite a large place, and doing a considerable business. It has a seminary of learning, and a large, well-built building which was designed for a hotel. The location is not a very desirable one, but if they will so manage it as to convert or devote the place entirely to educational purposes, it may retain something like its present condition. But Clinton is a fixed fact; with the railroad crossing the Mississippi there, it possesses advantages which would be hard to create at any other point. The location is a fine plain for a city, and includes an excellent stone quarry, besides possessing an abundance of the best of clay for brick, and the best saw-mills in the world, which are run by steam power, on the new principle of the application of power produced by the friction of iron on soft wood. The same amount of power is gained, with less steam. There are two or three mills of this kind, all capable of cutting about 100,000 feet of lumber per day, and doing a large amount of machine work, as well as cutting with a saw 40,000 or 50,000 shingles per day. These mills are run and kept in constant operation by sawdust, and only consume about two-thirds of what is daily made. Considerable piles of waste



material, that could not be cut into laths or otherwise used, was sold for wood to the citizens of the place.

While here I took a ride out west of the town, to some high land that I had seen at a distance, on a former drive into the country. The place was about two miles out. The high land rose by a gentle slope to a considerable height, and was little else than a bank of sand, which, though not good for building purposes, was very fine, and largely mixed with loam, and was then under cultivation in corn. When on the top of this elevation we had a fine view of the country, particularly of that portion on the opposite side of the river, in Illinois, and down the river to Camanche, where, a few years ago, the town was nearly destroyed by a hurricane, at which time several lives were lost. A town on the Illinois side was pointed out to us as the spot where Black Hawk was taken prisoner. On the Illinois side, opposite to Lyons, is Fulton. There is a steam ferry across the river at this point.

I have been somewhat lengthy in describing this locality, because of its importance. There has been considerable rivalry between these towns, but I think that their destiny is fixed by the permanent location of the railroad at Clinton, and the location there of the shops for repairing all the running stock of the road, and for the manufacture of cars. The railroad keeps a large force constantly employed at this point; several hundred hands were at work when I was there. There was a large amount of lumber shipped on the road, and there was also a track along the river where all the mills were located, and there were also a number of houses. The cars were run along this track, loaded and unloaded, and then run out and switched off the main track in such a way that a train was made up. This was an every-day business. There were a few very good stores, and various kinds of retail shops for articles of every description.

On Monday, the 26th of June, 1865, we bade our friends farewell, and took the cars for Sycamore, on the "Dixon Air Line." (These roads have been consolidated, and are now called the Great South-west Railroad.) We reached Courtlandt Station, opposite Sycamore, and had to wait until near sundown for the cars to run down to Sycamore—four miles—which is done on a side track. This train runs out in the morning, and returns in the evening. At last we reached our nephew, H. H. Mason's, who was expecting us, and seemed much pleased to see us. We visited that place in 1854, and again in 1857. The railroad had been built since then, and the town, as well as the whole country, had improved much since we were there last.

Soon after we reached there I went with my nephew, in his spring wagon, a distance of about thirty miles, to a farm he had down near the "Chicago and Quincy Railroad." We were gone the most of three days, and two nights, going one road and returning another, so that I saw much of the country. As we went South it grew better all the time, and the neighborhood where my nephew's farm lay was decidedly better than the country about Sycamore. The farm that we went to see was fine land, and it had not been long since he had commenced improving it; but when it is properly improved it will be a fine prairie farm. We took several drives while at Sycamore, and saw much of the country. On a former visit I had seen a great deal of it, and gave a general outline in another place. Since I was there last they had built a fine large building, which was well finished; a graded school was taught in it. For the first time in my life I saw specimens in geology used in teaching scholars in a primary school. They had some fine instruments, which were used in teaching the various branches. Wisconsin, Illinois, and Iowa are taking the lead in primary departments of learning, and yet there is room for further improvement. (See article, Appendix to the Lecture on Education.)

While here I was introduced to a "healing medium," by the name of David Lathrop, whose address is Chicago, Illinois. He was staying temporarily at Sycamore and was doing a large business, more than he could do justice to. I tried his powers in curing my deafness. He improved it materially but not permanently, as in my case it is an hereditary difficulty. After arriving at a certain period of life I quit the use of tobacco, while influenced by him, and have not used it since, nor do I care about using it. My nervous system had received a shock from its excessive use from which it has not yet recovered. For a time I fancied that my system felt the loss in the non-indulgence of the weed, and I used some good whisky, but soon discontinued it. I have now (December 1866,) no desire for tobacco or liquor, and to bring up my health and restore all the secretions I am using freely the muriated tincture of iron, which is improving my health. Sycamore is one of the hardest places to form acquaintances that I ever was in. We were there four weeks during the latter part of June and the forepart of July, and the weather had been very changeable. The hay and wheat were cut the 20th of July, but there was too much rain; and, as I learned by letter after I left, the crops were badly injured. At the time I left Sycamore, which was the 24th of July, it had rained hard during the night. We went up to the station, took

the cars for the Junction, and were detained there nearly all day. Between four and five o'clock we had a heavy shower of rain. The depot is on level ground, and the water that fell nearly covered the rails on the road. The cars at last arrived, and we took seats for Richmond, Illinois, the terminus of the road. On the cars we met a Mr. Ruby, from Richmond, Indiana, who told us that the crops in that section were much injured by the rain. He was the only person we saw from Indiana while we were out West that season. It was dark when we arrived, but we were fortunate in getting a conveyance to my cousin Briggs Thomas', living a mile from town, for which we had to pay two dollars. We found that our relatives had gone to bed, but they were soon up, and received us kindly, seeming pleased to see us. We arrived there on the 24th of July and left on the morning of the 3d of August. While there we had several pleasant drives, and found the country and villages much improved from what they were in 1857. The country is better for farming purposes than I had before believed it to be. It is well adapted to the dairy business, which, to some extent, is now being carried on, and will be increased, as fine locations can be obtained for cheese factories. Grass grows well, and on most farms good stock water can be had. A considerable business is now done in milk, by sending it in cans to Chicago by railroad. Land was high; good farms, with moderate buildings, were sold at fifty dollars per acre. We had a fine visit with our relatives, but, bidding them good-by, we left for the north-western part of the settled portions of Wisconsin; took the cars for Crystal Lake, and then again for Oshkosh, on the Winnebago Lake, at the mouth of Wolf River, which place we reached the same day, and put up for the night at the Adams House. I was very agreeably disappointed in the country between Crystal Lake and Oshkosh. We passed through a number of towns in succession, some of which might be called small cities, and over a fine farming region, inhabited by a thrifty people. We crossed McHenry County, Illinois, at an angle, passing through Woodstock, the county-seat. This was a large, fine town, indicative of a prosperous country and enterprising citizens. The distance from Crystal Lake to Oshkosh is one hundred and fifty-one miles. Janesville, at the crossing of Rock River, had a population of seven thousand seven hundred and three in 1850, which has been largely increased since. Watertown, at the crossing of the railroad from Milwaukee to St. Paul, is a place of considerable business, and had a population in 1860 of five thousand three hundred and two, which since then has been largely increased. Next is Fond du Lac, situated at the head of Winnebago

Lake. This is a place growing rapidly, and has a water communication direct to Buffalo, New York, by the Winnebago Lake, through its outlet, the Big Fox River, into Green Bay, out of Green Bay into the Straits of Mackinaw, then into Lake Huron, from that into Detroit River, out into Lake Erie. By a recent census it has a population of over eleven thousand. Next is Oshkosh. This place is situated on the west side of Winnebago Lake, on the north side of Wolf River, near its mouth, or, it may be said, at its mouth. In 1860 its population was six thousand and eighty-six, and in 1865 it was nine thousand six hundred, and is growing rapidly. It has similar advantages to Fond du Lac, though it is more immediately on the highway from the Mississippi, through the Wisconsin, Little Fox, and Wolf Rivers, into the Winnebago Lake, and from thence to Green Bay, and thence to any point where the chain of Western Lakes can reach. Green Bay is now connected with Lake Superior by a railroad, hence Fond du Lac and Oshkosh are brought in connection with the copper region, as well as the iron region of Lake Superior, at Marquette and Ontonagon. Both of these cities are on the great highway between Green Bay and the Mississippi, at the mouth of the Wisconsin River. A regular line of steam packets has been established and run through for two years. As this portion of the country becomes improved and settled, the business must increase, and both of those cities be enlarged. Not only this State and immediate region, but the whole West, is, as yet, but a giant in embryo.

The morning after our arrival, as soon as breakfast was over, we took passage on board of a steamboat on the Wolf River, for Northport. On ascending this stream, in the main, it is deep water, and in several places spread out into a lake. The country along the stream is low and flat, except that, now and then, a high piece of land extends up to the water's edge, with a bold bluff, though not high. The point where the Little Fox puts in is not visible on the route that the steamboat runs. The river was said to be high at the time we went up, and was over all the low ground along the stream, and was low as we came down. The difference, I thought, was about two or two and a half feet. In some places, where there was grass, when we went up the water not only covered the ground but was some inches up the grass; when we returned the water was down and the ground bare, the grass had been cut and stacked on some high place. The river is a very crooked one, and becomes more so as we go higher up, or rather the turns are shorter and more frequent. We went through one "cut off" that was not half a mile which was said to be three miles

round. As we go up we get into a woody country, the woods coming up to the edge of the water, and the water being nearly on a level with the land. The timber is soft maple, elm, and such as grows on moist land, though I saw but little of the swamp ash. At last we reached Northport, which is about six miles below New London, the terminus of the line of boats running on this part of the river. It was said that a smaller class of boats ran some forty or fifty miles farther up, and that a considerable business is done by these steamboats. There are two boats running constantly, one up the other down, every day. The line pays well, I should judge, as quite a number of passengers were on board when we went up, and several when we returned. Besides passengers, the boats take all the freight they can get, both up and down. There are also several small tugs used on the river for towing rafts of plank and logs. At Northport we met with a team going out to Royalton, in which we put our trunk and then getting in ourselves started out. About half way there we met my nephew, Chester D. Combs, coming in a spring-wagon to Northport for us. We transferred ourselves and baggage to his vehicle, and reached Royalton a little before sundown. All were strangers, as well as the locality, to us. We arrived in Royalton on the 4th day of August, 1865. The weather, for the season, had been cool, though the day we reached there was a pleasant one. We found our relatives all well, and comfortably situated in life. I at once was at ease, and readily entered into a familiar acquaintance; felt at home. There were three of my youngest sister's sons living at this place, two of them were married men, each with two children. The youngest of the boys was only about twenty years old. The two married ones, Chester D. and Stephen M. Combs, were partners in common in all their business. Chester D. had been brought up, to some extent, in a store, and he had the principal management of the store department. Stephen M. resided on forty acres of land adjoining the town, and was attending to some cleared ground. They had been running a saw-mill and shingle machine, and were running the shingle machine at that time. These machines are quite a curiosity. The cutting is done by a circular saw, running in a horizontal manner, the teeth filed like a ripping saw, and at a considerable distance apart. A rapid motion is given to the saw, which is fastened on the top of an upright shaft, by means of bolts and screws. The result of the sawing is different from what one would expect; it left the sides of the shingle tolerably smooth. The sawing took out a ribbon-like shaving, with more or less toughness, depending on how much the sawing cut across the grain of

the wood. The motion of the saw was given by a belt run from the main wheel or shaft to the shaft to which the saw is attached. Over the saw there is a movable slide (that has two motions) on which the block is laid, and moved backwards and forwards by the hand of the tender. The other motion is a rocking motion, so that the block cuts thick at one end and thin at the other, and the end changed at each shingle that is cut off, which falls into the story below, where it is jointed by a circular saw. Each shingle is handled by itself, then handled again, and packed in one-quarter thousands.

This lumber business was a new one to me, although in 1816 I was in a lumber region at Oleon Point, on the Alleghany River. This, like all other business, is susceptible of being reduced to a regular system; from the first cutting of the tree in the woods, until it is cut into lumber of some kind and then conveyed to market. The logs are cut in the winter season, in the woods where they grow. These pine lands are owned by single persons or by companies, who employ a greater or less number of men to go into the woods to cut the timber, and saw it into logs of from fourteen to eighteen feet long, and sometimes longer. A man with a small family is selected to go into the woods, where a good comfortable log-cabin is built, with a sleeping room up-stairs. This is "head-quarters." A good log-stable, made tight by chinking and daubing, is built for the horses that are necessary in the business. There is also a building for a feed or provision store. A certain set of men are employed to cut down the trees, while another set saw the logs and cut the first two letters of the owner's name with a chopping-ax, near one end through the bark into the sap part of the wood; besides this, they have a stamp of iron with the two first letters of the man's name, and the end of the log is stamped nearly all over with these letters, so that each plank after being sawed will have one or both of these letters. Teams are then employed to haul these logs on two short sleds coupled together. In this way they are hauled to the first stream that will float them in a full tide of water, each log singly by itself. The logs are hauled and rolled upon the ice in the creek, and when that is covered they are unloaded in a convenient place so that they can be rolled into the creek when up. To accomplish this there is quite an outfit. Teams to take provision to the workmen, and forage for teams that do the work. All these supplies must be kept up. When the winter breaks up and the streams are free from ice, men are employed to run the logs out. For this purpose the stream is kept as clear of fallen timber as

can conveniently be done. Each and every man is provided with a good smooth stiff pole with a spike at the end, well fastened, with two good rings around it. The poles are from ten to sixteen feet long. When a log stops this pole is used to pry off, and the log is shoved ahead again until it reaches a point where it floats more rapidly. The men are furnished with a narrow raft made of hewn logs, fastened together with pieces pinned across to each log, and as soon as plank can be obtained it is floored and sided up some three or four feet and roofed: here the victuals are cooked and eaten, and the men are lodged at night. Thus tediously these logs are floated down to a point where they can be put together into rafts. For this purpose, at each point where there is an eddy or a bayou, there is formed what the lumber-men call a "boom," which is simply made thus: with a pile-driver a post (out in the stream) is driven down into the mud until it will stand upright, and so continued in a row sometimes for half a mile. They are then pinned or otherwise fastened together, by long slender trees to each post the entire length of the "boom." The opening at the lower end is fastened in the same way. The upper end is left open and the floating logs are run into these "booms;" and then each man's logs, being known by their marks, are separated from the rest and rafted as each may desire. These "booms" are fitted up by an incorporated company, who charge so much per log for securing and rafting. This is an extensive business. I saw in the summer of 1865 acres upon acres of those logs lying in the Wolf River, as late as the last days of August, as we were returning home. The most of these logs were taken out of that stream by means of steam tugs.

Thus I have taken the reader to the tree in the forest; led him with the team to the mere rivulet and down to a stream that will float a small steamboat, from where the logs are rafted and floated out; have given the whole process in detail. Thousands upon thousands of these logs are floated down the Mississippi.

Statesmen may make their long speeches in the halls of legislation on finance, and show their statesmanship and diplomacy, which after all is simply to develop the ability of men to outmanage and overreach each other, but far better would it be to enact a well-digested system of good sound laws, by which the rights and privileges of each and every man could be secured to him, and he be protected from being eaten up by the maw of large monopolies. After all, it is the plain practical man who ensures the wealth of any country. Give skill and honest toil full protection and thrift

will abound. As one branch becomes crowded a new one will spring up.

So far as improvements of the country go to increase wealth and population, this cold locality has made as rapid strides as almost any State in the Union. By the census returns for 1830 the population was 11,683. Year by year the population and improvements have increased, until in the year 1865 the population could safely be put down at 1,000,000. Almost the entire State is free from bilious fevers of every kind; even the lazy dumb ague is unknown. Typhoid fever, pleurisy, and lung complaints constitute the main diseases of the country. The State is checkered with railroads, crossing the State from Milwaukee and other points, to the various points on the Mississippi River. There is a considerable scope of country lying north of the present settled portion, between that and Lake Superior, that is unknown. That scope is over sixty miles between east and west, and thirty miles north and south. It is thought to abound in minerals, and in some places in fine pine lumber. The State seems to be a summit level, abounding in fine small streams and a large number of small lakes, as well as a few of larger size. In some sections considerable swamps of tamarack and cedar timber are found, and in a few places there is the red cedar. Some of these swamps are easily cleared up and drained, affording then the best of land. In no part that I have seen is the country thrown up into high hills and narrow valleys. In a few places it is a little hilly, but seldom so steep but that a team can be driven anywhere. As the north is approached the land is less productive. The streams as well as the lakes abound in fish, especially the pike. In the early settlement of country, and before the more modern civilization, the saw-mill, steamboats on the larger streams, were in full operation as now, these streams and small lakes were said to have been literally crowded with fish, and they abound yet in the larger lakes and in some of the smaller ones.

There is another subject of deep interest, especially to the antiquarian, and that is the mounds that are to be found all over that country, particularly along the most of its water-courses. I saw some of these in Waupacca County, east of the county-seat about six miles, and near the residence of Dr. Marcens Woods, on the outlet of Bear Lake. I spent a part of two days in examining this spot. It commences within a few rods from where the stream leaves the lake, and extends down the stream for a short distance. The creek bank is from twenty to twenty-five feet high above the creek itself, and from the brow of this elevation back some twenty



o twenty-five rods. The ground then falls off into a kind of wet ravine, several rods in width, forming a fine cranberry marsh. The ground on the west side gradually rises up to a plain. These mounds, if we may so call them, are on the land between the cranberry marsh and the creek that forms the outlet of the lake. Some of these mounds are not more than three feet high, and resemble the figure of a man lying upon his face with his arms extended at right-angles with his body. Some were oval-shaped; but none of them more than three or four feet high, and there must have been from fifteen to twenty in number on three or four acres of ground. The mounds and ground were of a very sandy loam. The ground was under cultivation in corn, and was in the month of August when I was there. We passed over the locality in various directions and finally became separated, then each of us went "on his own hook." We were enticed by pieces of pottery which we occasionally found. I picked up quite a handful of curious make, rejecting all the plain simple pieces, and retaining only such as I supposed constituted the rim of the vessel. Some of these were finished with various devices. I calculated that as many as four or five different ones would be necessary to finish the work, even if it had been done by the vessel being turned in the potter's lathe. I should think that the clay out of which the vessels were made was not of the best kind, but nevertheless it had the appearance of once having been well burned, and besides, such ware must have been lying exposed a long time even to have the action of the seasons produce the change that had evidently been wrought. I have several of the specimens now in my possession. I also found a few flint arrow-heads.

In a work, gotten up by authority of the Wisconsin Legislature—two volumes of which I had the opportunity of seeing—I find that that country had been explored in almost every direction, and that much highly interesting matter has been collected concerning it all along the lake shore of Lake Michigan. These kinds of mounds abound especially in the neighborhood of Milwaukee, and also along the Mississippi, and quite a number of the streams in the more western part of the State. In a work by William Pidgeon, published in New York City in 1853, we find that he spent several years in investigating the subject of these mounds. He also made a visit to South America, with a view to the explorations of the mounds there. He examined those in Ohio; visited St. Louis, Galena, and Prairie du Chien, the latter place being the frontier military post, and within nine miles of the line dividing civilization from barbarism. "Even at this early date," he says, "many

mounds had been disturbed, and in places the plow had made its encroachments." At Prairie la Crosse Mr. Pidgeon was introduced to an old Indian, over eighty years of age, named De-coo-dah, a man much revered by the Indians as one of stern integrity and strict veracity, and a man well acquainted with the traditions of his people. He also claimed to be a descendant of the "mound builders." Mr. Pidgeon was in the company of this old man, most of the time, for three years, and had his entire confidence, the two being on the best of terms.

De-coo-dah's explanation of the use and object of the mounds gives an entirely new version of the whole matter; and, there being such a degree of consistency and reasonableness in the whole of it, one is forced to examine the new order on which the whole theory is founded. The principle laid down is that the "mound builders" were a race who existed long prior to the race of Indians, who inhabited this whole country at the time of its discovery by Columbus, and that this race of men existed from South America, north, as far as the chain of lakes lying along our northern boundary, and east, as far as the ridge of land extending from Lake Erie, southward, to the Atlantic, and that the southern portion of the continent was inhabited by a class of the mound builders, who were in advance of their more northern brethren in the arts of civilization. These people were superseded by the race of men inhabiting the country when it was discovered by Columbus and his contemporaries. I have enlarged somewhat upon the views given by Mr. Pidgeon, which he mainly drew from De-coo-dah, who stated that the mound builders' sole object was a historical description of the mound builders; their festivals, marriages, treaties; their modes of warfare; their vast and solemn religious rites and ceremonies.

But I have now much exceeded the limits I designed, and must pass on. At page 228, in the work before quoted, there is a description of some ancient American fish-traps, which were discovered in Paint Creek, Ross County, Ohio, and also in a small stream, a tributary of the St. Peters River, in Wisconsin, which tributary was made up from three large springs. The trap was excavated from a bed of soft slate, about half way between the springs and the river. At this point these traps were from three to five feet at top, and from five to six feet at bottom, and were from eight to twelve feet in depth. They were covered over with flat stones, leaving a mouth of about ten inches at the top open, which opening was stopped by a well fitting stone, with small opening, so as to prevent any fish of much size from escaping. The water flowing over these traps was about ten inches deep.

One of these stoppers was found a short distance below the fish-pot that fitted the aperture neatly. De-coo-dah was with Pidgeon when the discovery of these four traps was made, and readily went into an explanation of their use. He stated that they were always formed where the water was shallow. The fish were decoyed to the traps, and into them, by feeding; and, when the trap was properly filled, the stopper was inserted, and the fish retained for future use during the winter, and were kept by feeding. When wanted they were taken from the trap by a peculiar net fitted for that purpose. I shall not add more in relation to the mound builders of the New World, who may be classed with the men of the "stone age." However, I am not discussing that question now, but will refer the reader to a work entitled, "The Pre-Adamite Man," and also the "Geological Evidences of the Antiquity of man," by Sir Charles Lyell, F. R. S., author of "Principles of Geology," "Elements of Geology," etc., etc. Illustrated.

There is another subject to which I wish to call the attention of the reader of these pages, as it has a strong bearing upon one of the objects of this work. It is this: that to be successful in anything we must first make ourselves acquainted with the truth involved in the inquiry or investigation. It is a well known fact that that section of the country, now known as the Western States, was discovered from the north by Jesuit explorers. (These Jesuits are Roman Catholics, belonging to the Society of Jesus; a society remarkable for their cunning in propagating their principles.) The West was reached from two directions, *i. e.* the South and the North. The progress they made was slow, especially the one from the South. These were led on, or influenced, by the hopes of gold as well as a religious fanaticism; while the Northern were influenced by religious fanaticism and the novelty incident to a wild, romantic country and scenery, inhabited by a wild and peculiar people, with manners and customs widely differing from anything then known in the history of mankind. But I am admonished that I must be brief, as I am traveling out of my sphere, and must fail to do the subject anything like justice or give myself any credit for the effort. For nearly two hundred years after the discovery of this country it remained almost an entire wilderness, and the barbarities of the savages, and their lack of civilization and the Christian virtues, remain as at first, or but very little changed; a living monument of the stupidity of the early explorers. What a glorious field for enterprise was before them! The St. Lawrence opened to them the Atlantic. There was the whole chain of lakes pouring their floods into the Gulf of

St. Lawrence; there was the whole of the country laying along the southern shores of those lakes. Then, as they advanced West, there were the facilities to open trade through the great Mississippi River. A small settlement at St. Louis, and one at Kaskaskia, and one at Vincennes, all lying in the midst of fertility, and at the same time in gross ignorance for nearly two hundred years, while Wisconsin—the poorest State of all—advanced in population from 11,683 to 1,000,000 within the years 1830 to 1866. Previous to the year 1804 the French held New Orleans, and all of the Mississippi from its mouth to its source. What were the causes that led to these results? It was ignorance and religious fanaticism! The idea of Christianizing ignorant savages is an exploded humbug. A man's religion corresponds with the degree of intelligence he has. It is as important to develop the human mind by proper philosophic instruction, so as to have correct thoughts upon any subject, as it is to properly prepare the ground for the reception of seed for agricultural growth of any kind. It is not now a question as to how a savage or uncultivated mind is to be benefited; but you must, in some way, convince him of the importance of the arts and sciences; and he must learn that, by the proper cultivation of the earth, he can in every way improve his condition; then his mind will be prepared for a rational system of religion and morals.

It was in 1673 that Marquette and Joliet started on their mission to discover the Mississippi, though it is claimed, and with apparent truth, that the discoveries that were made by Marquette and Joliet were already known, and the route had been explored and missions established by the Jesuits as early as 1652. The routes claimed to have been thus discovered were three in number. Two from Lake Michigan—one out of the lake, up the St. Joseph's River, across to the Wabash, and down that to the Ohio, and at Vincennes a mission was established. The other was out of the lake into the Chicago River; up that, and then across to the Kankakee, and down the Illinois; hence the mission at Kaskaskia. The other was from Green Bay, up the Big Fox to Winnebago, out of that into the Little Fox, and out of that, by a short portage, into the Wisconsin River, and down that to the Mississippi, as before stated. These explorations from the North and South met, and a settlement was made at St. Louis, at the junction of the Missouri with the Mississippi. Yet, notwithstanding these early discoveries by a great nation—*i. e.* the French—the whole country remained almost entirely undeveloped until the whole of it passed into the possession of the United States, and it

is only within the past few years that it has been brought into a civilized condition. Here, again, opens a broad field of investigation for the historian, the antiquarian, the statesman, the philanthropist, and the religionist. Much of this, however, is foreign to my object, and to study or argue concerning these causes and results, though highly interesting, would only be productive in a literary or religious point of view.

While I was in these Western wilds, where comparatively but a few years had elapsed since the savage roamed supreme monarch of the country, and where some 1,500 yet linger, I was forcibly aroused to the inquiry as to, from whence, and how had these changes been made? and I was so fortunate as to be largely aided in solving the mystery by the investigations of others, which had been thrown into book form. If I had had more leisure, health and wealth, I would have been pleased to have spent years in investigating a country and the causes that had opened up such a field of inquiry.

While we were at my nephew's, at Royalton, I had several opportunities of riding out in the country. Was at Waupacca, the county-seat. In going there we took quite a circuitous route, passing through one or two small villages, and a few settlements. Some places looked as though one might live in them; others more like starving. The land is sandy, so much so that it could not be productive, except by more manure than could be obtained.

The county-seat is a pleasant place, situated on the Waupacca River, and is a stream capable of, and was, driving several mills, which were in successful operation at the time I was there. This stream empties into the main Wolf River, at Gills Landing, from which there is a stage route into the interior. In reaching there we crossed a small stream, a branch of the Little Wolf. Just before we reached the bridge that crossed the stream we turned some three or four rods from the road to a spot that was literally covered with flat granite, with here and there boulders of the same material. There was one stone that we estimated to be one hundred feet long, and forty or forty-five feet wide. It was not an entire plane, although flat, and was so little above the surface that we found a place up which we readily drove our two mules, with the spring wagon, upon the rock. Drove them along on the stone; then turned the team, and drove off, with three persons in the wagon, at the same place where we drove on. I have no doubt but that the rocks at this point, as well as many others, were of the "drift period." In some places I have seen, for nearly a mile in length and a quarter in width, these boulders of large

size, from tons' weight down to the size of a man's head, in spots literally covering the ground. It seems to be a very difficult matter to make some people understand the idea of the "drift period; but as I have had to speak of it, and will have to speak of it again, in Michigan, where our route will carry us from Royalton, I may as well state that the "drift period" is *known* to have existed from the uniformity of its course, let it be found wherever it may be. It is based upon the principle that these enormous masses of ice, that are found now floating in the Atlantic, were formed in the Northern Ocean, and are believed to have rested on sloping ground; and, like the glaciers on land, slide down until they float and carry with them whatever may be imbedded in or attached to them; whether boulders or beds of gravel. From various causes they seem to be loosened, and descend into water of sufficient depth to float. A north-west wind drives them in a south-easterly direction, and they continue to drift until they are landed, or are ultimately dissolved; and whatever may be attached to them, of stones or gravel, are deposited. Sometimes icebergs are drifted some miles after touching the ground, and drag along, leaving an indentation, and ultimately deposit a large boulder; thus leaving conclusive evidence of the "drift."

Weyauwega was another point we visited while in this region. It was at one time a considerable place; but, at the time we visited it, it was on the decline. This place was only three miles from the main Wolf River, at Gills Landing. It is on the Waupacca River, and had an old saw-mill, a fine grist-mill, and a new shingle factory on the newest and most approved plan, which was doing a fine business; but the pine timber which grew in the vicinity had been nearly all used up. Eight or nine miles north of Weyauwega was Waupacca, the county-seat of Waupacca County; and as far as I could learn, or had an opportunity of judging, the country around the village was a sandy, barren soil, although, in going to the place, there seemed to be considerable swamp land. These swamp lands are often good when properly cleared, but it is no small task to clear them up; and, even after the timber is taken off, the stumps, though small, are numerous, and have to be taken out and burned up. It is the lumber business that makes this region of country what it is, though there is now and then a piece of tolerably fair land, and here and there a place that produces the sugar maple. I saw one where three thousand trees were tapped, and sugar made from them. The time will come when the lumber will be gone, or out of the reach of the present settlement, and then the country will be left to depend upon other resources,

which must be almost entirely agricultural. I think it is doubtful whether they, by any system of farming, can keep their land in a condition to remunerate the farmer for his toil. I heard of no beds of gypsum, from which to use as a fertilizer in growing clover, to fertilize the soil; beside, the winters are long, and stock of every description must be fed for a long time. The soil being sandy but little is fitted for raising grass; too sandy for corn, or even to raise much wheat. The soil of the entire country being of a warm quick nature, it is not only easily cultivated but brings forward in a short time. To sum up the whole, I saw very little to encourage any man to settle in the country.

Monday morning, August 28, 1865, came, and as it was the morning that we had fixed on for our departure we bade our relatives and acquaintances farewell, and took our seats in the spring wagon for Northport, my nephew, Chester D., going with us. It had rained hard in the night, and was raining some when we started, and continued to do so the most of the way to the "Port," a distance of three miles. We stopped at the hotel, the steamboat not having arrived from New London—six miles up the river—above Northport. At last it came. We went on board, and parted with our nephew, with whom we had spent much time, for four weeks previous, receiving the greatest hospitality and kindness from both him and his wife, who had done all in their power to make our stay pleasant and agreeable. His brother Stephen and wife also took much pains to interest us, and we were much pleased with them; but they were not so situated in their affairs that they could not accommodate us as, or devote the time that, Chester could. There was a Mrs. Hill who was clerking in the store, and also a young lady—Belle Murphey—who was staying in the family, with whom we got acquainted, and who will not be forgotten. There were quite a number of families—among whom was a brother-in-law to my nephew, Chester D. Combs, who had married a sister of Chester's wife—who will all be long remembered for their kind attention to us. Time and again have myself and wife recalled the pleasant hours we spent with these plain, unassuming, guileless people; for we always found them what they seemed to be. During our whole stay at that village I saw nothing of discord or angry words. Life flowed along smoothly; every want and desire seemed to be fully satisfied. I often think of the spot, and, were it near, would often call and spend a few pleasant days with them. But to return.

The bell rang, the steam whistled, and we were off; a nod, and a motion of the head, and we were soon out of sight of our nephew.

A short sime brought us the Gills Landing, where the stage came in. Indeed there were two stages in both going up and returning. They were a little behind time, but soon came and emptied quite a freight of passengers and baggage. We were soon under way, and nothing worth mentioning occurred to mar the pleasures of the day. It was rather cool and damp, but a good dinner served to cheer and buoy us up. A little before sundown we landed, and went to our old hotel, the "Adams House."

As soon as we were fairly domiciled I went out to see what was said to be a sample shingle machine. My main object was to see if I could do anything for Dexter with his shingle press. The proprietor of the mill was not in, and, it being so nearly night, I did not effect anything. I returned, and sought out a man by the name of Ruggles, who had been recommended to me as being the "right kind of a man." I desired to form an acquaintance with him personally on my own account as well as on that of my relative, Dexter, in hopes of securing his services in selling the "shingle press." I found the man by mere accident. As I was passing along the sidewalk we met. He was coming out of the restaurant. We had seen each other, but had never spoken together. Both advanced; offered the hand; it was accepted, and conversation followed. I invited him to our room at the hotel, which invitation he accepted and spent the evening with us. He was an eccentric man, but a good and truthful one, and we have since corresponded.

The city had made some improvements since our outward trip of but a month before. The next morning after breakfasting we took the hotel omnibus for the cars. To reach them we had to cross the Wolf River by means of a ferry. On our way up we crossed this stream on a pontoon-bridge, in which there was a drawbridge so as to allow steamboats or rafts to pass, but this had been taken up during our absence for the purpose of building a permanent drawbridge, which was in a rapid course of construction, and bids fair to be a fine structure.

We were soon across the river and at the railroad depot, and after seeing our baggage on the cars we went also, and were soon on our way. The day proved a fine one. All along the railroad the farmers were cutting their oats. From appearances the wheat had been very recently taken in or stacked out. We rolled along until we reached Watertown, where we took the cars again for Milwaukee. Between Watertown and Milwaukee the country is more broken, though it may be said to be a fair farming region. As we near the place by railroad we enter on low bottom lands, which soon become marshy. The Kishkaupa River comes in at



this point and empties into Milwaukee Bay. The city proper is between the bay the river, and in coming in on the railroad from Watertown to the steamboat landing one sees but little of the city, which is north of this route. The afternoon was warm, and as is but too common an occurrence, our baggage was behind, so that by the time we had everything arranged on board of the boat night was approaching and we saw but little, and that which we did see was all strange, so that the many scenes passing so rapidly before us of course left very faint impressions. While we lay in the harbor several majestic steamboats came in and went out. They loomed up much higher above water than any boats I ever saw before. As soon as supper was over I went to our state-room, soon became sleepy, took a berth, and long before the boat left its moorings I was asleep and did not awake until the boat was rounding in the Harbor of Grand Haven at break of day. The morning was rendered gloomy by a thick fog, and although the cars waited until after breakfast, the fog did not clear away so as to give us a distinct view of the place. As is common on the east or south-east side of these large lakes, high banks of sand are piled up where the railroad depot and a few houses for the various accommodations (for the traveling business of the lake and railroad) stand. There was one of those very high banks of sand—at least one hundred feet high—then encroaching on the road and buildings when we were there. Across Grand River lay a small city, and although the sun shone through the fog so that houses could be seen, yet they seemed to be obscure. Back of the city there seemed to be a succession of those high sand piles. I was told that on the top of the one near the depot a fine grape-vine was growing in the bed of sand. But the car bell warned us of the departure of the train, and having taken our seats we were ready for the trip. The train moved along a marshy route for some distance up the river where we crossed, and all along, for some distance after we crossed, there were appearances of old lumber-yards and steam saw-mills. These passed the land seemed better; several acres were in a fine state of cultivation, with the grape, peach, and plum, as well as some vegetables. As we advanced we lost sight of the river until we reached its crossing at Grand Rapids, where we stopped.

Along the route we had traversed from Grand Haven, a distance of thirty miles, the country (after we left the well cultivated spot) was very variable, some fair land and some very poor. From the depot at Grand Rapids we took a street railroad car for a hotel, and after a long drive we were finally landed at the "American House,"

where the office for the stage going to Kalamazoo was kept. This was on Wednesday the 30th of August. The whole month, up to within the last two days, had been cool, but that day at 3 P. M. the thermometer was up to eighty-eight degrees in the shade. It was to me oppressive to be out on the sidewalks, yet at 4 P. M. myself and wife concluded that we would venture out, as we were anxious to see more of the city than we had been able to see of Milwaukee and the city of Grand Haven. We started, and kept as much on the shady side of the street as we could. On arriving at the depot at Grand Rapids I expected to find a broken, uneven country, and falls tumbling along a considerable descent, with saw-mills, lumber-yards, and a few cheap buildings, such as would accommodate a population of lumber men, etc.; but instead of that, we saw a street a mile long within but a few rods of the river, with fine buildings from one story up to five, a fine woolen-factory, grist-mills, planing-machines, and all the modern improvements and fixtures in the shape of machinery for doing most of the work in the finishing of a fine house. In our walk we reached the bridge, that spanned the river nearly midway of the rapids, and crossed over to the opposite side. Here is a small town, and the land runs back from the river in a fine plain, while on the opposite it commences rising within a few rods of the river, and continues until it attains a considerable elevation. For some distance down the Rapids from the depot there is only a single street. This is the one on which the street railroad was built. A fine church had been commenced on the west side of the river a few squares above the bridge, and there had been another large one begun some few years before, but one end had nearly tumbled out. It had been put up with brick with a ventering of slabs sawed from variegated plaster of Paris, a material which is found in great abundance two miles below, but on trial it seems that this ventering when first finished looks beautiful, but age turns it a dingy color. On the west side, not far from the end of the bridge, there was a large boarding-house in a rather dilapidated condition. We recrossed the river and turned our course back to the hotel. The road soon made a turn up a gentle slope to where the street was well built up on each side, with now and then a cross-street coming in, which sometimes crossed the main street. This street seemed to be the center of business, and had the best buildings on it. We here had the first peaches we had eaten in Michigan or during the season. After we had ascended the first slight hill from the river there was a considerable plain, with a fine street as well as a cross-street.

This place is the county-seat of Kent County and has a population of 8,770.

On Thursday morning, August 31, 1865, we took the stage, at break of day, for Kalamazoo, a distance of forty-eight miles. The stage was full of passengers, and the morning was cool and pleasant. We drove some ten miles before breakfast. The whole route is over a plank road, considerably worn. In the morning it was over a much better farming country than I had expected to find. The most of the way fair crops of corn were growing, and the wheat had been harvested and secured. In some places there was evidence of a lumber region, but in most of them the pine had been used up. We passed through quite a number of small villages on this route, and saw a considerable extent of good land. The crops of corn looked well along the Kalamazoo River, which we struck before we reached Kalamazoo City. Arrived at that city before night and engaged a man with two horses to take us to my nephew's, Russell Mason, whose place we reached at dusk. They were all strangers, but we soon became well acquainted. The afterpart of the day had been hot, but not so warm as the day before. We were at this nephew's nine days, and while there he took much pains to please and interest us. He had a pair of fine horses and a good spring wagon, and took us quite a number of drives, in different directions. One trip was to Kalamazoo. We also visited the Asylum for the Insane, where we were politely received and conducted over the institution, which seemed to be well managed. This place, as well as the city, will be more fully described further on, and also the general character of the country near my nephew's. This locality has rather a singular formation. On the east of him, toward Kalamazoo, it is broken, and the soil is of a sandy loam. It produces fine wheat and tolerable corn and moderate grass. On the west side of him the country appears to be a valley of several miles in width. The ground is wet and inclined to be swampy, and there are but few places that it can be crossed with a team. When we left our nephew took us in his spring wagon, and we started along one side of this low land for a number of miles. The country then became higher, and we came out into the valley of Kalamazoo River, and followed it down, stopping at a town called "Junction." This was a place of considerable size, and having broken our axletree on the road we stopped here to have another put in. This place is on or near the Kalamazoo River, and on the road from Grand Rapids to Kalamazoo. Soon after leaving Junction we left this road and continued in a north-east direction. A valley of low lands lay on the west side,

and on the east rose a hill varying in slope and height. Along this road we often crossed rivulets of water as clear as crystal, that gushed out of the hillside and wended their way over beds of yellowish sand. From the town of Junction we must have gone some eight or ten miles, then we turned further east, and ascended the hill, in a long serpentine course, and when we had reached the summit we were within sight of what was called Crooked Lake, though its name gives but a faint idea of the reality. We drove over hill and dale and at last reached our destination, Prarieville, where we found our relative, Russell E. Combs, my youngest sister's son. He and his family were strangers to us; I had never seen him, nor had my other nephew who was with us. We were warmly welcomed and most kindly treated. We reached there on Saturday, late in the day, and remained until the following Monday week. While there we took several drives, all in different directions, in the country, and there was but one route that we did not meet the inevitable lake, and that was north, for it runs from one mile to three or four and then turns at right angles and runs in another direction, and so on. Its whole length is said to be twenty-five miles. In some places the water is said to be deep, but the greater part of it is shallow. In a large portion I saw the everlasting pond lily. These lakes (for so any one might call them, for they seem like clusters attached to a stem) are said to abound in fish, particularly the pike. We left our relatives, and were highly pleased with our visit. We then visited Albion, in Calhoun County, where I had a niece residing. With her we spent a week and then took the cars for Michigan City, then toward home, by the way of Lafayette and Wabash Town, where we visited my son Stephen and nephews, and back to Peru, and then to Indianapolis, and from that city home, where we arrived safely on the 15th of October, 1865. On our return, as usual, I arranged everything for the approaching winter, which proved a severe one. With very little variation from the daily routine of affairs, the spring came on, and, after attending to the necessary work in our gardens, etc., we made arrangements to make another tour, leaving our house and place in the care of my widowed daughter-in-law, the transcriber of this work.

We left home on Monday, the 11th day of June, 1866, took the cars for Lafayette, which place we reached between 4 and 5 P. M., a distance of one hundred and twenty-nine miles. We stopped, and finding the wife of Dr. Clark in town, went with her, two miles out, to their pleasant retirement, on a farm of two hundred and eighty acres. They were surrounded by their interesting fam-

ily, among whom were two sons who had served through the entire war as privates, and had returned home honorably discharged, and had resumed their labors on their father's farm. I have seldom visited a friend so pleasantly retired from the turmoils of political life and that of an arduous profession, the practice of medicine, in which he had been engaged for forty years. His residence and outbuildings, though plain, were convenient, and surrounded with shrubs, flowers, and fruit trees, as well as small forest trees. It is situated on dry, rolling land, which overlooks a rich, fertile river bottom of over one hundred acres, along which the Wabash River runs and washes its banks. We spent three days most pleasantly with our friend the Doctor, and while there called on an acquaintance, Major Mace, who is an attorney-at-law and an ex-Member of Congress. I found him quite unwell, he having had a stroke of paralysis, but he was recovering. His wife was also indisposed, which prevented us from paying them a visit, as we had intended to have done. Dr. Clark had a son in the city, engaged in a family grocery, and seemed to be doing a good business. He was a single man, and made his home with a married sister, who was living at her father's city residence. Her husband had been an officer in the volunteer service of the Federal army, and had returned home and was then engaged in the drug business. On Thursday, the 14th, at 4 P. M. we took the cars for Michigan City, distant ninety-two miles, which place we reached a little past 7 P. M. Here we stopped for the night to rest, and to see the city of sand-banks. Like all other places, situated on the east side of Lake Michigan, the shore is piled up, mountain high, with sand on which there is sometimes found growing a few stunted evergreens, generally the pine. There was an opening where a small harbor had been attempted to be made some years ago, and which is now being worked on with a view to a permanent harbor, but there are two considerable piles of solid accumulating sand inside of the harbor, and drifting into the city for a considerable distance. Of harbors I am a poor judge, but will venture an opinion of this one. To keep it open will require constant dredging, or nearly so. Judging from what I saw and heard the city is made up of a class of third-rate men, mere adventurers. After some inquiry we went to what was said to be a first-class hotel, the "Jewell House," and which was considered the best in the city. The building was a moderate one, the fare poor, and bills exorbitant. The next morning we left at 7 A. M. for Kalamazoo, distant eighty-five miles, where we arrived about 11 A. M. Here we stopped, and hired a conveyance to my nephew's, Russell Mason, distant eight miles.

We found my nephew's cottage, embowered in flowers. On two sides was densely grown the peach and apple. In front was the public highway, and on the south was the well, and not far beyond was a snug barn and other outbuildings, all indicating thrift and economy, combined with neatness and beauty in nature's garb.

We found our relatives well, and pleased to see us; we spent a week at his house very pleasantly. He has a small farm, but it affords him a good living and an annual surplus. He began here a few years ago, with limited means, barely sufficient to buy his land, which was unimproved, and without a team or farming tools, and unaided, except by honest toil. He has succeeded in making for himself a good home, and is now surrounded not only with the necessaries of life, but he enjoys many of its luxuries. We paid them a visit last fall. Its renewal this spring was a treat but little expected. So much for that modern improvement, the railroad; a distance of a little over three hundred miles was overcome within fourteen hours' running time. The time for our departure arrived, and we had to bid our relatives good-by. The family consisted of father, mother, and two sons, one of whom was in his fifteenth, and the other in his seventeenth year. The father, with his horses and spring wagon, took us to Kalamazoo. The parting with my nephew's wife was affecting, so much so that she shed tears to overflowing.

Arrived at Kalamazoo in time to make a hurried circuit of the city, and then we took the stage for Prairieville, distant twenty miles, where we arrived before night, and found my nephew, Russell E. Combs, and family, all well, and much pleased to see us. We visited this place last fall, and found him, then a total stranger to us, engaged in selling goods at this place. It is a small town, having several mechanics, a doctor, post-office, and two retail stores. My nephew owned one of the stores, and was doing a fine business with a moderate capital. In January last the building in which he was doing business took fire, and the whole of it was burned to the ground. It had been so constructed that it had a business store-room, and room sufficient to accommodate a considerable family. His family was living in the house, and another family was occupying part of it also. At the time of the fire my nephew was absent in Detroit, buying goods, and on returning found that he was without house or store. The most of the goods in the store, as well as his household goods, had been saved. He was one of those decided, energetic men, who was not to be put back by trifles, so he soon fitted up a temporary store-room, and went on selling. When we arrived there we found his

family crowded up in a small building, living as best they could. He had arranged with the man in the other store, and was then doing a fine business. They had just returned from New York City, where they had bought a good stock of goods, and were receiving, opening and selling them. The place is in the southwest corner of Barry County, and though somewhat broken, it is a fine wheat country, and besides this, considerable wool is raised, and some pork. The inhabitants are an industrious, enterprising people, thereby rendering the trade in dry-goods and the necessities of life in a civilized community a good business.

Our stay with them here this summer was a week, and the same last fall, which afforded us an opportunity of seeing considerable of the country and much of the people. The country, though comparatively new, is like the most of the West, progressing with rapid strides on the road to wealth, and all that which appertains to civilized society. There is a project now on foot to extend the Grand Trunk Railroad from Port Huron, by Lansing, the capital of Michigan; thence, in a south-westerly direction, to the Three Rivers, and thence to Chicago. If this road should be made, as it probably will be, it will pass some five or six miles north of Prairieville. This serves to keep that place at a stand-still for the present. The time arrived for our departure. We bade our relatives good-by on Tuesday, the 3d of July, 1866, and took the stage for Kalamazoo, and then the railroad to Battle Creek. From Prairieville to Kalamazoo is a beautiful country, especially at Gull Corners, which is midway between those two places, on a pretty plain. Gull Corners is a small place, and has a church, a store, post-office, and a few mechanic shops. Two or three miles from Gull Corners is Gull Lake, which abounds in fish. This lake has an outlet, on which is a good mill. At the time of the settlement of this portion of the country this lake was visited by gulls in great numbers, and it was from this that the lake and neighboring prairie, on which the roads cross, received their names. Lands are held, and actually sold, at one hundred dollars per acre; yet there is a drawback in the great lack of water, which is only obtained by digging down from sixty to eighty feet. This is the case in nearly the whole State. Kalamazoo County is a fine tract of land, and is twenty-four miles square, and contains five hundred and seventy-six square miles, and in 1864 contained twenty-five thousand, eight hundred and forty-two inhabitants. The city of Kalamazoo is the county-seat, and is situated on Kalamazoo River, and contains six thousand, seven hundred and ninety-five inhabitants. The river runs diagonally through the county, and has but little fall,

greatly lessening its value, as a water-power, on the main stream. There is, however, one mill opposite to the city, which is run by the current of the stream, by means of a screw water-wheel. The city is most pleasantly located on a beautiful plain. On the south-west side the hill, though not high, approaches near to the city. On the north, and south-east, the hills are some distance off, rising in gentle slopes. The city and its surroundings afford a pleasing locality for either a residence or a place of business. A mile south of the city, on the hill, is situated an asylum for the insane. I visited it last fall and went through the whole establishment. It was gotten up on the modern plan, with all the modern improvements, and had one hundred and seventy inmates. The city is well supplied with churches, *i. e.* a Baptist, two Episcopal, a Congregationalist, Methodist, Presbyterian, Unitarian, Roman Catholic, Tabernacle Baptist, and one colored Methodist and Baptist. Besides all these denominations they have lectures every other Sunday on Modern Spiritualism. As to educational advantages the place is well supplied. They have four ward schools; a union or graded school; a building four stories high, eighty by ninety feet square, and two thousand one hundred and fifty-one scholars; an academy; a college for males and females; and, besides these, there is being erected a female college, which, when finished, is to be conducted on the Holyoke system. There is now being built another large building for a union or graded school.

The "Michigan Central Railroad," from Kalamazoo east, through Galesburg, Battle Creek, Marshall to Albion, Jackson, and on to Detroit, runs through this place. We passed over this route as far east as Albion last September, and then again in July, 1866. From Kalamazoo the road runs along the Kalamazoo River, through a valley of fine land, the hills rising in gentle slopes on each side of the river, leaving an interval, on an average, of half a mile each side. Some of these uplands are beautiful farming lands, with occasionally a small prairie. The prairie land differs materially from the upland, on which timber is growing. It is less sandy, and the soil is black and more productive; the difference is so perceptible that it is readily told. Galesburg is a village of about one thousand two hundred inhabitants. It has several stores and mechanic shops, a railroad depot, and a building for a graded school, and has three churches: Methodist, Congregationalist, and Baptist. It is a pleasant place, though rather too level. We stopped there three days with my relatives, Lewis J. Barber and family and Richard H. Barber and family (brothers), and spent the time very pleasantly. While there I visited the



Kalamazoo County Poor-house, which had at the time over forty inmates. The site had been originally selected as the site for a Fourier Association. A large tract of land had been purchased, and buildings erected of considerable size and extent, but the society dissolved its association and sold off a portion of its lands. They then sold the remainder of the buildings and land to the county for a poor-house, and it is now used for that purpose. I found in the superintendent a namesake, and on inquiry into our genealogy left no doubt in my mind but that he was a distant relative, and I have since found out that he is a second cousin.

At Battle Creek we stopped and called on a relative, and afterwards found that I had two cousins residing there, one of whom I had not seen for forty-four years, and the other for fifty years; also a cousin, who was the wife of Judge Graves. I spent but little time with her, as she left for the East the next day after I saw her; and I had but a short interview with her husband, but was favorably impressed with him. One of the cousins, Erastus Hussey, I found to be an intelligent man, comfortably situated. He had been a representative of his county in the State Legislature; and had but one child, a daughter, some thirty-five years old, who was married, but was living with her parents. She had a son some twelve years of age. I was only introduced to her husband as I was leaving, and he was just returning home. My other cousin, who was about my age, had been married twice, but was now a widow, and living with her son, Stephen D. Barber, who had two children, a son and daughter. We had a very pleasant visit, and formed some agreeable acquaintances, at Battle Creek. That town had in 1864 three thousand eight hundred and fifty-six inhabitants; and at that point Battle Creek unites with Kalamazoo River, which affords fine water-power. The whole place is pleasantly situated, and abounds in churches. It was originally settled by the Friends or Quakers, but the most of them turned Spiritualists, and they now have quite a large number of that belief. We left there for Albion for the purpose of visiting a niece of mine, the wife of Mr. Osmon Rice, who is doing business in a flouring-mill. He is comfortably situated, and has a small family—two sons and one daughter. Neither of the sons were at home. One is a telegrapher by profession, and the other is at college. The daughter goes to school in the village. The place is a pleasant one, and contains about two thousand inhabitants. The surrounding country is good. There is a college, under the management of the Methodists, and is most pleasantly situated, commanding a view of the whole town, but is not in as successful

operation as could be desired. In the village are four churches: Methodist, Episcopal, Presbyterian, and Baptist. The place is situated on each side of the river, which supplies the town and the water-power for three mills.

Marshall, a town between Battle Creek and Albion, had a population in 1864 of four thousand one hundred and ninety-two. We only stopped there while the passengers in the cars took dinner. That place also has fine water-power, and is pleasantly located. The whole valley of the Kalamazoo River is very pleasant, as far as I have been along it, which is some sixty miles. Marshall is the county-seat of Calhoun County, and has a court-house and the usual number of public buildings. While at Albion I went to Jackson, the county-seat of Jackson County. It has one well built street, on which a large business is done in the sale of the various goods sold in an inland town, as well as considerable business in the usual mechanical pursuits. The city in 1864 contained five thousand five hundred and forty-four inhabitants. A short distance out of the city the State Penitentiary is located, and is quite a conspicuous institution. This place has the advantage of the "Michigan Central Railroad," and also one from Lansing, the State Capital, to Toledo, at the head of Lake Erie. Here resides the great spirit-medium, Dr. Henry Slade, who is said to perform remarkable cures.

We returned to Battle Creek on Monday, the 23d of July, and stopped again with our relatives. On the 27th, 28th, and 29th we attended a convention of Spiritualists, made up of delegates from all parts of the State. They met for the purpose of organizing a State Society, and which was done by the adoption of a constitution and the election of officers, with a view to corporate organization, as provided by the Statute of the State, by which the association can hold property in grounds, buildings, and libraries. The constitution is such that it prevents the formation of any creed or articles of faith; thus leaving each to exercise his own conscientious views in his belief and worship. I have been in many public assemblies; but, with the exception of the United States Senate, I have never met a body of men who manifested more order, business tact, and capacity than this one. There were about one hundred delegates, and prompt attention was paid to business as well as the delivery of able lectures on Spiritual philosophy. Since this meeting I learn, through the papers, that quite a number of State associations, and also a United States Society, has been established. Thus the friends of the new faith and of progress are

uniting their fast increasing forces, which will exercise a power and an influence in the world.

On Tuesday, the 31st day of July, we took leave of our friends at Battle Creek, probably never to see them again, taking our passage for Rochester, and our seats in the cars, on the "Central Railroad," for Detroit. Passed through quite a number of fine villages, and two small cities—Ann Arbor and Ypsilanti. The former, in 1864, contained five thousand seven hundred and thirty-one inhabitants; the latter, four thousand one hundred and eighty-nine. In passing through the most of these places, on the railroad, but a very faint idea can be formed of their shape or beauty. Ann Arbor is on broken ground, and much of it is out of sight from the railroad track, but the character of the surrounding country is better estimated, from the size of the town, than in any other way. At Ann Arbor there is a fine college for learning, and also a medical college, and a law school with a literary department. All of these schools are said to be managed in a superior manner, and are sending out some fine graduates. The country, for some distance before we reach Detroit, is a body of stiff clay land, looking as though sand would be far the best manure the land could receive. Just where the city of Detroit is located, on the bank of the river, the country has a fine appearance; and so did the city, as far as could be seen from the railroad, and the steamboat, in crossing the river. The city is said to contain fifty-three thousand one hundred and seventy inhabitants. The river at this place is a large, broad, and noble stream, and if it had its outlet at the bay of New York instead of at the St. Lawrence, or even this with unobstructed navigation, a vast commerce would pour down this river. As it is, this is a busy place. The shore from the Canada side seems much lower than on the American, and for a considerable distance out along the railroad route it seemed to be a swamp, until night set it, so that the ground could not be seen. Our trip across this neck of Canada, a distance of two hundred and twenty-nine miles, was made in the night; and, although it was moonlight, but little was seen. We crossed the canal, from Lake Erie to Lake Ontario, after daybreak, but saw very little of that important work. It was broad daylight when the cars arrived at the bridge over Niagara River, and passed upon it most pleasantly; and although we seemed to be suspended in the air, as we could not see the bridge, yet we could see the stream below, and above, foaming onwards through the deep abyss. Two miles above are the falls, where we see from the cars a lovely sheet of water tumbling over the precipice to mingle with the

foaming surging waves below, and hurrying on to meet the ocean hundreds of miles away. Across the river the cars stopped for breakfast, and then proceeded on to Rochester, which place we reached, a distance of seventy-five miles, by 9 A. M. Here we stopped; and, by a private conveyance, went two and a half miles into the country, and visited a cousin of mine. We were there a week, and took several drives during the time. The country in the main may be said to be rather level, though in some places it is thrown up into rolling land, with a diversified soil, which is generally productive. In some neighborhoods the land may be regarded as too flat and inclined to be wet, but in spots it is rolling, and the soil of a chocolate color. This land is the proper kind for raising hops, though it requires manuring, and that freely. This kind of soil is filled with broken stone of various sizes, though none large; the pieces are flat, and from two to three inches thick, and are of the same chocolate color as the earth. It is, no doubt, the debris of this stone of which the soil is mostly made up, and I am strongly inclined to the opinion that there is a constant decomposition of this stone going on, and thus keeping up the soil. There is much of this kind of land all through the central portion of the State. (I have not seen any geological report of any portion of this State.) Where this kind of soil largely predominates the ground is friable; not adhering like a clay soil, nor like a bed of sand, which is generally only a barren waste. The Genesee River rises in the high lands, near the line dividing the States of New York and Pennsylvania, and there is but a short distance intervening between the head of the Genesee and the Alleghany Rivers. The general course of the Genesee River, from its source to its mouth, is considerably east of a north course, and the lands along this river, near the city of Rochester, are said to be valuable. There is a high ridge of land, running parallel with the river, on its east side. Within this range of hills, about a mile or a mile and a half from the city, is the cemetery, containing between seventy and eighty acres of land, and which is being beautifully decorated. The grounds are divided into hill, dale, and ravine. A large amount of labor has been, and is yet being, bestowed to make fine drives and pleasant localities as the repositories for the dead. But few localities for cemeteries afford more pleasing or favorable grounds, or present a greater variety of scenery. Near one side of it, on the east side, is a State Penitentiary, the County Poor-house, and the County Insane Asylum. A drive from the city to these grounds affords fine relaxation from the daily round of an active business life. The city proper, at the time we were there, was said

to contain sixty thousand inhabitants, and is built on each side of the river. At this point the "New York Cenral Railroad" crosses the river a few yards above the upper falls, and just above the track there is a row of buildings that stretches entirely across the stream, and just above this a bridge is thrown across, and farther up is a stone aqueduct supported by arches, which is thrown across the stream, for the transmission of canal boats, on the New York and Erie Canal; besides this a canal comes down from the upper river, and terminates in the Erie Canal. The water is taken out of the river, above the canal aqueduct, and distributed; part of it to the canal, and to the various mills; some of which are the finest in the country, and manufacture annually from six hundred thousand to one million barrels of flour for market. In various ways the water is used up, so that all that which tumbles over the precipice at the fall is mere leakage. The water is again used at the second falls, which are immediately below the first; and, although there is a chasm of about two hundred feet, yet there is access to the bottom by a good road that winds its way down through an opening made by a broad ravine. It is at this point that the steamboat landing (down the river), from Lake Ontario, is situated, and a considerable business is done here, although there is a railroad from the city on the west side to the lake. Besides the various and numerous mills a large amount of machinery work and manufacturing is done at this point. There is one long street (Broad street) on the east side of the river, which is devoted almost exclusively to private residences. Quite a large number of magnificent ones are now occupied. Most of the various edifices for public worship are gotten up in superb style. There is one church building (the Plymouth) built by the descendants of the Puritans, that cost eighty thousand dollars. I attended service in a large and costly church on communion day. The communicants, seven hundred in number, occupied the body of the church, and the outsiders sat in the gallery on that day. From what I saw the number of church edifices was sufficiently large and ample for every citizen in the place to meet in. This seemed to be the case everywhere; and, if the people only possessed as much of the true Christian principle as they have of the form of, or means for, devotion, all would be well enough.

The Baptists have a seminary of learning, and connected with it is a Baptist Theological Department. Ample arrangements for schools, for all grades, are provided throughout the entire city. They have there a City Hospital, and the Sisters of Charity have a large hospital capable of accommodating six or seven hundred

patients. Besides this, the Catholics have several churches, and if that would make them better they would soon be converted into angels. Two of the best institutions there are the Home for the Homeless and the House of Refuge. The Home for the Homeless consists of a good house and a moderate space of ground. This was gotten up by voluntary donations, and is supported in the same way. This place serves them for a home until they can procure one for themselves through the assistance of the institution. Adjoining the city is the House of Refuge. The ground, on which the buildings are erected, consists of ten acres, walled in, with a wall I judge to be 14 or 15 feet high. At the time I was there it was said to be so managed as to be a self-sustaining institution. I visited it on a Sunday, and saw 480 inmates, all boys, from seven years of age to eighteen, the most of them were from twelve to fifteen years of age. I was in the chapel, and after they were all assembled there, they had worship in the usual way of the Baptist denomination. All the inmates of the institution joined in the singing, which was very creditable for vocal music; each boy had a book containing the hymn. The services were conducted by a Mr. Morgan, from Indiana, who was attending the Theological Seminary. After the services were over I had some conversation with him, he being a "Hoosier" we soon affiliated. I discovered that he was of the family of Morgans, of Rush County, Indiana, with whom I am personally acquainted. The lack of time prevented me from calling on a week day and passing through the different departments, which I regretted. Thus, I have given an outline of Rochester, and its immediate neighborhood, which is a desirable locality to live in, for either country or city residence. It is said that there are several hundred acres of land laid out in nurseries, mostly the apple.

We passed through Lockport. This is a pleasant location and is the point where the Erie canal crosses the ridge of land that intercepts Niagara River at Queenstown Heights. Lockport is fifty-six miles west from Rochester, and is said to have a population of over 13,000, and is the county-seat of Niagara County. It is a place of considerable business, which, is sustained by the water power that is created here by the sixty feet fall, and which requires five locks to overcome. The supply of water is from Lake Erie, and is inexhaustible. The railroad, from the suspension bridge to Rochester, runs along near the town of Lockport. I was at this point in 1822, and excavations were then being made for the Erie canal, the only buildings that were there then were Irish shanties to accommodate the hands employed on the work. On Tuesday

morning, the 7th, we bade our cousin farewell, he sending his hired man with us to the depot in the city, where we took our passage on the cars for Cayuga by the way Canandaigua, a distance of twenty-nine miles. The village of Canandaigua is near the outlet of the lake of the same name, and is the county-seat of Ontario County. It has the usual county buildings, five churches, and an academy, and is in the midst of a good agricultural country. From this point the railroad passes through several pleasant villages and a fair country, also passing Seneca Falls at the outlet of Seneca Lake, which is a fine sheet of water. We crossed the outlet of the Cayuga Lake, at Cayuga village, on a low bridge, built exclusively for the railroad. At this point we took passage on board of a steamboat plying on the lake between Cayuga and Ithaca, a town situated at the head of the lake, which is forty miles in length, and in places four in width, and is a lovely sheet of pure water. On our upward and downward trip it was rough, in consequence of windy weather. We went up about fifteen miles to the village of Aurora on the east side of the lake. There we landed, and taking a carriage drove to my Cousin John Hussey's who lived a mile from town. It had been over fifty years since I had been at this point. The harbor and wharf, as well as the village, had all undergone a change; there was but one spot that I could recognize, and that was at the turn of the road from the village, up a hill, and which led to Poplar Ridge, four miles distant. At this point a considerable hill comes down to near the lake shore, so that there is but one street between the lake and the hill. This is pleasantly laid out and ornamented with a row of shade trees on each side of the street. The houses are set back from the street, and on each side of them is a neat lawn. In the organization of this county, in 1799, Seneca County was included in Cayuga, and the judicial seat was erected on the site of this village. The court-house was of the most primitive kind, the roof was made of poles and brushwood, supported by forks stuck in the ground; a wide contrast those times and the present!

When I last saw my cousin he was a single man, living at home with his aged father and mother, but he had since married, and had raised a family of four sons, who had grown to be men, and all were married (except one, who was an old bachelor), and had families. His home was once familiar, and still retained many of its old features. I was, as it were, a stranger, but a self-introduction soon awakened reminiscences of former days. The evening was spent in calling up olden times, and making inquiries after old acquaintances. Not one who had grown to manhood when I

lived there fifty years ago was living in the neighborhood. A few had moved to other parts, but the aged had gone to their long homes.

We remained with my cousin and his family a week, and during that time we visited his three married sons. Two of them lived on farms, very near the lake shore, and adjoining each other, or nearly so. These farms lay about two miles up the lake from Aurora, and were of good size, sufficient to make them a good living and enable them also to lay up some money each year. We had a very pleasant visit with these relatives. On a previous day we had visited another son, who lived a couple of miles in another direction, who was residing on a good farm and surrounded with all the conveniences of life. It was on the road leading from Aurora to Poplar Ridge that my father-in-law resided when I was married first, on the 9th of March, 1815. The house that he was living in was a two-story frame building. Some alterations had been made in the back part, but the front and upper part of the house remained in a good state of preservation, and bore the same old familiar style that it did over fifty years ago. The front yard had been somewhat enlarged, and was finely set with shade trees, intermixed with a large number of evergreens, appearing almost like a dense forest, excluding the view of the house and buildings from the road. We paid the family that was residing there a visit, and were most kindly received and treated, and not only shown over the grounds but every part of the house. This called up many an early association, but not altogether without its pang. With the more pleasing emotions came the once familiar faces, and with them the question, Where are they? Many of them gone to the silent tomb; the residue to foreign parts. We lingered, loth to leave the spot, but at length we bade our host a kind adieu. Such is life's giddy pathway! To-day we are in bliss, and in our extasy forget the sad thoughts that but yesterday hovered in our thoughts. The moment came, and we parted, our friends expressing the fond hope that we would visit them again.

This road at Sherwood's Corner is over six hundred feet higher than the surface of the water at the lake, and though not entirely an inclined plane, yet water could, without much labor, be made to run the entire four miles. In descending this road to the lake we not only have a fair view of the lake, but of the country for six miles beyond, to a ridge of land that lies midway between the Seneca and Cayuga Lakes. Between these lakes it is not only a fine looking country, but a rich farming one. Several times while



there I traversed this whole road and admired the beauty of the scenery. It was along this road that the farmers had, by drainage and careful tillage, preserved the fertility of the soil. About midway between Sherwood's Corner and the village, at the lake, there lived a man by the name of Humphrey Howland. He was a land agent for a wealthy company west of this place. By this agency he had become rich (when I lived there), and was living in a house said to have cost, in those times, \$10,000. I built him a carriage-house, for which he paid me, for the work alone, \$100. The house was back from the road some distance, and the yard embowered with a forest of trees and evergreens, so that the mansion was hidden from view from the road. A gate at each end of the yard opened to a carriage road that passed by the buildings. Passing one day, with my cousin, in a buggy, we drove in at one gate and out at the other. In passing the mansion and the out-buildings, I saw, among other out-buildings, the one I had built for Mr. Howland, fifty-one years before, still in a good state of preservation, but superseded by a larger and more costly structure for a carriage-house.

Here once resided a plain Friend, or Quaker, yet fancying style and costly structure, most of which was made from the hard earnings of the unfortunate poor, done from the renewals of the titles of lands and other extra fees. Such is poor human nature, with all the Christian adornments, as practiced *professionally*.

Close by the mansion, on one side, were grounds inclosed with a high fence, which had been used as a park for deer. On the other side, in another inclosure embowered with evergreens, there lay, in the silent tomb, the former "lord of the manor." The day before we left, my cousin, self, and wife, drove to the "Corners," on the Ridge Road, and then along the Ridge Road, southerly, some eight or ten miles; then west, to near the lake; then down the lake, through Aurora, home; having traveled some eighteen miles; thus making the circuit of as fine a body of good land as can be found in all that country. While here it rained at least half of the time.

The next morning we took our leave of Cousin John Hussey and his most excellent wife, their bachelor son taking us to the village, where we went on board of the boat, and then bade him good-by. It was the 15th day of August, 1866. The morning was cloudy, the wind blew a gentle breeze, the boat was crowded, and all the passengers were seeking to keep clear of the wind, while the ladies crowded into the cabin. To us the day was more like a Western October. At last we reached the wharf at Cay-

nga. Our baggage was transferred to the railroad cars, and we took seats for Syracuse. Eleven miles distant we reached Auburn, the county-seat of Cayuga County, situated on the outlet of Owasco Lake, which runs through the entire city, and has a fall of one hundred feet. The place was settled in 1793, by John Hardenburg, and called Hardenburg Corners, and continued to be known by that name until 1805, when it was changed to Auburn. It is situated in a rich farming country, bounded on the west by that lovely sheet of water the Cayuga Lake, along whose shores are located quite a number of fine villages. The place was incorporated in 1848, and is said to contain thirteen thousand inhabitants. It has ten churches, and extensive manufactories of almost every description. The buildings are tasteful and substantial, embracing the court-house, an academy, theological seminary, orphan asylum, State's prison (this prison is the model prison of the United States), an asylum for lunatic convicts, and school-houses sufficient for educating three thousand children. Much more might be said in regard to this place, but we must pass on. In so doing we pass through several fine villages and arrive at Syracuse. I passed over the ground where Syracuse now stands before there was even one house there. I passed through it again in 1822, and since then I have been there and have stopped for hours at a time. Syracuse is nearly equidistant between Albany and Buffalo. It contains thirty thousand inhabitants, and is principally noted for its extensive salt-works. In 1861, the enormous quantity of 7,200,371 bushels of salt were manufactured at this point, of which 1,884,697 were by solar evaporation. The State duties for that year were \$72,000, and the expenses incurred by the State in the same period amounted to \$45,000. Syracuse is the county-seat of Onondaga County. This place has the advantage of the Erie Canal, running directly through the place; also the New York Central Railroad, and a railroad south from Binghampton, where it is connected with the New York and Erie Railroad, and one from the north, from the city of Oswego, at Lake Ontario, at the outlet of the Oswego River. The New York Central divides at this point, one branch going up through Palmyra to Rochester, and the other through Auburn to Canandaigua, and from that point to Rochester, or direct to Buffalo. These various improvements makes Syracuse a central and an important point. On this trip we made but a short stop, as we went directly to Canastota, quite a little village, with stores, tavern, and mills etc., where we stopped and were detained a couple of hours, waiting for the stage going to Morrisville. At Canastota we were in a valley, but on leaving for Morrisville, we

were almost constantly ascending, and at times up considerable hills. Notwithstanding this, however, there is much good farming country, and now and then a small village. Petersburg is a town of considerable size, and is the residence of Garrett Smith, the great Abolitionist and ex-member of Congress. He has a fine residence and beautiful surroundings. Next is Morrisville, the county-seat of Madison County, and described in a former tour. We were soon at my brother-in-law's, James R. Combs. For a description of this neighborhood see visit of 1859. We remained here until Saturday afternoon, the 18th, and then left for my cousin, John Lippett's, about eight miles distant, Combs and his wife going with us in a spring wagon. We found my cousin and family well, and spent a couple of hours very pleasantly with them. The time arrived for Combs and his wife to leave, so we bade them good-by, and they left for home. The next morning Cousin John geared a horse to his buggy, and we took a drive, crossing the canal, and going up a valley, crossed the old Cherry Valley Turnpike, in sight of the former residence of my uncle Baker, which called up old associations of over fifty years ago. But how changed! The buoyancy of youth was gone; those whom I had once known were here no longer, they had been succeeded by another generation, and they will in turn be succeeded by another. The forest had been cleared, roads made, a canal had been excavated, and water was within it, and commerce flowing toward its destined ports. This canal was from Utica west to Binghampton. One object of it was to get the stone coal west of Binghampton, in Pennsylvania, to supply the demand along the canal route, and at Utica, and at other points. In the upland region, a little west of where we were, in some of the many swamps of cedar artificial lakes were made. These cedar swamps, in the main, were surrounded by hills, though some have outlets. The water that falls and runs down the slopes of the hillsides is preserved, except that which is evaporated, but in these the evaporation is small, the ground being shaded by the cedars and other evergreens. In the dry season this reserved water is drawn upon to supply the waste and leakage, evaporation, and lockage. From Solsville to Utica, a distance of eighteen miles, there are over sixty locks (the last is in the city), by which the water is emptied into the New York and Erie Canal. A small stream has its source south-west of Solsville, and runs east and empties into the Mohawk. The stream seems to cut its way through the hills. The canal and stage-road follow the stream down.

The first village of any size along the route is Oriskany Falls.

Here is quite a sudden descent in the creek, and the village (rather a pretty one) is at the head of the falls. The place is a ledge of rocks, and the road is mainly cut out of the rock, which is of a chocolate color, as is also the soil for a considerable distance down the stream. The stage stopped at the village for breakfast, and consequently afforded us but little opportunity of looking about. As we descended the ravine widened out, and as we approximated Utica the country widened into a considerable valley. At one or two points there was fine bog-iron ore in large quantities, so that an extensive furnace has been in successful operation. Along this village some desirable locations are to be found. A street car runs out from Utica for several miles, and a railroad is being constructed for a considerable distance; where and when it will stop is very uncertain.

At Clinton, in this valley, is Clinton College, an institution of some celebrity. From that point to Utica is a fine country, and considerable business is done there. At Rome, fifteen miles above Utica, the Black River Canal comes in from the north and is connected with the Erie Canal.

We left Cousin John Lippetts on Tuesday, the 21st of August, bidding his wife good-by; he going with us one and a half miles, to the small village, an election precinct, where we also bade him farewell, and took the stage for Utica; reaching that city about eleven o'clock. We there engaged a private conveyance to take us three miles out of the city, across the Mohawk, into Deerfield Township, to where my cousin and old school-mate resided, and where I one winter went to school with him. He had remained in the same place for over seventy years. There I found a second cousin whom I had not seen before. We spent the afternoon very pleasantly, although it had rained all day. My new cousin was a granddaughter of my old great-uncle, Joseph Mason, and from her I got the history of the family. The next morning we went into Utica; saw two sisters of our new cousin, and spent a few minutes with them, and then went to see another second cousin whom I had never seen. He was the architect and superintendent of repairs at the insane asylum in the city. I found him to be a pleasant man, and one whose acquaintance has been of decided assistance to me in acquiring a history of our family. At his urgent request we took dinner with him, and we also promised to spend more time with him on our return from our trip further East. We then returned to my cousin Scott Wilmarth's, and spent the evening very agreeably with the family, as also the forenoon of the next day. Then cousin accompanied us to the city,

we there took the cars for Albany, having left the most of our baggage at my Cousin Scott's. We reached Albany, a distance of ninety-five miles, at about 5 P. M., having passed over ground where I had often been when a boy and a young man, and before a canal or railroad was ever thought of. In consequence of the rapidity with which we traveled we only got a glimpse of places. The valley of the Mohawk is narrow, and, with considerable hills on either side, too steep for cultivation. The bottom is now and then widened out where a stream comes in to empty itself into the Mohawk. The lands along this valley were once as rich and fertile as any in the world. They are yet good, but there is a wide difference since my remembrance, sixty years ago. It had been forty-four years since I had been along the valley. The Erie Canal was then being built, and was regarded as an experiment by men who were looked upon as being persons of good minds, with some knowledge of commercial relations, but who had a very imperfect knowledge of the Great West. I had then lived in Indiana six years, and had crossed that State and Ohio, as well as the western portion of New York, on horseback, and yet had a very poor idea of the future commerce that was destined to pass through this great thoroughfare, though I had had great opportunities for knowing something of the vast productions of the West and its constant increase, having, in the summer of 1865, crossed Illinois twice; had gone into the central portion of Iowa by one route and out by another, and over a considerable portion of Wisconsin; had studied Minnesota, and had crossed Lake Michigan, at Milwaukee, to Grand River; then south, to the "Michigan Central Railroad," and was in several counties, and then came out by the way of Michigan City. Then again, this summer (1866) I have crossed the entire State from Michigan City to Detroit; and then, as will be seen by this, I have traversed the central portion of New York, making frequent stopping points; and now, after a residence in the West of more than fifty years, with all my experience and connection with canals and railways, I feel much at a loss to determine when and where this trade will stop. The West is a vast empire, and possesses all the elements of wealth within itself; and, if the same rapid increase of wealth and population goes on for the next fifty years that has been made in the past fifty, it will be a power within itself, and will possess all the means for self support. It has all the minerals, and has the soil for producing silk, flax, wool, and cotton sufficient to supply its own wants. This may by some be regarded as chimerical; but it is not by those who have studied the history of the civilization of man and the West.

The road once opened to the Pacific all our spices and some of the finer textile fabrics will come from the Indies. But I am reminded that I am not writing a history or treatise on political economy; but, I will venture to say, that the persons are now born who will live to see all that I have said realized. The East will seek a market in Mexico and South America for her manufactured articles, and it will be this commercial intercourse that will develop the resources of these countries to which I have referred; and, not only that, but it will be the means of civilizing the people, and of advancing them in intellectual attainments. It may take several centuries to develop the resources of the vast countries I have named, but it will be done. This continent is to be the grand theater of man's advancement in the higher scale of intellectual attainments. It will be greater than has ever before been attained, and by which he will have more elevated ideas of God and man, in all that goes to ennoble and dignify mankind in moral worth and true greatness. This may be mere speculation; but he who has studied man and his history, and the influences that are now operating on the mind of the free masses, where science and truth will control man's thoughts, by which his actions will be brought into subjection, and thus day by day develop the influence and power of human intellect, by which the universe of matter is moved and controlled by fixed and unalterable laws.

The diamond hidden by rubbish displays no luster, and though when brought to light it gives evidence of its brilliancy, yet it is not until it is polished and exhibited in the fullness of the noon-day light that it manifests its greatest beauty. It is so with man; the power of thought can not be made available until freed from all the shackles that bind it to the car of ignorance and blind superstition, and then polished by all the lights of scientific truths and controlled alone by moral force. The day has dawned and the latent powers of nature are being developed. A revolution is being wrought; the steam-engine, whose known power and utility is a thing of but yesterday, is working a revolution. The application of power through mechanics is inexhaustible. There is not a reasonable doubt but that there are forces now latent which time and thought will yet develop, and the men are not yet born who will bring to light means which will prove as essential to man's well being as any of those which have been developed. We have converted night into day by the combustion of gas, as may be seen in every city. We have crossed a continent and the broad Atlantic by means of electricity, and have made it tell the tale from one continent to another in a few moments of time; and

now we have on the road the iron track with the "iron horse," propelled by pent-up steam, which will soon cross a continent, and by the same steam power be connected with the wooden palace, or perhaps one of iron, to cross the surging ocean. In short, there is no end to what may be accomplished by nature's forces, directed by intellect. My mind has been irresistibly led to these reflections and deductions by what has transpired in less time than two-thirds of my own life, *i. e.* the ride on the iron track in 1866, where in 1822 the slow canal was just commencing to be made, the iron track and "iron horse" at that time being scarcely known. Now there is not only a double-track railroad but a canal capable of carrying a boat load of a hundred tons, and yet lacking the desired capacity.

From its first discovery, more than two hundred years ago, up to the present time, the Valley of the Mohawk has been the theater of exciting times. It was first inhabited by powerful tribes of Indians, who held a kind of middle ground between the more western and eastern tribes. The Mohawk River served them as an excellent inland water communication between the great lakes and the Hudson River. The Dutch, early in their settlement of the Hudson, settled at Albany with a view to their trading with the Indians on the Mohawk. The small streams, tributaries of this river, afforded fine hunting and trapping, especially on the northern side, and have since done so until a very late period. During the war with the French this region was the theater of much treachery and bloodshed. And again in the days of the American Revolution it was the field of blood and carnage. The completion of the Erie Canal and the "New York Central Railroad" have opened an internal commerce such as the world never saw before. At Albany it was interesting to go along the wharf at the river and see the business that was being done by water conveyance, and to see a bridge for the passage of the railroad cars, with a drawbridge for sloops or steamboats to pass through; and though a good structure, it will not compare for strength or finish with the one at Clinton, across the Mississippi River.

We stopped with my cousin, John Sayles, who resides at No. 29, Jay Street, in Albany. I had not seen him since we were boys. He has a son married, and two daughters, young women, who were living at home. Our stay with them was short but pleasant. There was but one spot in the whole city that looked natural to me, and that was the Capitol. When I saw it fifty years ago it was standing on a rise of ground alone, now it is surrounded by streets densely packed with buildings on every side, and though

of considerable size, it is now entirely too small. Quite a large building has been erected near it for the State Library, which was filled with books, pictures, and curiosities. A week might be spent with much interest in examining this library building. Besides this they have two other buildings which are used for public offices, court-room, and statuary. Here one could spend a few days in looking over the building, though at the time we were there they were undergoing repairs. Notwithstanding that we had the pleasure of ascending to the top of one, which gave us a bird's-eye view of a considerable portion of the city, also a view of Troy, and the river from Albany to Troy, and all in the immediate neighborhood, it being only about seven miles. The landscape was very beautiful. In the distance were seen the Green Mountains of Vermont, and the highlands on the Hudson River, and the high and elevated country in the direction of Pittsfield, on the railroad route to Boston. There was another place that we visited in the city—the Medical College. A portion of the rooms were open to the public, we embraced the privilege and visited one of considerable size filled with cases, leaving aisles or passages between them. Each of these cases were filled with anatomical specimens mostly of a morbid character, and a few monstrosities. A fine collection of fetal life in utero were beautifully preserved; there were also some in wax. Our time was too limited to examine these much, beyond the mere gratification of an idle curiosity.

This visit to Cousin John Sayles will ever be remembered with much interest. He had been a resident of the city for a long time, which enabled him to at once show us the more prominent places. Among other things we passed a building which was being erected as a conservatory for the preservation of all kinds of fruit during both summer and winter. We turned to one side and viewed the building. It was a massive structure, and was built with much care. The outside finish was of sheet iron; the interior was not finished, but the men were at work preparing to finish. These structures are becoming so common that a further description is deemed unnecessary.

On Saturday, the 25th, we left our cousin and his pleasant family, and, taking the cars for South Adams—sixty-three miles—crossed the river and wound our way out of the valley of the Hudson River on to the highlands, affording a fine view of the Catskill Mountains. In passing over these high hills, and through the valleys, we found the people just cutting their hay crop, which was very light, being but little, if any, over one ton per acre.



The light crop was said to be in consequence of the previous cold winter—there was little or no snow, and consequently much of the grass was frozen out.

We were not long in reaching Pittsfield, which was forty-nine miles distant. There we changed cars for South Adams. Pittsfield is an old town—one of the first settled in all this country, and is now a pleasant village. There seems to be but one business street, and that is broad and long, and well built up. It is on the line of the road to Boston, a branch of which turns off down the Housatonic. We reached South Adams a little after 11 A. M., and stopped with a widowed cousin, with whom I had formed an acquaintance at Anderson Town, Indiana. She had a daughter who had resided at that place for more than two years; she then took sick, and returned to Adams, where she died. Her father was a first, and her mother a second, cousin of mine. Her father took sick about eighteen months after her death, and died of typhoid fever, leaving a wife (my cousin), one married son, a widowed daughter, with three children, and a grandson, by the deceased daughter. The son moved to the State of Michigan, two miles from Sylvania, Ohio, which place is his post-office address; it is twelve miles north-west from Toledo. The rest are living with the mother, at home. This relative is the only one I have living in this part of the country, where once they consisted of five or six families. It is about two miles from the village where I was born, at my Grandfather Mason's.

After visiting the grave of an uncle, who lay in the cemetery near, I procured a conveyance at the livery-stable, and visited the old farm which had belonged to my grandfather, and where he and one of my uncles died. The farm had passed out of the possession of the family into that of strangers. The owner had torn down a part of the old house, and had moved away the best part, or rather all that which had been built in 1793. In August of that year the date (1793) had been written in the plastering over the front door, which was there still, and which we saw this summer when we visited the place. An aunt of mine told me that this date was correct, and was adjoining the room in which I was born, on the 10th day of December, 1793. Here I was presented with an old armed rocking-chair of my Grandfather Mason's, in which I took a seat. We found a very pleasant family living on the farm. The gentleman's wife is of the same stock from which I sprang, probably a fourth cousin. This had once been a lovely spot for that country, but time had told on the soil, as well as on the buildings.

We returned to the home of my cousin, and the next morning went with her widowed daughter to the village grave-yard, where this daughter's father and sister, as well as an aunt and her grandfather and grandmother were buried. This is the grave-yard in which my Uncle James Mason lies, whose grave we had visited the day before. After visiting all the graves I copied an inscription from the tombstone of my deceased second cousin, the daughter of the deceased father and cousin. Her sister, who was with us, remarked that they were the last words she ever uttered, which was but a few minutes before she breathed her last: "Oh, I am so happy! happy! I never dreamed of such happiness!" To me it seems strong evidence of immortality. While the lamp of life was flickering its last the mind was still active to utterance. At the west end of this cemetery stood the old Quaker meeting-house. It was one in which my mother's brother, George Lapham, had worshiped nearly all his life. Close by lay his wife, a daughter, and himself. The meeting-house was a plain, small building, in a good state of preservation. It was locked up; the society had dwindled out, and the house was not used now. I peeped through the windows, and saw the seats where the congregation had often sat and worshiped in silence. From the church we went half a mile to where my old uncle had lived and died. It was rather a romantic spot. As we turned a corner in the road the place was within full view. The house and outbuildings looked as natural to me as they did forty-four years ago, when I had last visited them. The house had been repaired, but it still retained its old features; the same little brook ran rippling over the pebbles, leaving a pleasant yard between it and the house. The same old fountain of pure spring water was still running for house and dairy purposes. The people treated us kindly, and showed us through the house, which seemed but little altered in sixty years. We bade them good morning, and left, returning to the village for dinner.

After dinner I procured a horse and buggy from the livery-stable, and taking my wife and cousin, we started for my Grandfather Mason's old residence, by a new route, on which we passed Grandfather Jenks' old farm. We reached the former, which is now owned by a Mr. Burlingame. He was at home, and readily informed us that my Grandfather Mason was buried at the burying-ground in Cheshire, at the old meeting-house occupied by old Elder Leland, who was a considerable man in his day, politically, as well as in religion. He was a Baptist, and in politics was a Jeffersonian Democrat. He figured largely in the great "Cheshire

Cheese," which was said to have weighed about one thousand pounds, and which Leland himself took to Jefferson.

In those days parties meant something. This country had been settled by three distinct classes in politics and in religion. First, the Puritans, who settled first near Massachusetts Bay, and who thanked God that they were in a land where they could worship Him in their own way, and although they had left the old country to be free from religious intolerance, they soon became intolerant themselves, and seemed to thank God that they could not only worship God in their own way, but control all others. They whipped and hung the Quakers, hung witches, and compelled all to pay tithes to their church, and this latter continued to be the law in Massachusetts up to a recent period. Another class that may be called radicals in religion, were a mixed people, though the Baptist largely predominated. This class settled mainly in the province of Rhode Island, and disseminated the doctrine that all men should be free to worship God as their judgment dictated, so that it did not encroach upon the rights of others. The third class were the broken-down English nobility, desirous of retaining their aristocratic opinions. The Huguenot was the religion of a considerable portion of the people, who were mostly from France and Germany. This class were a mixed people, ready to adopt any measures by which they could obtain and hold power. This class were Virginians and their descendants. They espoused the name of Republicans, with Thomas Jefferson at their head. This was the first bold move they made, and with them were joined the Liberals of New York and New England, in which Rhode Island took the lead. Though the names have since been changed, yet the issues are the same—liberty for all on the one side and aristocracy on the other. The issue can not be disguised, it is freedom for all or slavery for the masses, and aristocracy and power for the few and privileged classes are the real issues of this day. Liberty and freedom will prevail in spite of all the designs of power.

We found the grave-yard, but minus the church. That was gone, not a vestige of it was to be seen. After much searching we found the graves of my grandfather and grandmother. On one of the tombstones was inscribed "Philip Mason, died July 21st, 1813, in the sixty-ninth year of his age," on the other, "Mercy," his wife, died October 30, 1808, aged sixty-four years. From the family record it seems that he had a son Scott, who was bred a physician, but who, after practising one year, took sick and died, of typhus fever. There were, probably, buried near my grandfather five of his children, including his son Scott, four of whom must

have died young, as I never knew any of them. All the other members of the family I knew. We returned from this place by the way of the harbor on the river, where the railroad now crosses the Hoosac River, and took the river road to the village. This is a fine pleasant road, and is some two miles or more from the place called the harbor. To get down from off the hill we had to come down three considerable hills, two of which were very steep. From the harbor down to the village the river is entirely used up by a succession of woolen and cotton factories and a large paper mill and some machinery. The river at the village is entirely dried up by the factories, the water being conducted by races to the mills underground. We reached home at dusk. The next morning we shaped our course in another direction down the river. Myself and wife took a buggy immediately after an early breakfast and started for the Hoosac Tunnel, a mile up from the North Village, where a considerable business is done by the factories in the printing of calico and the manufacture of nearly all kinds of goods made from cotton. Having arrived at the mouth of the tunnel we turned up the side of the mountain, three-quarters of a mile or more, to a shaft which was three hundred and twenty feet to the bottom, where the railroad track is to be. Here we found an intelligent man, who seemed to be a kind of superintendent, from whom we learned much respecting the work, which we afterward found to be correct. The distance or length of the tunnel will be four miles and three-quarters when completed. The most of the entire distance is through a solid rock of granite, slate, and mica, which, I think, is mixed with hornblende. The work is being done by boring with the drill and blasting with powder and gun-cotton, but mostly with nitrous glycerine, which is fired by means of electricity, to prevent accidents. They were sinking a shaft from the summit of the mountain, one thousand and seventy-three feet to the railroad track below, and when this shaft is completed the tunnel is to be worked each way from the shaft. All the lifting will be done by ropes made of steel wire, attached to large windlasses, which will be worked by steam engines. At the shaft now being worked they have a steam engine that does the lifting of all the stone that is brought up. It also does the pumping, by which the shaft and tunnel are kept dry. It runs a blower that forces the air down into the tunnel where the men are at work, and they were, when we were there, preparing to do the drilling by compressed air, operated on by steam power. On the east side of the mountain they were in the tunnel three-quarters of a mile, and at the shaft, where they were at work, they

had gone into the mountain nine hundred feet; on the outward or west side not so far. On this side of the mountain they were in a kind of ravine, and were building a brick tunnel, which they designed continuing into the mountain until they reached the solid stone. This is a stupendous work, and will require several years to complete it. It will be the deepest underground route of any in the world, but not as long as the one through the Alps, which is over seven miles long. This will, it is said, shorten the distance between Troy and Boston fifty miles.

Civilization is developing the arts and mechanics, which are fast revolutionizing the world. Its power and extent seem illimitable. We had satisfied our curiosity, and heard the tale; so we took our leave, and returned to South Adams, where we had started from in the morning, and were back in time for dinner. It was only five miles out, and a pleasant drive. We brought home several pieces of stone taken out of the tunnel. The afternoon was spent in forming acquaintances and tracing up genealogy. The next morning we prepared to leave; and, bidding our friends and relatives a kind adieu, we took the cars again for Albany. On reaching Pittsfield we were detained several hours. I wrote one or two long letters; spent some time in seeing the town; and, at last, we were off again. Reached Albany, and our cousin's, in time for tea; spent a pleasant evening; and, at half-past seven o'clock next morning, we took the cars for Herkimer, and then the stage to Palmers Corners; then to a cousin's of mine for dinner; and after a social hour he, with his wife, drove us to the old residence of my late uncle, Isaac Mason's, who had died the 18th of July previous. (This was the 30th of August, 1866). We stayed all night there, and met my cousin, Amy Thomas, and her husband, at the old homestead. She was the eldest child of my Uncle Isaac, and when at home they live in McHenry County, Illinois, near Richmond, which is near the Wisconsin line. The next morning we all arranged for a visit to a son of Samuel Mason's. Our party consisted of John Mason (the bachelor), his sister Harriet (an old maid), myself and wife, and Thomas and his wife. We took dinner with Robert Mason, a grandson of uncle Isaac Mason, and his wife, who seemed to be fine people. I was much pleased with his wife. They lived only about two miles from my uncle's old place. Late in the afternoon Cousin John took us to his brother James, and on our way we stopped at the grave-yard where my father and mother lay buried. We spent the night with James and his family. The weather was cool and cloudy. The next morning, after breakfast, at my request, Cousin James geared his

horse to his buggy, and took me to the grave-yard, near a snug, neat Baptist Church, where they held weekly meetings, and where my old uncle worshiped. It was conveniently arranged outside by having a good shed, and under it hitching places, all within an inclosure. I found the headstone to my father's grave considerably out of plumb. It had been set in the ground instead of in a block of stone. I righted it up, and then put in good stone, and pounded them in the ground. I had a younger sister, and also an infant brother, who had been buried near the graves of my father and mother; and, though not marked by a lettered slab, the graves, on close examination, seemed to have been looked after and stone put up. I added others, so as to render the graves more prominent. I had a brother and his wife who were buried on the same lot with my father. On his grave had been planted a willow, which was neglected and was growing into a bush with several bodies. I cut out, and trimmed it up, and made rather a decent tree of it, and, besides, removed the drooping limbs that hung on the headstones, which were creating a mildew and a moss upon them. This done we left and took a drive over some old familiar ground, and on to a high hill, where I once more overlooked the Mohawk and the surrounding country. We then returned, by another old familiar route, to my cousin's home. I spent the day with him and his family until late afternoon, and we then went to David E. Mixture's, where we stayed all night, and until after breakfast next morning, and had a delightful time of it. We started, Mrs. Mixture going with us in a buggy to our old friend Abraham Ward's, where we spent the day most pleasantly. I have found in this man a staunch and ever true friend. We stopped over night with Cousin John Mason at the old farm. The next morning we were to leave. Cousin Amy and her husband were there. We were to separate, in all probability, to never meet again on earth. Cousin John took us to his brother Alanson's old place, where we parted, leaving us with a houseful of second cousins. Amos was the oldest of Cousin Alanson's children, and a bachelor, and owned a considerable portion of his father's old farm. He got his horse and buggy; we jumped in, and he, to gratify me, drove two miles into a place called Fox Hollow, and then drove up the Hollow two miles further. When I first knew this place, over sixty years ago, it was a dense forest of mostly hemlock timber. There was a road cut through, winding with the creek, that runs through the Hollow. The valley was a narrow one; the hillsides were irregular, cut up with ravines; now and then a hillside that could be cultivated, on which potatoes could be raised, with now and then a

patch of corn, pumpkins, and squashes, but mostly in grass, as pasture or meadow. When a boy, not quite ten years' old, my father moved from Fairfield to Warren. In this move we passed through Herkimer Village, and crossed the Mohawk, and went by the way of the hill, on the south side of the river, called Shumacher Hill, from a Dutchman, by that name, who lived on its summit. We passed down into this hollow, and up it a short distance, and then a road wound out of it, up a sloping hill, for two miles or more, when we reached the summit, where my father had purchased the home to which we were moving. These hills rose to several hundred feet above the creek in the hollow. The place was called "Fox's Hollow," from a family of that name, who first settled in the place. They built a saw-mill on the creek, and at times could do considerable sawing, having a fine fall of water, and it being easy making a dam. The hemlock made fine plank for sheeting, for roofing, and fine lumber for covering barns, and other outbuildings. These mills became more important, and the lumber more valuable, after the construction of the Erie Canal, which was only some four or five miles from this locality. This Fox family was rather a peculiar one. They had three or four girls who were unusually tall and slender, and fine singers, and were out at meetings every Sunday. They and their residence became quite noted. This last trip up the "Hollow" became intensely interesting. I went until I could keep out of it, and then went back part of the way by a different route. We found the place all along well settled with, once in a while, a moderately good house. How they managed to build such houses, and raise enough on such land to enable them to live, was beyond my comprehension; nor could my connexion satisfy me. They also kept a few sheep, some cows, and a few hogs. We returned from dinner by a new route, or cut-off through the hills, and spent the afternoon in conversation with our cousins; the whole family, with the exception of one married sister, having assembled there. The next morning we took our leave, one of the boys taking us to the Mohawk. From there we took the omnibus to Herkimer Village, where we took the cars for Utica, and then another private conveyance (at a cost of three dollars) three miles, again to my Cousin Scott M. Wilmarth's. Our speedy return was rather unexpected. Our new cousin had gone to Madison County, to Cousin John Lippitts, to be engaged in picking hops. This is a considerable business, especially for women, during the season for gathering them. It is a gay time. The hops are gathered into a box of four apartments, and four persons pick for one box. These boxes will

hold several bushels, and are accurately measured and marked, and a tally is kept of each person's picking for each day. These are so tallied, by two sticks, that neither the employer nor employee can cheat the other.

There was a County Fair held about a mile out from the city, at the place where the State Fair was held the year before. We spent one day there, but I find very little difference in agricultural fairs. They would be a kind of holiday affair were it not for the horse show and horse racing, which is an attendant of all of them. These and the side-shows are the most prominent features of these fairs. If a man is desirous of learning practical farming, or horticulture he must go elsewhere for information than to one of these fairs. This is my experience, and I have attended them in three States, and at different places in at least two of them. That they are of service to the people generally is unquestionable; but that they produce the greatest sum total that could be learned is equally true. A considerable amount of learning is really necessary to enable a man to appreciate the real importance of the study of agriculture intelligibly.

One objection to these fairs is that the thing is so managed that a designing few get all the premiums. It is done by trickery and overreaching the less sagacious and thoughtful. We returned from the fair, and stopped with my second cousin, before alluded to as being connected with the insane asylum, at Utica. This asylum is a massive stone structure, five hundred and fifty feet long and the width in proportion, and is three stories high above the basement, except the center front, which is four stories. I was very politely waited on and showed over all the buildings, and through almost all the wards. A few of the worst cases I did not see, but had a pressing invitation to remain until next morning, and at 9 A. M. visit with the physicians the various wards, but previous engagements prevented. From all I could see or know the institution is well managed, and kept in a scrupulous state of neatness. In the year 1865, the whole number of patients for the year were nine hundred and twenty; of these, one hundred and thirteen were discharged recovered, thirty-five were discharged improved, ninety-one improved, and nine were not insane; fifty-seven died, leaving six hundred and fifteen on the 30th of November, 1865. As large as this institution is the State needs at least four or five more, a portion of them as large as this one. The building is in the center of a lovely lawn, on a rise of ground, sloping from the building to the street, some ten or fifteen rods. Back of the buildings were shown me by my relative. The grounds are well laid out, and are



in a high state of cultivation. Nearly or quite a full supply of all kinds of vegetables are raised here for the asylum. There is quite a large farm attached to the institution, which is well cultivated and managed, and produces all their milk, butter, and cheese, and a considerable amount of pork. All the outbuildings are convenient, and suitable for the purposes for which they were designed. I rambled over the grounds until I became tired. The next day we returned to Cousin Scott's, and made arrangements to visit the Trenton Falls, which we did on Friday, the 7th of September, 1866. The stream, at the point where the falls are, is but a small-sized mill-stream. A dam is thrown across it, at the point where the rapids commence, for the purpose of turning the water to one or two mills below the dam. There was, at the time we visited the place, a bridge but a few rods below the dam for the crossing of teams. Soon after the rapids commence there is a succession of cascades, within the distance of two miles, to the upper falls, which are some fifteen or twenty feet perpendicular. This upper falls, as well as a portion of the cascades, is better seen from the east side of the stream than from any other point, and for that purpose we crossed the bridge, before spoken of, and went up to the falls, and then returned. On the west side there is a large hotel built for the accommodation of visitors. Beside this one there are others, but not as large. The hotel is some forty or fifty rods from the creek, in rather a romantic place, embowered in a natural forest, a considerable portion of which is hemlock. The hotel has all the modern appliances and out-fixtures to accommodate a fashionable pleasure-seeking people. The access to the hotel from the public highway is by a pleasant and gentle slope, through which a road has been opened, with now and then a cleared spot upon it. Just above the mill-dam before spoken of commences, on each side, a high slope of rock covered with a small amount of earth, leaving the stream in a deep, narrow gorge, increasing in depth as one goes up, until near the upper falls. Above the falls the country is what may be called a level. From Utica there is a railroad that runs out and crosses the stream, just above the falls, and runs to Black River, and down Black River there is a connection by a common road from the hotel to the railroad, so that one can reach the falls in about fifteen miles distance from Utica. We went in a carriage across the country and reached the falls within about twelve miles. From the hotel to the stream is through a native forest, by a moderately good foot-path. Most of the way is over descending ground, and when it becomes too steep the visitor descends by a wooden stairway of one hundred steps, a rise of some

ten inches to each. These steps are often in detached sections, by intervals of sloping grade not requiring steps; the whole descent is over one hundred feet. When once down, the visitor being desirous of ascending, he winds his way along the declivity and in some places by a very narrow pathway on a rock. In these narrow places there are chains made fast, which the visitor can use as a handrail. In this way he can ascend if the water in the stream is not up or flush to the upper fall. By some the place is much extolled, and to those who can bear fatigue and are fond of rugged romance in solitude the place would be delightful. The stream on which the falls are is called West Canada Creek. The falls themselves are called the Trenton Falls, and are so known throughout the country. It is but a short distance from the Trenton Falls to the head waters of Black River, all of which are in Oneida County. The West Canada Creek, at Trenton, makes a short bend to the east, crosses Herkimer County, and heads in Hamilton County.

We returned in the afternoon, and before we reached home were caught in a shower of rain. The country we passed over is poor and hilly, and only fit to raise potatoes and grass. The land is not only broken, but poor and unproductive. The next day myself and cousin went into the city; saw our Cousin Russell B. Mason, of the asylum, and called and got some photographs that I had arranged for, and then returned home. The day following was Sunday, and I spent the most of the day in writing letters to my friends and sending my photograph. Monday came and with it the hour for our departure. We bade my cousin's wife farewell, Cousin Scott taking us to Utica. There we called and bade our Cousin Russell and family adieu, and then took our seats in the cars for Rome, and bid our cousin good-by, and again, at that place for Pulaski, forty-six miles. We passed over this same road in 1859. The country had been improved in the meantime. From Rome to Pulaski is across a "divide," somewhat broken, yet flat and wet, and the land, in the main, is poor. The waters of the "divide" flow into the lake and into the Mohawk. The most of it is said be a poor, flat, wet country, though in places it is sandy. The country seemed to have been cleared for its timber; in every place that a saw-mill could be run by water, there was one, and sawed lumber seemed to be plenty wherever it could be made. There was hemlock, some pine, and other timber. In this way this whole country will ultimately be cleared, and the most of it be sowed in grass, and used for dairy purposes. Some of the highest and dryest land, by proper manuring, may be made to raise some grain.

At Pulaski we stopped with my Brother Stephen, whom we visited in the summer of 1859. At that time the court-house and jail were being enlarged, and were completed that season. This place is a half-shire town; and besides the improvement on the court-house several other buildings had been erected. Two good churches had been built, and a railroad from Richland Station, on the Rome and Watertown Railroad, had been constructed to Oswego, twenty-nine miles. This road crossed the Salmon River above the town, so that when opposite to the village it was at least half a mile distant from it. Considerable business will ultimately be done at this point, though the retail business will be done at the old place in town. When here before I had formed the acquaintance of a large number of persons, most of whom seemed pleased to see me again, and welcomed me warmly to the place. While here I again visited the Masonic Lodge. We reached this place on Monday the 10th, and left on Thursday the 20th. It rained almost incessantly while we were here, and consequently we were detained several days longer than we had expected. We procured a spring wagon and two good horses, and my brother and his wife accompanying us, we went to our Brother Almond's, but, as usual, it rained before we got there and we got decently wet. We found the family all well. Brother Stephen remained until Sunday and then returned home. My brother was living in the same old place where I had visited him twice before. The weather being unfavorable we went out but little. There was an Agricultural Fair held at Fulton, at the Oswego Falls, and I went with my Brother Almond who seemed much interested in these exhibitions. As I have before remarked, they are all alike, a kind of holiday affair, in which the few manage to gull the many and get the dimes that are given in premiums. At Gilbert's Mills, about two miles from my brother's, they were boring for salt water. They had not gone down more than fifty feet till they found good strong water, but not in sufficient quantities to justify the manufacture of salt. They were still boring, and designed going to considerable depth unless plenty of water was found sooner, which was found in abundance. While here we had a visit from a nephew of my brother's wife. His father had moved into Canada when this one was a small boy. He grew up and has become entirely naturalized to the manners of the Canadians and their government. I am told that he has a fine farm and property on the River Thames, Canada West.

On Monday, October the 1st, my brother took his team and went with us to Fulton. There we met his Canadian nephew,

who was starting home and would go with us as far as Rochester. After bidding my Brother Almond farewell we took the cars for Syracuse, and were detained there for several hours waiting for the train going west. At last it came and we left. My nephew, a son of my Brother Almond's who lived at Gilbert's Mills, had also come to Syracuse to buy goods. He was in the grocery business. As we were about leaving he came into the cars and took leave of us. The cars started, and onward we sped on a different route from the one we had gone down on, going up through Palmyra, a small city. We reached Rochester and parted with our Canadian friend, who left for Niagara Falls. We took a private conveyance out to my Cousin Wetmore's, where we found them all well; and although our visit was unexpected they seemed much pleased to see us. The next morning I went into the city with Mr. Wetmore, my object being to see Deacon N. S. Sage. I had written him a letter, stating that I had been informed that he was getting up a history of the Mason family. I found that the old gentleman was dead—had died about ten days previons. I found his son William to be a very pleasant man, who stated that my letter had been answered and sent to my residence in Indiana, and which I found upon my return home, but no history. However William was so kind as to show me a record of the Lapham family, which I was pleased to see. Since then I wrote to Increase A. Lapham, of Milwaukee, Wisconsin, and received from him a copy of a Genealogical Chart of the Lapham Family, which I found to correspond with a history I have of the family down to my mother's family. This is continued down two generations further. I returned to Mr. Wetmore's and spent the day, and was invited to stay and attend their County Fair which commenced that day, but on inquiry I found that it would probably be about like the others I had seen in the State. We went with the family to the city and took the cars for Buffalo, which place we reached about 12 M., and at 3 P. M. we took the stage for East Aurora, a distance of about fifteen miles, to visit my Cousin Gideon Lapham. At dusk we reached his son's, Dr. George H. Lapham, where we stayed all night and where we found a pleasant family. The following day we went to my Cousin Gideon's, found him and his wife two aged persons, he being in his eightieth year and his wife in her seventy-seventh. They were both able to be up and to attend to some business, but the mark of age was upon them. Gideon's brother, Asa, who was nearly seventy-three years of age, was living with them here. He had never married, and for years had made his home with his Brother Gideon. He was yet able to

do and did considerable work. We remained at Cousin Gideon's until Sunday the 7th of October, when we bade Asa and Dorcas, the wife of Cousin Gideon, good-by, he going with us to his son's. Here we parted probably never to meet again. We remained all night with the Doctor and his pleasant family, where we spent the time very agreeably. The morning came, and with it the "'bus" immediately after an early breakfast. Our baggage aboard, and bidding good-by to our kind cousins, we were again on the road, and reached Buffalo before 12 M., and found that we would do better to remain until 9 P. M., which we did.

The country about Aurora is a moderately-good farming region, and at the time we were there was far better adapted to grazing and the dairy business than grain. In going out from Buffalo we proceeded up the valley of Buffalo Creek. In the neighborhood of the city the land is low, wet and clayey, and is only fit for grass, and almost too wet for that. As one ascends the valley, though narrower it becomes dryer. On each side of the valley the hills rise in places to considerable highth, but in many it is not so abrupt as to prevent tillage. Some grading has been done for a railroad up this valley, the design being to extend the road to Olean Point, with a view to lessening the price of coal. In the afternoon I took a walk out to the steamboat landing, went some little distance along the wharf and saw the "elevators," by means of which grain is stored and unloaded from schooners and steamboats, and again transferred into canal-boats, to be shipped east by the canal. These elevators are built out in the water so that a boat can run up alongside of them and load or unload. Along the wharf there are immense warehouses for the storage of merchandise of every kind and description. I saw immense quantities of barreled flour, which were being unloaded from steamboats and stowed away in these warehouses, with which the wharf was lined, except there was now and then a space on which a new and large building was going up. Though I had seen the West yet it seemed to me that the supply must surely exceed the demand.

Night came, we had engaged a berth in a sleeping car and took it after getting a check for our trunk to Toledo and seeing said trunk on board. We went to bed and in the morning awoke at Cleveland at break of day, got up, dressed, and as soon as the cars stopped we were out and at a fine, large restaurant where we were informed that we would have time for an ample breakfast, walked in, took our seats at the table and made one of the best meals we had eaten during our whole route. Breakfast over we went out again, I

looked at the harbor, but the morning being foggy we saw but little. Got a morning's paper, went to the cars and took our seats and were soon off for Toledo. At a snail's pace we wound our way out of the city up a ravine, along a small creek for a considerable distance, to some fine table-land; soon it commenced raining and made everything look gloomy. The country, as seen from the cars, appeared to be, generally, flat, and the soil but moderately good. We passed Oberlin and a negro college, though we were not sufficiently close to see much. Reached Toledo about 11 A. M., and procuring a conveyance went to my Cousin Moreau Allen's, living on Cherry street, nearly two miles from the landing. As we had expected, we found him an old bachelor, living on the property he had inherited from his parents. This consisted of quite a snug house with twelve acres of land, and outbuildings. He had a widowed aunt (a sister of his father's) keeping house for him. She had a son with her, a man forty years of age or more. We found both the mother and son modern Spiritualists, and pleasant company. Moreau was but little at home, he having an office in the city, where he spent the most of his time, his business being that of land agent, buying and selling. He kept a horse and buggy, which he placed at our disposal, and we rode out two afternoons. A heavy rain fell during the night after our arrival, and continued to rain each day while we were there, rendering the streets and roads, where they were not paved, a bed of mortar. One day we went from the city down to the bay at the lake, near the point where the canal opened into the lake, and where there had been a harbor created for the use of the canal. At this point the city had been commenced, a town plat laid out, and quite a number of store buildings as well as residences had been erected, all of which are dilapidated and but few are inhabited. It was a pleasant location, and how the city came to be eventually located up the Maumee River, three miles distant, I could not learn. The city is a place of considerable business, and has besides the terminus of the canal from Cincinnati and the Wabash and Erie Canal. It is also the railroad center of four railroads which all come into one depot and go out of the same. This is built on an artificial island in the river, and is so constructed, that by a drawbridge on each side, steamboats and other water craft come in on each side of the depot. There are one or more elevators for loading and unloading boats of every description. The canals really terminate at this point though a portion of the water is carried down within a mile of the lake, and as it flows down to be discharged into the river runs a good mill. It is three miles from the city to the bay, or

lake. Our stay at this place was so short that we had very little opportunity of knowing much about the country, and besides at the time everything was flooded with water, but from all I could see or learn the whole country was a flat, level one, and to settle it will require much drainage. On Friday, the 12th of October, 1866, we bade our relatives good-by, the aunt and son accompanying to the depot where we parted. We took the cars for Wabash Town by the way of Fort Wayne, a distance of two hundred and thirty-six miles, and reached there about sundown, stopping with our friend Levy Thomas. The following morning, after an early breakfast, went out into town. Saw many of my old friends who seemed pleased to see me. I called on Dr. Ford who furnished me with a conveyance out to my son Stephen's, where we found those living all well. He had a short time before lost his oldest son, William, who died from hemorrhage of the lungs from consumption, and his youngest child, a little girl, about thirteen months old, from dysentery. Stephen felt low-spirited, as he, naturally, felt the loss of his children, and besides that he had lost nearly his whole crop of wheat, and had but few hogs beyond what he wanted for his own meat, and he had only a moderate corn crop. He is an honest, good man, but a poor manager. We reached his place on Saturday and remained until the next Tuesday, and spent the time with my son. Looked over his farm and advised him as to some matters connected with it, and also how to make a drain for his bottom land. He was engaged in making up his sorghum cane into molasses.

Tuesday came, and I went to town, and then out to the fair ground. But little was being done beyond arranging articles for exhibition. In the evening I returned to Stephen's. The next morning he, with his wagon, took myself, wife, and his oldest daughter down to Colonel Rose's. From there we went to the fair grounds, and in the evening returned to Rose's, where we stayed all night, and the next day went to the fair again. We have attended the agricultural fairs at this place for the last eight years. When we first attended them here the people were a plain, familiar community. The fairs were very well gotten up, with nearly all kinds of vegetables, a few buggies and wagons, and a small amount of machinery, and a fair stock of horses, cattle, and hogs. I had attended several agricultural fairs in New York this year, and I must say that I have never seen a fair better gotten up than the one at the Wabash. The people were well dressed and well behaved, and the Floral Hall was bountifully contributed to, and was arranged with much neatness and taste. This fair would

be hard to beat, and certainly was a great credit to the people of the county, but especially to those who were active in getting it up. I had the pleasure of seeing a great many old acquaintances, and with some of them I spent a half hour very pleasantly. Late on Thursday afternoon we left the fair grounds, went to our friend Rose's, gathered up our things, and taking our seats in a wagon with my nephews, Alonzo Mason's sons, we went out home with them. The next day we went to Eel River, among the Jenks families, where we made our usual visits. On the following Tuesday we returned to my nephew's, where, the next day, I obtained a horse from him, and, leaving my wife at his house, I made a visit to my old friend J. B. Tyler, and stayed all night with him. He is now a feeble old man. In the morning I bade them all good-by, and left for the town of America, and called on my son Darwin's family, and saw a few old acquaintances. Took dinner at Darwin's, and afterwards went to the Tyler farm; went nearly all over the premises, and stayed all night at Siders', the man living on the place. The wheat crop was a poor one; the corn was a little better. The next morning, after breakfast, I went to Ashland, and stopped a few minutes to see two of the Tyler boys, who had a harness and shoe-shop in the place. I then left for the Kilander farm, and took a good look over it. Eat my dinner, and left for my nephew Alonzo's, whose place I reached before night. I have visited this region of country year after year for the past nine years, and a few times twice during the year. It has been a hard country to settle owing to its wetness; but wheat, until the last two years, has been fair and tolerably certain crops, and has had a ready sale at fair prices. Corn has been much of the time low, but by feeding it to hogs it paid. For the last four years the hog cholera has materially injured quite a number of men there. The country, though, has constantly been improving, and the majority of the people are in comfortable circumstances to live. The Wabash and Erie Canal and the Toledo and Wabash Railroad have been everything to the country. Without one or both of these improvements the surplus products of the country would have been nearly worthless.

We returned to my son Stephen's; visited a few more friends in Wabash Town, and out north on the plank road, a mile and a half, to a Mrs. Honeywell's, who settled on a piece of flat land, much of which was rich, but in a wet season too wet for any kind of grain crops. He is a natural mechanic, and succeeds in almost anything and everything he undertakes. He has a house, barn, and other outbuildings, all built by his own hands. He has culti-



vated the strawberry successfully as well as a variety of both large and small fruit. He invented a machine for molding "draining tiles," and succeeded admirably in making all the varieties for that purpose. When I was there he had several acres of his wettest land drained, on which he had raised fine corn, although the season had been unusually wet. He had the drains on eight or ten acres more, cut, and in some the tiles were laid and he was filling the ditches. In the main drains he was using the horse-shoe shaped tile, with a sole at the heel part. In some places he had put in three of these five-inch tiles. These carried quite a stream of water. His drains are from thirty inches to four feet deep, and in a few places five feet, and were from three to four rods apart. I spent a day with this man most pleasantly. He is a person of good common sense; converses readily on almost any subject, and takes the spade or shovel in hand when necessary, and does whatever is to be done. Although he employs an Irishman who digs all the trenches, he himself lays all the tile. I have no doubt but that he will be amply repaid for this hard toil and experience.

On Saturday, the 3d of November, 1866, my son Stephen took us to the depot in Wabash Town. We there took the cars for Peru, where we were detained three or four hours; then proceeded to Indianapolis, where we arrived a little after dark. We remained there until the afternoon of the next Thursday, when we left for home.

While in Indianapolis we stopped with our friend General John Coburne, who married Miss Caroline Test, daughter of Judge Charles Test, who was an own cousin of my second wife, as well as an old acquaintance of mine. While we were his guests we were treated with much attention and kindness. During a carriage drive across the river, we visited the Insane Asylum, where we were shown over the entire building and through all of the various wards. On our return we drove over much of the western part of the city, and afterward went over the greater part of the eastern portion in the street cars. We also spent some time with Charles Merrifield and his family. He was a nephew of my second wife, who was sister to his mother, Mrs. Eliza Merrifield. We also called on other acquaintances. It has seldom been my lot to spend the time so pleasantly as we did the few days we were in Indianapolis. On this visit an occurrence transpired which proved highly interesting. While at breakfast one morning at the General's I expressed a desire to get the New England history of my ancestors. He stated that the widow of Mr. Calvin Fletcher had

a work called the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, and at once gave me a letter of introduction, which I immediately made available, and found Mrs. Fletcher very kind, and who at once put me in possession of the work, embracing nineteen volumes. The work had been published as a periodical, each year constituting a volume. The last number of each year contained an analytical index. I immediately commenced with the first volume, and plodded carefully through. In the eighteenth volume I found all that I desired in relation to my genealogy, a considerable portion of which will be found in the beginning of my Family History.

The city and location of Indianapolis are so well known that I shall make but a few remarks here. It is on the west fork of White River, where the National Road and the Indiana Central Railroad cross the same, and is the capital of the State of Indiana. It is the central point of nearly every railroad in the State. In 1866 it contained a population of forty thousand inhabitants, and is regularly laid out, with broad streets, and with angular streets, from each of the four corners of the city, which center at a point called the "Governor's Circle." It is the county-seat of Marion County. The court-house is situated in the eastern part of the city, on the north side of Washington street, which runs east and west. This is a very broad street, and is the center of business. The Central Railroad runs two squares south of this street, where the Central Railroad Depot is located, and where all the railroads coming into the city center. At that point passengers seeking transportation to any part of the State congregate, and also passengers desiring a change from one road to another there make the exchange.

The State-house is located in the western part of the city, on the north side of Washington street. It is situated on a pleasant plat of ground, ornamented with fine shade trees. The capitol was, at the time of its erection, regarded as a handsome, substantial building, but rather too low. March, 1867, I visited it but a few days ago, while the Legislature was in session. The building is considerably dilapidated, and in a few years should be replaced by an entirely new structure of stone, of which material the western portion of the State affords some of the finest building limestone that is to be found anywhere. Within the northern portion of the city limits there is an Asylum for the Blind, consisting of a large plat of ground occupying an entire square with fine buildings, where those deprived of sight are taught the rudiments of an English education, as well as some mechanical branches.

There is also an Asylum for the Deaf and Dumb, situated at the extreme eastern end of the city, on the south side of the National Road, which runs as a continuation of Washington street. This institution is said to be well managed.

The Insane Asylum is west of the city, as before stated, over the river one and a half miles, on a fine farm. It had a small beginning, but has been greatly enlarged. Last fall, when I was there, a fine, large building was up and roofed, but not finished, and the foundation was being laid for another considerable wing. -

In the north-eastern portion of the city the United States has a fine arsenal, which was commenced by the State and developed by the late war. Within the city, and near the State House, is the United States Armory, where repairing is done.

North of the city, and west of the United States Arsenal, there is an excellent college, under the management of the Christian or Campbellite Church, and which is in a flourishing condition. During the present year their intention is to greatly enlarge it, by the addition of an eastern wing. The city abounds in schools, as well as a few fine female colleges.

There are quite a number of manufacturing establishments for iron in the western part of the city; and north of Washington street there are a number of flouring mills, which are run by hydraulic power, derived from a feeder-dam across White River, above the city, formerly built for the purpose of feeding the "Central Canal," one of the intended works in the great system of improvement adopted by the State in 1836. The city of Indianapolis is adorned by a large number of churches, and some are now being built at much cost, and finished with considerable taste, and in excellent style.

The Order of Odd Fellows have a fine building on Washington street, a short distance below the court-house.

The Masonic Fraternity have, on the south side of Washington street, half a square east of the State-house, a plain yet considerable building, in which the various grand bodies hold their sessions.

The city is on an extensive plain, which is almost a dead level.



PART THIRD.

ORIGINAL ESSAYS.

---

HISTORY OF FAYETTE COUNTY, AND AN ADDRESS ON AGRICULTURE.

DELIVERED SEPTEMBER 3, 1862.

---

*Mr. Chairman, Ladies, and Gentlemen:* As requested, I have prepared an address for the occasion of the meeting of the "Old Settlers of Fayette County," at the First Annual Fair of the "Fayette County Stock Agricultural and Mechanical Society."

It is due to myself to say, at the commencement of this address, that I had intended to have embraced within its limits an historical sketch of this county, beginning with the treaty made with the Indians for the lands which are contained within its boundaries; the time of sale of the land, the prices for which they were sold, and the time at which the first settlements were made. With this view I addressed a letter, early in July, to the Secretary of the Interior of the United States, from whom I have not, as yet, received any answer. This I regret, as I designed giving, in a condensed form, a history of our county, for future reference, and the more plainly to make out our rapid advance from a savage wilderness to many of the comforts and conveniences of civilized life; and this, too, in a country remote from those advantages which are only derived from commercial facilities. Again, I had another difficulty to contend with in arriving at the early history of this county. It was not organized for some eight years after it was settled, and then it was, in part, taken from the county of Wayne,

on the north, and a part from the county of Franklin, on the south. It is to the records of these counties that we must look for information respecting our early history as regards inhabitants and wealth, but if those records are not in any better state of preservation than ours, only a very meager statement could be made. With these preliminary remarks I will proceed, with the slender means at my command, and excusing myself for any deficiency, on account of the limited time I have had to devote to this subject.

From the best information I can obtain, the settlement of the valley of the West Fork of White River, running through our county, must have been commenced in the year 1810 and 1811.

By a document furnished me by our late excellent Auditor, Job Stout, which embraces the entries of all the lands within Fayette County, the date of entry, and by whom entered, etc., I find that the earliest entries within the county were on the 23d day of October, 1811. John Conner, on the 13th day of November, 1812, entered the north-west quarter of section twenty-five, township fourteen, range twelve. On said quarter the first town-lots of Connersville were laid off; thus showing that fifty years ago the land on which our county-seat is situated was a wilderness.

I have procured the footing up of the several tracts of land, and the entries prior to the organization of the county, which have been estimated by Mr. Eli Earle, who found the whole number of acres within our present limits to be 131,489 56-100, while the assessment for the year 1861 gives 131,401 15-100, which, with the lots in the several towns in the county, would make up the balance as estimated in the whole of it.

The eastern boundary of Fayette has been changed, by which the county lost, in taxable land, 9,600 acres. There had been entered within the present limits, previous to its organization, 79,333 24-100, which made the whole amount purchased at the time it was organized 88,933 24-100; but all was not taxable, however. This showing, which is seven years and four months after the first lands were purchased, finds us with a meager population, as well as limited resources. The early settlement of this county was much retarded by the war with Great Britain, commonly known as the War of 1812. Five miles west of Connersville was the boundary line between the Indian Territory and what was known as the "Twelve-mile Purchase," on which the town and county are located. The Indian Territory was the main hunting-ground, and there resided among the Indians traders who were connected with traders in Canada, a British province, and great apprehensions

existed among the early settlers of the Whitewater Valley, that through the influence of the traders the Indians might become excited against the young and feeble settlements. This fear became so strong that the public authorities deemed it necessary to build block-houses, and to garrison and place them under a commander. One of these block-houses was located near the present site of our county-seat, and was commanded by Colonel William Helm, who resided six miles below the present town of Connersville.

I came to the valley of the Whitewater in the spring of 1816, and early in the summer of that year I visited Connersville. A small tract of land had been laid off by John Conner into town lots, which lay along the river bank, on Water street and along Main street, and a few log-cabins had been erected. The most of the land which comprises the present site of the town was then a dense forest. In traveling up the river to the place there was now and then a small opening to be seen, with an inhabited log-cabin on it. John Conner, after whom the town is named, and who owned the land on which it stands, had built a mill just above the town, and not far above the site of the present mill, now owned by A. B. Conwell. There was another mill, built and owned by a Mr. Vanmeter, situated one mile below the present location of Laurel; but this mill was only used for grinding corn. These were the only mills above Brookville, though in the latter part of that season Colonel Allen Crisler put up a hurst and a pair of mill-stones wherewith to grind corn; and the next year he put up a bolting cloth to bolt flour by hand, that is, turning the bolt by a crank. Late in the season of that year he erected a small mill-house. This mill was about six miles below Connersville. As late as 1818 corn was hauled in wagons from the Big Miami, at Cole-rain, to this mill, to be ground, and sold as high as one dollar per bushel, owing to the scanty crop the previous year.

Let us briefly take a retrospective view of the facilities that this county possessed at the commencement of its settlement. It was sixty miles from Cincinnati, which place at that time was the mere embryo of a city, as the small number of its population at the time will show. It was settled in the year 1788, in a wilderness. In the year 1800 it contained only seven hundred and fifty inhabitants. In 1810, it contained two thousand five hundred and forty, and although it was situated on the Ohio River, its commercial advantages were limited. The power of steam was almost unknown, and the steamboat had not as yet been constructed. The barge and the flatboat, known as "broad horns," constituted

the only commercial facilities of that place. It was from that city, a mere village, that Whitewater had to draw all her supplies of salt, iron, and such other commodities as are deemed indispensable even to a rude state of civilization. These commodities had to be hauled, or wagoned, sixty miles, over hill and dale, the greater part of the year. The way was sometimes almost impassable, as our only roads were mere paths, with the old logs and underbrush cleared out to admit of freer passage. Every old man will recollect the trees with "*three notches*," along these paths, to indicate a public highway. The simple "*blazed*" tree indicated a path to some settler's house. The most of those roads were made by the first settlers, and extended from time to time, as the settlement advanced. To reach the embryo city by the old clumsy wagon, drawn by horses, took as many days as it now takes hours over our railroad. In traveling over one of these paths nothing was more common than to find by the wayside, at nearly every place where good water could be had, a camping-ground, where the weary wagoner had camped, as also had the emigrant, with his family. They generally tied their horses to the wagon-tongue, on which was fastened a *feed trough*, which, when traveling, they carried swung to the hindgate of their wagon, for the purpose of feeding their horses. They would build a fire by which to cook their scanty meal, and if night had overtaken them the ground was their bed, and the star-decked heaven their canopy, and fortunate would they consider themselves if they had a small bundle for a pillow. There was a class of emigrants less fortunate, they were generally from Virginia or North Carolina. A family of six or eight would emigrate with one or two old horses. These were packed with a meager bed and a few simple utensils for cooking. The mother, with the baby, riding on the top of the bed, while the balance of the family trudged along afoot, all camping where night chanced to overtake them. Now and then one was so fortunate as to have a cow which furnished them with milk along the road. These were during the early times, and among the privations of the first settlers of what was then the Far West.

The fine rich soil of the valley, abounding with stone, timber, and an abundance of good water on almost every section of land, were inducements for the poor, but hardy, pioneer. Besides this, with a moderate degree of labor and energy, he was soon enabled to raise all the substantial of life, and was, moreover, free from those restraints which are thrown around the poor man in old communities where wealth and aristocracy abound. Among those new settlers, though apparently removed from civilization, learning



and religion were not forgotten or neglected. The hardy pioneer soon found that A B C could be as readily learned in a log-cabin as in a splendid edifice, and the worship of God was as acceptable in a log-cabin as in a fine church with its lofty spire; and, I have no doubt, but that oftentimes a truer feeling of reverence and devotion existed among those humble log-cabin worshipers than is now found among the most of the fine cushioned and church worshipers of the present day. - There is not an old man present but will recollect those humble school-houses and churches. The school-house was provided with a crack about six inches wide, extending from end to end on one side, over which a paper was pasted, and then oiled, to admit the light. Immediately under the opening was a writing-desk, where many a Western urchin first learned to make his "strokes and pot-hooks;" or, in other words, was taught to write, and learned the first lessons in arithmetic, etc. Many of the cabins of the first settlers were lighted in the same manner. Some few with a window without glass, with a shutter made of clapboards, which was opened by day and shut at night; the floors were of hewn puncheons, split from logs; the roofs were split clapboards, split out of oak or ash, four feet long, and were held on by poles called weight-poles. With such advantages the question naturally arises as to how the first settlers managed to supply even a limited want? When the few dollars were exhausted, which they brought with them, they were enabled to sell their small surplus of produce to some new emigrant, and the *very* poor man would sell his labor to some more fortunate one. Soon came the blacksmith—that useful member of society—with the wheelwright, the plowstocker, and Jack of all trades; also the tanner, the shoemaker, and so on. The settlers soon began to exchange labor in some shape or other.

Flax was cultivated; sheep raised; and, from flax and wool, material was manufactured by the spinning-wheel and hand-loom, and thus the clothing was furnished. From the sugar or maple-tree a supply of sugar was obtained. By their cows milk was supplied for tea and coffee. Supplies of salt, iron, pins, needles, were difficult to obtain; in the single article of *salt*, for instance, which was a prime necessity, a bushel often cost ten or twelve bushels of wheat. There was soon erected distilleries, which manufactured the corn into whisky, and this was carried by wagon to the city, and there exchanged for such necessary commodities as the country needed. Next was the pork trade. When the farmer could sell his pork, "on foot," at the rate of one-dollar-fifty-cents per hundred, net weight, he felt rich, and began to thrive.

It would require a volume to do justice to the doings, sayings, and shifts resorted to by the first settlers of the Whitewater Valley, but a few more remarks must suffice.

The old Barshire Plow, with a colter and wooden moldboard was the best plow then in use, though by far the greatest number used only the Shovel Plow, which answered an excellent purpose in the loose, rich, alluvion soil, in its virgin purity, free from weeds and grass. The shovel was all the iron connected with the plow, and not unlike those in use at the present day. The gearing or harness used by a majority of our pioneers was so novel in its construction that I must describe it. The bridle for the horse was an *iron bit*, the balance being of small *rope*. The collar was made of *shucks* (the husks of the corn). The hames were shaped out of a crooked oak or hickory root, fastened at the top with a cord, and at the bottom in the same way. The traces were of rope, the back band being of tow cloth. The whiffletree or singletree was of wood, with a notch on each end; the trace hitched by a loop over the whiffletree, and to the hame through a hole. The whiffletree was attached to the doubletree by a hickory withe, and sometimes by a wooden clevis, made of two pieces of some tough wood, with wooden pins; the doubletree fastened to the end of the plow beam by the same wooden form of clevis, and sometimes an iron one. To the rope bridle was attached a cord, called a single line, by which the horse was driven. By far the largest number of plow-teams was only with a single horse, geared as before described, and hitched to the Shovel Plow; the ground broke up, crossed off, and tended by the same plow and horse. The land in those days was much better adapted to corn than small grain, especially wheat, owing to the excess of vegetable matter in the soil. This excess of vegetable matter produced an excess of straw, and not unfrequently a kind of rot or blight in many of the wheat grains, which rendered it unfit for use. It was denominated sick wheat from its effect on the stomachs of those who ate bread made of it.

During the summer of 1816 a State Government was organized, and during the next session of Congress we were admitted as a State into the Union. At the next session of the Legislature, in the winter of 1818 and 1819, an act was passed establishing Fayette County permanently, and appointing John Conner, sheriff, giving him authority to hold an election for the purpose of electing county officers. I have not been able to find any record of that election, but by an old record of the Board of County Commissioners the members of that Board met on the 8th day of Feb-

ruary, 1819, and produced certificates from the aforesaid John Conner, of their having been duly elected, with an endorsement on the back of their certificates as to having taken the oath of office. The Board met and adjourned until the next day for the want of a duly authorized clerk. The names of the Board were Basil Roberts, Harrod Newland, and John Tyner. At the meeting next day Jonathan McCarty produced a commission as Clerk of the Circuit Court, who was by law the Clerk of the Board of County Commissioners. On the back of the said commission was endorsed his certificate of having taken the proper oath of office, and then the Board proceeded to business.

Their first act was the division of the county into five townships, named respectively Columbia, Connersville, Harrison, Brownsville, and Jennings. The town of Brownsville was originally in the county of Fayette, but was afterward attached to Union County. After giving the metes and bounds of the several townships, fixing upon a place for holding an election, and appointing an inspector for each township, they ordered an election of two justices of the peace, and appointed a constable and two overseers of the poor for each township. At the same session they appointed overseers of the public highways, and also they appointed Adonijah Morgan as assessor for the county, and Newton Claypool County Treasurer, which office he held for several years. Thus the county was organized on the aforesaid 8th day of February, 1819. On the 2d day of March, 1819, the Board of County Commissioners held a special session to receive the report of a board of commissioners, who had been appointed by an act of the State Legislature, to locate the seat of justice of said county of Fayette; and they by their report to the Board of County Commissioners did locate the seat of justice for said county on the public square—the present location of our court-house—which report was received and ordered to be recorded. At the same session of said Board, Nicholas Reagan was appointed county agent, to manage the donation fund which had been made by sundry individuals, for and in consideration of the locating of said county-seat at Connersville. Said donations were made up in part of money, part in land, and in town lots. I have not been able to find the total amount of these donations, but they must have been considerable for those early days, as the orders to pay for the building of a jail and a court-house were all drawn to be paid out of that fund.

I might stop here, but there are matters connected with the finances of the county that may be of interest to the local antiquarian, and matters which can only be found by looking over

the old musty records of the County Commissioners. At the May term of the Board the assessor made his report of the assessment of taxable property of the county for that year, but no amount is given in the record, nor is the assessor's book or tax duplicate for that year or any other up to the year 1831 to be found. This is to be regretted, as we are left with very scanty means by which to determine the kind or amount of taxable property there was in the county. At this session the Board levied the following tax for the year 1819, viz.: For each horse, mare, colt, mule, or ass, over the age of three years, the sum of thirty-seven and a half ( $37\frac{1}{2}$ ) cents; for every town lot fifty cents on every hundred dollars' valuation; for first-rate land fifty cents for every one hundred acres; on second-rate land at the rate of forty-three and three-fourth ( $43\frac{3}{4}$ ) cents for every one hundred acres; on third-rate land at the rate of thirty-one and a fourth ( $31\frac{1}{4}$ ) cents for every one hundred acres; stud-horses at the rate they stand the season. The foregoing is an exact copy of the record.

The tax for the year 1820 was the same as for 1819, with the addition of a tax on carriages and watches. Neither the amount nor kind of property is particularly mentioned on the record. Benjamin McCarty was the assessor. The same tax is continued for 1821, with the addition of a poll tax of fifty (50) cents on all persons over twenty-one years of age, and also a tax on work-oxen.

By a settlement made by the Board of County Commissioners with Newton Claypool, as county treasurer, on the 9th day of November, 1819, there came into the hands of the treasurer, on account of tax duplicates and tavern licenses, the sum of \$1,089 03, exclusive of the donation fund. This donation fund seemed to have been kept as a separate and distinct fund, though the record does not show with much clearness the condition of that fund, showing a loose method of doing business. The County Commissioners Record has in many respects been very carelessly kept, as will be shown by the above settlement and by some that follow it. In the settlement of the Board with the treasurer, on the 15th day of November, 1820, the amount is more fully given, and the duplicate or tax list is set down at \$946 02 $\frac{1}{2}$  for the year 1820, and the income for tavern licenses for that year was \$189 25, hence the tax list for 1819 could not have been far from the amount of that of 1820. The settlement of the Commissioners with the county treasurer for 1821 is given in such a manner that it is impossible to tell what was the amount of the tax list for that year, but for the year 1822 it is given at \$889 76 $\frac{1}{2}$ .

By an exhibit which John M. Wilson, Sheriff of Fayette County, made to the Board of County Commissioners, on the 18th day of June, 1822, the Sheriff of the county was allowed the sum of \$80 99½, for the delinquencies in the payment of taxes for the year 1819, and for the year 1820 he was allowed the sum of \$90 20, and for the year 1821 he was allowed the sum of \$56 02. The County Treasurer was ordered to credit said several sums on his books. The Assessor was allowed for assessing during the year of 1819, the sum of \$65 00; 1820, \$64 00; 1821, \$40 00; 1822, \$60 00.

The Treasurer of the county was allowed five (5) per cent. on all the moneys received and paid out of the county funds, and at the November settlement of 1820 he was allowed \$45 00; for 1821 he was allowed \$66 05. I have not been able to find the per cent. allowed to the Sheriff for collecting the county revenue, but allowing a reasonable compensation, and deducting his allowance, also that of the Treasurer, and the allowance for delinquencies, it would leave the net revenue of the county not far from \$900 per annum.

#### TAX ASSESSMENT FOR THE COUNTY OF FAYETTE FOR THE YEAR 1831.

	County.	State.
State Tax on 1,417 Polls.....		\$531 37½
State Tax on 1,841 acres of First-rate Land.....		14 72¾
County Tax on 1,841 acres of First-rate Land.....	\$13 80¾	
State Tax on 67,914 acres of Second-rate Land.....		407 48½
County Tax on 67,914 acres of Second-rate Land...	339 57	
State Tax on 47,397 acres of Third-rate Land.....		189 58¾
County Tax on 47,397 acres of Third-rate Land.....	177 73¾	
County Tax on 1,869 Horses, Mules, etc.....	700 87½	
County Tax on 285 Work Oxen.....	53 43¾	
County Tax on 80 Silver Watches.....	20 00	
County Tax on 3 Gold Watches.....	3 00	
County Tax on 18 Covering Horses .....	39 00	
County Tax on \$9,507 80 valuation Town Lots.....	47 53¾	
State Tax on delinquencies for the year 1830.....		28 12½
County Tax on delinquencies for the year 1830.....	16 00	
State Tax on unsold lands for the year 1830.....		3 69½
County Tax on unsold lands for the year 1830.....	4 03	
Total State Tax on Transcript.....		\$1,174 99½
Total County Tax on Transcript.....	\$1,414 99½	
Road Tax Assessment on (non resident) lands and lots for 1831.....		\$32 75¾
Road Tax Assessment on unsold lands and lots for 1831.....		1 84¾
Total Road Tax on Transcript.....		\$34 60½
Making a grand total on Transcript, of State, County, and Road Tax for the year 1831.....		\$2,624 59½

Our county officers have afforded me every facility for obtaining access to the County Records for which I am under obligations.

### TAX LIST AND ASSESSMENT OF FAYETTE COUNTY FOR 1841.

	County.	State.
Number of taxable Polls, 1,428.....		
131,840 acres of land, including improvements, valued at.....	\$1,715,553 00	
Value of Town Lots and Improvements.....	136,817 00	
Value of Personal Property.....	492,960 00	
Total value of all Taxables.....	\$2,345,330 00	
State Tax on Property and Polls.. ..		\$10,462 72½
County Tax on Property and Polls.....	\$3,061 93½	
Road Tax on Property and Polls.....	1,173 96¼	
Total tax, State and County.....		14,698 62¼
Total County Tax.....	4,235 89¾	
Delinquencies.....	\$297 75¼	

State Tax was forty cents on every \$100 valuation.

County Tax was ten cents on every \$100.

County road Tax was five cents on every \$100.

### TAX LIST AND ASSESSMENT OF FAYETTE COUNTY FOR 1850.

	County.	State.
Number of Polls taxable.....	1,547	
Number of Dogs taxable.....	36	
Acres of Land, 135,529 <sup>37</sup> / <sub>100</sub> , valued at.....	\$1,384,724 00	
Value of Improvements on hand.....	296,583 00	
Value of Town Lots and Improvements.....	222,534 00	
Value of Personal Property.....	731,240 00	
Total value of all Taxables.....	2,625,081 00	
State Tax on Property and Polls.....		\$9,954 23
County Tax " " .....	8,336 21	
School " " .....	3,011 80	
Road Tax.....	1,312 52	
School District Tax.....	143 92	
Bridge Tax.....	38 74	
Total County Tax for 1850.....	\$11,843 19	
State and County.....	\$21,797 42	
Delinquencies for 1849.....	191 80	
Total amount.....	21,989 22	

Tax on each poll for State purposes, 75 cts., and 33 cts. on every \$100 valuation.

Tax on each poll for County purposes, 50 cts., and 25 cts. on every \$100 valuation.

Tax on each poll for School purposes, 25 cts., and 10 cts. for School.

Tax on each dog six months old, 50 cents, and 5 cents road.

## TAX LIST AND ASSESSMENT OF FAYETTE COUNTY FOR 1860.

	County.	State.
Number of Polls taxable..... 1,698		
Number of acres of land 134,822 <sup>50</sup> / <sub>100</sub> , valued at.....	\$3,075,235 00	
Value of Improvements on land.....	282,305 00	
Value of Town Lots and Improvements.....	362,630 00	
Value of Personal Property.....	1,945,500 00	
Total valuation of Taxables.....	5,765,670 00	
State Tax on valuation for 1860.....		\$9,497 51
County Tax " " " ".....	12,380 34	
School " " " ".....	6,614 66	
Road " " " ".....	3,378 80	
Township Tax " " " ".....	2,512 71	
Sinking Fund, State, for 1860.....		1,153 14
Special School Tax for 1860.....	4,156 87	
Total County Tax for 1860.....	\$29,043 38	
Total State Tax for 1860.....		\$10,650 65
Delinquent Tax, \$1,915 87; grand total, \$41,609 90.		

## TAX LIST AND ASSESSMENT OF FAYETTE COUNTY FOR 1861.

	County.	State.
Number of Polls taxable..... 1,667		
Number of acres of land, 131,401; valued at.....	\$3,076,210 00	
Value of Improvements on same.....	396,705 00	
Value of Town Lots.....	164,265 00	
Value of their Improvements.....	207,710 00	
Value of Personal Property.....	2,104,795 00	
Total value of Taxables for 1861.....	\$5,949,685 00	
State Tax " ".....		\$12,732 87
Sinking Fund Tax " ".....		1,189 87
		13,922 74
County Tax proper " ".....	\$18,682 33	
School Tax " ".....	6,783 29	
Road Tax " ".....	4,159 88	
Township Tax " ".....	1,401 17	
Special School Tax " ".....	2,417 18	
Total amount County Tax " ".....	\$33,443 85	
State and County Tax " ".....		\$47,366 59
Delinquent Taxes..... \$2,643 61		
Penalty on same..... 447 39		
Grand Total on Duplicate for 1861 ..... 50,457 59		

Some idea of the progress of the county affairs may be obtained by reference to the "Valuation of Taxable Property," the rate of taxation, and the amount collected from time to time. Upon an examination of the records of the county, I have made out the following table, which gives the valuation, rate of taxation, and amount of county tax collected. The *county tax* is selected because it shows how our county *expenses* have kept pace with the

increase in value of our property. The preceding tables will show in part the objects for which the tax was raised. The amount of tax levied for the county for the years 1819, 1820, 1821, and 1822, is about nine hundred dollars per year, as may be seen by referring some pages back in this Address.

Years.	Value of Property.	County Tax.	Rate of Taxation.
1831.....	\$1,070,313 00	\$1,394 96	About 13 cents per \$100
1841.....	2,347,930 00	4,235 89 <sup>3</sup> / <sub>4</sub>	" 18 " "
1850.....	2,625,081 00	11,843 19	" 45 " "
1860.....	5,765,670 00	29,043 38	" 50 " "
1861.....	5,949,684 00	33,443 85	" 56 " "

The following shows the aggregate of the State and County Tax :

Years.	Value of Property.	State and County Tax.
For 1831.....	.....	\$2,538 14
" 1841.....	.....	14,698 62
" 1850.....	.....	21,797 42
" 1860.....	.....	39,694 04
" 1861.....	.....	47,366 59
" 1865*.....	\$6,542,915 00	169,599 35
" 1866.....	6,779,775 00	120,752 41
" 1867.....	7,007,525 00	107,616 41

Thus we see that within the county there has been a gradual increase in the value of taxable property from 1860 up to, and including the year, 1867, and from 1860 there was an increase of taxation up to the year 1865, when it reached the enormous sum of \$169,599 35. In 1866, and also in the year 1867, there was a decline in the amount of assessments, although the wealth of the county had considerably increased.

This increase of wealth mainly grew out of the increased facilities in the transportation of commodities, and also in the increase of labor-saving machines in agricultural pursuits as well as in domestic matters.

There was also an augmentation in labor by the return of soldiers from the army. The great increase in taxation was occasioned by the amount paid to volunteers to go into the army; and, besides these sums, large amounts were paid for stores for the army hospitals. But it is to be hoped that all war matters are now closed, and that a large surplus will be left for the improvement of the country.

\*This date and others after 1862 were added since the address was delivered.



It has been fully realized within the last two years, especially at the county-seat, that the great increase in the way of fine buildings, dress, and equipages indicates extravagance in the future; but, it is to be hoped, that our people will take timely warning and avoid the breakers of luxury, extravagance, and licentiousness, by which so many nations have been wrecked and become desolate.

Population of the county in 1850, 10,325. Number of voters in 1860, 2,323; which if we calculate, as is usual at five persons to a vote, we had, in 1860, 11,615, or, 2,323 families, about 1,700 of which were employed in agricultural pursuits.

THE FOLLOWING IS THE POPULATION OF CONNERSVILLE, THE COUNTY-SEAT OF FAYETTE COUNTY, IN SEPTEMBER, 1867:

Number of Wards.	Renters.	Freeholders.	Males.	Females.	Total.
First Ward.....	91	372	227	236	463
Second Ward.....	122	492	325	289	614
Third Ward.....	42	201	138	105	243
Fourth Ward.....	35	212	144	103	247
Fifth Ward.....	163	681	435	409	844
Whole number.....	453	1,958	1,269	1,152	2,411

The number of children and youths within the corporation, between the ages of six and twenty-one years, is, of males, 379; females, 393. Whole number, 772.

The assessment in the corporation, for the purpose of levying a tax for corporation purposes in September, 1867, the total amount of personal and real estate was \$1,360,364. The President of the Board remarked to me that he was well satisfied that the assessment did not exceed two-thirds of the actual value of the property within the corporation. If that be so, which I am inclined to believe, the whole value would be \$1,813,418.

Here arises an important question in political economy. How far can a country sustain taxation and be prosperous? In analyzing this question a number of important principles present themselves for our consideration: First, the facilities of a country for produce or manufacture; and second, the facilities for commerce.

The foundation of all wealth is productive industry—either from the soil, or in the shape of manufactured commodities. It seldom falls to the lot of any one section of country to possess the facilities for *all* the various branches that enter into the wants of a civilized community; hence the advantages of ready and cheap facilities for the exchange of commodities—the more so where the articles to be exchanged are bulky or heavy. Ours has been, and is

yet, an agricultural country; she has the soil, water and other facilities for producing a large surplus of agricultural products, to be exchanged for salt, iron, and cutlery, as well as the textile fabrics. For thirty-five years from the first settlement of the country we lacked those facilities. To supply this lack the grain of the farmer was fed to stock, which could be driven on foot to a market, and often sold at prices which poorly remunerated the husbandman for his toil. Notwithstanding these disadvantages the country prospered. We had a rich and fertile soil, and an industrious and energetic population. They cleared the dense forest, converted the wilderness into fertile fields, and while doing this they were not unmindful of the importance of having increased facilities for transportation at their command.

Early in our history the subject of a canal up Whitewater was agitated among our people, and at last, by the assistance of the United States Government, a survey for a canal from the Ohio River up the valley of Whitewater, to connect with the Wabash Canal at Fort Wayne, was made, and reported as being impracticable; but our people clung to their favorite project until it was accomplished. At the session of our State Legislature in the winter of 1835-6, the mammoth Internal Improvement Bill passed, and became a law. Although our people were well satisfied in the opinion that the State had undertaken too much, yet the advantages of such a work as the Whitewater Canal were so important that they were willing to risk the great undertaking; the more so as it was found that we could not get the improvement without assistance.

The canal was located, and ultimately finished, and the country reaped a rich harvest through the improvement. An unusual flood, however, shortly after swept a large portion of the improvement away. Sad experience taught the people that they had been deceived by incompetent engineers; the work had been laid too low; many of the culverts, aqueducts and dams were insufficient; but notwithstanding all these embarrassing circumstances, they "put their shoulders to the wheel," their hands in their purses, and their hard-earned dollars, even to the last dime, were poured out to repair the damages. Again it met with another disaster, and was again repaired, and after spending thousands upon thousands, then came the more modern improvement, the railroad—the "Central" on the north, and the "Lawrenceburg" on the south-west. Our people saw at once that the completion of these roads would rob the canal of a large share of its business, and at once commenced to provide for a like work; but such was the interest of a portion of the people in the canal that they clung to it with a deathlike grasp, until

its vital force was nearly extinct. Then they turned their attention to the railroad, and now we are enjoying its benefits; but this, like the canal, has injured those who made early investments in the work. Through the mismanagement of its directors a large sum has been sunk, and the stock has become almost worthless; yet the country is in a healthy and prosperous condition, and but a few, comparatively, injured. The road is somewhat in debt, but that indebtedness is mostly to individuals who are to derive its benefits. The amount of indebtedness is in small sums, divided among individuals who have advanced the means to complete the work. Independent of investments in the canal and railroad, many of us have made investments in wild lands, with a view to the settlement of our children; but I have not room to pursue this subject farther.

♦ It is not egotism to say that our people have never been a stock-jobbing or stock-gambling people. They understood the law governing trade—that the wealth of a country was in the ratio of its facilities for transportation, other things being equal. It was with this view that the project for a canal, and then a railroad, originated. It is but doing justice to our people of this section of the country to say that it would be difficult to find an equal number, anywhere, possessing like facilities, who are as little in debt as we are. The question naturally arises, how can a community sustain such losses as have been experienced through the canal and railroad speculations; and at the same time be able to pay a heavy tax? The answer is clear and obvious. Money, expended among an *industrious* people, does not exhaust them; though it may not be expended profitably, its expenditure gives activity and energy; the money passes from hand to hand, affording facilities for the exchange of commodities, each bettering his condition, if expended for useful purposes. The benefits arising are two-fold—the circulation of the money, and the profit derived from the improvement, acquired by the expenditure, as in the case of our canal and railroad.

During the construction of the work the money expended gave employment to labor, and a demand for the products of the country equal to the feeding of the men and teams employed, and when these works were completed, the increased facilities for transportation, increasing the value of the products sent out of the country, and lessening the prices of those brought in by exchange for those sent out, thus proving of benefit to all. This principle has been so well understood by our people, that they have vested a large portion of their surplus means in the various improvements introduced and now made practicable in the county—not only in the

canal and railroad, but in mills and improved agricultural implements, in barns, houses, and the enlargement of their tillable lands, by which the farm products have been largely increased. And this is not all; we have some twenty-five or thirty miles of good macadamized roads, and others much improved, affording facilities for travel and the transportation of commodities. Our courthouse, town-hall, seminary, poor-house and grounds, and the school-house at every cross-road in the county, give evidence of thrift and prosperity, and that our people enjoy the comforts and conveniences of civilized life, and a high and elevated plane of thought. It must, however, be admitted that expenditures by taxation should be limited, and it is a question whether we have not already overstepped prudent bounds.

The State of Indiana has enjoyed, within the last twenty years, a prosperity unsurpassed in the history of man, unless we except a few of her sister States. Our loved county of Fayette has shared largely in this prosperity. It may not be uninteresting to inquire into some of the causes which have led to this prosperity.

By a wise and prudent foresight the fathers of our glorious Republic secured to the Great West—which now comprises five States—a territory devoted exclusively to liberty, and it has proved an asylum and home for the poor and oppressed, not only of Europe, but of our own country. The rich lands of the Great West, with her rich native pastures, in the form of prairies, though remote from commerce and the arts of civilization, yet to the poor, bold, energetic man these lands were inviting. They afforded strong inducements, as a full supply of all the substantials of life could be easily obtained; and they left free, not only to the enjoyment of thought and fearless expressions of their opinions, but free from the trammels which surround the poor man in old and wealthy communities. Our loved State was settled with this class of brave men who thought and acted for themselves; each possessing like wants, begetting a feeling of brotherhood between them. Each bringing with him the manners and customs of the place from which he emigrated, their various opinions on all subjects became the frequent themes of conversation, and sometimes ended in controversy. This quickened thought, new ideas arose, and the best mode of doing everything was freely discussed and soon adopted. It requires but little argument to prove that free institutions go far to build up a happy people, surrounded with all the advantages of modern civilization. We need only compare the five Western States with a like number of the Slave States to show the advantages of the former over the latter in everything; agriculture, the

mechanic arts, particularly, and all that goes to make up the intelligence, comforts, and conveniences of the masses. The people of the Free States are not more intelligent, but they are in possession of more of the substantial of life, of free thoughts free schools, and many of them in the possession of all the comforts and conveniences of life; enjoying that bold independence so characteristic of a freeman, and so nobly manifested by the sons of Indiana in the fratricidal war that has been engendered by the institution of African slavery. God grant, and may the time hasten on, when this strife may cease, and we return to the peaceful walks of life, to further build up those pursuits which go so far towards elevating and ennobling human nature.

Let us return to the subject of the finances of our county as connected with the business of our people. As before stated, we are an agricultural people, but we need more of the mechanical to afford home exchanges, which are of vast importance. These home exchanges are less fluctuating, and afford a more sure return than to depend on foreign importations. There is another fixed law that we will do well to heed: the major controls the minor. This is applicable in all things, whether applied to moral, mental, mechanical, or physical operations. The well-informed, energetic, and decided man will not only succeed but control, when the less energetic and less-informed will fail. The telegraph, steam-engine, locomotives, and railroads are no longer experiments, but fixed facts, and made largely to enter into all the business relations of life. So also with the improved machinery of every description; thus greatly lessening the prices on all articles that enter into the every-day pursuits of life. But this is now so well understood that it is useless to argue the point. These improvements have revolutionized almost everything, and it is somewhat difficult to train our minds, so as to fully appreciate those great facilities which have so revolutionized all our business relations. It has quickened thought, and is producing greater promptitude in all our transactions.

How far machinery and other facilities for labor saving contributes to agricultural products it is difficult to calculate, but it is probably a safe calculation to say that in our county it is equal to fifteen per cent. of the manual labor employed on the farm; if so, the machine labor is equal to two hundred and fifty-five laborers per year.

We had in 1860 two thousand three hundred and twenty-three voters. Out of this number it is thought there were employed on the farms one thousand seven hundred. This labor, with the labor-

saving machinery, would equal one thousand nine hundred and fifty-five laborers.

We have in the county, exclusive of town lots, 131,400 acres of land. Deduct one-third of this, as waste and timbered land, and we have left, for cultivation, 87,600; which, at four dollars per acre, would make the sum of \$350,400 as the income on the capital invested in the land. Allow a like amount for the labor necessary to cultivate it, and the sum is \$700,800; add to this the interest on \$1,000,000 of capital employed on the farm, in stock, tools, grain, etc., necessary to operate upon it, and we have the sum of \$760,800. To this should be added the expense of boarding one thousand seven hundred hands for a year, which make, at two dollars per week, \$176,800, giving a sum total of \$937,600. Deduct from this sum the expense of boarding, pay of hands, interest on stock, teams, etc., and the wear and tear of tools, amounting in all to \$399,929. This sum deducted from the total proceeds, and we have left the net sum of \$537,671 as the result of one year's farming for the whole county.

We have in the county, as assessed to the farming interest (exclusive of town interest), in land, stock, and produce, say \$1,689,537. To add to this sum one-third, on account of the difference in the assessments, and the actual selling rates, the interest on the whole sum would be \$375,162 96. If these figures be correct, the farmer nets a handsome income for his labor and capital invested.

By the agricultural assessments, herewith accompanying, for the past three years, the average annual products of the county amount to the sum of \$962,675. Deduct from this family expenses, wear and tear of farming implements, State and county taxes, including the provisions for family and stock, and I make out an income to the farming interest to net \$637,658. I think that it may safely be said that the county of Fayette, containing only two hundred and five square miles of territory, brings a clear income of half a million of dollars. This the people get for their vested capital and toil, over and above a living.

#### ASSESSMENT FOR REVENUE FOR 1860, 1861, AND 1862.

Year.	Value of Lands and Improvements.	Personal Property.	Total Amount.	State & County Tax Levied.
1860.....	\$3,820,170 00	\$1,945,500 00	\$5,765,670 00	\$39,694 00
1861.....	3,844,890 00	2,104,795 00	5,949,685 00	47,366 00
1862.....	3,850,085 00	1,741,875 00	5,591,960 00	56,166 00

Agricultural Assessments or Value of the Annual Income for 1860, \$1,002,545; 1861, \$1,074,581; 1862, \$810,900.

One would suppose, by these statistics, that I have sufficiently shown that the people of our county were able to bear the present rate of taxation in 1862, and even double it; but experience answers no. It should be a maxim in political economy to levy no more tax than will meet the current expenses of a rigidly-administered government, controlled with a view to the general good and public welfare. All governments tend to profligacy and extravagance, such as a prudent man would not tolerate in his own private affairs.

Our present rate of taxation bears hard on a class of old men who are unable to toil and contend with the money-making age in which we live; men who have accumulated a moderate sum during the more active season of life, and have retired upon its income as a means of support in the decline of life. As this article was not designed as a criticism upon the finances of the county, perhaps I have already said too much on this subject.

As yet I have said but little on the subject of manufacturing. This branch of business, as modernized, is inseparable from agriculture; and yet it is a distinct branch of business; however, the more closely they can be brought together the cheaper will be the manufactured article. We have, in running condition, fourteen pairs of four-and-half feet millstones, capable of grinding a large amount of grain, and we have one woolen factory, said to do the largest business in the State. We have two small tanneries in the county, and a cooper's establishment, where quite a considerable number of barrels are made; besides these, in the town of Connersville alone we have a small foundry and machine-shop, and an establishment for manufacturing window-sash, blinds, and doors, two carriage-shops, where excellent work is executed in considerable quantities, and which would be hard to beat anywhere. We have a wagon-maker's shop, where good work is turned out, and also a number of blacksmith shops. At one of these shops a considerable number of plows are made. These comprise our manufacturing operations; though not very extensive, yet they serve a valuable purpose to the county. We have water-power yet unused, both on the canal and on the river, with an abundance of cheap food and low rents. Manufacturing can be done here at as reasonable rates as in any other place, and in a short time our railroad will be connected with the "Indiana Central" at Cambridge, and with the "Chicago" at Newcastle. This will open great facilities for sending abroad manufactured articles. Besides, Union County,

on the east; Franklin, on the south; Rush, on the west; all of these are without any manufacturing establishments. Time and circumstances will determine results. Modern improvements, in all classes of machinery, have, to a great extent, revolutionized manufactures, by which every thing has become cheaper and is made better.

I have before, in this paper, spoken of the importance of agriculture, and its relations to all other pursuits, it being a subject of the first importance in political economy. It is agriculture that sustains a nation in all its departments, including its army and navy. It is the basis on which its finances are predicated and the whole fabric of society is founded, and yet it is the least fostered of any of the pursuits in life, although the principles involved take a wider range than any other; but, notwithstanding all this, the science of farming is the least understood. Why is this so? It is because the masses of the agricultural interest do not understand their rights, and therefore do not assert them. We have colleges to make doctors, lawyers, and divines; and commercial schools for educating those who design following mercantile pursuits, and the individual coming from one or the other of these schools must come with his *sheepskin*, if he wishes to be successful; but the poor "clodhopper" must plod along without this evidence of capacity. I care but little for the sheepskin unless it has brains in connection with it, and the brains be well stored with useful knowledge acquired by some means. To be sure it is better acquired in a college where they have all the *appliances* to demonstrate the principles taught than to obtain the knowledge without, or by scanty means. It is ideal to think that a man can, even in a whole life-time, merely at the handles of the plow learn the principles involved in farming, which embraces the whole range of science. There are certain great fundamental principles that underlays all things, and without a knowledge of the *modus operandi* of these principles, to direct us in whatever we engage, our work is a tissue of blunder or mishaps.

To be a good practical farmer a man should not only know the use of all the implements used on a farm, but to handle them expertly. He should understand the germination of seeds, the best mode of planting, the adaptation of seed to different soils, and learn the different soils and their constituents; and, to do this, he must be a good agricultural chemist. He should understand the constituents of all the products of the farm, and the adaptation of each to particular soils and conditions.

To begin we need a good primary education. Then we should



have a good general knowledge of the following branches: Agriculture, chemistry, botany, geology, mineralogy, vegetable physiology; the diseases of plants, the mode of cure; also, the diseases of horses and cattle, and climatology. By chemistry, geology, and mineralogy we learn the composition of soils; by vegetable physiology we learn the composition and habits of plants, and so on.

An agricultural library is of great importance to the young farmer. From the catalogues in my possession a very good beginning could be made in the way of a library for about one hundred and fifty or two hundred dollars; to which could be added, from time to time, such new works as might be published and deemed useful. I do not know of any one thing of so much importance or so much needed as something to induce young men to spend their winter evenings in acquiring a knowledge of their business pursuits. That of agriculture is far behind the intelligence of all other pursuits. To acquire a habit of reading in early life is highly necessary, and to learn to think and reason correctly on one's pursuits in life is all important. We, old men, could not leave a richer legacy to the rising generation than to lay the foundation for thought and useful information.

Of all the subjects that claim the attention of thinking men I know of none that is more complex and difficult to acquire a correct knowledge of than that of agriculture. It will require the close application of many years, and then be far from having exhausted all the means connected with the subject, and yet there is no other so intimately connected with man's well-being. It is to the husbandman that we must look for the foundation of our support, for large crops and cheap products. These are, or should be, the desideratum. The mechanical arts are so closely allied with agriculture that they seem almost inseparable; yet they involve different principles, and must be separated into different departments. Notwithstanding the importance of agricultural science it is far behind all others. It must be regarded as in its infancy; and so well satisfied are thinking men of this fact that you can not converse with an intelligent one, who is concerned in any of the learned professions, but who acknowledges this subject to be uppermost. In Europe it has long claimed the attention of statesmen, and more or less interest has been manifested on the subject. In the United States agricultural knowledge has been the subject of much consideration, and for years agricultural articles have been printed and circulated, and several of the States have laid the foundation for having agricultural schools within their limits. At the last session of Congress of the United States a bill was passed, and

became a law, establishing an agricultural bureau at Washington City, and officers appointed to take charge of it, and I doubt not but that the interest of agriculture will now receive that attention which its importance deserves. We can not, however, expect much until the farming community are cured of their prejudices against what is called book-farming. This prejudice once overcome, and then the farmer and his sons will become willing to spend their long winter evenings in the study of agricultural chemistry and some of the numerous works on farming and horticulture, including the cultivation of fruits. Then we may expect much beyond the dull round of the plow in spring and fall; the harvest in summer, and the roasting of shins in winter, and the feeding of stock in the open, bleak fields, and the comments upon their hard-earned products of the growing season. What a vast saving could be realized by proper racks and sheds! The racks to prevent fodder from being trampled in the mud, and the sheds for sheltering the cattle from the snow storms and the pelting cold rains of winter, yet it is a rare thing to find one.

Another important matter is entirely overlooked on the farm, viz.: a proper farm-book. Many farms do not even keep an account-book. What would become of the mechanic or merchant if he were to do business in this loose way. A farmer should have his fields all numbered, and have them entered in his farm-book, and keep an account of debit and credit of each, and carry the balance on to his ledger account. He should open an account with each class of his stock, note the time of the dropping of each of the young, and the amount of pasturage, grain, and hay used for feed to stock. By this means in a few years he would have a fund of valuable information. There is another matter to which I will call your attention, and that is, there should be a place for everything and everything kept in its place. And remember the old adage, "that the borrower is a slave to the lender." It is not to be expected that every farmer can have fixtures always of the best kind, but he ought to have plain ones, and sufficient for his purposes, such as will answer his purpose *substantially*. I knew a Presbyterian clergyman who was light in the pocket, and needed a book-case. Not being able to buy one, he went to work and manufactured one out of store-boxes, lining it with newspapers, and although when finished it was not fine or handsome, it answered his purpose as well as a case of mahogany, that would have cost him fifty or seventy-five dollars, would have done.

Another important consideration claims the attention of the farmers of this county. The virgin soil is robbed of much of its

treasure, and if care be not taken its fertility will soon be exhausted, and such is the nature of our climate that it will not bear manuring, as the lands of England or even France do. Although, on an average, we have annually between forty and forty-five inches of rain and snow-water, yet, such is the heat of the sun in summer, and the clearness of the atmosphere, that the evaporation from the earth is very great, frequently producing drought, so that ground which is highly manured burns up the crop. To remedy the evil of having exhausted lands, and the effects of the scorching sun, we should resort to a rotation of crops and the plentiful sowing of clover seed on all land that is cultivated in small grain. This should be done early in the spring, even if the ground is plowed the next year; but the better plan is to pasture or mow the first crop of clover, let it seed, then turn under, and sow wheat broadcast, and harrow in, so that the grass laying at the bottom of the furrow be not disturbed. The clover turned under rots slowly, and forms a loose open space, so that the surface-water is drawn from the top of the ground, where the principal part of the wheat roots are, thus saving the winter-killing of the wheat, which is done by surface-water freezing, expanding the ground, and breaking the roots of the wheat. This plan I have adopted on a farm in Wabash County, and so far as we have tried it, is answering the desired purpose, beside greatly improving the soil. I am inclined to the opinion, from the experience we have had on the farm spoken of, that it is better to sow a portion of timothy seed in the fall, say one-third or one-half necessary to seed the ground, and sow the clover in the spring. From inquiry, and the trials I have made, I am well satisfied that, as a general thing, too little grass seed is sown per acre. Where clover alone is sowed a bushel to six acres is not too much. Seven acres is the largest amount of land on which to sow one bushel of clean clover seed, though different soils will require different quantities. The fall pasture richly pays for the seed and sowing, even if the ground be broken the next spring. A crop of corn may follow a crop of wheat and clover, and do well. I have corn growing on land from which a crop of wheat was taken last year, and on which clover was sown. When the ground was broke up this spring the clover was ten inches high. I received a letter from my son who lives on the farm, and he informs me that the corn is much larger than it was when the field was in corn two years before. I know of a farm in the southern part of this county which has been cultivated on this plan for the past fifteen years, and it has been greatly improved by it. The farm may be said to be mostly of a clayey soil, beech and

sugar-tree land, the beech largely predominating. There is no principle in farming of which I am as well satisfied as I am of the utility of clover, yet, as a general thing, but one crop of the clover should be used until the ground is plowed up, or two at the outside. A most excellent article on the rotation of crops and clover may be found in the report of our State Agricultural Society for 1859 and 1860, see page 119. The great reason why clover is a strong fertilizer is that its chemical combinations are such as to afford a return to the soil of a much larger amount of the ingredients for other plants. There is another important consideration, it has a long top root, penetrating the soil from ten to fifteen inches, pulverizing the soil, and when the root is broken by the plow, the portion left below where the plow runs decays and admits the atmosphere deep in the ground, an element essential to the growth of the roots of the plants as well as to their leaves. But I am not now writing a thesis on vegetable chemistry. A third reason is, that when properly sown, so as to fully cover the ground, it protects it from the hot sun and drying winds, and favors the retention of the gasses in the soil. I will call your attention to another matter, which should be considered of importance by farmers. The hot sun and drying winds greatly injure land that is left naked during the summer, hence summer-fallowing, as is practiced in Pennsylvania and New York, is not suited to our soil and climate. The bleak winds of winter exhaust lands that are not covered and protected in some manner. The practice of hauling and spreading manure on land in the fall is a loss, unless it is done on grass land, and that in October when the heat of the sun is somewhat abated, and the grass growing so that the manure is covered. The practice of fall plowing is injurious, as the soil is not only left loose but uncovered. On very hard and stiff clay lands it will do, as the freezing pulverizes the ground, which is important. As no lands can be made to produce well unless the ground is made fine, it is of importance to use a roller on all lands that are cloddy. To be useful, much care is necessary to have the ground in good condition and properly stirred soon after the ground is rolled.

Land-drainage is another subject which should claim the attention of the farmer. In this much discrimination is necessary. All lands that are encumbered with surface-water, called wet or swampy, should be under-drained, or else drained by an open ditch. There has been much controversy upon this subject, but no man in these days who has paid proper attention to it can doubt its utility in certain localities. But a small portion of the land in the county

of Fayette requires this expensive operation. To such as may take an interest in the matter they will do well to procure a work written by John H. Klippart, the Corresponding Secretary of the Agricultural Society of Ohio, and recently published by Clark & Co., Cincinnati, Ohio. It is a work of over four hundred pages, and costs one dollar and twenty-five cents. It may be regarded as a Western work, of great merit, and of much interest to all men, especially the farming community. There is also an excellent article on this subject in the last report of our State Agricultural Society. It has been wisely said that he who could make two spires of grass to grow where but one had grown before is a benefactor of mankind.

But to return. The farm-book before spoken of should be fully posted in winter and all the accounts of the farm carefully balanced, and the balance carried into a new account, and a balance-sheet struck. By this means the farmer would, at least once a year, know exactly how he stood with regard to his farming operations. By this care many failures would be avoided, and much valuable information acquired.

It may be said that I have not in this address spoken about our County Agricultural Society. Its history, its efforts, and benefits are familiar to you all. That it has been of benefit, in giving a stimulus to Agriculture, and the improvement of the stock of the county, no one will deny. That we have derived another benefit is equally apparent. Generally we have been favored with fine weather during our days of holding the fair. The fair-grounds have been neatly gotten up, and though the fixtures are temporary yet they have answered a good and useful purpose. The people from every part of this county, as well as many from the neighboring counties, have been in attendance, and the utmost quiet and order have been maintained. Those in attendance seemed pleased, a social feeling is apparent, and that feeling has been cultivated, the people retiring in an apparently good humor, and, if not fully satisfied, yet with a feeling that their time has been well spent. But to the practical man, who sought the fair for the purpose of learning new modes of farming, and improvements on old methods, and the best mode of doing up work on the farm, the time of seeding, and best mode of culture, has gone away disappointed, and when he has looked over the reports of the County Societies, as published by the State Board, in most cases was equally disappointed. Much yet remains to be done to advance the practical results of farm labor, and the best mode of producing the most satisfactory results.

I can not close this address without saying a few words on the subject of making the soil mellow. From the forked stick men have experimented with a great variety of shapes and forms for a suitable instrument to break the soil and pulverize it with, and put it in a proper condition for growing the productions of the farm.

The means now in use is the well known cast-iron and wrought-iron plow, with a steel moldboard to the latter. These are certainly great improvements on the old modes; but, if we study carefully the great variety of soils, we have the various conditions in which we find the ground, and we readily come to the conclusion that we require different forms of plows, or instruments, adapted to each variety of soil and land to be cultivated. A plow may be well adapted for plowing and turning over a stiff soil, so that the grass shall be well killed and the turf rotted, but will be found deficient in plowing or pulverizing a field free from turf. A plow that will answer very well in a loose soil is often unfit for plowing and pulverizing a stiff clay soil. Experience has established the fact, beyond all controversy among well-informed farmers, that the finer the ground is made, and the deeper it is stirred, the more productive it will be, other things being favorable. Our modern plows turn the ground over, and leave a smooth surface, but do not pulverize it unless the ground is exactly in the right state of moisture. If a little too wet, or a little too dry, the ground is not properly made fine, and must be plowed again and again until the object is accomplished. He who shall invent some machine adapted to the different soils, so that in passing over the ground it is left in a fine loose condition, will be a great benefactor of his race. For myself, I have little doubt but that some inventive genius will discover the principle by which this result will be accomplished, and used by the same power now necessary for our common plows. There are many things of which I should like to speak, but I perhaps weary your patience, and will close by a few remarks on climatology. This is a subject that would require a lengthy essay, but I shall only remark that each neighborhood should have a thermometer and barometer. Indeed every family should have these instruments; and, in addition to these, they should have a rain-gauge, wind-vane, and hydrometer. The people of Connersville have built a school-house at the cost of sixteen or seventeen thousand dollars, and where we should have a constant school, and should have the instruments indicated above. The principal of the school should be required to keep a regular meteorological table. He who studies the use of these instruments, and understands their

application, will find them of much use in practical farming. To make these instruments useful much care is necessary. Regular tablets should be kept of each instrument, carefully noted down, together with such remarks about the weather that a reference could at once be made to the table, so as to determine results from conditions. This should be pursued for a considerable time. A table could be arranged by which results as to weather could be arrived at with considerable accuracy, but it should be done by a practical man with a practical mind.

## THE ART OR MEANS OF PRESERVING HEALTH.

---

THIS is a matter of the first importance, as without it we are unable to perform those duties in life which are so essential to our comfort, our well-being and happiness. But few learn to appreciate health, until it is more or less impaired. This is more particularly the case with the young, for the more buoyant the feelings, indicating a fine state of health and the due performance of all the functions of the body, the more likely they are to become indifferent to those rules which are so indispensably necessary to maintain this condition, for they do not seem to realize that when once impaired to any considerable extent, it can never be entirely restored. We may seem to have overcome the unpleasant effect, our agreeable feelings may return, but the disturbance has left its mark behind, and symptoms of the once disturbed functions are often felt, admonishing us to beware of further encroachments. The human system is not only curiously organized, but complicated, and much of its arrangement is of very delicate structure, requiring but little to derange it. This being the case, it is of the utmost importance that we learn the means of preserving and of perpetuating our faculties in all their strength and purity. It is only thus that they will carry us through a long life to old age, to which nature seems to have first designed that we should go, and arriving at full maturity, fully ripened, we then pass into another sphere of existence.

But few of the structures of the human system, when once broken down and destroyed, are again reproduced. Injuries done to the bones seem to be restored, but never can be to that perfect state in which they were originally. If about the joints, the joint is impaired, and generally made useless by adhesions. The cuticle, or external covering of the true skin, and the entire surface of the body, including the toe and finger nails, when destroyed, to a limited extent are reproduced; but the destruction of any of the more delicate membranes are never reproduced. There may be, and is, if any thing like a cure be made, a deposition of substance which fills up the place destroyed; or the surface abraded



leaves a scar behind, distinguishing it from the original part. The new part never performs the function as the original one did; hence, in the destruction of a portion of a muscle, the wasted part is filled with a new deposition; the muscle is weakened, the finer senses are destroyed, or forever gone, and though they may be healed up, and life goes on, the function is lost to the individual; hence the importance of preserving all our faculties in their original condition, as far as possible.

The object in making the following remarks is to leave behind me the results, or the best conclusions at which I could arrive after much study and close observation for more than forty years. Much of the time has been spent at the bedside of the sick, and that through a wide range for observation. To *preserve health* is far more important than to attempt a cure. Curative means, if judiciously used, consist in removing all hurtful causes, and in the use of such remedies as assist the vital forces of the system to resume their healthy or normal condition, and he who practices the healing art with any other view is working in the dark, and is as often wrong as in the right, and in danger of doing much injury. Modern science is the accumulation of past experience, and he whose mind is enlightened by much study, close attention and observation, and is of a practical turn, will be the most successful in the management of diseased action. It is in this, as in all other pursuits, the mind should be well stored with useful reading, free and open to reason, biased by no prejudice, or dogma, or theory, being only governed by convincing evidences drawn from facts, and that from a wide range of observation and study. With these remarks as a prelude, I will proceed to lay down a few general rules as to the best means of preserving and maintaining health.

Good health is dependent upon a well organized constitution, and to have that we must have been begotten by parents who possessed this kind of constitution and favored with the proper surroundings. The offspring in utero is affected both mentally and physically by the condition of the mother, and the circumstances which surround her during the period of gestation. It is of the first, the greatest importance, that she be well developed both mentally and physically, in good health and with such surroundings as will be calculated to keep up a healthy action of body and mind. The father should be a sound, healthy man, with mind well developed and well balanced. This is all important, as the influence of the father is generally more or less extended intellectually over the mother, hence also there should be a congeniality and warm affection existing between them, which alone

renders life pleasant and agreeable. Although I was brought up and taught in a very different school of ideas, I am thoroughly convinced, from a large number of facts which have fallen under my own observation and by more recent publications, of the truth of the foregoing statements. The lack of health and congeniality between husband and wife is the cause of a large amount of the suffering in the human family, so much so that too much stress can not be placed upon this all-important subject. Anatomists contend that there is a want of nervous connection between the parent and offspring in utero. Physiologists aver that in this lack of nervous connection there are no means by which the mind's influence can be transmitted during gestation. Notwithstanding the force of these arguments, facts, innumerable facts, have passed under my observation sufficient to convince any unprejudiced or reasonable mind of the actual transmission of *mental* influence. In support of this we have Dr. Combe, Prof. Fowler, and many others, who give detailed instances which are unanswerable. Education to some extent may overcome this, but we must reflect that children during their early life are under the direct care of their mothers, and it is a well known fact that many mothers are extremely sensitive and indulgent to their offspring in all matters, if the least suspicion be awakened that their waywardness had been induced or influenced during gestation. Then, again, the pursuits of the father are often such that but little of his personal attention can be given to his child until he or she is grown to an age when it becomes necessary to follow some pursuit; by this time that which was inherent in their nature has become fixed, incorporated into their very being. This was the case in my family. My professional studies and practice and other public pursuits wholly engrossed my time and even overtaxed me. At that period of my life too I had been trained in a different school, and taught to regard all these influences as superstition or phantoms of the brain, hence I trusted entirely to others until it was too late to change my policy exclusively for the benefit of my children. It was at a period too when but little could be effected. So well am I convinced of the truth of the position I have taken, that I would be glad to impress it upon the minds of every living being, as it ultimately will be, as science and observation progresses in philosophical knowledge. Such is my confidence in the correctness of my views on this important subject that I leave this on record for the benefit of my posterity. To point out in detail the mode and manner in which impressions are made by the mother on the offspring in utero would be foreign

to this essay, but the time will come, and is not far distant, when a volume will be written, giving in detail how mind impresses matter, and mind under certain circumstances impresses mind, so as to influence both the mental and physical character, through all its various shades observable in man.

A child at birth should be properly cared for. It should be carefully washed and dressed, according to its surroundings. Fine linen next to the skin, or else fine cotton. The amount of clothing should depend upon the weather; in very warm weather it should be very lightly clothed, but in cold weather it should be warmly dressed and kept so that the skin will not appear of a leaden or bluish color. In warm weather it should be kept cool; unnecessary heat often brings on a redness of the skin, which is soon covered with red pimples or some other eruption. Another important consideration is its diet. The milk from the breast of the mother is by far the best, but if it can not be supplied from that source it may be fed with fresh milk from one particular cow, or water in which crackers have been soaked, palatably sweetened with loaf sugar. Great care should be taken that the child be not overfed.

As a general thing children are overfed; consequently indigestion, sour-stomach, belchings, and vomiting is the certain result, and frequently colic is induced. In such cases food should be withheld for a time, and to relieve the colic a cloth wet in strong hop water should be applied over the whole abdomen. Should this fail, a little tea made of the calamus root (sweet flag) should be given; and, if the bowels are not loose, an injection of plain water, to which add a little milk, and repeat until the bowels are moved. In using injections do not be afraid of giving too large a quantity at one time, as they often fail for the want of a sufficient quantity. Should these remedies fail call in some honest and experienced physician, who may not advise giving any medicine, but will recommend such management as will relieve the little sufferer. Some children are of a costive habit, and require daily injections, which should be given as above directed and thoroughly administered, and that, too, at as near the same hour each day, so as to get the bowels in the habit of acting regularly, which, when once established, will be likely to continue. Other children are subject to colic; the bowels seem to possess an excess of nervous irritability or sensitiveness. This, by close observation on the part of an attentive and intelligent mother, may be overcome. It is produced from a variety of causes; often from overfeeding; sometimes from the exposure of the mother to the cold, or probably from

washing in cold water, thus rendering the secretion of her milk unwholesome. A prudent mother will soon learn to remedy all these difficulties. In a large number of cases children are dosed with paregoric or cordial of some kind. This is all wrong, and should never be used except in cases where it becomes absolutely necessary. Hundreds, yes thousands, are made drunkards by the unnatural use of anodynes and stimulants. Beware of nostrums or patent medicines as they are called. Nearly all of them contain some form of opium, and the base of them all is alcohol. A tea made from ginger, spice, or cloves—if the calamus fails—may be used. In a large majority of cases they may be overcome by a rigid system of management, which is by far the best. I have used the tincture of gum asafœtida; put into a vial two parts of the tincture, then add one part of the tincture of anise-seed, then add of good calcined magnesia sufficient until, when shaken together, it will be as thick as can be dropped from the vial. Commence with half a drop (more or less, according to the age of the child, and the severity of the colic), to which add a little breast-milk, and then give to the child with a tea-spoon. It will be best to begin with a small dose, and in half an hour, if the pain continues, repeat the dose; a little experience will soon govern the quantity to be given.

I have been thus lengthy in the early management of children, as all their after life in a very considerable degree depends upon their management, and the care taken of them during the first year of their existence; yet I have omitted one very essential item, which I will now give. Every morning, when the child is to be dressed, it should first be carefully washed all over; head, body, legs, and feet; and, after being wiped perfectly dry, then dressed. During the hot weather in summer it is best to use a small tub, nearly filled with cool water, though not so cold as to cause a shiver. Then put the child into the tub, up to the neck; wash the head first, and, after it has been in the water from one to two or three minutes, take it out, and carefully dry the body and legs with a cloth, and then comb the head. If the child be simply washed the water used should have the chill taken off by the addition of hot water. This practice should be continued until the child is at least two years old. For children with feeble circulation the water at first should be eighty-five or ninety degrees; at no time below seventy degrees. I know of no remedy so effectual in guarding children against cholera infantum (summer complaint) as the daily morning use of this bath. It is surprising with what delight the child will take this morning bath after it becomes accus-

tomed to it. It would be well if the bath could be continued at least twice a week until it is eight or ten years old, and then continued more or less frequently through life. Some children suffer much in teething. Every parent should learn to notice the gums of his or her child, and, when swollen and red, scarify them with a sharp pocket-knife; and when the gum is pushed up, and looks on the stretch, cut down to the tooth, and the child is at once relieved. No fear should be entertained about cutting, as it gives no real pain, and is not attended with any danger. The crying of the child is from the confinement and the restraint to which it has not been accustomed. I have taken a child while in a playful mood, and so managed as to make the incision without restraint, and not a whimper from the child. The cutting should be so as to cause the loss of a few drops of blood. Children should be allowed to play and romp without any restraint, except to keep them out of mischief and wrong doing, and that should be done by moral suasion. This is easily done if the parents are right and observe a steady and correct course. Never speak idly to a child or in its hearing. Be steady, and when you command let it be in a firm and decided manner, and giving a reason for that which is commanded. If the child has not already been fully taught the lesson, let truth, honesty, and fair dealing with it be the rule, and never overtask it; this is of great importance. This form of government is by far the best; it keeps the disposition of the child pleasant and cheerful. All children require the watchful care of parents, and strict attention to all that concerns them; and, when necessary, all errors should be reprov'd, and the importance of correct habits impressed upon their minds.

Personal cleanliness is all-important to health, besides it begets a manly dignity. While the children are small this should be attended to by the parents; dirty or wet clothes should be taken off and dry and clean ones put on, and as soon as the youngsters are old enough they should be taught to keep out of the filth and dirt, and to gambol and sport in clean places. Much of this may seem unnecessary, but it is far otherwise. It has fallen to my lot to observe families, for a series of years, in all the varied forms from abject poverty to wealth and luxury. The children of the provident are careful, their actions being regulated by intelligence, have done much the best. I do not mean that children should be brought up in a bandbox on the one side, nor in a coarse or vulgar way on the other. Reason and moral force should govern all things. This course contributes to health, happiness, and thrift. In the foregoing pages I have endeavored to lay down a plan by

which children may be rendered healthy, and, in a majority cases, robust and active; though occasionally it falls to the lot of some to have a weak constitution, requiring some peculiar care. In such cases it will be well to consult some good physician as to the best mode to be pursued, for it would be difficult to lay down any general rule that would apply in a peculiar and isolated case. A child brought up under the foregoing rules, strictly enforced, will seldom fail in developing a cheerful and healthy person. By many but little attention is paid to the proper culture of mind or body. Mind has an important bearing upon health. The snarling and petulant are always complaining of some bodily ill; but if the ill-temper be curbed, and the mind properly directed, much better health would obtain, and with it would be enjoyed happiness. I have advised the playful sports of children, which should be indulged in the open air whenever the weather will permit. Exercise is indispensable to health, and the proper development of the whole system, especially the muscular, and it should be so varied as to bring all the muscles into play. Hopping, jumping, wrestling, running, are proper, also games at ball, etc., if kept within proper bounds and only indulged in as a pastime or play. All exercise should be restrained within reasonable limits, and perfect good humor maintained all the time. Care should be taken with the young that they never be overtaxed, either at play or work. It is equally important that the mind of the young should be directed to think and study, but at no time to be overtaxed. It is often the case that when a child manifests sprightliness to learn it is overworked, and praise being lavished upon it, it by this means becomes stimulated to exertions which, in the end, weaken the mind, and all done to produce a precocious child, that is, one beyond his years in knowledge. There is another difficulty. Some children manifest but little love of books or learning. Instead of scolding and complaining of such a child every means should be taken to teach it at home; let it learn the alphabet by pasting the letters on small blocks, so that they may serve as playthings; frequently call its attention to some one or more of the letters, until they are all learned. This should be done day by day, and when the alphabet shall have been learned in all its forms, arrange the letters into syllables, first with two letters, and teach the child the sound; then into three, and so gradually extend into words of two, three, and four syllables, and before you are aware of the fact he will have learned to spell and read. By this method the child unites play and amusement with the efforts of the mind, by which it imperceptibly learns the letters of the alphabet and

their combination into words. Another important mode of instructing children, and even very small ones, is with a blackboard. Every family should have one. But, says one, we have no room, or time, to instruct by this process. What nonsense for argument. No time to teach a child that you have been the means of bringing into existence! Look about you and see the hours you spend on some frivolous finery, or in making and receiving calls, and answering the dull simperings of some would-be fashionable belle. Then, again, the farmer's wife says, "No time." Look about you, and see what can be dispensed with, by which you can get at least one hour to teach Johnny or Susie a lesson on the blackboard, or in reciting some useful lesson in the every-day occurrences of life. It is a task for parents to properly train their children, but it is a duty which they owe them, to fit them for life, to not only contend in the world for a living, but happiness and equality with their fellow-men. Thus we have traced them through the giddy path of youth to years of maturity, to enter upon a new field of action, where all the manly acts of life are to be performed, or else sink into a state of degradation and become the mere drone in the hive of mankind. In this state we are to enter upon a new theater or stage, in which we engage in the actual struggle of life, for happiness in some form, and the only substantial way is to preserve our health and live in accordance with the law of our being.

To commence life we need a home, a place that will shelter us from the storms and inclement seasons. Much depends upon this. A home should be made attractive, but if we begin life with very limited means we can not expect a mansion with all the modern improvements, nor is it desirable. There is no one subject in civilized society that is so little understood and cared for as a home, a place to live in, a dwelling with proper surroundings, a place which of all others should be rendered the most attractive and possess the largest share of comfort. Even among those who have means and make some improvement, utility and convenience are sacrificed to custom and poorly-arranged ornamentation. The first and most important thing is the selection of a proper site or location for a dwelling, even in a village or city. There is a great difference in locations, even for business as well as for a residence, both as regards health, beauty, and pleasant surroundings. On a farm, especially in a new country, where there is greater liability to disease, such as remittent and intermittent fevers, or chills and fever, we can not take too much pains in selecting a proper site for a house. As health is above all other considerations the most

healthy spot should be selected, and although it may not be the most convenient it should be the one chosen, and then everything be made to accommodate itself to this location. In buying a home we should reject a piece of land unless a good, healthy location can be had on the premises; for a piece of land, however fertile, is very poor property otherwise. I have given much attention to this subject for over forty years, and observed closely various locations and surroundings, and that over a great scope of country, and yet I doubt whether I have arrived at that degree of certainty in determining, in all cases, whether any one particular place will, at all times, be found healthy.

Long experience and close observation have determined with much certainty the means which conduces the most to health. Atmospheric conditions conduce in a very great degree to health. Food, clothing, cleanliness, and exercise, all enter into the sum requisite to health; of these latter we shall treat separately. Our business now is to determine the most healthy location for a residence, and as the atmosphere is an important consideration, and its conditions materially depend upon locations and surroundings, and though the atmosphere proper is made up of all that is essential to animal life, yet, under certain conditions, it is capable of holding in solution or admixture a great variety of volatile substances which are detrimental to animal life. It is also well known that certain localities produce those certain substances detrimental to animal life, which mix with the atmosphere, and that certain other localities dissipate these substances, and if a clear and salubrious atmosphere is found to exist, man's ordinary sensibilities are capable of detecting this difference.

As yet science has not been able by any means to detect the various substances contained by mixture in the atmosphere, owing probably to the fineness of their particles and their volatility. The odor of the rose and many other substances is sensitive or sensible to the olfactories, or organs of smell, yet we possess no means of determining its existence except by the sense of smell. Long experience has determined that certain conditions of the atmosphere in certain localities do favor certain forms of disease, though the diseased action may be differently modified by individual constitutions and different degrees of bodily health and temperaments, by which the injurious influences may and are frequently entirely thrown off. Yet this atmospheric influence may so prevail as to produce an epidemic disease. That the epidemic depends upon atmospheric conditions we have proof positive, as a change in the atmosphere is very often followed by a subsidence of the epidemic,



as in that of remittent and intermittent fevers, commonly called chill and fever. With a north-west wind with frost, followed by clear pleasant weather, the disease wholly disappears, and those who are sick soon convalesce, that is, get better, and soon regain health and vigor. So with fever and dysentery in short, all epidemics are terminated by atmospheric changes. Long experience proves this to be so, though a few cases may continue, as before stated, depending on individual conditions. Observation has also determined that certain localities in any country where an epidemic prevails are more liable to the influence of the cause than others, so experience has equally proved that certain other places are wholly exempt, and others but partially under the morbid or diseased influence.

Acclimation may and does effect much in guarding individuals from baneful influences, and so may precautionary measures do much in warding off the deleterious influence, yet it must be admitted that favorable localities are far preferable to those which have even a tendency to diseased action. With these premises I will proceed to point out such localities as my experience has led me to determine as healthy, and such as are unhealthy. As my observations has been mostly extended to localities which produce malarious diseases—those producing all the various forms of bilious affections from the common ague to yellow fever—I shall confine myself mostly to the subject with a view to guard against this class of disease; first as to the most favorable location for this purpose. As a general rule a hill or point of land is the most favorable, but in selecting such a locality much care is necessary. It is all important to avoid any locality in which there is a tendency that favors the settling of a fog, either in summer or winter, as it is more or less unhealthy. Fog is vapor more less condensed, and seems to contain in a more concentrated form those substances which produce the diseases mentioned. Besides this the moisture in the fog robs the body of heat, and the lungs become loaded with an excess of moisture, and a less amount of the oxygen of the atmosphere is absorbed by the blood, which is so essential in decarbonizing it and of warming the animal system.

Johnson in his valuable work on "Tropical Climates" fully corroborates the foregoing statements. I have witnessed this effect on the Big Miami, and in many other localities on the Whitewater River. Some creeks along the river that in common seasons run all the year, but in dry ones almost wholly dry up, except here and there a hole, would during the night emit vapor enough to be condensed into a fog. The evaporation during a hot summer day

from the slime left upon the pebbles in the bottom of the creek would also be condensed and mingle with the fog, which would extend from bank to bank and even ascend some points of the high ground. In this condition or state of things more or less sickness would be induced. On some high lands and points a spring of cold water often exists, running off in a sluggish stream, forming a marsh on each side of the small branch; thus, when the water becomes low along the marsh the formation of a fog is greatly favored, and in dry seasons is productive of some form of bilious disease. Again, on some high points along the river a cold spring breaks out and runs rapidly down to the river, the fog rising along the river ascends the little branch to the spring, and often far beyond, and where several of those springs break out the whole hillside and top becomes enveloped in fog. I know of places of this description, and scarcely a season passes but more or less sickness is induced from it. It makes no difference what family resides there, their fate is similar. There is another cause that operates on the hill locality. All men who have paid any attention to the subject are fully aware that certain formations of country into hill and dale tends to give the direction of the winds. Where the location is such that the common course of the wind is from the marsh, stagnant water, or decaying vegetable matter, the place will be rendered unhealthy during the hot season. I knew such a place in Wabash County. Though this was favored by an excellent spring at the foot of the hill, and the marsh was nearly half a mile off, it was unhealthy; the residence was moved to another part of the farm and the health improved, hence even high locations must be free from all of those objections. Some few locations in the valley of a stream may be healthy when the ground around it is dry soil and the course of the wind is not from stagnant pools of water or marshes, and if it be measurably free from fog. A belt of timbered land between a residence and those stagnant pools of water and stagnant marshes is a great protection against disease, and a location that receives a brisk north-west wind over a dry and rolling country or even a flat surface, if it be dry or free from stagnant water and decaying vegetable matter, a situation so located that an abundance of fresh air can be had continually, will be found the most healthy.

From what has been said the inference is clear as to what will constitute an unhealthy location—an abundance of decaying vegetable substance, stagnant pools, sluggish streams, low and flat marshes, all favor disease, the more so if the water used for domestic purposes be the filtrations from stagnant water through

decaying vegetable mold. As before stated, the wind has much to do in causing disease. (See the article in answer to questions to Dr. Ford.) I think much has yet to be learned before we shall fully understand atmospheric conditions as the best adapted to the promotion of health or disease.

We are now prepared to speak of a residence and its surroundings. The place having been properly selected as regards health, the next thing is to construct a tenement so as to best promote health. First, determine how much you can afford to expend in a residence. If a cellar is to be made it is the first and most important thing to be attended to. Even in the driest ground a good and substantial wall should be built in the best of lime and mortar, and afterward well painted on the inside, or plastered. This will enable the keeping of the walls not only dry but clean. If the floor is of gravel, well packed and perfectly dry, it will do if kept clean. If the cellar is in clay ground and wet so that the water will stand, the outer walls should be laid at least ten inches lower than the bottom of the cellar, and a ditch six to ten inches wide and four to eight inches deep should extend clear around and next to the outer wall, with a curbstone on the inside of the ditch, and the ditch covered with good flagging-stone so as to be on a level with the cellar floor, and the whole floor and the stones over the ditch should be covered at least with two inches of good cement, and all done in a dry season of the year. A good drain is indispensable to carry off the water from the cellar. If one can not be had no cellar should be made under the dwelling. A good cellar should be built out from the house on the top of the ground. Cellars, unless well attended to, are great sources of disease. They should be kept dry and clean and free from all decaying substances, and be also thoroughly ventilated. With these precautions a cellar may be had, but not without, if health be desirable. If a house be built of brick it should be built with hollow walls and flues from the cellar terminating in the garret, with a ventilator at the comb of the roof. If the ventilator be properly made and arranged the foul air in the whole house will be constantly removed, provided a ventilator be fixed in each room of the house opening into a flue in the wall of the house near the ceiling. For the purpose of ventilating each room a ventilator should be fixed just above the washboard and an opening to the outside of the house, by this means a fresh supply of air may, if desired, be drawn from the outside and carried off when rendered foul by the vapor ventilated through the wall to the garret, and by the ventilator on the roof. When the air is stagnant or foul

in a room it can be further ventilated from the windows, the sash being so arranged that both casements can be moved, one up, the other down. By the modern improvement all this can be done at a moderate degree of expense, there is no secret or mystery about it. It is a matter of great importance to health as to the time when a house is ventilated. For a thorough ventilation a clear, dry, sunshiny day, between the hours of 10 A. M. and 6 P. M. should be selected. But a very small amount of fresh air should be admitted in damp weather, especially if the atmosphere is cool, and then only in such rooms as are used, and in which a fire is kept up. During a fog all should be excluded or as much as possible, and during the night but a small amount of air should be admitted unless it be in dry hot weather. If the house has several rooms the inside doors should be opened to let the air circulate from room to room, and a sash or ventilator in some remote room may be partly opened.

A person after a hard day's work is much easier to contract any disease than when in full vigor, especially during sleep. If the house is of wood, the windows, if properly arranged, can be made so as to sufficiently ventilate every room. Wooden buildings may be built cheap, or made expensive, depending on the style of architecture, from a log-cabin up to a palace. As a general thing the ceilings, as regards health, are too low. It is better to have high ceilings and tight walls than low ceilings and open walls. As this is only designed for such comments on buildings as are calculated to promote health I will add no more on this part of the subject.

There is another consideration which is all-important for health as well as comfort. It is in the arrangement of yards, shade trees, outbuildings, and gardens. No residence, even in town, should be built out even with the sidewalk. If there is ground to admit of it the residence should be set back at least ten feet, twenty would be better. A good gravel walk, or brick or stone pavement, from the gate to the front door, and a row of good shade trees should be planted along the outer edge of the sidewalk, and a row on the inside of the fence. None are more beautiful, cleanly, and healthful than the native sugar-maple tree, and next to this the soft maple, commonly growing in rich moist land. No foliage is greener in summer, or, when fully matured in the fall, exhibits a more beautiful golden hue. The partiality for evergreens is such that they are stuck in every nook and corner. It is true that they relieve the dull monotony of winter, but in the summer, at the time when we desire a full supply of oxygen, the maples or sugar are much the best. Let the shade trees be what they may they

contribute largely to the improvement of the atmosphere, as there is almost a constant breeze of air stirring where there are open rows of trees. By their shade they cool and refresh all around, though they should never be so near a house as to keep it damp by their shade. There are many shrubs that are ornamental—the rose is not only ornamental but renders the atmosphere fragrant with its perfume. There are many flowering plants that can be tastefully arranged, which would add greatly to beautify and adorn even a very rustic dwelling. They, too, help to improve the atmosphere, as all foliage of plants as well as trees give off oxygen and absorb carbon, thus promoting health.

In a country residence it is desirable to have the dwelling as near a road as a good front yard and a healthy site will admit of; the front yard can be adorned with a great variety of shade trees and shrubs, and now and then a fine blooming rose. On the east, south, and west side, if the house be situated favorable for it, a considerable grove should be set out, in a promiscuous manner, so as to resemble a natural forest. And here again there is no tree so beautiful or as well adapted for a grove, as the sugar or maple. I have seen such groves in the State of New York, and a more beautiful surrounding I never saw than in some of those country residences in that State. The trees should be sufficiently far from the house as to prevent the branches from touching the building. Such a situation reminds one of an oasis in the Arabian desert. Any one who has traveled in a prairie country, and stopped at even a log-cabin in the edge of one of those skirts of small timber that sometimes extends out into the open prairie, will recollect its luxury. I have in my mind's eye several, but one in particular in Wapello County, Iowa.

Traveling in an open buggy on a hot summer's day, we drove into the edge of one of those groves surrounding a plain log-cabin. Hard by was an excellent well of pure water. The "man of the house" greeted and invited us to seats under the shade of a few small trees, after which we took a drink of fresh water direct from the well. In a short space of time the shade and gentle breezes cooled us, and we felt most delightful, so much so that we were very loth to leave, although we were minus a dinner for that day. On the open prairie there was a dead calm, and naught felt but the scorching rays of a meridian sun.

Another important matter should claim attention, viz.: The out-buildings, stables and stable-yard, hen-roost, and hog-pen. If possible, they should be on the north side of the house. The next best is on the west, the east will do, but the south *never*, as every

wind from that quarter brings a stench which is not only disagreeable, but unhealthy, however clean they may be kept. None of these buildings should be less than fifteen or twenty rods from the family dwelling, even thirty rods would be still better. A pleasant grass-plot or lawn should encompass the whole house, except gravel walks and carriageway. A flower garden may approach near if the grounds be favorable. The kitchen or vegetable garden should be further off, and as much out of sight as is convenient.

The reader may think that the writer of this has spun a long article on what is too often regarded as a trifling matter. But remember that your dwelling is your home, where the wife and children are obliged to live, and where the husband is or ought to spend all his idle time, and be made happy, perhaps, by a cheerful family and cheerful surroundings. Then, all should be protected to the greatest possible extent from sickness or disease of any kind. Remember, also, aside from everything else, that cheerfulness and pleasant sensations go far in protecting a person from the ills of diseased action. Another consideration is important in this matter. Order and system about one's domicile is calculated to beget order in all its inmates, and this is one of Heaven's first laws, and goes far toward inducing health and maintaining a healthy action or condition. Everything should be systematized. Order should prevail throughout all our actions, and in everything we have to do, in eating, sleeping, time of going to bed, getting up, going to work, clothing by day and by night, in *what* we eat, and the quantity, also the amount of work to be done; and here I may say that the amount any one can or should do should depend entirely upon his physical ability. That which one man can do with impunity, would in many cases require two of a feeble constitution.

Thus I have, in a brief manner, laid down the basis of a treatise on Hygiene, or the Art of Preserving Health. To do the subject that justice which its importance demands, would require a volume of several hundred pages. Each subject should have its appropriate heading, and be treated of at length, with such facts and reasonings as would carry conviction to the reader. A work of this kind would only be read by the few, and they mostly of the profession of medicine; hence, the remainder of what I shall say will be more in the form of aphorisms, the result or conclusions to which I have arrived by close observation through a wide range, during a period of nearly fifty years.

## SLEEP AND REST.

There is nothing that contributes more to health than good sound sleep. A sound, healthy man requires from six to eight hours out of each twenty-four. Children and young persons require more sleep than fully grown persons, and so do adult persons who are in feeble health. Too long and continued exertions of body and mind exhaust the individual, and he or she is liable to induce fever of a low type; hence it is much better to have regular hours for work, rest and sleep, and each adapted to each individual's physical and mental ability. The old adage of "early to bed, and early to rise," though ancient, is as applicable now as in years long gone by. An individual in this latitude, if in good health, should never be found in bed at sunrise, unless there be fog.

Fifteen minutes before the sun has risen is the most healthy and invigorating time of the whole day. Each family should have it so arranged that on arising from bed each morning they can take a bath. In the summer, water that has stood over night in the bucket or tub in the room where the persons sleep, will be found in a good condition for a bath, and if no other provision can be made a common washtub can be used. Wash the hands, face, and neck, and then step into the tub, and with a sponge, cloth, or hand-towel, wash the body all over, and wipe dry, rubbing the body briskly over every part; then dress. This will be found not only pleasant, but invigorating. But little should be done before breakfast; if living on a farm, feeding and milking may be done; preparations for early breakfast should be made over night, and as soon as breakfast is over all is ready for work. Dinner should be ready at 12 M., and in long days in summer one and a half hour's rest should be had afterward, and if desired, half an hour's sleep. If it can be so managed, supper should be had at half-past five P. M.; then two hours' work after supper. Then wash, and prepare for bed. In spring, fall, and winter, supper may come after the day's work is done. This system, once adopted, will be found not only economical, but the most healthy, especially in districts where fog in the morning prevails. The time of going to bed and getting up should depend upon circumstances. In localities where there is frequent fog in the morning, it is best not to rise too soon, as we can not derive the benefits of the chemical action of the first rays of the morning sun, but on the contrary are liable to all the evils before spoken

of, from the fog. A holiday now and then not only relieves the dull monotony of the daily round of toil, but it is invigorating; and, if a proper system of arrangement be made, the work on a farm can in ordinary times be so arranged that no loss be sustained.

The foregoing remarks apply to residents of the country. The population of a city or village is somewhat different. The inhabitants of a city or town are more or less dependent upon the rural districts for the means of subsistence. They must, at all times, be ready to wait on and attend to the calls of their patrons; hence the importance of each manager of business, whether mechanical, professional, or commercial, being at their posts from early morning until bedtime. If the principal be desirous of success, he must always be present if possible, and if he has clerks or assistants, he needs them on the spot, ready to attend to any duty that may be required in their line. This state of things will continue until society advances in intelligence and civilization, and learn to systematize all business relations and pursuits to a more healthy and economical method. From what has already been said, every class can draw from, and conform to, as far as circumstances will permit.

#### OF FOOD AND DRINK.

This is not less in importance than sleep, or any other matter in which man is interested, both as to kind, quality, and quantity. The kind and quantity of food should be adapted to the condition or pursuit of the individual. The man who toils and labors hard in the open air, needs much more and stronger food than the man who leads a sedentary life, or one whose occupation is indoors at light employment. Constitutional temperament and habit have much to do with this matter. Quite a difference of opinion exists among men of observation on this subject; but it is in this as in everything else, even in men who have the opportunity of observing much, yet from previous bias of the mind or naturally strong prejudices, their investigations, although unintentional perhaps, are so made that all the facts which go to support their particular views are retained, while others are either overlooked or forgotten. The real philosophy involved is overlooked. As before stated, the kind and quantity should be adapted to conditions. Children, and young persons that have not got their growth, should be fed mainly on bread and milk, as these articles contain all the elements that are necessary for their support and growth. Adult persons,



who labor hard, require a portion of animal food; meat of some kind. The fat portions of the hog should be wholly rejected, as it tends to scrofulous diseases. To meat should be added fruits, such as apples, peaches, pears, and any and all varieties of small fruit, strawberry, the different kinds of raspberries, currants, gooseberries, and blackberries. By modern improvements these fruits can be put up in cans, jars, and bottles, and hermetically sealed, and kept until used, so that an abundant supply can be had all the year round. There is a variety of vegetables, such as are commonly grown in a garden, that can be profitably used, including the potato. The rhubarb or pie-plant is also an excellent vegetable, and can be put up so that a supply can be had the year round. It should be put up as fruit is canned, but should only be put in glass or stone jars, as it is too strong an acid for tin vessels. Where these fruits and vegetables are not freely used through the winter, much care is necessary through the spring and early summer to reduce the meat diet, as the stimulus of hot weather requires a more cooling diet. The sedentary man, or the man of light labor in a house, should use but little meat. Bread and milk, bread and butter, with fruit and vegetables, should constitute his main diet. There is another class of individuals that should abstain from meat: the strictly sanguineous man; he with a short neck and whose blood-vessels are over full. The diet of such a person should be unstimulating, however much the appetite may crave strong diet; time and habit will overcome this plethora. By strict attention, as to the effects of diet, each individual of mature years will soon learn the kind of food adapted to his own constitution. But to arrive at correct conclusions requires trials and an unbiassed mind.

#### DRINKS.

I am well satisfied that in the climate of the United States neither tea nor coffee should be used at any time; yet there are many persons who, from long habit, would find it difficult to do without one or other of these at their meals. If an attempt be made to do without them it had, as a rule, better be done gradually. Pure water is the natural beverage; but to relieve thirst, whether in sickness or health, some of the vegetable acids, mixed with the water, is far preferable; for instance, lemon, the canned gooseberry, currants, or a roasted apple, tamarinds, the whey of buttermilk, or sweet milk turned by heating and the addition of buttermilk; all of these afford a good drink for the sick or well person. We use entirely too much drink during our meals. Man is the only

animal that drinks during the time of eating. A little self-denial would soon accustom man to do without. It would require a longer time to eat, the food would be the better chewed, and a larger amount of saliva called into requisition, which was designed by nature to be thoroughly incorporated with the food while eating. In addition to that which has been said on drink, I will add what I regard as a healthy and nutritious drink for the well man during the hot season. It is a mixture of a small portion of water with buttermilk, which should be neither too sweet nor too sour, and kept in a cool place. Another one, water with a small portion of good sour vinegar, sweetened to liking, with sugar or molasses—either New Orleans, Sorghum, or Maple. Both of these last two articles can be taken to the field, and should be cold; put into a good stone jug, wrapped with a wet woolen cloth of two or three thicknesses, and kept on the ground under a good shade. No alcoholic liquors should ever be used unless as a medicine, and then they are seldom necessary. I have made this article longer than I intended when I commenced, and yet the subject has only been glanced at. To do it justice would require more space than I can now give it to treat it in all its bearings and relations. Chemistry has done much in showing the relation of food and its properties to the animal economy, all of which should be shown and pointed out as a correct basis for observation.

#### EXERCISE OR LABOR.

It was designed by nature that man should get his living by labor and exercise. Man's organization is such, and his powers of digestion so constituted, that the primaries or constituents that enter into his organization can not be made to enter into his system only by digestion, absorption and secretion, and this process will not go on if those substances, of which he is composed, be introduced into the stomach in their pure state. Those primaries or substances must first be elaborated by the vegetable or further acted upon by animal digestion. It would be but a scanty living were man to depend upon the spontaneous production of fruit and grains for his support. Even the poor Indian, who lives a wild and roving life, has to toil for his subsistence, hunting, fishing and gathering nuts and such fruit as may be within his reach. Here is toil and often a scanty supply of the actual wants of life. If one doubts his having been made to live by toil, witness the child from the cradle to manhood; the almost incessant activity when left to his or her own impulses. The accumulated vital forces within their own system impel them to action, and they will gambol and sport till the accumulated vital

force be spent. The system fatigued, they lay down and rest until urged again by their own impulse to renew their amusements. Again, look at the cities and colleges where boys and girls are brought up without those exercises which develop the physical man, they are weak and effeminate, rendered so by a defective education. So sensible of this fact are the well informed of the schools and cities, that schools where horsemanship is taught have been instituted in order to impart vigor to the system, and gymnasiums have been established, while more recently, calisthenics, or the exercise in muscularity, has been introduced into nearly all our schools in which both sexes are taught. This is hailed by those who know as a great improvement of the age.

My own opinion is that the day is not far distant when we shall have an entirely new mode of instruction, even in primary schools, where the teaching will be by questions and answers, with exercise as part of the course, thus developing the natural turn of mind and its pursuits, and directing the individual into that pursuit of life for which his natural faculties fit him. Labor will then cease to be a burden and will become a matter of pleasure, giving a new incentive to action, thereby improving the whole man, thus contributing to the healthy action of the system by and through the sensations of the nervous system, resulting from a pleasurable sensation induced by a desirable employment. As before stated, but few can or do appreciate the importance of pleasurable sensations in inducing a healthy action of body and mind. Exercise of either body or mind should not be continued far beyond moderate fatigue. When so fatigued there should be a period of rest until the sensation of fatigue is gone.

#### CLOTHING.

Too little attention is paid to this subject, both as regards quality, quantity, and mode of making. In a climate like ours, where the changes are frequent at any all seasons of the year, clothing becomes a matter of great importance. Frequently the thermometer will vary forty degrees within twenty-four hours, and an individual should be prepared to meet these changes. It is worse than ideal to think that an individual may so accustom him or herself to meet those changes with impunity. Our season may properly be divided into three divisions rather than four. Our winter proper may be regarded as lasting nearly four months, and our summer lasts about the same time; about two months of the spring and two of the autumn will constitute the third class, being nearly similar. During the four winter months flannel or woolen

clothing is by far the best, even to wear next the skin. A thick flannel shirt will be found a very comfortable garment for an outdoor laborer. If a cotton over-shirt is worn the under one should be of light flannel. Drawers are indispensable during the winter months.

There are some few persons who can not wear flannel next to the skin. A person of this kind should wear the flannel over the cotton; and if flannel can not be worn for drawers, good strong cotton drilling, or what is called canton flannel (which is cloth with a nap on one side) should be worn, and over these the pantaloons of good cassinette—cotton warp and wool filling and fullod. These, with a woolen vest and coat, should constitute the daily every-day clothes, with good thick boots and woolen socks. An article called a “warmus,” or wrapper for a laboring man to work in, is a great comfort. This should be made of heavy flannel goods and worn while at work, putting on the coat morning and evening. In very cold weather it is a good plan to have a coat that will go on over the “warmus;” and if compelled to go from home put on an overcoat over all. Overcoats should be made of heavy goods and lined, and made like those now worn by the soldiers, with deep capes as well as pockets for gloves and pocket-handkerchief. Thus clothed, a man with ordinary health and regular meals will be able to withstand any weather we have in this latitude. A pair of overshoes are almost indispensable—not of gum elastic as they are only fit to wear in the mud in sloppy times to save boots. For the spring and fall instead of flannel under-shirt and drawers the cotton should be used, or else a suit of half-worn woolen. The woolen socks should be exchanged for cotton ones. During the summer months the under-shirt and drawers should be taken off; a pair of pantaloons which have been half or two-thirds worn will do, and boots without any socks as the feet are kept more healthy. Night and morning a coat should be worn, or a “warmus,” which may be taken off on going to work and put on at night when the day’s work is over. To add or diminish the clothing as the weather changes is all important to good health, and should never be departed from. And here I may as well say, that to keep the feet healthy is a matter of much importance; and in addition to what I have said about changing socks and going without, I would advise the washing of the feet at least twice a week, if not every day, in water moderately cold. If the feet are unhealthy and perspire too much, cotton socks should be worn during the winter, and the feet washed often in a strong cool brine and well rubbed with a coarse towel.

If this should fail recourse should be had to medicated baths, with the addition of nitric acid to the brine, say a little less than half of a fluid ounce of the acid to a gallon of the brine, and the feet immersed in the liquid for ten or fifteen minutes. The same bath may be used two or three times, but must be kept in a wooden bucket or stone jar. The feet should be rubbed off with some old worn cloth, as a good one might be injured by the acid. This used twice or thrice a week for two or three weeks will seldom fail of a cure. It may be used cool but not too cold. I have sometimes used the corrosive sublimate, in the proportion of two scruples to a pint of rain water, and after washing and wiping the feet then sponge them moderately with the solution. I have never failed to cure this troublesome difficulty with this remedy by a few rubbings. To keep the feet healthy they should be washed every night with cool water and rubbed dry with a cloth. Good sound healthy feet are important appendages, and by far too little attention is paid to keeping them in a healthy condition. Boots and shoes should be made so as to fit the feet properly. They should not be too large, but they had better be too large than so small as to cramp the toes or pinch the feet. Too much care can not be taken in having shoes or boots properly fitted.

#### FEMALE DRESS.

In my previous remarks on dress they were confined to those of men. The female clothing is equally important, and as the fashion now is but few women escape being seriously injured in health by the mode in which their clothing is worn. There is a kind of infatuation in their desire and efforts to gird the waist tightly; diminishing the capacity of the chest, impairing the function of the lungs, and in some degree the proper play of the heart. In most cases the pressure is extended down over the stomach, impairing digestion, injuring the functions of the liver and spleen, and thus the citadel of life is assailed, injured and impaired in early life, to be continued through the remainder of their existence, merely to pander to a very foolish custom.

As neatness of dress is a great ornament, it is essential that the dress should look neat and graceful, but at the same time should secure a free and easy play of every muscle and function of the body. A neat bust is one of the objects aimed at in female attire, and is a laudable desire. This can be easily effected by a bodice or jacket to extend from the shoulders down the entire waist. The neck can be rounded out to liking, though for winter it should be made to fit close to the neck. Armlets or armholes should be

left so that the arms can go through and a broad strap rest over the shoulder; it should be made open before and fastened by straps passing twice around the body with a loop-hole, so that one of the straps could pass through and around the body, the other strap passing in the opposite direction, both brought in front and fastened by pinning or being tied to suit the taste of the wearer. These straps should be so arranged as to be immediately below the mamma or breasts, and should be so constructed with a gore or a piece inserted as to fit snugly each breast. If these are properly fitted they will keep each breast in its proper place; if it fails to do so whalebone may be inserted in each edge at the lapping.

Mothers, while nursing, can by a simple arrangement accommodate one of these jackets so as to be convenient for that purpose. If the dress be made so as to open low down on the bosom, by simply untying the straps that go around the body, the jacket can be opened so as to afford all the facilities requisite for nursing. Some skill will be necessary to make one of these jackets so as to have them set smooth, and fit the chest closely. By proper measurements in cutting it can be done. The skirts should be fastened to the lower edge of the jacket by hooks and eyes, or buttons. Hoops are abominable things, but if they must be worn, the gearing of braces and shoulder-straps should be used. Children, or small girls, should wear their skirts with waists and shoulder-straps, and this should be continued till full womanhood be developed, and the waist should not be compressed at all. Drawers should be worn from childhood up through life; and as society has protested against "Bloomers," I suggest that the lower part of the drawers be made full, and a tape drawstring be inserted so as to tie below the middle of the leg, and each leg of the drawers extend down to near the ankle-joint, and the dress to extend not more than an inch below the pant. This arrangement will save much inconvenience in walking, and also save the dress from being drabbled with mud and filth.

Female dress should be varied with the weather. When a female goes out in winter, her person should be thoroughly protected against cold; the muff, cuffs, and victorines of fur answer an excellent purpose, with good, high overshoes, and cloak, or shawl. Women who live in the country, and have out-door work to do, such as milking, chicken feeding, and pigs to attend to, should have an overcoat, with long sleeves, and made to button tightly around the body; also, a good, warm pair of gloves or mittens, and a pair of gum-elastic boots large enough to slip over

the shoes. This will protect her feet through mud and slop, and be a guard to the ankles on a cold day.

Thousands of lives are lost, in both sexes, for the lack of proper attention to dress, especially in persons of weak and delicate constitutions. The arts of civilization, with all their follies and errors, afford comforts and conveniences which not only prolong life, but render it far more comfortable and desirable. Mark the distinction between the well-informed, orderly man and the coarse, vulgar man. Witness the sickness and deaths in our vast army, scattered over a broad extent of country, and compare the difference. We find a much larger per cent. of sickness and suffering in the army than in the citizen at home, owing to the exposures and lack of care in the former. When the mass of mankind are taught, and learn to observe the great laws which govern in every thing, man will be a very different being from what he now is. There are but two ways to live, a right and a wrong way. The right leads to happiness; the other to misery; and the degree is in the exact ratio of the right or wrong doing.

#### MOUTH AND TEETH.

The teeth are too much neglected, and many useless applications are used. Every person needs a tooth-brush. It should be neither too soft nor too hard. Every morning when the face and hands are washed, the teeth should be washed with the brush. Put a little soap, Castile is the best, on the brush, after having wet it; then rub the teeth moderately, pouring water on the brush, and repeating until the soap is washed out, then rinse the mouth well with clean water. This is better than the tooth powders, unless the gums are diseased. Then a wash of the yellow root will generally be found sufficient. This may be done with the bare finger, or with the brush. This practice will keep the teeth clean and white, unless there is an accumulation of tartar on the teeth. This accumulation is on the teeth at the gum, and sometimes, if it has been neglected, will extend up under the edge of the gum. Nothing but actually scraping it off will remove it. As soon as discovered it should be done by a good dentist, and if done with care the gums will soon heal and become sound again. Strict watch should be kept, and when the teeth once begin to decay immediately apply to a dentist, and if there is a sufficient hollow to admit of plugging have it plugged with tinfoil. I prefer it to gold, as it answers well, and looks much better; in many cases it will seldom be perceived, while, if gold be used, it shows at once an unfavorable contrast. Good teeth are not only an ornament to

the mouth, but serve an important purpose in the mastication of food, preparing it for the stomach and the proper digestion, thus promoting health and often preventing indigestion.

#### WET CLOTHING.

If a person by any means gets their clothing wet it should at once be taken off, and dry garments put on, especially if the person is fatigued by labor or exertion, or is weak and feeble. If this can not be done an overcoat should be put on, or else they should be wrapped in a blanket until the clothes be dried on the body. From this rule there should be no departure, unless in warm weather and the person is in full health and not fatigued. Some persons perspire very freely from slight exertion. Such persons should, when they stop work or exercise, pull off their clothing which is wet with perspiration and put on dry garments, and hang up the wet ones to dry, and if they have not been too long worn may be put on again. This change is the more important at the end of a day's labor, when an individual is fatigued by work.

#### NIGHT AIR AND LATE HOURS.

Night air and dews are as injurious as the morning sun is healthful. The day has passed, and if an individual has been employed, as every one should be, the vital forces are more or less exhausted, and the body is less able to throw off wrong influences than when in full vigor. As, after rest with food, unless the atmosphere is unusually dry, as is sometimes the case in very dry weather, a person should not sit out or be in the open air after night, without being well protected with extra clothing. Even with this it would be better to be under a tree thickly covered with leaves or under a shed or open porch, or in a room well ventilated. Strong and vigorous persons may for a time resist the ill-effects of night dews, but sooner or later they will feel it. The feeble will be affected at once by it. Late hours are injurious to all, but more so to the young and feeble. All animals and birds retire to rest at an early hour, and are up with the sun. Nature so designed for man, and when left uninfluenced by some enticement man will retire early. Sitting up half the night and lying in bed until the day is half or nearly half gone, is a violation of one of Nature's laws, for which the penalty must be paid, and if disease be contracted we pay dearly.

#### SUN STROKE.

This is one of those fatal difficulties to which any person is liable when exposed to the rays of the sun in very hot weather. Persons



thus exposed should wear a hat with a moderately broad rim, with a silk handkerchief in the crown of the hat, and if moistened with water it will be better. A wide-brimmed hat is at all times the best. It keeps the wind out of the face in cool weather and in warm weather the sunshine from the face, neck, and shoulders. It is a great protection to the eyes, and if worn when reading by a bright light of any kind, and so worn as to prevent the rays from falling directly on the eyes, it is a great preserver of that organ. I feel much indebted to having taken this precaution for the preservation of my sight.

#### COLD WATER DRINKING.

In hot weather much precaution is necessary in drinking cold water, especially if the body is overheated and fatigued. The face and hands should be first well wet with water, the mouth well washed out, and then but a few sips of water swallowed at a time, making intervals between the sippings, and if the body be much heated the desire should not be wholly gratified. I came near killing myself during a hot summer day by drinking, while overheated, from a spring of cold water, though I thought at the time that I used much caution.

#### EXERCISE.

When a person has a hard job to perform, but little food should be taken immediately before doing the work, nor should he resort to the use of stimulants of any kind; the effect of the stimulus soon passes off, and debility ensues. If, after the exertion, the person feels exhausted a teacupful of hot panada, with a little rest by lying down, will soon restore the wasted powers, so that a good, comfortable meal can be eaten. When a person is fatigued it is much the best for him to lie down, and next to sit down, or lean against a firm body, such as a tree, post, or fence, but at no time is it proper for any one to sit or lie down on the bare ground. A large piece of bark, chips, straw, or fine brush, and if no better can be done, take the coat, lay it on the ground, and sit or lay on that. The more exhausted a person is the more important it is to avoid lying on the ground, unless the ground be very dry.

#### LOSS OF BLOOD.

If a person is much enfeebled by the loss of blood, they should be laid on the back, the feet, legs, and hips should be higher than the head, and cool drinks administered in moderate quantities, as the patient may desire. If the bleeding be from the lungs the

fourth of a tea-spoonful of table salt may be administered occasionally, but not so much as to induce vomiting. Drink should be withheld, and perfect rest enjoined, until a physician can be had. If uterine, the patient should be placed as above and a cloth wet in cold water and applied over the lower part of the bowels and renewed often, while tea-spoonful doses of strong alum water be administered every twenty minutes, until several doses are taken, if the flooding is not stopped sooner. In exhaustion from uterine hemorrhage, unless it comes on immediately after child-birth, immediate resort should be had to inserting a cloth effectually up the vagina, a silk pocket-handkerchief answers an excellent purpose; at the same time a physician should be sent for without delay. A hemorrhage from the nose is sometimes alarming. In such a case the patient should, in all cases, where the loss of blood is profuse be placed in a cool situation, cold wet cloths applied to the head and around the neck, strong alum water applied to the nose by snuffing it up the nostril, or what is better thrown up with a syringe; the feet should be kept warm. If this course be not successful a physician should be called in. Hemorrhage from wounds are of two kinds, one from veins and the other from arteries. Those from veins, unless large ones, and those from which the blood is pouring, are easily managed. Plenty of lint should be at once applied to the bleeding part, and if lint be not at hand soft worn rags, folded to quite a number of thicknesses, should be applied, and then a bandage over all, as tight as can be pleasantly borne. This, with absolute rest, will in a large majority of cases stop the bleeding, and will not for several days require any attention. In the case where a small artery is severed this will be sufficient; but where a large artery is cut, in which case the blood spurts by jets, the danger is great and the blood must be arrested at once. The place injured may be done up as before stated, and in addition a strong pocket-handkerchief should at once be tied around the limb *above* the bleeding part, or between where the blood flows and the heart, and so tied that a small stick can be run through; then twist the handkerchief with the stick until the bleeding stops. It must be held in this way until the artery can be tied. If the open end can be seen thrust in the finger and keep it there till the blood coagulates. For a large vein the treatment is the same, except that the handkerchief should be *below* the wound. The above directions, if followed, may save a life until a physician can be procured. All that is necessary is coolness and prompt action.

## COSTIVENESS.

To sustain a healthy condition daily evacuations are indispensable. If from any cause a person finds that the bowels become torpid, and fail to move daily, he or she should at once change the diet. Rye mush and molasses is perhaps the best. Rye mush and milk, or mush made of corn-meal with milk. Most of the fruits, if cooked, are all beneficial. Unbolted wheat-bread, made as common light bread is made, is an excellent article. In many cases a table-spoonful of corn-meal, stirred into a tumbler of water, and drank in the morning before breakfast, is sufficient. But I do not know of any one article that is more effectual than wheat-bran unless it be some active purgative. The bran may be eaten made into bread, or can be eaten dry to the extent of two table-spoonful or a gill a day. Should all of these fail the daily use of a large syringe and injections of tepid water should be resorted to; and if that does not produce the desired effect, use less water, and add castor-oil in the injections. They should be used daily, in the morning, half an hour after breakfast, and continued until a habit of going to stool daily is established. I have often succeeded by recommending merely a change of diet as above, and observing the rule of going to stool at the same hour every morning after breakfast, and continuing until the habit is fully confirmed. Costiveness, if permitted to continue for any considerable time, will impair the health. As soon as discovered it should be remedied, and regularity in going to stool will do much towards a cure, and should be strictly observed. If it fails the means I have pointed out should be at once resorted to.

## BOWEL COMPLAINTS.

These may be classed under two heads: diarrhea and dysentery. Under the first head may be classed all those affections which produce watery discharges from the bowels, from slight ones up to those termed cholera. Sometimes the purging is induced by simple indigestion, and sometimes from the improper use of drinks. As soon as this kind of purging is indicated the person should abstain from all kind of food for at least twenty-four hours, except it be chicken-water, beef-tea, or panada, and even these only in small quantities, and as far as possible from all kinds of drink. Cold drinks are inadmissible in the first stage, unless the thirst is intolerable, and then they should be used very sparingly. Lemonade may, in very small quantities, be used; and, if lemons can not be obtained, water, slightly acidulated with good vinegar or some of

the acid fruits which have been already recommended, may be substituted. But one of the best remedies, as well as drinks which I have ever used, is sweet whey, made by heating good sweet milk in a tin to boiling, then stir in good sharp vinegar, pouring it in gradually until a curd is formed, and a clear whey separated from it. As soon as formed it should be separated by turning the whey off into a bowl; it should be free from acid taste, and is best drank as hot as the patient can swallow it, though it may be used cool, but not cold. As soon as the common excrements are purged off an effort should be made at once to stop the purging. A tea made of the root of the dewberry or the blackberry, in doses of a large table-spoonful every half-hour until five or six doses are taken, will be sufficient oftentimes. If the purging is not stopped sooner—if pain or griping be present—a grain of solid opium may be used, or twenty-five drops of laudanum in a little water, or a dose of morphine or paregoric, be given. If neither of these be at hand gum camphor, dissolved in spirits or in the powdered gum, should be given; and, if griping still continues, flannel cloths, wrung out of strong hop water, should be applied over the whole bowels as warm as can be borne, and often renewed. If these all fail send for a physician.

#### DYSENTERY

Is a different disease, and is ushered in with entirely different symptoms. There may be frequent desire to go to stool, and but little passes at a time. At first a slimy matter resembling the white of an egg, and in some cases mixed with blood. In this form the difficulty may continue for several days without any change; then pain and griping comes on with fever. In other cases there is some sickness at the stomach at the outset, and more or less chilliness, followed by fever, thirst, and tenderness over the abdomen. In these latter symptoms there are indications of a serious difficulty, and a physician should be consulted at once without delay. With the first set of symptoms a moderate dose of castor-oil, so as to produce one but not more than two evacuations, is all sufficient, and should be immediately followed by an injection of not less than fifty drops of laudanum, or even sixty or seventy may be used in two table-spoonfuls of starch, of near the thickness of that used to starch clothes. If it should be thrown off immediately, or soon, then follow with another, with a few drops less laudanum. If no fever or tenderness of the abdomen arises, and the purging continues at the end of eight hours or even six, repeat the injection of starch and laudanum, and, if no improve-

ment is effected, call in a physician. As to food and drink the rules laid down for diarrhea should be rigidly observed. The sweet whey will be found an excellent drink. It is a remedy as well as a drink. Any form of bowel complaint soon impairs the health, and, like all diseased action, the sooner it is attended to the better; for "remember that an ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure." It is often the case that, for sometime after a bowel complaint, there is a sense of weakness and emptiness in the bowels. In these cases a flannel bandage around the body, moderately tight, should be worn. Living on light food, such as boiled rice and milk or rice alone; unripe fruits are all injurious, even when cooked, and none more so than currants and cherries. These should be discarded under any and all circumstances. Overloading the stomach during the hot season with any kind of food is injurious, but especially with fruit or vegetables. These latter should never be eaten near night, at nor after supper. A plain simple supper, especially at or after sundown, is by far the best for health, and is the most likely to induce sound sleep, which is so important to good health.

#### MODE OF SLEEPING.

A straw or shuck mattress in the summer is by far the best. Corn husks make an excellent bed if selected as soon as the corn is gathered, rejecting the coarse rough ones, or splitting the shucks with the hackle and then simply filling a bed-tick. Never sleep in summer so that a current of air passes over the bed, or where the wind blows directly on the bed; much better do so in cold than in hot weather, especially if the wind be from the south. If it be foggy weather it is best to have the windows closed. There are but few nights in this climate but what it will be best to have some light covering over the person, unless in a small confined room, and these at best are unfit to sleep in.

#### GLUTTONY.

As a general thing we eat and drink too much and thereby impair the due action of the stomach. We should never eat to full satiety, but leave off with a relish for more. Gluttony is often induced by a large variety of food; first, a large supply of savory meats, with all the other accompaniments more than sufficient for a whole meal, then comes the pastry, pies, cakes, custard, puddings, etc., and small fruit. The appetite is stimulated until the stomach is overloaded, especially if a glass of brandy or good

sparkling wine be drank just before the meal, and strong tea or coffee be added during the meal. A meal should be made from a few plain simple articles with little or no drink, though now and then a glass of buttermilk or good sweet milk, and if these are not to be had, a glass of good cool water. Wine, brandy, or other stimulating beverages should not be used either before or after meals or while eating, not even strong beer or porter.

#### IMPURE WATER.

It may so happen at times that a family may be compelled to use impure water, or water impregnated with earth. This should be filtered through sand and charcoal and thus rendered pure. Water may be rendered impure by stagnation. This also may be purified by filtering through the foregoing materials. But for the lack of these the water should be boiled, settled and turned off and cooled, then it will be fit for use either for drinking or cooking purposes. Lime water, as it is called, or water impregnated with lime, will be improved by boiling, settling, cooling and poured off before using. There is nothing better than a good filter of sand and charcoal, and three or four thicknesses of a woolen blanket for filtering the water. Where persons are so situated as to depend on cistern or river water they should be provided with a good filter.

#### STIMULANTS AND NARCOTICS.

Some remarks on these must close this dissertation. First, alcoholic stimulants of all kinds, names and nature. All beverages made by distillation or by simple fermentation are not only wholly unnecessary for a healthy person, but more or less injurious. They produce a temporary excitement which soon passes off and the system is left weak, and a demand for more called for by the weakened powers, and if indulged in a habit is formed and an unnatural desire is created, which ends in drunkenness and a premature death. There is something peculiar in the effects of stimulants on the human system. They induce a new train of nervous sensations through the entire system; this sensation is transmitted to the brain, and here a new train of emotions are induced, the degree or extent depending upon the kind and quantity of stimulus taken. When the quantity is small pleasurable emotions are excited; if the amount has been considerable all the emotions are accelerated in the rate of the quantity taken, until sufficient be taken to produce a narcotic effect, that is, a kind of stupefying or

quiescent condition. When this state is induced death sometimes occurs from an overquieting effect on the nerves, by which the functions of organic life are suspended, in addition to an increase of emotional feelings. There is for a time an increased action of all the vital functions of the system, if the quantity taken has not been so great as to produce a torpor, but this condition soon passes off and all the functions of the system sink as much below as they had been above the natural state or condition, unless there is a renewal of the stimulus, and if this is renewed and the stimulation kept up, the system sooner or later falls into diseased action of some kind, either diarrhea, dysentery or fever, but the most common difficulty in the inebriate is delirium tremens. In short, the system is liable to all the diseases to which flesh is heir. To treat all the various conditions induced by unnatural stimulation, and show their effects on the human system would be foreign to this essay, and would fill a volume. I will point out one effect which I have not seen laid down in any book or heard explained by any one. Why it is so difficult for the habitual dram drinker to break off from his cups. As before stated, a certain amount of stimulus exhilarates the whole system, but some of its functions more than others; for a time increased digestion and an increase of all the functions, especially of the liver, the importance of whose functions in the animal economy have not been fully appreciated. The nervous centers of the brain are excited, and the most dominant emotional feelings called into action, hence the great variety of manifestations in the emotional feelings, except in the organ of conscientious emotion. Where this is naturally large the emotional feeling of firmness is also large. These emotional feelings acting together are sufficient to restrain an individual from the use of all that which he is convinced will impair his moral standing. And should he by accident become excited by stimulants he will seek to conceal it and thus reverse the natural action of these emotional feelings.

Pleasurable sensations are the great end and aim of human existence. The individual begins by the moderate use of stimulants, without any intention of continuing their use. The sensation produced is exhilarating, and if moderately used, as it almost always is at first, the unpleasant effect is slight. A cup of coffee or strong tea, with a good meal, relieves the individual. He is the man again until some new inducement tempts him to renew the indulgence; and thus the round goes on till a habit is established, and the natural functions become impaired, and a train of new sensations and emotions are induced; then he is miserable until

the accustomed stimulus be used. The desire for it outweighs and overbalances all other sensations. The individual loses all control over himself, however strong his reasoning powers and will-force may be. The unpleasant sensation induced from the lack of the accustomed stimulus prompts him to return to it, and thus he goes on until overtaken by some one of the calamities before spoken of. Here rests his only hope of subduing this accursed appetite; here, if the proper remedies be resorted to and the system properly restored to a healthy action, the individual may be saved from this damning influence. But to succeed he must resist all temptations, totally abstaining from its influence for years, before the desire and the pleasant effects be entirely gone or destroyed. And here is a principle that is but little understood, even by medical men, the effect of a nervous sensation once produced and continued until a full habit is induced. This may be applied to sensations of every kind and degree, each requiring its own peculiar or proper remedy for the cure; hence the importance in early life of establishing correct views and opinions by which to form correct habits in everything that concerns us. To promote this has been the object of this essay. Animals and birds, and even reptiles, are mainly governed by what is termed instincts, which mostly lead them correctly in all things. But man is under his emotional feelings, and these are designed by nature to be controlled by reason and intelligence; and he who does not learn this pays dear, very dear, for his ignorance in the omission to learn that which so immediately concerns him.

#### NARCOTICS.

These embrace a large class of articles which should never be used except as remedial agents in the treatment of some diseased action. Opium, and some one of its numerous preparations, is the one which is mostly used and abused. Under no consideration whatever should they be used except when absolutely necessary, and then no longer used when they can be dispensed with. This article and its preparations when used until a fondness or habit for them is induced, are, if possible, more injurious than alcoholic preparations and are as difficult to get rid of. There are others of this class equally injurious, but not so common and less in use. They should be shunned. Gam camphor and its tincture, so common in every family that the camphor bottle has its place, and is carefully replenished with its accustomed preparation. Thousands of dollars are annually expended for this drug. It is frequently resorted to when it is wholly inapplicable, and oftentimes used



when a cold or hot wet cloth, folded in several thicknesses and applied, would answer much better. But as long as it is kept out of the stomach the folly may be tolerated.

#### TOBACCO.

This weed and all its preparations, under whatever name it may be recognized, is a great curse to mankind in this country, and I think in all others. Why and how mankind ever originated the use of so disgusting an article is difficult to determine. It is not only repugnant to the taste of an individual who never used it, but it is a dirty, nasty, filthy, and an offensive article. It would seem as though no genteel or well-bred person would or could use it; yet it is indulged in by all classes and grades of society. The quid is chewed; the snuff snuffed up many a nasal organ; the pipe, the cigar, and the glorious cigarette are puffed everywhere, filling the atmosphere in every place. To those who have not been degraded by this vile practice it is abominable, robbing the atmosphere of that purity which the God of nature has designed it to possess. Who could enjoy the perfume of the rose or a beautiful nosegay of flowers amid the stench of tobacco smoke? What stomach but a dog's could look on the filthy pools of ambia, which are so often seen, especially in a railroad car? If this were all, custom might tolerate it, but ninety-nine out of every hundred who use it are, in the end, injured by its use. If chewed it produces thirst, and robs the supply of saliva which is necessary and was designed by nature should be mixed with our food, and which really is the first process in digestion. It weakens the powers of the stomach, impairs digestion, and sooner or later impairs and undermines the nervous system.

This I know from sad experience. Those who smoke fare no better; they may not exhaust so much of the saliva, yet there is absorbed into the system the essential oil of the weed, which in its concentrated state is a deadly poison. It renders the skin yellow, and by its narcotic influence impairs the nervous powers of the individual, and the degree is in the ratio of its use. The takers of snuff, if possible, fare still worse, as the direct action is upon the nerves of smell. They in a great degree lose the nice sense of distinguishing odors, and the delightful fragrance of the rose is unappreciable. This alone might be tolerated, but the nasal openings are plugged up, and the person is more or less compelled to breathe through the mouth. Nor is this all. A catarrhal affection is induced; the tone of the voice is impaired, and in inveterate snuff-takers more or less of the snuff passes into

the lungs, interfering with their functions. Besides all these consequences, they in no wise escape the baneful effects or narcotic influence on the nervous system. It is far better to chew or smoke the foul weed than to snuff. But the question is, how are we to get rid of the evil? First, let every individual—those who use the article as well as those who do not use it—on all suitable occasions speak of its baneful influence. Instruct the young in the evil and baneful effects of its use, and as far as possible induce every individual who is not addicted to its use to never become a slave to the filthy habit, and to say to those who do use it to endeavor by every possible means in their power to quit its use. A vast number will be able to succeed, and that without any injury, and a few be largely benefited. It requires strong determination, and many shifts by way of substitutes will be resorted to. I know quite a number who have succeeded, and have been greatly benefited by so doing. There is more difficulty in old persons breaking off from the habit, who have used the article for a great number of years; and if they attempt it it should be done by degrees, for the system will sustain a greater or less shock by a sudden discontinuance. (I fully indorse all I have said in the foregoing remarks, as since writing them, after an indulgence in the habit of chewing and smoking tobacco for fifty-five years, I have quit the use of the weed.—P. M.) I am aware that there are some who contend that its use is beneficial. It is contended, too, that it preserves the teeth. This is all humbug. There may be a few cases where the pain of toothache has been to some extent allayed, but even this is doubtful, and at best but partial. A few contend that it is a relief to asthma. There may be a few rare cases which have been benefited, but the question at once arises, whether in the end there is not as much injury done the system as to more than balance all the relief derived from its use.

A few assert that it cures water-brash. This is doubtful, and I here make the assertion, that for thirty years' close observation and attention to the use of tobacco, which I have given it, five hundred persons have been injured to one who has been benefited by it. It must be admitted that there are a few moderate users of this article that do not seem to be affected either for good or evil, but they are very few in number.

#### WINE.

This article is valued mostly on account of the alcoholic principle it contains, be it made from grapes or any other berry containing saccharine matter. In the process of fermentation more or

less alcohol is produced; hence it is an unnatural stimulant, and should not be used as a beverage. This, and brandy, as well as a few other articles from alcohol, when pure and properly made, are, in some cases of weakened conditions of the system, used with advantage to arouse the secretions and afford a temporary relief until food can be taken, digested, and assimilated in the system. The pure juice of the ripe grape, unfermented, is a healthy article, and may be used with advantage as a beverage. To keep the juice in an unfermented state, as soon as pressed, boil in a clean brass or porcelain kettle; skim clean, and while hot bottle in quart bottles; cork tight, and seal; wrap in paper, and keep in a cool, dark place, in a good cellar. First put the bottles in a box, and then that in the cellar.

#### SYMPTOMS OF DISEASE.

Disease may be classed under two general heads, chronic and acute. Chronic disease is that which is of long continuance, and is often the result of unsuccessfully treated acute diseases, but more frequently it commences without any of these premonitory agencies, and almost imperceptibly undermines the health and enfeebles the system, until the sufferer is unable to follow his or her usual vocation. The complaints under this class are so numerous that to describe them, and lay down rules and treatment for each particular case, would require a volume. For the greater number, however, but little treatment is necessary. Rest, care, proper food and clothing, with the use of the bath and a few simple remedies are the principle requisites. Such a course, steadily persevered in for a long time, should be mostly relied on. Without observing this rigid course of treatment, medicine will be of but little use. A vast amount of these complaints might be wholly cured or prevented by proper attention at the outset of the difficulty. As soon as any departure from health manifests itself, the person should observe closely how his unpleasant feelings affect him and any cause or treatment which seems to aggravate the symptoms. Let the cause be what it may, abstain rigidly from all that appears to increase the difficulty. This is the best of all remedies. If it be the food, a very short time will convince any one as to what is the least hurtful and the mode of using it. If in dress, that should be regulated and attended to. If in exercise, it should be changed and adapted to the condition. It is folly to think of taking medicine unless these rules be observed closely; you need but little from any physician, but when it becomes really necessary you should be careful to employ an honest and ex-

perienced man. Such a man may be consulted and his advice taken and followed, and if it fails from some neglect in giving him all the symptoms of your disease, or in following his instructions, consult him again; he may on the second consultation be able to discover the cause of the failure and remedy it. It may be the better plan to study well the rules I have laid down for the preservation of health, and rigidly adopt them. Many of these chronic diseases, however, are hereditary, being transmitted from the parents; these are incurable, and therefore it is useless to attempt a cure, for very often instead of being benefited the individual is frequently injured by it. All that can be done is to mitigate the difficulty by such means as a close observation may have proved to be the best, and at the same time it should be a lesson to the individual not to be the means of transmitting their difficulty to future posterity.

#### ACUTE DISEASE.

Acute diseases are ushered in under some one or all of the following symptoms, viz.: a sense of languor or fatigue, as though the person had been exhausted by overwork, pain in the bones and joints, sometimes in the muscles, pain in the back along the spine, with pain in the head and chilliness, a desire to be in a warm place, and sometimes a chill of more or less severity; all of these sensations are the result of deranged and nervous action. In some cases the sense of languor or lassitude exists for several days before any febrile action manifests itself. The appetite is impaired, the bowels sluggish or they may be too loose, and the passages of a clay color; the urine sometimes is scanty and at other times may be too copious; a clammy disagreeable taste in the mouth. These are all warnings that the health is deranged. The more decided the symptoms are the more certain the warning should be to the individual, and some means be adopted immediately to throw them off. Never wait for them to be fully developed into fever. In this stage rest is indispensable and a mild diet. If any irregularity of the bowels be present, that should be corrected. If too loose they should be checked as soon as possible by some remedy, and if costive remove it by some mild purgative. In a very large majority of cases there is no one means so effectual as a warm bath, continued until all sense of chilliness as well as the pains and aches are gone, and if the first does not entirely relieve all the symptoms use a second and even a third. The bath should be of such a temperature as to be pleasant. But few persons are provided as they should be with the means of bathing.

Next to the warm bath is the vapor bath. A temporary fixture

can easily be made to meet any urgent necessity for it. Let the person be seated in a common chair, with his clothes off (though a thin cotton shirt may remain on); throw around him or her a thick blanket or quilt, so as to cover the chair and the entire person, except the head, the blanket or quilt coming close around the neck, the feet resting on warm bricks or a heated piece of thick plank. Place a small tub, bucket or other suitable vessel, containing at least a gallon and a half of warm water under the blanket and chair; now and then a hot brick or stone should be put into the water to create steam, and continued until free perspiration be induced on the patient, and then more moderately kept up for ten or twenty minutes longer, but not carried so far as to cause faintness. If the head is now and then bathed with cold water it will be the better. The room should be comfortably warm, and as soon as the patient has been sufficiently sweated he should be removed. The shirt, if one was on, should be taken off, and the whole person well and briskly rubbed with a dry cloth. A dry shirt should then be put on, and the patient laid in bed and kept comfortably warm. If, during the bath, he should become thirsty some warm drink may be given him; or, if it seems difficult to excite the perspiration satisfactorily, he or she should drink freely of hot sage tea or weak table tea, or else weak pennyroyal tea. If the individual is not too weak no fears need be entertained in producing free perspiration, and continuing it until chilliness and pain be gone. If the person is feeble, however, instead of the vapor from water good whisky may be used, by putting a small quantity into a small dish and setting it on fire, and, after placing a funnel over the dish, introduce it under the blanket by some kind of a tube, with the spout of the funnel inserted in the tube, but this will be seldom conveniently at hand. It is a most excellent remedy, however, and can be used with the funnel alone, placed inverted over the saucer or dish, which should be under the blanket and chair. Another method is, the patient may be undressed, and, after being put to bed and well covered with a blanket or two, four or five bricks should be heated, then dipped in water, and wrapped in wet cloths, and over each of them, a dry one—a brick to each foot, one at the knees, and one at the small of the back, and, if necessary, one against the bowels. If perspiration be not brought on by the once heating one or all of them may be renewed. They should be continued until free perspiration is induced, and for a short time after; and, if necessary, a free use of one or other of the drinks recommended above should be given.

After the sweating it is better to remove all the wet clothing and

rub the whole body and limbs with a dry towel. Cover up so as to be pleasantly warm. This vapor-bathing is excellent, even in a chill or shake, but should be commenced as soon after the chill or shake comes on as can be done. I have frequently arrested a chill on myself by this process, and wholly prevented the fever from coming on. Where, from previous indications, we may expect a return of the chill it will be best to take some medicine to prevent it. If a second chill is not looked for, but comes on, use the sweating process as before, and take remedies to prevent its return. For twenty-four hours after the sweating operation the person should be kept quiet, and only light food administered, if fever does not arise. This is important. After a chill comes a fever, which may be remittent or intermittent, or may continue and assume one of the various forms of fever known. After the fever is fully under way, if there be pain in the head, cloths wet in cold or ice water should be applied to the forehead, and repeated as often as they become warm. At the same time the feet should be kept warm. If the body is hot it may be frequently sponged, or wiped off with a wet cloth, using tepid water for the purpose, and repeating as often as the skin becomes hot and dry. If the bowels have not been well moved they should be at once, by the use of the syringe, using plain tepid water. If one injection does not produce the desired effect, give a second; use three or four syringefuls, one right after the other, or as long as the patient can bear it. In a few minutes repeat it, until the bowels are entirely emptied. These means should be persisted in until the effect is produced, as no evil can result from their use. If the foregoing rules be closely observed, a large number of cases will be cured in their incipient stage. Those that may continue will be greatly mitigated in their severity and in their duration. Should intermittent fever, or what is more commonly called chills and fever, be prevalent, the symptoms will sufficiently indicate its form, and if the individual be prepared to treat the case, in forty-nine out of every fifty cases they can be cured without a physician. See the remedy here given. If the fever continues after the above remedies have been fully tried, a good physician should be sent for at once. There should be no delay after these remedies have been tried and have failed to remove the difficulty, and the sooner judicious treatment be adopted the better. I will give a few remedies which long experience has proved to be of utility. A very little experience will soon enable any family to use them with discretion, and may in this way save many dollars in preventing unnecessary calls of a physician. Every family should provide themselves with a good

syringe, two would be better, one of four and one of twelve ounces, and after using them they should be thoroughly washed with soapsuds and well rinsed with clean warm water, then dried and laid by for use. The proper use of the syringe will often save much suffering, and is often not only better than a dose of medicine but much cheaper. The following recipe makes an excellent laxative pill, which may be safely used, in its proper dose, under any circumstances, where a gentle purgative is needed. Pregnant females can use it with perfect safety, if taken in reasonable doses :

R. Pulverized Rhubarb,  $\frac{1}{2}$  oz.

Pulverized Gum Aloes, 80 grs.

Pulverized Gum Gamboge, 15 grs.

Make a mass with thin molasses, first mixing the articles thoroughly; then divide into three-grain pills, or pills of common size; when dry put them into a box and keep in a dry place, and they may be kept for years. In rolling the pill it is best to roll them in pulverized liquorice-root. Three of these pills taken on going to bed will operate next morning after breakfast once or twice without pain, sickness or griping. In costive habits one or two may be taken on going to bed each night and continued until the costiveness be removed. No more should be taken than just sufficient to move the bowels; gradually lessen the dose until a half pill is taken, and as soon as can be done they are to be left off entirely. (See article under the head of "Costiveness" in this work.) The rules there laid down should be strictly observed.

#### AGUE PILLS.

R. Sulphate Quinine, 14 grs. (Common quinine of the shop.)

African Cayenne Pepper, 14 grs.

Pulverized Gum Aloes, 6 grs.

Make a mass with thick molasses; roll in pulverized liquorice-root and divide into fourteen pills. These pills may be kept a long time, even two or three years, if kept dry. If there is an interval of thirteen hours between the time the fever goes off and the next chill or shake, as soon as the fever goes off commence taking the pills; take one at a time every hour, washing down with some kind of warm tea. These pills should be so taken that the last pill of the fourteen should be taken half an hour before the chill comes on. If the interval between the fever and the chill is short two pills must be taken every hour. If a chill comes on it is best to stop, and after the fever goes off take them again. The foregoing is for a grown person; a child over eight years can

take a pill every hour and a half; but if time will admit it is best for children of eight to ten years to take half a pill every hour until eight are taken. For children from three years old up to eight, divide the pill into three parts and give one part at a time until ten or twelve doses are taken—unless unpleasant symptoms arise or the chill or shake comes on.

One great advantage in these pills is they may be given without any previous preparation of physic. The aloes will not gripe, yet will, in nearly every case, move the bowels sufficiently. For a permanent cure either in the spring or fall the pills should be taken thus: After the chill is stopped wait six days, then on the sixth and seventh days take three pills a day, one, morning, noon and night, then stop until the sixth day again; then take one, morning, noon and night the sixth and seventh days. Wait again until a return of the sixth day and repeat, until four or five rounds have been taken. In nine cases out of ten this will effect a permanent cure. For full grown persons, where the constitution is good, I prefer the clear quinine alone, given in two and three grain doses, at intervals of two hours until sixteen or eighteen grains are taken; then for a final cure use the pills as above. There is now and then a person met with that the quinine so affects the brain as to render its use rather hazardous. In such cases a small dose of morphine, say one-eighth of a grain, should be given at the commencement of taking the quinine pills, and one in eight hours after. Given in this way I have never seen any ill effects produced. If a person is much weakened from ague or disease of any kind, much prudence and care as to diet and in preventing exposure is all important. Heavy dews, fogs, and night air, as well as rain, should be carefully avoided, also excessive exercise. After any spell of sickness a plain simple diet should be adopted, abstaining from all kinds of green fruit or berries, whether cooked or uncooked, and but a small portion of ripe fruit should be used, and that should be cooked. This course should be persisted in until health and strength be fully restored, which is a work of some time frequently. It is the neglecting to observe these rules here pointed out that produces most of the relapses that so often are to be met with. Moderate exercise in the open air in clear pleasant weather, if the individual is strong enough to bear it, is beneficial and hastens the recovery, even before he or she is able to take exercise on foot. They may be taken out in a carriage, and as soon as able go out on horseback, lastly to walking and doing small light jobs of work. Exercise under any and all circumstances should be taken daily, if the weather is favora-



ble, even to slight fatigue; it promotes strength if proper rest be had afterward. It is imprudence in exercise, diet, and clothing, and improper exposure that does the mischief; often laying the foundation for chronic disease in some form as before referred to. A vial of paregoric and a vial of laudanum should be kept ready for use, but should be labelled and kept well corked, and put in some safe place, and only used when absolutely necessary.

It is a good plan to have a small box with lock and key to keep syringes and such articles of medicine in as are commonly used, also lint; this should be made from worn-out linen cloth, though cotton will do, and with the lint it is a good plan to have one or two rolls of bandage one and three-quarters of an inch wide, and two or three yards long. This may be of cotton, and to be used as a rolling bandage; beside these a good roll of fine rags to do up cuts, bruises, sore fingers and toes with. They are often needed, and when ready at hand save delay in hunting up when wanted, which is often the case in families. In tearing up worn-out garments there are often small pieces, just such as are needed. They can be saved without trouble and laid by in the medicine box, thus carrying out one of the principles in the old adage of "having a place for everything and keeping everything in its place."

#### CUTS.

There is no one thing in which error is more frequent than in the treatment of cuts. Let the cut be small or great the first object is to bring the edges of the wound as close together as can be done. If small all that is needed is the thumb and finger brought together, and held in this manner until it can be simply tied up by a bandage that will set close and keep the parts together. This, as a general rule, is all that is needed in small cuts. The bandage should not be removed for at least a week, and, if necessary, apply a clean one, and should a part of the old stick fast, let it remain cutting the other away and putting the new one on over the old portion. The cut will, in most cases, be found healed in a week, though the bandage should be kept on as long as tenderness continues. If the cut be a large one bring the parts together, and, if away from the house, use the pocket-handkerchief or a pair of suspenders to bind around the wound until lint and a good smooth bandage can be procured and applied. The lint should be so applied as to press the edges or parts together when the bandage is put on. If a toe or finger be nearly cut off a splint may be necessary, and a narrow bandage. The kind of bandage used must depend upon circumstances; a simple cloth put around the parts, or a roller, or rather the judg-

ment must, however, direct in this. This thing of applying sugar, camphor, and spirits of turpentine is abominable, and should never be used. If the cut has severed an artery or large vein the treatment is not very different from that for the smaller wounds, only an artery must be *tied* as soon as possible. See article, "Loss of Blood," in this work. If after the wound is done up the parts swell or become hot and painful, pour on cold water, or, what perhaps is better, put a pledget of proper size of five or six thickness, kept wet with cold water, on the part, and continued until heat and pain be gone, but yet not so cold as to produce the sensation of numbness. If the bandage is found to have been put on too tight it should be loosened, but not taken off.

#### BRUISES.

This is a different class of difficulties, as also are wounds made by a blunt instrument or sharp stone. Here the camphor or whisky bottle will come in play. If used lint or soft cloths may be wet with one of these articles and applied at once, and then the wound or bruise bandaged and kept wet for several hours. If pain, heat, and swelling (either one or all of these) come up the cold water should be used until the heat and fever be gone. All large cuts and contused wounds on the third or fourth day may be undone, and if suppuration has taken place (that is matter), so as to have loosened the lint, it should be taken off, and the sore dressed with a salve, called basilicon; unless there is a profuse discharge of pus (that is matter), once a day dressing will be enough. If profuse matter be present dress twice a day, simply sponging the part with a soft cloth, and then applying the salve, spread on some soft cloth or on lint, if the discharge is great. With proper care and rest this is all that will be necessary from beginning to end of healing the wound.

#### SPRAINS.

These are sometimes troublesome difficulties, and require good management. Sprains of the ankle or wrist are among the worst. I have always succeeded the best in those sprains by wetting immediately the part freely with camphor or good whisky, and then putting on the roller bandage about as tight as it can be borne, always commencing the bandage, and so rolling as to have each course around overlap the edge of the course below and lay smooth. This is an important matter. In passing over the heel and ankle the bandage must be half turned occasionally to make it lap and lay smooth. In putting on a roller bandage begin so as

to wind up towards the heart. If the part swells and become hot, leave off the camphor and use cold water, and repeat so as to keep down the fever, even if it be every five minutes, but if that can not be done, and the bandage becomes from swelling of the limb painfully tight, take it off, and apply the water freely until heat and fever are gone. Then apply the bandage again as tight as the comfort of the person will bear it. Rest is all important until the difficulty is so far removed as that motion of the part does not produce pain. Then gentle exercise, with the continuance of the bandage; this is a great support to the parts. In all these injuries the first effect is a weakness of the injured part; hence stimulants are required. After the fever comes on there is too much action, and the cold application is the best. The rolling bandage supports the weakened part; promotes absorption of any fluid that may be thrown out by injury of any small vessel; therefore it should be as tight as can be comfortably borne.

#### BURNS AND SCALDS.

There is no difference between the effects of a burn and a scald. The danger from either depends upon the part scalded or burned; the larger the surface injured the worse it will be, of course, and the depth and extent a part is injured will indicate the danger to be apprehended. As good a remedy as can first be applied is a cloth wet in cool water—not cold—which should be rewet constantly for ten or twenty minutes, but not taken off. If raw cotton be at hand, coat it well with good sweet lard; it should not be salted, or in the least rancid. The lard should be spread heavily, and then applied over the whole burned or scalded surface. The cotton should be kept constantly saturated with the lard; the lard should be so far melted that it will run, and then turned on the cotton, and if in cold weather the part should be kept covered. If the cotton sticks fast, so much the better; it should not be removed but let it come off itself. Sometimes it will remain until the part is healed over. If matter is formed the cotton will be loosened, and then it should be removed. In slight burns all the dressing that will be needed will be the simple cerate, spread on a fine cloth, and renewed once or twice a day. In some burns the quantity of pus or matter discharged is large. In such cases the whole surface of the burn should be thickly coated with fine wheat flour, and repeated as often as it is washed off or loosed by the matter. In these cases the patient is generally in a weakened or unhealthy condition, or the burn is deep, and it will be best to call in an experienced physician.

It is sometimes the case that in healthy and vigorous constitutions that the appetite remains good, the health keeps up, and the discharge is small, even in burns of considerable extent. The patient will do well under such circumstances with merely a dressing of the simple cerate, spread on cloth, and the whole burned surface covered with it, once or twice a day, until healed up. When a large surface is destroyed, the nervous system receives a considerable shock, and more or less danger is to be apprehended, and the early attention of a good physician should be had by all means.

#### SIMPLE CERATE.

White wax, one ounce; good sweet lard, two ounces. Melt both together in a common tin cup, and be careful that no more heat be used than is barely sufficient to melt the wax; then set the cup in cold water, and stir the mixture until cooled; put it into a tea-cup, or gallipot (if you have one), and cover tightly. By long standing it will become rancid and unfit for use. It is a mild, bland dressing for burns, blistered surfaces, chapped or cracked hands, and is also a good dressing for many sores. If white wax can not be had, the common yellow wax will do, though not so good.

#### BASILICON OINTMENT.

Take of common rosin, one and a quarter ounces; sweet lard, two ounces; common beeswax, half an ounce. Melt all together by a slow heat, and while hot the mixture should be strained through a flannel cloth into the gallipot or cup in which it is to be kept. Then set it in cold water, and stir until it begins to stiffen; then press it down so as to have it a solid mass. This is not only more stimulating than the simple cerate, and better adapted to old, indolent, or slow-healing sores than the cerate, but is often applicable to fresh cuts and wounds—that is, as soon as matter is formed. These two salves are about all that a family will generally need.

#### BREAD AND MILK POULTICE.

Mix milk and water, half and half, and crumble in light wheat bread until the milk and water is soaked up, using gentle heat. I have often used the water only, and have sometimes added sugar of lead to the water, where I desired to apply a poultice to an inflamed part. The bread and milk, with a little water, is the mildest. These poultices are applicable in all cases where a soft relaxing poultice is indicated.

The common onion, roasted thoroughly, and then split in the middle, makes an excellent emollient for pain in the ear, and is a good poultice. In some gatherings, such as felons, as well as some others where there is much pain, take two tea-spoonsful of Jimson, or Jamestown (*dura stramonium*) seeds; put them into a strong cloth, and bruise them well with a hammer, or any thing of that character, then put them into a small skillet or stew-pan, adding a gill of water, and let it steep for half an hour. Then crumb in light wheat bread so as to soak up the water, and use it for a poultice; it often relieves the pain much more than other poultices. The seeds should be gathered in the fall, when ripe, marked, and put up in the medicine box. They will be good for two or three years.

Poultices are applicable when there is pain, and in all gatherings which will terminate in the formation of pus or matter. They should not be continued too long, however, as they tend to weaken the part. In all cases where there is a tendency to gangrene (the first stage of mortification), which is indicated by the parts assuming a lead color, and the discharge, if any, from the part, is a thin serous matter, the following poultice is, by far, the best I ever used: Take the common garden carrot, wash it clean, and then grate or scrape it fine, and warm it on a plate until it is blood warm, then add of good yeast such as would make good light bread, one-fourth as much yeast as of the carrot, and apply it at once to the part, changing for a new one every two or three hours. All poultices should be changed so as not to become dry. No more of the carrot should be mixed with the yeast at one time than will form a poultice. These poultices are excellent for old indolent sores that are not healing well. They also dispel the disagreeable, offensive odor that is so often emitted from old ulcers. I have improved the appearance of, and changed the odor from, a cancer that was in an open ulcer by this poultice.

Hops when well steeped in water and then vinegar added, with a little wheat bran, and being mixed, then put into a small bag, form an excellent external application for local pain of the chest or elsewhere. A strong tea made by boiling hops in water, the tea put into a coffee-pot with a spout, and not filled above the opening of the spout, and the vapor of the hop tea inhaled into the lungs, is an excellent remedy in many cases of cough, and may be used as often as a fit of coughing comes on, and also at bedtime at night. I have done much good with this. The rules here given, if well studied and followed, will save a family much suffering and a

doctor's bill. The carrot poultice should be continued if applied for stopping gangrene or mortification, and renewed every three or four hours until the mortification is arrested. This will be indicated by a change of color, both in the sound and unsound flesh, the sound part will look more healthy and the unsound more dead. A line of demarkation is visible between the sound and unsound parts. Generally the poultice should be continued until the unsound part can be taken away, and the part be dressed with the basilicon ointment, and if the parts look flabby and weak they can be renewed. In most of these cases it will be best to have a physician look at the case occasionally. There are many other applications that can be beneficially used. The charcoal can be used with the yeast when the carrot can not be had; or the sassafras bark, with a portion of oak bark; yeast may be added to this, or twenty drops of the oil of creosote in an ounce of rain water; cloths wet with this and applied to the part is excellent. All of these last named poultices are not relaxing, like the first, and may be continued longer with less injury than those that are relaxant.

#### BOWEL COMPLAINTS

Require strict attention at the outset. I have said previously in this Treatise on Health, about as much as is necessary for a family. The crow's-foot, or ladies' slipper, steeped in milk, is a good remedy in diarrhea and in mild forms of dysentery. Paregoric and laudanum can be used in the proper dose; twenty-five drops of laudanum is a common dose for a grown person, taken in a little water, but for a younger person this should be diminished to suit the age of the patient. The dose of paregoric is from one to two tea-spoonfuls of ordinary size for an adult, and must be lessened to suit the age.

#### COLIC

Is sometimes a very distressing disease and requires prompt attention, as the person often suffers much if they have to wait until a physician can be had. A poultice of hops mixed with bran (the hops and bran should be boiled together in a little water, and then put into a sack or bag large enough so as to fully cover the part of the chest and whole of the abdomen), should be put on as warm as it can be borne, and then covered, so as to be kept warm. While this is being prepared, a bag of hot ashes wet with warm water may be used. As soon as it can be done, injections of warm water should be used and repeated until the bowels are well moved. I have often found that lukewarm water, drank freely until copious vomiting

was produced, afforded immediate relief. If these injections and the hot fomentations over the bowels do not afford relief very soon, a full dose of laudanum should be given. The quantity should be in proportion to the pain—the more severe the pain the larger the dose of laudanum, say from thirty to seventy-five drops. This latter dose should not be given unless the pain be very severe, but the dose should be sufficient to overcome all pain. As soon as the pain abates give three or four table-spoonsful of castor-oil. As the effect of the laudanum begins to pass off the oil will operate, though if it does not, then use injections of warm water and castor-oil. In all severe cases of colic it is best to employ a physician, as some of these cases require the most prompt and efficient treatment, and there should be no delay.

#### HOPS.

Every family should have a hop vine, well polled, and raise and preserve them in good condition. They should not stand out too long, as they lose that fine dust, called lupulin, on which the virtue of the hop depends. Hops answer many valuable purposes. As a fomentation applied over the seat of any local pain, they serve an excellent purpose. They should be steeped in a small quantity of water, and then a small portion of vinegar added; this is then put into a small bag and applied hot over the seat of pain, and occasionally renewed. A strong tea, made by boiling hops in plain water, may be beneficially used in severe coughs, or those of long standing. Put the hop tea into a tea-pot or coffee-pot with a spout and fill to near the spout, and then inhale the vapor as warm as can be pleasantly borne. To save the lips from being burnt roll up paper and put it into the spout and take this between the lips into the mouth and inhale through that.

#### PAIN IN THE BACK,

Often termed a stitch in the back. This is a very troublesome difficulty, taking the person suddenly, so much so that they sometimes fall down and can not get up, and remain in this painful condition for several days. Rub spirits of turpentine over the part with a small rag and heated in by a hot iron, such as a shovel, placed very near the surface, but not near enough to touch or burn the skin. The turpentine should be applied freely and well heated in. The application should be repeated twice a day until a cure is effected. From eight to twelve drops of the turpentine should be dropped in cold water or on sugar and swallowed, taken three times a day until cured. This is a nervous difficulty, and cured by

stimulants. The best remedy I ever used is the following : Equal parts, by measure, of tincture of gum camphor, tincture of African cayenne pepper, tincture of opium, tincture of gum myrrh, tincture of lobelia, and tincture of bayberry. Put all together and shake well. An ounce of each will make six ounces. It makes a good stimulating liniment, and for the lame back it should be used freely, by rubbing it on over the hips and lower part of the back, and then heating it in before a hot stove fire, or with a hot shovel. This should be done twice a day until a warm pleasant glow of heat comes up, when near the fire, or with the back toward the hot sun. I have seldom failed with this when it has been freely and properly applied.

#### ERYSIPELAS.

This has become a very common disease, and is divided into two classes, erysipelas and phlegmonous erysipelas. The first named is an inflammation of the cuticle or scarf-skin, affecting slightly the true skin. The phlegmonous form of the disease is located below the true skin, on the cellular tissue, extending to the true skin, and sometimes extending to the muscles, tendons, or cartilage about the joints. This form of the disease is not only painful but often protracted, and terminates in the formation of pus or what is commonly called matter; each variety of this disease has various degrees of intensity and modification. I shall only attempt to lay down a few rules so as to enable each individual to determine when a person is afflicted with the disease, and to distinguish between the milder attacks and those that require a prompt and vigorous treatment. It is sometimes an epidemic disease, and is often ushered in by cold chills or rigors, with more or less lassitude, followed by more or less fever. The danger to be apprehended is always in the ratio of the cold stage or lassitude, and the degree of fever that comes on after the cool stage, and the parts affected. The attack of the face, accompanied with chill and followed with considerable fever, is always attended with more or less danger. In this class of cases a good and skillful physician should be relied on alone, as it is not well to trust to private treatment. In the mild form in which it more frequently appears, the application of the tincture of iodine by the means of a small camel's hair-brush or the feather part of a quill once or twice a day, with light easily digested food, and the bowels kept regular, is generally sufficient to effect a cure. I have sometimes used the nitrate of silver (lunar caustic) dissolved in rain water in the proportion of two or three grains of the nitrate to an ounce of water. Cloths should



be wet in this solution and applied constantly to the parts affected, the cloths should be wet as often as they become dry or hot. Much care is necessary in using the solution, as it will color anything black (and is ineffaceable—not washed out) that it touches. I have succeeded in curing with a solution of sugar of lead in proportion of four or five grains dissolved in an ounce of rain water. Cloths should be wet with it and kept constantly wet and applied to the part. A strong decoction of hops with cloths wet with it and applied constantly is often a very efficient remedy, and will in slight cases effect a cure.

In a large majority of the cases the directions I have given above are sufficient to effect a cure, but in all bad cases a physician should be called in at once and his directions strictly followed. It sometimes affects the lining membrane of the nose. In these cases I put into a vial half an ounce of the tincture of iodine, and twice a day apply it in the following manner: Shut the mouth tight, apply the vial, uncorked, to one nostril, with a finger pressed on the other so as to force breathing through the nostril to which the vial is applied. In this way breathe for a half a minute, then apply it to the other in the same way. Persons who are often afflicted with erysipelas should take a course to change the condition of the system. I have found the free use of buttermilk, drank more or less every day for several months, to effectually cure this complaint; at the same time, leaving off the use of tea and coffee and eating but little meat of any kind.

#### TO CURE OLD SORES ABOUT THE ANKLES AND LOWER PART OF THE LEGS.

Take of fresh slaked lime, entirely dry, and lard, nearly equal parts by bulk (the lime somewhat the largest bulk) and mix them thoroughly; then spread sufficient of the mixture on a cloth to cover the sore, then put on a good bandage—the rolling is the best. They should be changed at least once a day though twice a day would be better. I cured one case of these old sores, where the periosteum was gone and the bone bare. I used two parts of acetate of lead (sugar of lead) and one part of sulphate of zinc (white vitriol) dissolved in rain water, and when settled and poured off had a cloth wet with the solution and kept the part constantly wet with it until a cure was effected; the patient was still and kept the leg in a horizontal position as much as possible. Thus I have given all the most common and prominent difficulties to which families are liable and the remedies. If they be studied and attended to according to the directions it will save much expense for medical advice.

## LETTER TO DR. FORD.

---

CONNERSVILLE, IND., March 11, 1866.

JAMES FORD, M. D.—My dear Sir: Your letter was duly received and read. After some preliminary remarks you ask sundry questions with regard to the health of the Whitewater Valley, etc. I shall answer a few of these questions in a full and direct manner, and a portion will be answered in a more general way.

Your first question is, "What is the prevailing course of the winds during the summer and fall months?"

They are south, south-west, north-west, and occasionally north-east.

Second question: "Are there more cases of sickness on the east than on the west side of Whitewater River within one mile of its banks?"

It would be difficult to determine the difference, for reasons which will be given in my general remarks. The same may be said of your third and fourth questions. With respect to your fifth question, in regard to fruit as connected with malarious districts, I will make a few general remarks.

In the early settlement of the Whitewater country it was a prolific locality for all kinds of fruit, especially for apples and peaches, though apples never have done well on gravelly lands, as is the case with some of our river bottoms. The peach is gone entirely, except in a few high localities, and even there they sometimes fail; their yield being evidently greatly influenced by the severity of winter and the frosts of late spring.

Your sixth question, in regard to the canal and its effect on the country in its vicinity, is readily answered.

When the water was first let in it took considerable time to puddle so as to hold water, and although it caused some inconvenience yet no sickness seemed to follow in consequence, but on the contrary, for the first year or two the health of the valley was improved. Some stagnant pools of water were drained and a few filled up. For the last eight or ten years, however, the canal has

become a dirty, filthy concern. First its banks were covered with a moss, and then with a tall grass, obstructing the flow of water, and to this there is added an accumulation of mud in the canal and on its banks, which is well calculated to be productive of as well as increase the sickness of the valley along each side.

In your letter, before referred to, you speak of my having practiced medicine in the Valley of the Whitewater. I have lived in near the valley now fifty years, have practiced medicine for more than twenty of it as a regular physician, and have paid more or less attention to it for over forty years. Besides this I spent some time at Colerain, on the Big Miami River, with some relatives we had living there during two sickly seasons. I have also been in almost every county in Indiana south of the Central Railroad, and along the principal streams, as early as the year 1816 and at different periods since. My visits were made mostly during late summer and early fall, and I made such observations and inquiries as time and circumstances would permit. From all that I have seen in this State, as well as in Ohio, Illinois, and Iowa, along the streams that lay the lowest, and run the most sluggish, and have the largest amount of stagnant pools, as well as large amounts of alluvial deposits exposed to a hot sun, alternating with foggy nights with gentle breezes, there is the most sickness to be found attributable to malaria; and this malaria seems to be generated from decaying vegetable matter. To favor its most rapid decomposition requires a high temperature with a moderate degree of moisture. This I have fully verified along the Whitewater River. I know of several places on our most elevated uplands where there are springs of water meandering from the fountain head, along a low piece of ground to meet some other stream, and during its course would spread out into a kind of marsh, for one or more rods in width on each side of a tortuous stream. In some seasons these rivulets would nearly go dry. Families living near one of these localities would fall sick and have all the symptoms of disease from malarious influences, and on examination of one of those localities the ground would be found made up mostly of vegetable matter.

Village Creek, in this county, a stream of some size, on the east side of the river, runs for several miles, in a slow sluggish manner, through a rich deposit of black mud made up principally of decomposing vegetation. This stream flows down to within about two miles of Whitewater River, when it commences running over a gravelly bottom, and for the last half mile it often becomes dry during the summer season; but, being on open cleared ground

and perfectly dry, it is not a malarious agent. The upper part predisposes to malarious diseases, which, in the early settlement of the country, subjected the inhabitants every season to much sickness, while the lower portion was comparatively healthy. But of late years it has become more healthy above, probably owing to much higher cultivation and drainage. The antipode of this stream is Lick Creek, on the *west* side of the river, *above* Connersville; the other is *below*. The mouths of these two streams are about five miles apart. While Village Creek is sickly *up* the stream, Lick Creek is sickly at its month, and for about one or two miles up, but, beyond that, it becomes more healthy. For some distance towards its mouth it passes through a rich alluvial soil, but further up it is a more rapid stream, with less stagnant water, and consequently more healthy. In all the places which I have visited where the stream is sluggish and the water low, and the thermometer ranging from seventy to ninety degrees, we see similar results, namely, malaria. This seems to be a gaseous substance, and capable of being condensed, and of uniting with more or less vapor, in a foggy atmosphere, and may be more or less condensed in a fine mist or in dew. These conditions of the atmosphere seem to rob the skin and surface of the body of heat, thus breaking up the equilibrium of healthy trains of motion, and becomes the proximate cause of disease, the remote cause being malaria, it having been introduced into the system by more or less exposure to its influence. As long as an equilibrium can be kept up a seemingly healthy condition is maintained, though there may be experienced a degree of languor or lassitude.

Currents of air play an important part in the transmission of malaria from the point where it is generated to another place. I make a clear distinction between a light and almost imperceptible breeze, and what is commonly called *wind*. This latter often diffuses and dissipates the poison, while a gentle breeze may waft it along, and accumulate it at some particular point. These gentle and almost imperceptible breezes are constantly in motion along our tortuous streams during the hot season, and it is surprising how easily they are produced, and their courses changed.

In Connersville, where I have resided for over thirty years, the land on which the town is principally located is comparatively level, though on the west side there is a considerable hill. On any still morning, when the barometer is thirty and three-tenth inches, you may observe that the smoke of the chimneys, when the fire is first built, will rise to a considerable distance; then curl off in some one direction, thus indicating the general direction of the air; yet, at

the same time, we find the smoke from several other chimneys curling off in an opposite direction, clearly indicating that there are *side* currents to the main one.

Again, in the town, at different places, the thermometer will indicate a difference of from one to three degrees, without any perceptible cause; thus we are taught that, in matters of this kind, great care and close observation is all important to a correct conclusion; and, the more subtile and refined is the matter to be investigated, the more caution should be used in the investigation in order to arrive at correct results, and none is of more importance than the investigation of cause and effect of diseased action. The cause, if once well understood, could, in the main, be avoided, and thus prevent a large amount of suffering. It is a fact well settled in my mind that, with a correct knowledge of hygiene and a due observance of its laws, medication would seldom become necessary; and, if made necessary by casualty occurring, the case would be more easily managed.

During the sickly season of which I spoke, on the Big Miami, in 1819-20, where my attention was first called to this subject, and where I took my first lessons in the causes of malarious diseases, I not only made myself acquainted with the river for some distance, but the bottom-lands, and the back of the bottoms also. There was no stagnant water; the stream, though low, ran smoothly over a gravelly bottom; the bottom-land was wide and dry. Then why this sickness? The river was lower than usual, so much so that portions of the bed of the stream and sandbars were laid bare and exposed to the action of a hot meridian sun, and the water in the stream itself was warmer than usual.

Sickness requiring my attendance at night, I soon observed that the river was covered with fog between twelve and two o'clock A. M. The fog soon commenced rising over the immediate river bank, and extended over the whole land, to the hill back of the bottom. The fog evidently was produced by the atmosphere immediately over the river becoming colder than the water in the stream; hence the vapor that arose was condensed into fog, and the malaria that was generated along the banks of the stream was condensed with the vapor, and became a part of the fog. The bottom-lands were in cultivation, and the ground dry, which cooled slowly, while the cooler air at the river pressed the fog toward the hill, and so continued until the whole was dissipated by the sun's rays the next day, or by the wind. Thus the inhabitants along the river, and thence to the hill back of it, were exposed for four hours every day to this fog and malaria. From that period, and

until a very short time since, I have closely observed all that could bear upon this subject. Fog plays an important part in developing malarious diseases. Currents of air are also agents. In the midst of an accumulation of alluvial matter, exposed to a hot meridian sun, the vapor arising may be, and is, often wafted to a considerable distance, settling on the brow of some hill, or some spring gushing out at the bottom, or midway up the hill, there to be condensed with the vapor arising from these, and thus forming a fog. Families residing in such localities are always more or less affected with disease from malaria, which continues until the cause is removed. For example, only a short distance below Connersville there were two springs that broke out of a high bluff bank, on a plateau near its brow. In early times a house was built near *one* of the springs, and a *stable* near the other. This place, which was at least seventy-five rods from the river, whose banks in that locality were smooth, was so sickly that the owner moved away from the place, though otherwise comfortably situated. He rented the farm, and it became my lot to be the physician of several families who resided there at different times. Regularly every year these families were sick, and after trying it for two or three years they would leave, and some one else would try it, but with no better result. About these springs, in August and September, the fog would settle, and often envelop the whole hill. Finally the location, as a residence, was abandoned, and a residence was built below, near the river bank, on the same tract of land, and another one above, and near the river, both of which were occupied by different families, and all escaping without sickness, which condition has continued for the last six or eight years.

To contrast this I give you a case on Garrison Creek where I settled in the early history of the country. The creek was densely lined on each side with sycamore timber, and the stream meandered along, and for years it never went dry. But as the country became cleared and free from trees in very dry seasons the creek would become dry, leaving pools of water along in places, consequently the stream became a fruitful source of malaria. The family residence is due north from the creek, though the main course of the creek is south-east, the house is situated on the brow of an elevation of about twenty feet on a perfectly dry bank, and a dry bottom to the bed of the creek, a distance of twenty rods or more. The shape of the surrounding hills is such that if the wind were south it would blow across the creek to the house, and a south-west wind would be followed by a similar result. Since the creek commenced going dry there has been occasional sickness at

the place, though occupied by two different families. The place on which my son Stephen now resides—one and a half miles west of Wabash Town, Indiana—presents similar results. At the time he first settled on the place he built a house on an elevation of about twenty feet, and about two hundred feet from a large spring, and a quarter of a mile from a mill-pond which overflowed some two or three acres of land, and which was fast filling up with deposits from a small stream, and the wash from lands in woods, that discharged its water with leaves, etc., into this pond. The pond lay a little west of a direct south course from his house. While he resided in that locality his family suffered from malarious diseases. He however ultimately removed his residence a quarter of a mile further off, and his family became comparatively free from disease induced from a malarious cause. In this case the wind or breeze was evidently the cause by which the malaria was carried from the pond to the house, thus inducing the disease at the first location. The second location was directly north of the pond, but a dense woods and hill of some highth intervened. Some four years since I wrote a thesis on Hygiene of some fifty pages, in which I embraced the subject of the location of a residence with a view to avoid the influence of bilious diseases. One of its directions was a dry location; and if near a stream producing malaria to place the house in such a locality as to be free from the poisonous influence.

Different localities will require different locations for residences. In many it will require close attention and a proper use of wind vanes; this will, however, only be a portion of the care necessary, as the clearing of a piece of woods even at considerable distance will change the current of air. Persons who have never paid attention to this subject would be surprised at the results in different localities. To locate a building so as to avoid a current of malaria, with or without fog, much care will be necessary.

Thus, in as brief a manner as my abilities will admit, I have given you the result of my observations on malarious diseases. I might have greatly enlarged on the various localities in Whitewater Valley, but it would have been little more than a repetition of what I have said.

The Whitewater River is a very crooked stream, running from a north north-east direction, thence west of south, and then turning southwardly, at last emptying into the Big Miami near the mouth of the latter stream. Between these bends in its course it is very serpentine; its upper portion is through a comparatively

level country, but as the stream descends the hills assume considerable height, except at points where side streams empty into the main river—and they are numerous. The low or bottom-land on these side streams continue up from one to two miles, with but few exceptions. These frequent bends and openings are constantly changing the local currents of air, though the general current is from south to north and south-west. From this source we have all our heaviest wind storms, and by far the largest portion of rain. A north-west wind is always cool, and as long as continued the weather is settled and clear. In a continued clear spell the wind rises with the sun and lulls with its setting.

Your truly,

PHILIP MASON.



## HINTS ON THE ART OF MAKING A LIVING.

---

It falls to the lot of but few men to become very wealthy, and comparatively fewer who become large property-holders. It requires a peculiar talent, united with strong physical powers and an iron constitution, with some favorable circumstances, and with a fixed will and determination to carry the matter through to its final results. For a time the object in view is the all-absorbing one, and no means are left unacted upon to accomplish the end. Men of less sagacity or energy would fail, and that often at the point where the end was nearly accomplished. In this country but two prominent pursuits present themselves by which a large fortune may be amassed—commerce and land. To engage in these pursuits successfully capital is necessary, as well as a thorough knowledge of the laws of trade and the details belonging to the business. By reference to the history of the successful men in the United States, most of them, if not all, commenced with very small means, or without any. Many in early life, perhaps in their boyhood, commenced in business as waiting-boys, or by performing the most humble part of the particular branch of business in which they choose to engage, but by their application and the prompt discharge of the duties assigned them they won the confidence of their employers, and were advanced, step by step, until they became proficient in all the details of that business. This knowledge was of vast importance to the individual in all his after life. If to this was added care in laying by, from time to time, the small earnings, until a sum sufficient had been accumulated to enable the individual to make an investment in some branch of trade, and if his past experience and knowledge were such as to enable him to judge correctly as to the best mode of investing his means, with a view to gain, he would, with almost certainty, realize a profit on the investment. In this manner he proceeds, making investment on investment, adding the profit each time to the capital. Thus in a few years he finds himself not only in possession of capital to carry on business on his own account, but well ac-

quainted with all the practical bearings of it, and with a knowledge of men and their adaptation to the various branches of business. Thus he learns to manage successfully a large business, much of which must be left to be done in detail by other men. A steady, straight-forward, continued course, through a series of years accumulates a large fortune. The wider the field in which to operate the larger will be the fortune acquired. It is all-important that, in addition to the qualifications above-mentioned, a man should be prompt, efficient, and punctilious in fulfilling all his engagements and in being strictly honest in all his transactions with his fellow-men. In addition to all this a man must be well versed in all that concerns his business, and apply his means so as to be able to determine from present conditions what will be the most probable result of any given operation, and at no time to hazard an investment in such a manner that if it should result in a failure it would materially cripple his future operations. This is an important consideration. A failure to an extent so as to cripple or break down a man's business not only lessens his ability to *do* business, but weakens the confidence of men in his capacity and ability for succeeding in commercial operations. This is of vast importance, as it is in this pursuit that the largest fortunes are sometimes made; but experience has shown, too, that frequently great numbers who have been thus engaged have failed, in many instances, through want of that capacity necessary for success in business.

*Land dealing* is on somewhat different principles. Small sums may be made by simply buying and selling, but large fortunes are only made by investments in cheap lands, where, from the surroundings, they must in time advance. Such has been the case in the West to a considerable extent and will continue for some time to come. Some of the largest fortunes have been made where it required from thirty to forty years for the investment to fully mature. To be successful in these operations the surplus means only of an individual must be vested, so that his regular business, by which he makes a living, be not interfered with. When a prospect presents of a greater rise in land in some place other than where he has invested, then he should sell on the first favorable opportunity, and invest again where surroundings are more promising. But great care and judgment must be exercised in these kind of trades or investments, for, after all, there are so many contingencies connected with this kind of business that many fail. A few have sometimes made large fortunes when they did not anticipate it. As this paper is designed mainly for individuals of small means, and operating in the humble walks of life among the great

mass of mankind, I will not spend any more time in detailing operations which fall to the lot of but few. I will proceed to point out the way by which a competency may be obtained, and thus place any prudent man above want, and secure the means for the support of himself and family.

First. It is a matter of the first importance that each and every child, from its infancy, should be carefully taught to reason and reflect. The weaker the intellect and physical powers the greater the necessity of a strict attention on the part of parents to adopt such a course as will develop the body and mind. In doing this it should be constantly kept before the young, the advantages to be derived from a knowledge of all that which concerns us. The importance of habits of industry, economy, and a close attention to the actual wants of life; and, not only this, but the absolute necessity of truthfulness in all things; or, in other words, to be honest to ourselves and to our fellow-men. This implies all the moral obligations; without these no man can be successful. Though he may succeed for a time, by fraud and deception, he ultimately loses the confidence of his fellow-men, and retributive justice reduces him to a degraded condition, and generally to penury and want. Therefore, let no one flatter himself that it matters not how he obtains, so that he gets into his possession, the things which he needs or desires. Man is so constituted by nature that he must get his living by toil, either physically or mentally; and he who fails to comply with this law must, in the end, pay the penalty, which is generally destitution and want. Hence, it is not only important that a man should labor and think, but that he should think correctly, and direct his labors to some useful purpose, by which the actual wants of both body and mind may be supplied. A child thus trained to mature years is fitted to begin the active duties of life; and however humble his beginning he will succeed. Industry and economy in the management of his affairs, intelligently directed, must and will succeed. What will it avail a man if he toils hard, and then spends his hard earnings in a carousal, or in drunken debauchery, by which his health is not only impaired, but, above all, his mind becomes degraded. To have a pure mind we must have a pure body. And it is of the first importance that the mind be kept pure to properly direct our actions; for *pure streams* can not flow from an impure *fountain*. Again, a man may toil and work hard, and then spend it for those things which please the fancy, indeed, but adds nothing to the substantial comfort of the individual. It matters but little in what the thing may consist if, when acquired, it can not be made to serve

some useful purpose. It is a useless expenditure of time, talent, and labor to acquire it. It may be asked what an individual is to do who has not had the benefit of early training, but has been brought up under unfavorable circumstances, and amid surroundings of idleness, profligacy, extravagance, and vicious habits. It is unfortunate that there are such conditions, and true that many individuals are thus surrounded, but nature is so constituted that this state of things can not long survive in a civilized locality. Such habits work their own destruction, and a better condition soon obtains. It is a fixed law that the major controls the minor. In all things the weak is overcome by the strong. The undeveloped mind is overcome by the informed, and the vicious by the virtuous. The transition may be slow, but the end is certain. The laws of nature are certain and irresistible, and ultimately develop a higher plane; thus one cycle succeeds another, and man is continually advancing step by step to a higher place of being. For an individual who finds himself surrounded by unfavorable circumstances, it is far better to change his location, and secure a more favorable condition, where he can devote all his energies to the acquisition of such knowledge as he can make useful in supplying his intellectual and physical wants. By this means he will soon emerge from a lower to a higher plane of existence. It may be urged that all these remarks about the training of the mind, and the proper development of the physical man, are not appropriate to the subject of "money-making," of which I am treating. In reply I will simply say that the proper development of the mind and body lays at the foundation of all improvement or advancement. It is true that we could have presupposed the mind developed in a general way to maturity. But this essay is designed for the young, the beginners in world's life, and also for the poor and less fortunate class. Hence I have thrown out the hints by which improvements are made, and the importance of being well versed in the means by which the mind is developed, by the study of proper works on this subject, such as Comb "On the Constitution of Man," and some of the various works on phrenology and physiology, much benefit may be derived. But to come to the subject directly under consideration. It is all important that every person should in early life be taught some trade or occupation by which to make a living; and, to do this successfully, the peculiar developments or frame of mind of each should be carefully studied. In the present state of civilized society pursuits in life are largely multiplied, as well as the great variety in the constitution of the mind, by which one is fitted for farming, another for mechanics,

another for the learned professions, and so on through the whole catalogue.

If a pursuit be selected to which the mind is naturally adapted, the individual will be more proficient in that pursuit than in any other, and not only so, but the mind is constantly deriving pleasure from it. There are many who are unstable, pursuing first one thing and then another, constantly changing. This must be corrected, for it falls to the lot of but few to be successful in more than one pursuit in life, as the time which is necessary to gain a knowledge of the details connected with any one pursuit is such, that life is too short to become proficient in several, and at the same time to lay by some spare means in health against misfortune, ill-health, or old age. These facts are sufficiently established by the history of Girard, Franklin, Astor, and such men. In short, we have only to look around us and inquire who has succeeded and who has failed and the causes which produced the results. We will always find that the successful one has stuck to one pursuit, and by application and a rigid system of economy in all that concerned him became rich; while the unsuccessful man, generally, changed his pursuits and place of residence, spending his hard earnings in the changes he makes, and thus keeps himself poor. Another important consideration is necessary to success. The income must be so managed, that it must be all the time exceeding the outlay. This often depends on a nice calculation, and nothing but a familiar knowledge of one's business will enable a man to determine as to the results, and hence the importance of following some one pursuit and of learning all its details. By this means he is constantly posted in advance and can make proper allowances for any mishap or contingencies; for these are to be encountered in all pursuits. If a man commences life as a day laborer, without means, he must toil on and save his hard earnings, only spending what is absolutely necessary to furnish him with plain substantial food and clothing, such as are adapted to the business in which he is engaged. He must so manage that there shall be no loss of time, for one day lost and he is minus in the pocket the price of his day's work, while the expense of board and the wear and tear of clothing are going on. Many decline doing a day's or week's work because they can not get the highest possible wages, and hence lose that which might have been earned. A man laboring for fifty cents a day and his board, for three hundred days in the year, the sum amounts to one hundred and fifty dollars, and is equal to the man who only works two hundred days at seventy-five cents per day, and if the man is idle the one hundred days and has his

board to pay during the idle time, the man with the small wages is the best off at the end of the year, at least the price of one hundred day's board; and, as a general rule, this is not all, 'the man who is idle is often spending money for idle amusements, and besides corrupting his morals is weakening his habit for industry and economy, which is to operate upon him in all his after life, rendering him unhappy for the lack of means to gratify his vitiated desires. The man at his daily toil finds amusement in that which he is engaged, sleeps well at night and has a fine appetite, robust constitution and is at ease with all mankind. The man who will labor for five years at one hundred and fifty dollars a year may lay by one hundred dollars a year, this with the simple interest on his savings will amount to five hundred and thirty dollars. Sickness or unavoidable accident may abridge the amount, but should such a misfortune overtake a man it should be a consolation that he has the spare dollar for such an emergency, that he may not be left to the cold charity of a heartless world. There is another consideration that should stimulate a man to this straight-forward, steady course. In the employ of some honest man, if misfortune does overtake him, his industrious habits, his integrity and moral worth will have so far ingratiated him in the favor of his employer as to secure him kindness and attention which he could not find among strangers or those not interested. All these are important considerations and tend largely to our interest and happiness.

When a man has laid by five or six hundred dollars he has the means for beginning business on his own account in a small way. If a farmer he has the means to buy a team, a few tools, and a small stock, and by renting land and by the labor of himself and team can, in a few years, by careful management, lay by so as to become a land-owner himself; by this time he has acquired an intimate knowledge of all the operations of farming, and if he starts on land of his own, he not only has the increased production, but the skill to turn everything to the best advantage, so as to increase his means. If a man is a mechanic and has laid by five hundred dollars he has the capital to start with on his own account, and by industry and close attention to his business, and promptitude in all his engagements, he soon enlarges his business, thereby increasing his profits. It was a wise saying of Dr. Franklin's, "keep your business and it will keep you."

It is important, too, to have as little as possible to do with men who are not reliable, but should it be really necessary to have any business relations with them let the whole matter be clearly and

distinctly understood, either in writing or in the presence of good and substantial witnesses. There are a few men who are responsible, or can be made so, who are not reliable, in whose word but little confidence can be placed. Dishonest men without means should be shunned as if they were paupers. Men with small means or income should look well to their outlay. To spend but five cents a day amounts in a year to the sum of \$18.25; if ten cents be expended it is \$36.50. Small sums, though trifling in themselves, but going out daily, soon amount to a considerable sum. It is these small expenditures that oftener impoverish a man with small means than large sums. When a call for a large sum is made it attracts attention and calculation as to the result of the expenditure, and unless there is a fair prospect of realizing some decided advantage from the outlay it will not be expended. Another important consideration is indebtedness; it should be a maxim and a rule to never be in debt for the every-day necessities of life. Daily wants can be easily ascertained and provision made to pay for them as they are wanted. It is shown above how small sums amount up, and to let small sums for daily use run on through the year they are generally treble the amount expected, and hence they are unprovided for, and often means contemplated for carrying on business have to be used to meet what was regarded as a trifling expense. If one pays daily expenses as he goes along it is often found that the means are lacking to indulge in extras, and then a plain meal can be made to suffice, while a patch upon the coat, or a darn in the stocking, will be tolerated and worn until ready means can be obtained to replenish the wardrobe, and no inconvenience has accrued, while another lesson in economy has been learned, and they saved from *future* inconvenience. It should be a maxim, and not only a maxim but a principle, to never be in debt for anything, unless it be for something out of which we, by the addition of labor, can add to the value of the article bought, and then sell at such a price as will fully remunerate for the labor and time consumed in the transaction. He who uses another man's capital is not only under obligations to the man, but has to pay for the use of the capital, if not by a regular rate of interest it is in an advanced price.

It will probably be asked what it will avail a man to use this rigid system of economy and toil through a long life, depriving himself of amusement, to accumulate a few thousand dollars, to leave and be spent by others when he is gone. The answer to this question is plain and obvious. I have been talking to men in the humble walks of life, with very limited means, and this system of

rigid economy is indispensably necessary to this class of men until they have accumulated sufficient to secure them a home and a business that will justify a more liberal expenditure. Though I have not wholly ruled every day in the year to labor, there being three hundred and sixty-five days in the year, fifty-two for Sundays and thirteen working days for amusements and casualties, besides the Sabbath for resting. A newspaper can be looked over and a periodical connected with his business. Forty or fifty pages of some good work can be read, and an hour be spent in hearing some good discourse. As means accumulate some good book should be purchased, and carefully read. In this enlightened age plenty of books, at moderate prices, can be had, which treat upon the subject connected with his pursuit, whether it be farming or some mechanical branch, or on horticulture. A purchase of one or two books a year will, in a few years, accumulate a library to not only interest himself but a family, if he has one, which it is much better that he should have. Hours upon hours are thrown away in frivolous amusement, that might be spent in acquiring useful information, which would place the possessor in the front rank with his fellow-men. I have been pained, time and again, to see so many in the town where I reside, spending their leisure hours and the long winter evenings in little groups, in some loafing-shop, to say nothing of the more demoralizing influences of grog-shops, those dens of drunkenness and hells of vice and ignorance, a cradle in which is rocked the individual who becomes a candidate for the poor-house or the penitentiary. Idleness and ignorance are the parents of all vices and immoralities.

Another important consideration for every man is, never to engage in any speculation, however small, where, if a loss be sustained it will injure a regular business. This is of great importance. When a home is secured and a regular business, and the income is above the annual expenses, a less rigid course may be observed in outlays; some of the conveniences of life, as well as the necessities, may be indulged in, and even small donations may be made for the advancement of the public good; but in no instance, nor under any circumstances, is a man justified in indulging in luxury, pride, and extravagance. These are the great evils of the day, and have done more to curse mankind than all else beside, save ignorance, which is the greatest of all.

Every man bears certain relations to other men, and it is all important to cultivate a friendly feeling with all men, which is easily done by treating every man courteously and with kindness. And here it is important to distinguish between kindness and familiarity



and intimacy. We should learn to treat all men kindly and with respect, and at the same time to make but few confidants, or let others know our plans and intended operations. We may, if necessary, talk freely upon all matters and the best mode of procedure, and advise in matters of general policy, and even in individual pursuits; but, at the same time, keep our own affairs within ourselves; for, if our designs, even in a business matter, be known, some wily and designing individual may forestall us and thwart our plans, and thus prevent us from accomplishing the object intended. If we are at a loss in our own affairs, and attempt to consult others, it may be that we consult a man whose interest will lead him to not advise, or else advise us wrong for our interests, while he at the same time accomplishes his own plans, which had been running in the same channel with ours. The management in our intercourse with our fellow-man requires much tact and skill to avoid too much familiarity on the one hand and coldness on the other. To be successful in any business a man must rely on himself and on his own judgment; hence the necessity, as before stated, of being well versed in the business or pursuit in which he is engaged. Without this he never can be successful. He may blunder along, get a poor living, but can never lay by against want. Thousands fail for the lack of the ability to judge for themselves, and the skill to put into successful operation any business. In carrying on any business much depends upon the proper selection of the means with which to operate, and the proper arrangement of all that is necessary to prosecute it in the most successful manner. This implies everything connected with the business. An important matter in the management of all business is to have "a place for everything and everything in its place," and that nothing be lost through carelessness or inattention to small matters. Tools and implements of all kinds should be well selected and properly cared for, and preserved from rust and exposure to the weather. Although good and substantial structures are at all times desirable, yet the lack of means may often make it necessary to resort to less expensive ones; and there is a mode of doing almost all things in a plain cheap way, with a degree of firmness and durability, which mode is often better than more costly or expensive ones. Another important matter is to systematize business, and to have everything come in regular rotation; to have regular hours to work, eat, rest, and sleep; and have such a control over one's business as to know long in advance when a particular job is to be accomplished and another to be begun. All pursuits are subject to, and mingled with, uncertainty, and due

allowance should be made for mishaps; and, if the thing turns more favorable than was expected, the time may be employed in doing something else. But few understand the mode of doing things in the most economical and expeditious manner. When a job of any kind is to be done a little time should be spent in seeing that everything is in readiness, so that there be no delay in going to work at once; and, if assistants are employed, no one has to wait for another, or to have a tool prepared with which to do a job, or to wait for material on which to operate. In farming operations it is frequently the case that things are left at loose ends. Long before spring opens plows, harrows, and all the tools for spring use should be carefully looked after; and, such as need repairing, to have it done and laid by for use. The farm fences should all be attended to in early spring, so that when the ground is ready for the plow nothing is to hinder the operation. During the winter wood should be prepared for summer use, milling enough done to last through the spring season, and then before harvest should again be attended to, and everything made ready for harvesting, so that there need be no hindrances during that period, or to hinder its early beginning.

The whole year's business should be arranged as early as January, though some things should be done in the fall, such as cutting firewood, and timber for rails, or any other use. It will last longer, is stouter, and more durable. The ash and hickory may be exceptions. They may be cut when the bark will peel, in June, and laid so as to at once dry or season. In selecting timber to last always select thrifty growing timber. It is far more durable and stronger if cut when the wood is fully matured in the fall, and if possible grown in open woods. Mechanics should use the same precautions. Always be in readiness to do a job; and, when time afford, have such work ready made as can be sold. In selecting material choose that which is good; as a general rule a full medium article. Be punctual in fulfilling all engagements. Nothing is more vexatious to a thorough-going man than to be disappointed by one whom he has employed to do his work. It often causes a loss of time, besides the vexation of going two or three times for an article. Next to bad work nothing injures a mechanic more in his business than to disappoint customers. Promptitude is the soul of business.

Never let a debt go unasked for longer than it is due, and if a man can not pay make a new debt of it, and, if necessary, have it secured, or at once convert it into a judgment and make the money. Old debts are poor things and unreliable. It is an im-

portant matter, in making a bargain, to have it and the details well understood, and, if for money or in any thing else, the time when it shall be paid, and where; and, if the contract is one of importance, put it in writing. This precaution saves after-difficulties or misunderstanding. In running or open accounts, make frequent settlements, or at least once a year, and close the book by "cash" if it can be done, if not by a note. This saves all after-difficulty, and secures friendship and thrift. Never lose sight of punctuality in filling all engagements and at the precise time agreed on. It is an old adage that "promptitude commands another man's purse." Promptitude in everything is the life of business.

I have barely glanced at commercial matters. Commerce between individuals, between villages, cities, or foreign governments is the great source or lever of civilization. It was commerce that broke down the Feudal system of England, and is fast breaking down the aristocracy of the whole world. It gives energy and activity to human intellect. This gives activity in all and every department of industry to which civilization is so largely indebted. It is activity of thought which gives energy to character, by which an humble individual is enabled to rise above the less energetic man of wealth. While the man of affluence is paying out his money for luxuries, the intellectual and active man is accumulating and hoarding up, and teaching by example that it is the man of thought and thrift, coupled with economy, that proves the business man, and not only so, but he carries with him influence also, which is like the mighty avalanche sweeping everything before it. It is this that makes the distinction among men and the difference between nations. Every move that such men make is an advance to a higher plane of being. It is the great democratic principle which will place mankind on a more equal footing. It is a laudable ambition in any man to aspire to a higher plane of action, but he should remember that it is talent, industry, a knowledge of the higher pursuits, coupled with economy, which are the stepping-stones by which he is to climb the rugged hill to wealth and fame. It is a kind of joint effort of all these faculties by which he is to succeed. It is the lack of this combination of character which causes so many to fail. Nothing is truer than the fact that a man must understand well the business he undertakes, and in most cases he must make a small beginning, and climb, step by step, the slippery path that leads to wealth and distinction. It should be remembered that the laws of trade are as inexorable and exacting as any other eternal law, and although an individual may

seem to succeed by blundering along in a hap-hazard course, sooner or later he will fail. A few seem to succeed by fraud, duplicity, insinuations, and double-dealing, but the end is ruin. Now and then an individual of this kind changes his course, and in the end comes out correct, but those instances are rare. A few men seem to have an intuitive knowledge of all that belong to the laws of trade and business, and succeed without an apparent effort, yet they are unable to give the rules by which they are governed in their business relations. These are rare cases also. There is no pursuit in life where it requires more prompt and decisive action than in trade; hence the importance of quick perceptions, which, with a thorough knowledge of the details of a business, so much assists in forming correct conclusions; consequently it proves the necessity of being well taught in the business in which a man is engaged, especially in a trading pursuit. To trade in goods, commonly called merchandizing, is a very confining business, requiring great promptitude in dealing with customers, and also close discrimination. In their absence the stock must be well looked to, and kept in a neat, orderly manner. The house in which the business is done must be kept in good order, everything convenient, so that the hand can be put on an article, in a moment, when wanted. Invoices should be carefully compared and entered on book; accounts carefully kept, and a close watch over them, and no business man should regard his day's work done until the business of the day is fully closed up, accounts entered and carefully posted, so as to be able to settle an account at a moment's notice. In the morning everything in the house should be arranged and ready for customers as soon as they enter. These may seem trifling matters, but many a man fails for lack of of this attention. Another important matter should claim the attention of all business men; that is to keep down expenses of all kinds, both in the management of business and family expenses. Hundreds fail for lack of attention to this matter. Even small sums, constantly going out of any business, soon amount to a large one, and if these small sums be in addition to large ones, for fine clothes, fine equipage, and luxuries, and useless amusements, they not only use up the profits but soon exhaust the capital and destroy the credit. These rules apply to large business as well as small. The only difference between a large and small business is that the former requires more skill and capital to carry it on. Hence if a man has small means he had better begin in a small way, rigidly save his profits, and enlarge his business until he has extended it to its utmost limits. If he acquires surplus means, invest in some permanent property

where it will be entirely secure, on which to fall back, if unforeseen disasters befall him. The only difference there is between merchandizing and other commercial pursuits, is in a knowledge of the business, so as to be a good judge of the articles dealt in and the wants of the community among whom he trades. An article in the hands of a merchant that is not wanted by his customers or the community is a dead loss on his hands, and it is very important that he should be a good judge of these things. It is the secret of success. It is a good rule in business that when one has purchased unsaleable articles, to get rid of them at the earliest day that he can, even if it be at a sacrifice. The longer they are on hand the less valuable they become, as they will deteriorate by handling. They are in the way. If sold at any price the proceeds of sale may be vested in something by which money can be made.

Although there are certain general laws which govern all pursuits, yet each and every business, and every pursuit in life, has its own peculiar phases and details which characterize it from all others; hence the importance of learning those details before commencing any pursuit. Nothing is more common than for a man to desire a change in his business. He seems to become tired of the details, and thinks he sees other business that seems to require less care. This is owing to the fact that he does not know the secret that lays behind the curtain. Man has by nature a greater love and faculty for one pursuit in life than another. This he should select and follow. As to making money, and the difference in pursuits by which money is made, there is not the difference imagined. The secret lies in a man's ability to manage a particular kind of business. Two men may engage in the same kind of business; one will fail, the other succeed, according to their talent or partiality for it. It is the same in all kinds of business, trades or occupations. The foregoing may be summed up in a few aphorisms or sayings:

1. Learn some trade, profession or business, and learn it well.
2. Follow the trade, profession or business for life.
3. Observe regularity in all your affairs.
4. Manage to have expenses *less* than the income.
5. Apply the surplus to useful objects, or loan on interest.
6. Remember that money loaned at six per cent. interest doubles every sixteen years, and at compound interest in twelve years.
7. Never be in debt, unless it be for something out of which money is to be made, and then in a limited way.
8. Observe strict punctuality in fulfilling all engagements.
9. Treat all men politely, and with kindness.

10. Be honest to yourself, and you will be so to all men.
11. Punctuality in all matters is indispensable to success.
12. The borrower is a slave to the lender.
13. The old adage, "early to bed, and early to rise," etc.
14. Watch the spigot as well as the bung, and save leaks.
15. A place for everything, and everything in its place.
16. Don't put off for to-morrow that which can be done to-day.

I am now in my seventieth year, and since my fifteenth year have acted for myself; have followed various pursuits, mixed with all classes of men, and have seen the world in nearly all its phases, and closely watched the ups and downs of life, and the foregoing are the conclusions of this long and varied experience.\* In concluding this paper it may not be amiss to say a few words on the present feeling now existing on the subject of dollar-making. It is a common remark that we live in the age of dollar-making, and it is an oft-repeated expression, "the almighty dollar." Money is the all-absorbing subject. It is spoken of in the light of derision, if not in immorality. There never was a period in the history of man when wealth was so generally sought after, or so generally diffused and applied to the advancement of the public good, as at the present time. The last thirty years have called into being, and brought about greater results, than any like period in the whole history of civilization, and there never was a time when there was so much mental activity. It enters into all that concerns man's moral, mental and physical condition. The almost universal establishment of common schools, where the children of the poor are taught in the same classes with the rich; the country dotted with buildings at great cost, where are taught the higher branches of education, and a large number of all grades of wealth pass the collegiate course. Churches rise in every neighborhood. Agricultural and horticultural societies, and lyceums have sprung up every-where. The various mechanical arts hitherto unknown have grown into importance. Reform associations, prison discipline associations, poor-houses, reform institutions for the reformation of young offenders, orphan asylums, insane asylums, asylums where the deaf and dumb are taught, and also the blind, and institutions where the idiotic are taught; and in one of the States there is an asylum for the inebriate, where he is cared for and

---

\* I am now (December 22, 1866), past my seventy-third year; have spent five months of 1865 and 1866 in traveling 2,500 miles each year; and, stopping in a great many places, have mixed much with a large class of men, and do not find any thing that I could alter for the better in this article.

cured; these institutions are all under the management of the best talent, and governed by well-informed and humane men; and within the past few years provisions have been made for the introduction of agricultural schools and experimental farms; law schools, medical colleges, and commercial colleges, and efforts are now being made for homes for the unfortunate widow who may be left homeless; and a home for the reformation of dissolute women, who have been regarded as outcasts of society. Let us ask ourselves the question, how have all these various institutions sprung into being, as if by magic? It is the developed mental activity directing the almighty dollar to a useful purpose, to relieve the wants and necessities of the less successful. It is the diffusion of thought and means among the masses of mankind that has brought about this mighty change, and is still operating, and will operate until man reaches a much higher plane than the one he now occupies.

The vast development in all the mechanic arts by which machinery is made to serve the purposes of labor in almost every department is still increasing and being more and more perfected, and will continue until the ultimate perfection is obtained. Nor is this all; chemistry is unfolding her laws, and the powers locked up in the arcana of nature are being made to subserve a useful purpose to man. Steam as a motive power is producing incalculable benefits. The imponderable substances are being made to subserve a useful purpose; the lighting of cities by gas, the power of electricity in coating metals and for other useful purposes, and which is also applicable to the treatment of many maladies of human nature. The vast and varied combinations in nature warrant the conclusion that, under a slightly increased mental activity, the laws of their combinations will be discovered and understood, and a vast field now unexplored will be made to minister to man's want. The human mind seems limitless in its ability for development. Though slow, yet step by step it advances, and unless chained by ignorance and superstition it is not probable that, with the wide diffusion of knowledge now among the masses of mankind, it can be so controlled as to materially check an onward march. The only fault that can be found with the spirit of money-making that now prevails is that much of what is made is applied in a way calculated to demoralize. Extravagant equipage, luxury, and debauchery; in drunkenness, gluttony, and carousals, all tend largely to weaken and degrade the mind and deteriorate the body. But as wisdom increases virtue will prevail and predominate over vice. When the minds

of the young are taught those great moral precepts, and shown their advantages over an erroneous course, they will learn to appreciate it, and following their own interest they will practice the correct course. The greatest lack of the age is that of the proper training of the youthful mind, by parents, in those truths which go so far toward making up the true sum of human happiness. The emotional feelings are left to predominate over the intellect too much. We should teach children to govern their actions by reason and common sense; but to have proper children we must have proper mothers with proper surroundings. (See article on Hygiene.)

The war that is now raging was caused on the one side by the slave-power, to retain in the hands of the few, power, wealth and luxury, at the expense of the many, while the North and West have been pursuing all the arts of civilization and that which goes to build up the masses of men in all that ennobles the human mind, the South, that is the wealthy and intelligent, have trained the minds of the people to a very different course, and through slavery the few have become wealthy and the masses poor; the rich learned, the poor ignorant and degraded. The climate, soil, and productions also contributed to this end. The introduction of machinery in the manufactories in England, France, Germany, and the Northern States, created an almost unlimited demand for their great staple, cotton; the business in the South became lucrative to not only the producers but to the factor and capitalist who bought, shipped and sold the cotton, bringing in return the luxuries so much demanded by the opulent. As the aristocracy of wealth increased with the few, the many were depressed in fortune and intelligence. The mind of the wealthy, above want, became arrogant and domineering. The slave was the menial and the nearer his mind could be kept to mere brute force the better. If a fraction was lost in skill, the less liable the masters were to insurrections from this class. The poor whites formed a kind of intermediate class, were flattered by the slave-owner as being white men, and this class of poor sought the poor lands and mountain ranges, where they soon became contented with a plain mode of living and scanty fare, and the exercise of a kind of native independence and the gratification of their animal wants, grew contented in what became regarded as native independence; they became to the slave-owner what Sancho Panza was to Don Quixote, ready to do their bidding. They lost all ambition for fame, place or station; their minds were only active in one direction and that the gratification of their immediate desires or wants,



hence they paid no attention to the arts or sciences. The slave-owner was contented with the luxuries his raw staple furnished him, hence the absence of all those contrivances that go to lessen human toil which so elevates and lessens the toil of the Northern and Western man. And it is no wonder that differences should grow up between a people so differently situated, whose every mode and thought of life differed. This antagonism was as natural as for the sun to rise.

However much we may deplore the loss of human life and human toil and suffering, the war must and will in the end largely benefit the human race. A war waged on the part of the slave-owner for wealth and power, and defended on the other side for freedom and civil rights, the shackles of the slave will be broken. The poor man of the South will be elevated, the slave-owner humbled, a new train of thought will be introduced, new relations will exist, and new modes of business which must and will revolutionize the whole South. The North and West will have preserved their free institutions, and on a higher plane of civilization will learn more fully that every man is a human being, and has like wants and aspirations for all that goes to adorn and dignity human nature.\*

---

\* This was penned in the fall of 1862, and I see nothing as yet to change my views.

# LECTURE ON TEMPERANCE:

DELIVERED BEFORE THE TEMPERANCE SOCIETY OF CONNERSVILLE, IND.,  
IN THE WINTER OF 1840.

---

*Ladies and Gentlemen of the Connerville Temperance Society and the audience generally:* Having been called upon by a Committee of the Society to deliver a public lecture on the physical effect of intemperance I shall this evening endeavor to comply with the request. The place which I now occupy\* reminds me of Moses, when the Lord spoke to him from the burning bush, and said: "Take off thy shoes, for the ground on which thou standest is holy ground."

The subject proposed to be treated is one naturally connected with the profession of which I am a member; yet it is so associated with morality and religion that one can not but be forcibly reminded of its importance, and be almost irresistibly led to treat it as one subject.

In the remarks I shall make I will endeavor to adhere closely to the physical effects of the immoderate use of ardent spirits, but shall not confine myself exclusively to that matter.

Intemperance, as defined by Webster, is excess in any kind of action or indulgence, excess in drinking, etc., etc.; and, by Walker, inordinate in appetite, excessive in meat and drink, passionate, ungovernable, without rule; and, by Grimshaw, immoderate in appetite, drunken, ungovernable, exceeding the just or convenient mean.

Temperance is the moderate indulgence of the appetites and passions. I am not informed as to the particular maxims adopted by the society, or the rules laid down for the government of its members; but, as I am not a member, and the society have made their request for this lecture in general terms, I have adopted my own plan for this discourse, and shall leave the result to the good

---

\* The pulpit of the Methodist Church.

sense of the community for approval. The subject at best is a difficult one to discuss before a popular audience; for much experience in pathological anatomy and physiology is necessary in determining the morbid structure induced from any cause, and to distinguish the effects from different causes. Again, the language used is necessarily, to a considerable extent, technical. To be understood by the audience is all important; therefore, I shall endeavor to speak so as to be understood rather than to appear learned. The effects produced by the intemperate use of ardent spirits are so various that I shall only treat of the more important, and those which are the most common, distinguishing the difference between habitual and occasional intemperance.

Continued intemperance produces effects materially different from occasional. Continued intemperance slowly produces permanent difficulties, whilst occasional intemperance may be more violent and sudden. In both instances much will depend upon the amount indulged in. The greater the quantity taken the more prompt will be the effect. Another circumstance of importance should be here noticed—the difference in the constitution of men. One man may drink a certain quantity of spirituous liquor in a given time without material injury; while another, of a different temperament, would be destroyed.

Climate also has the effect of modifying its influence. The people of some countries indulge freely in the use of wine and other intoxicating drinks without any apparent injury; while other nations seem greatly injured by their use. It is said that the Germans and French make daily use of wine, as a beverage, at their meals, and at other times, and yet they appear to suffer no ill effects from this practice. While those nations indulge in these potations without apparent harm, thousands in this country annually become victims to the soul-polluting influence of ardent spirits. We are not sufficiently acquainted with this part of the subject to say what kind of constitutions are the most readily affected by the intemperate use of spirituous potations, but it is the most probable conclusion that it is those who are the most predisposed to derangement of the liver; and in warm climates, where the predisposition to bilious diseases predominate, alcohol seems to be particularly pernicious, as will be shown farther on in this lecture.

As a matter of history, and as a work of reference, it is to be regretted that medical men have not paid more attention to the classification and arranging of the various effects upon the physical

economy of man, occasioned by the inordinate use of spirituous drinks. Such a work is greatly needed.

I look upon intemperance as a hydra-headed monster, of which intemperance in the use of ardent spirits is but one. The same or similar excuses may be made for the use of intoxicating liquor as there is in the excess of other indulgences, as when we plead fashion for improper or injudicious dress, or the appetite and pleasure derived from luxurious living, or excess in our passionate desires, which give such exquisite pleasure and gratification. The dram-drinker will plead its exhilarating effect, the relief from present grief, and the driving away of dull care, and, for the time being, is made happy: yet all argument favoring excess, in any form, is fallacious, as the result of temporary pleasure is followed by a corresponding depression, and must constantly be renewed, and finally ends in wretchedness, in the ratio of the departure from a proper course.

The manner in which this subject naturally divides itself, as presented to my mind, is into six following heads: Intemperance, in the use of alcoholic liquors or fluids containing alcoholic principles; in the use of narcotics, as opium and its preparations, and many other kindred drugs; tobacco, and its preparations; in the use of food, in the use of clothing, and in the indulgence of the passions.

Each of the foregoing heads are susceptible of subdivision, but my subject is the physical effect of intemperance in the use of ardent spirits, which I shall treat under the eight following heads:

First, Its tendency to degenerate the human species; Second, Its tendency to produce insanity; Third, Its tendency to produce delirium tremens or brain-fever of drunkards; Fourth, Apoplexy; Fifth, Epilepsy and spasms; Sixth, Affections of the liver and digestive organs; Seventh, In producing dropsy; Eighth, Its tendency to develop latent disease that might otherwise have remained dormant in the system for years or perhaps a life-time.

To do this subject justice would require a volume, and in the lecture this evening I can do but little more than point out some of the more prominent features, but should I be so successful as to gain your attention, and my time will permit, I will pursue the subject through a series of lectures.

As before remarked, I know of but few subjects upon which information is so much needed as that on the physical effects of intemperance, and one on which to obtain facts is more difficult. They are only to be gained by looking over a great number of books, written by men of unbiassed minds, who have had much

experience. I will here take the liberty to say that there is not a single proposition in natural philosophy that has been obtained but it has been by the experience of individuals whose minds were so constituted as to distinguish error from falsehood in the operations of the simple laws of nature. To arrive at truth even in this way in some cases requires a great amount of care, running through a long series, in which all the circumstances connected with it should be carefully observed and taken into account. In no instance is this kind of information of more importance than in the study of physiology, pathology, and in acquiring a knowledge of the substances used for the support of life in the best manner, and also in the cure of disease. A man may, by accident, hit upon a fact in philosophy, or in the cure of a complaint, but this is no more evidence of his knowledge in these matters than it was in the case of the artist who, by accident, effected that which he had failed to do by design, endeavoring for a long time to imitate the copious driveling of saliva from a dog's mouth, and being unsuccessful, at last became angry, and threw his dirty sponge at the mouth, and thus effected by accident that which he had failed to do by art.

All animals, except man, are provided with proper instincts by which they select their homes and procure their food; but are not endowed with reflective powers. These belong exclusively to man, and while the brute creation select their food and drink unerringly, man is left to exercise his reason and experience; thus exercising his reflective faculties, on which, to a great extent, his happiness depends, and by which he is rendered a superior being. I have already extended the exordium too far, for the time I have for the lecture, and must come at once to the subject proposed: The Physical Effect of Intemperance in the Use of Ardent Spirits. My first proposition is:

#### ITS TENDENCY TO DEGENERATE MANKIND.

And although I am well convinced in my own mind of its truth, yet I am not insensible of the difficulty in convincing others. The revolutions in some nations and the extinction of others are so mixed up, through a combination of causes, that to attribute their ruin to any one cause would seem false or untruthful; yet all intelligent individuals must admit that no great or important change or downfall in any people ever took place until they became luxurious in their living, and abandoned those things necessary for their preservation to revel in debauchery. The reverse holds equally true; that as long as a people continued industrious, lived plain,

attended only to the actual wants of nature, that people or nation maintained their rank and standing among the nations of the earth. That intemperance has the effect to weaken the physical powers, bringing on premature old age, stiffness of the limbs, tremors, and a host of diseases, is too obvious to require comment. Who is the man that has lived in our own little village that has not witnessed these effects? Have you not seen the habitual dram-drinker tottering along our streets, his hands trembling, his body supported by a cane, all his faculties impaired? The philanthropist exclaims, what a pity! Poor fellow, he is gone! In a few years after we have been called to attend him to his last home. Does this need comment to establish the fact that intemperance degenerates man? The number of cases are too numerous to admit of a doubt. But let us examine the matter a little further. The laws which govern animated nature are sufficiently known to teach the fact that a certain kind of culture and condition improve, while an opposite course serves to enfeeble and degenerate. Ask the horticulturist, the agriculturist, who are versed in their respective pursuits, and they will tell you readily the means to improve or how may become degenerated that which they cultivate. Ask the ornithologist his opinion as to the care necessary for the improvement of birds or fowls. Ask him further the result of improper treatment, and he will tell you that they degenerate. Ask the stock-raiser, and those who have the care of animals, as to the effect of different modes of treatment, and he will readily answer that great care is necessary to maintain a good variety, and that, by an opposite course, how rapidly they deteriorate. Recently a work, by Walker, has been issued from the British press, averring that the human species may be improved by the fixed laws of nature, which have been but recently discovered. And we see going the rounds of the public newspapers objections to the marriage of the Queen of England to her cousin Prince Albert, in consequence of an hereditary difficulty in the Royal family, namely the scrofula. Physiologists have spoken of the degeneracy of this family, in consequence of intermarrying. It is a principle now well established by physiologists, that the children partake of the infirmities of their parents, and that likeness tends to beget likeness, or as the plain quotation is: "Like begets like." And we read in Holy Writ that the children's teeth are set on edge, the parents having eaten sour grapes, and that the iniquities of the father should descend upon the children to the third and fourth generation.

From the foregoing facts is it not reasonable to conclude that

man is governed now by similar laws, and that he may be physically and mentally improved or degenerated by the abuse or misapplication of the proper means of sustaining a proper balance in his physical and moral being? And further on in this lecture I shall show that most of the vital organs of the system are not only injured but destroyed by this foul monster, alcohol. Another important fact in relation to this part of our subject is the history of the Indians of our own country. All historians agree that when we first found them they were a stout, hardy, robust people, capable of enduring fatigue and privations, and some possessed strong intellectual powers. But, oh, how fallen! The places that once were thronged with the red man of the forest only know him now by his history. A mere remnant are left, and they are mostly a low, degraded set of beings, and though the causes may be many which have contributed to their decline and ruin, yet no one thing has contributed more to their downfall than "strong drink" (as the Indian terms it), and all men with whom I have conversed who were well acquainted with this race of people, their habits and manners, give the same opinion. The Government of the United States is so well convinced of this fact that they have enacted laws prohibiting the sale of this maddening, brain-destroying fluid to this unfortunate people. If this be the effect on the red man, why do we not see more of its baneful effects on the white man? Why do we not go backward, instead of advancing in all the arts and sciences? It is because all do not drink at this corrupting fountain; there are many yet left who touch not the foul polluter, and others who touch it sparingly. And again let me say to the fair ones of the audience, and it is much to their credit, they pollute not their hands with this monster. To the American females we owe much. While their red sisters of the forest wallow with their drunken lords in all that disgusts in a drunken debauch, they stand aloof, uncontaminated, to check the tendency of their offspring to degenerate by inebriety, through the examples but too often set before them by their ungrateful fathers; but notwithstanding this, we have many cases who are living monuments of the effects of intemperance, degenerating the offspring of the inebriate. My medical friends have given me cases coming within their own knowledge, and I have myself seen several instances of it. In one family, of some ten or twelve children, three were greatly deficient in mind, and two others were physically weak. The effect in two was obviously occasioned by intemperance of the father. The cases are so plain as not to be mistaken. One of the two was a female, deficient mentally and phy-

sically. She became a mother, and her offspring inherited her physical and mental defects. Combe, in his excellent work on Mental Derangement (page 98) advances the same doctrines here contended for, and are well worth the reading. The whole work is deserving of much attention. I have already extended this part of my lecture too far for the time allotted to this discourse, and yet there remains so much that could be said that I hardly know how or when to stop. But I must pass on to my second proposition.

#### INSANITY.

This is a disease of the brain, by which its functions are impaired, reason is dethroned, and man becomes a demon, or sinks into idiocy, and the fountains of wisdom are dried up. A being in human form, moved, actuated only by a few impressions derived mostly through his external senses, moved like a mariner at sea without compass or rudder to steer his bark; far below the brute in the scale of being, his power to provide for the wants of his nature gone; all sense of moral obligation gone; lying down when weary or night overtakes him, existing only because his animal organization partially continues. What a picture is here drawn! Yet it is true to life. Whether the disease induced by drunkenness differs from the same malady when induced from other causes we are not able to say. Sufficient attention has not as yet been paid to this subject to determine the point.

Dr. Rush was among the first to call the attention of the medical profession to the true seat of insanity, and took much pains in tracing the causes that brought about that state or condition of the brain upon which the difficulty depended. He seems to make no distinction between those cases induced from intoxicating liquors, and those induced from other causes. This seems singular, for he caused inquiry to be made in the Pennsylvania Asylum as to the proportion of insane who had become so by intemperance in the use of ardent spirits, and found it to be one-third of the whole number. No distinction in the cases is made other than those which are common to the difficulty. In this disease we have a great variety of symptoms depending, in my opinion, upon the particular portions or organs of the brain affected. In the few cases which have fallen under my own observation, much difference was present. Some manifested great fear, and shunned every one, and could only be approached by force or surprise; but when you had gained their confidence they were quite manageable. Others manifested a desire to kill or destroy. Others seemed to have alternate fits of grief and mirthfulness.



Spurzheim and Combe have done much to enlighten the world by the works they have published upon this subject. Broussaius, who has adopted the doctrines of mental philosophy taught by Spurzheim, has, in his physiological work, pointed out some facts of importance on this subject, and whatever may have been or is yet the opinion of men in relation to the human mind, though embracing different views upon this subject, they have arrived at the same conclusion in relation to the seat of insanity.

Although Dr. Rush was unacquainted with the doctrines of phrenology, he taught, in this disease, some of the same doctrines contended for by Spurzheim and M. Esquirol, a Frenchman who stands high in the profession, and who, although not a believer in the science of phrenology, yet taught most of the phrenological opinions in relation to the diseases of the human mind.

To enter into detail, and show the manner and variety of conditions of the brain in this malady would require a volume. To such as desire a full description of this disease, I refer you to some or all of the works or authors I have mentioned, as well as others. I must, however, take this occasion to make a few remarks in relation to the condition of the brain of individuals who have died after a life of intemperance. Several cases have been given me, of which I shall speak while treating another part of this subject, which go to show that alcohol is actually taken up by the arteries and transmitted to the brain, and has been found in its cavities upon dissection after death.

Dr. Symmes who is now delivering a course of lectures in this place on phrenology, a gentleman by the way of much mind and well cultivated in scientific matters, and besides is one of the closest observers of things in natural philosophy with whom I ever conversed, this gentleman has had abundant opportunity, both in this country and in Europe, of making observations by dissection of the human brain, and he informs me that he has found that nearly all the brains of drunkards or habitual drinkers of ardent spirits are much harder than in the natural state. We know that by immersing a brain in alcohol it becomes harder, and may not this process of hardening, which must be going on in the life-time of the inebriate, be in consequence of the absorption of the alcohol in the system being conveyed to the brain, and there given off in the manner in which nitre is in the kidneys? It is a well-known fact that different substances when taken into the stomach have a tendency to produce their ultimate effect upon some one organ; some upon the alimentary canal, some upon the kidneys, some upon the skin, some upon the lungs, and may not

the use of alcoholic drinks determine upon the brain? Be this as it may, this hardening, whether induced by a slow process of inflammation or upon the direct effect of alcohol, impairs the functions of the brain in a similar manner that the functions of other organs are impaired. This hardening or solidifying of the brain is common, and the ultimate effect is a diminution of the biliary secretion. The brain being the organ through which the mind operates or is manifested, it is evident that any change of structure in this organ must produce a corresponding change in the manifestations of mind.

I am well aware of the ground I occupy, and the sensitiveness some individuals have in making the mind depend upon materiality. Immateriality is the subject for the divine;\* its connection with this material frame of ours is unknown to us. Divine revelation has not pointed out to us the manner of that connection; nor am I certain that it is important for us to know that fact. It is enough to believe that such is the case, and that the immaterial part will exist in eternity. Through the mind in its healthy state we find ample means to instruct us in all the duties we owe to ourselves, our fellow-men, and to God, and to learn that vice is punished and virtue is rewarded. Well might David exclaim, "What is man that thou art mindful of him, or the son of man that thou visitest him with crowns of honor and glory!"

Many of the operations of the human mind, together with my views of the manner in which insanity is produced by habitual dram-drinking, that I had intended to have pointed out, I must omit, as time will not permit; I will therefore pass to my third proposition.

#### THE BRAIN-FEVER OF DRUNKARDS.

This disease is closely allied to the last, but is produced in a different manner. It mostly occurs in persons who are hard drinkers and have suddenly left off a large portion of their accustomed stimulus. It is manifested by tremors of the body and muscles, and the loss of or inability to sleep. The patient imagines that he sees green bugs, snakes, frogs, and such like vermin around him. This difficulty not unfrequently terminates fatally. "The brain," says Dr. Symmes, "in this class of patients is most generally found soft, especially if the individual is only occasionally found taking a spree and that lasting for some days

---

\*Now, February, 1867, I hold very different opinions than when the text was written.

together." Dr. Armstrong, in his work on Typhus Fever, has a long article upon this subject, in which he states that he had at the time of writing that work attended forty-two cases, out of which he had but two opportunities for making dissection after death. In these cases he found congestion of the brain and liver. Dr. A. Sidney Doane, in his Notes to Dr. Good's Study of Medicine, on this disease, has the following language: "Delirium tremens is of frequent occurrence in the United States. A number of these cases have fallen to my lot to treat; they were manageable, but exhibited a sad picture of human nature." Next in my arrangement is,

#### APOPLEXY.

This difficulty, whether produced by intoxication or from any other cause, is attended with great danger to the life of the individual. When induced from drunkenness it is, I believe, always fatal, and seems to depend upon congestion of the brain, or effusion of serum in the ventricles. My friend, Dr. Brown, gave me the history of a case he witnessed in the hospital at Cincinnati. The patient was a man who had been a hard drinker at times, and had been frequently laboring under delirium tremens. The day before he died he was brought into the hospital beastly drunk. He died during the night, probably of apoplexy. On dissecting his brain serum was found in the ventricles, so strongly impregnated with alcohol as to be both tasted and smelt, and was inflammable. The brain in this case was softened.

Dr. Symmes, the gentleman before referred to, gave me a case which occurred but a few days ago, where the serum effused in the ventricles or cavities of the brain was inflammable, and there is no doubt of its containing alcohol as serum will not burn.

#### OF EPILEPSY AND SPASMS.

This is a disease differing from apoplexy in several particulars. In apoplexy the patient lies insensible without the consciousness of existence. In epilepsy he may be insensible, but he struggles. The voluntary muscles are violently moved; the fists become clenched, the face distorted, and the patient foams at the mouth. This lasts for a time, and then goes off, and again returns. In this way the paroxysms continue until death closes the scene, or health gradually returns. This difficulty is not of frequent occurrence among hard drinkers. I have seen cases of general spasms, unaccompanied with the derangement of the mind evidenced in epilepsy. When spasms are induced by the excessive use of ardent

spirits the difficulty seems to depend upon a broken balance in the action of the different functions, induced in the first place by overstimulation, and followed by indirect debility, as a cure is effected by a proper course of some kind of stimulus.

#### THE EFFECTS OF ALCOHOL UPON THE LIVER AND DIGESTIVE ORGANS.

Here we have a wide field, especially in this our own climate. I mean this place, and I may say the whole Mississippi Valley. The liver being rendered susceptible of disease by the action of the miasma, generated from our rich alluvial soils and marshes, it requires but little to excite it into diseased action, in the form of inflammation, of which there are several kinds. Inflammation, attended with tubercles, or a lumpy state of the liver; and another form of inflammation, by which the liver is hardened and increased in size, though sometimes it is rendered smaller. Another form is that which terminates in an abscess producing matter. The two former of these inflammatory actions are the ones most common to habitual dram-drinkers in this region of country. These cases are mostly followed by dropsy, which closes the scene with the inebriate. I have witnessed a number of cases which have had this termination.

Various affections of the stomach and bowels are induced by the constant use of liquors containing alcohol. One is a peculiar kind of inflammation, which is seated upon the mucous coating of these organs. The long continued application of stimuli to the stomach excites a permanent increased action of the minute ramifications of the arteries upon the inner coat, and also upon the nervous. A red tongue, thirst, the inability of the individual to take his liquor at last only in the form of grog (spirits much diluted) are the indications of this state of the stomach. This condition is followed by diarrhea, watery purging, fever, delirium, and death, unless the symptoms are promptly arrested by a well-regulated treatment. A number of these cases have fallen to my lot to treat, and some of them terminated fatally. The tendency which intemperance has in producing bilious fevers and dysentery is so well experienced by the learned Dr. Johnson, who has had much experience and extensive opportunities, both in Europe and the Indies, of making observations upon this subject, that I will read his own words. He was a man whose mind seemed well adapted for observation, and I know of no work on medicine that stands more deservedly high than his does upon the "stomach, bowels, and liver." His work on "Tropical Climates," out of which I am about to read,

deserves much praise. (The quotation was not copied into the lecture, and at present I have not the work at hand.—P. M.)

In the article I have just read we have a melancholy picture, and but too true; and, notwithstanding, we occasionally hear the inebriate say that he escapes fever by keeping above fever heat; yet, how often does the medical man find that, when the habitual dram-drinker is overtaken by disease, his case is nearly, if not wholly, a hopeless one. The living fabric, worn out by a continued over-stimulation of the whole system, but more particularly the more important organs; stomach, liver, kidneys, lungs, to say nothing of the brain and nerves, in which seems to reside the vital forces. Although I have done little more than glance at this frightful picture I must pass on to my next proposition.

#### DROPSY.

This is a disease in which all the cavities of the human body may be filled with a fluid given out by the arteries; or it may affect but a portion of them, as the cavities of the brain (called ventricles), the thorax, the abdomen, or the cellular tissues—the connection between the skin and the muscles. Where is the observing man who has not seen the drunkard with his red eyes running water, his countenance bloated, his abdomen distended, tottering along, his feet astride to avoid a fall, his arms akimbo, or else with some kind of a cane to support his bloated form from a splash in the mud, or to prevent a fall upon the pavement while wending his way to the grog-shop? Do you call this man dropsical? Yes, and induced by a debilitated and worn-out constitution; and that by the improper use of that liquid fire, alcohol. This termination in the case of drunkards, I think, is not quite so frequent in this country as that of the liver, which is the most fruitful of all for the employment of the sexton. Such is my experience, although affections of the liver are often the sequel of the disease. The last proposition of the subject of this monstrous evil is its

#### EXCITING LATENT DISEASE INTO ACTIVE BEING.

There are many individuals who have in their organization, as is often remarked, a tendency to some disease; some to lung disease, some to liver complaint, and others to disease of the brain and nervous system. Thus I might go on with a long catalogue. It is well known to medical men, as well as many others, that by strict care on the part of an individual thus predisposed, life, and even tolerable health may be preserved to old age. But on the

contrary, by irregular habits those latent tendencies may be suddenly developed, or they by a slow process may gradually grow into being and terminate life. This country is comparatively new, and has been settled by individuals, in the main, with good constitutions and fine physical developments; hence my experience has been limited. As shown in the foregoing remarks, alcohol stimulates every part of the system, the brain and nervous system in particular. It requires no stretch of the imagination to foresee the injury that must be done by the over-stimulation of organs naturally weak, and especially to the extreme termination of the arteries. Hence the blotched face, pimpled skin and sore hands we see in the dram-drinker. And what must be the effect on those delicate internal structures, on which are ramified almost imperceptible vessels, carrying blood to nourish and support those delicate and living tissues.

But I must come to a close; and in conclusion let me say that I have only pointed to the more prominent diseases induced by the use of alcohol, and in those I have only spoken of the more prominent symptoms. But if I have said sufficient to awaken in the minds of the audience the importance of this subject to the public good, and the well-being of individuals, I shall be content.

---

#### APPENDIX TO THE FOREGOING LECTURE.

It is now nearly twenty-three years since the foregoing lecture on intemperance was written and delivered. It was prepared in the hurry and care of business. I laid it by among my other essays, but on looking it over I find in it much which I think worth preserving, and have copied it from the original rough draft, retaining it in its original form. There are expressions which I would not now use, but the audience and the times urged its diction. I now hold that mind is only manifested through the brain, and lays back of that organization. I further hold that every cause produces its effect, and that man's intellectual or reasoning powers are given him to distinguish truth from error, and here lies the accountability.

Every individual pays the forfeiture of his own wrong doing. There is in the lecture a leaning to the popular superstitions on religious notions, which I would not now use. I now think and act upon the principle that if a man acts or says a thing it should be

done in a courteous yet decided manner, giving sufficient reasons for what he says or does. If a change is wrought it is complete; there is no compromise with error or wrong doing. The tree must be uprooted in order to destroy it. So in the use of alcoholic preparations, we must go to the root, and exterminate it by non-usage, or it will be constantly springing up, poisoning and embittering the happiness of society. The more I see of the monster-evil, the more I am satisfied of its baneful influence, not only in corrupting the morals of individuals and society but in the affairs of human life.

Some five or six years ago I purchased a work entitled "A Prize Essay on the Nature, Cause, Effects, and Cure of Intemperance," a work of five hundred and twelve pages, and ably written, by Ralph Barnes Grindroot, and edited by Charles A. Lee, A. M., M. D. It was written in the year 1838, for the British and Foreign Temperance Society. There were nearly twenty essays presented to the committee for inspection, and to this one was awarded the prize. This work is a condensation of history, and contains facts admirably calculated for the public, and from which important information may be derived, not only as it regards public morals but the well-being of individuals. It shows most conclusively the baneful influence of intemperance in all countries and in all ages of the world, of which we have any knowledge. It shows that excess in its use leads to excess in eating and debauchery in all the animal passions. His article on the means employed to remove intemperance in the various ages of the world (page 433) is replete with facts, which go to show conclusively that as long as a people or nation observed plain habits, abstaining from the use of intoxicating drinks they prospered, but soon became corrupted on the introduction and use of ardent spirits in any form. The fermented juice of the grape was in ancient times the most fruitful source of inebriation and all its attendant evils. The work does more than sustain the ground taken in the lecture, and enlarges the number of diseased action induced by alcohol.

In an appendix to the work, in the American edition, from page 465 to 472 will be found an essay, written by Dr. John Francis, of New York City, an able physician and a man of much and varied experience. He gives a brief detail of his experience with the diseases of hard drinkers, which goes far beyond my lecture in the enumeration of the ill-effects of its habitual use to an excess. His description in the destruction of the living tissues of the human system is truly appalling, yet he proves the existence of the facts

by actual demonstrations, through post-mortem examination, immediately after death.

It seems to me that sufficient has been said to show the evils of intemperance to individuals as well as to the well-being and the morals of a society; yet we have had, within the last twenty years, lectures upon lectures, and temperance societies without stint of number, and temperance tracts, so that the public mind has been aroused and fully awakened to this important subject, yet the evil exists among us to an alarming extent. In our own village we have the fashionable resort of "saloons," where the poison is quaffed, and coupled with eating; and no doubt exists in the minds of our people but that the concomitant vices are frequently indulged in. In addition to these we have a host of small shops where the business is almost exclusively limited to the sale of intoxicating liquors. Nor is our place an exception. Go where you will the evil is to be found, and is complained of. There is a cause for all this, and the evil will continue so long as the cause exists. The evil, or cause, must be hunted up and rooted out before the effect can cease; for cause and effect follow each other with unerring certainty. Legislation has done little or no good. The prohibition by enactments have wholly failed, and always will, because it does not strike at the root of the evil. The influence of churches has done but little good. Moral suasion effects nothing with the confirmed dram-drinker. It is a deep-rooted evil, and until the cause be fully arrested will continue. He who shall apprehend the cause and destroy the hydra-headed monster of intemperance will deserve much from his fellow-men. I have been so situated in life that unavoidably my mind has been forcibly called to this subject, and the more so within the last twenty years, and I have been led to examine the subject in all its bearings. Should the suggestions which I am about to make prove in any way useful or beneficial in arresting the monster-evil, the public will be benefited. I am too far advanced in life to see much, if any, improvement which may result on this subject.

Intemperance, in any form, is a moral disease, arising or growing out of a physical cause. To find the cause and eradicate or so modify it as to destroy, or so far lessen it as to prevent its pernicious effects, is the object in view. All must admit that cause and effect follow each other with unerring certainty, and although the cause may operate so feebly that for a long time the effect is hardly perceptible, yet the finale leaves unmistakable evidence of its existence. There is no one task more difficult than that of tracing back human results to their legitimate causes. Jurisprudence has



sought to not only be governed but seek out the cause that prompted an action. This is done in order to do justice. Indeed, all law that is not founded on this principle is arbitrary and unjust. The prompter to an action is the basis or pivot-point on which the whole depends. However disastrous a result may prove, the guilt or innocence depends upon the motive which induced the act.

Legislators have from time to time attempted to throw around the sale of intoxicating liquor every possible safeguard, to prevent an injurious effect resulting from its sale and use, and yet the evil effects of its use continue, and will continue, unless its manufacture and use be prohibited. Its use in the arts and sciences is urged for its manufacture; and, besides, it is argued with much force, and not without much reason, that no law is just or right that prohibits a man in the legitimate pursuit of his business. They further say, that alcohol and all articles containing it are proper, if properly used, and it is urged that he who uses it improperly should be punished. Laws have been passed, and are yet in force, with this view, but they fail to accomplish that which was intended. Who that has, for the past two or three years, taken the Cincinnati daily papers but has seen, nearly every day, a statement of offenders for drunkenness being before the police court for the violation of the temperance law? Such enactments as yet have availed but little. All means have failed to put down this evil. Shall we merely give up and abandon the evil; one that is at the foundation of four-fifths of all the crime that is committed, and one-third of all the insane that fill our poor-houses and asylums? No, not by any means. We must strike at the root of this evil, and pluck it out. What is the root of this evil that is sown so broadcast that heretofore it has bid defiance to all exterminators which have been used? It is appetite! The fascinating influence beguiles for a time, and then only to destroy. But, says the reader, our appetites are given to us by the God of heaven. We came into the world with them. Beware; charge not heaven with these morbid appetites or propensities. They are as unnatural as the appetite of the dirt-eaters of the South. But how are they to be arrested and cured? Precisely as you would arrest or control any morbid passion or emotion. Begin at the root and break up the foundation. It is a well-established fact in natural laws that like begets like; hence that peculiarity and distinct character which marks the distinction to be found in the different races of men and individuals. Compare the difference in modern civilization with that of Greece and even Rome; compare the Bacchanalian system of philosophy with the dogmas of the ancients, to say nothing of

the poetry and the songs of the Brahmins. Let us see the difference and mark the distinction. It will be found that it is the different mode of reasoning in modern civilization. We take nothing as evidence that will not stand the test of fair and full investigation. It is this kind of investigation by which we learn that habits, manners, customs, and even mind, dislikes and likes, exert an influence over man's organization, both mentally and physically. Clothing, food, and other surroundings have their influence; so much so that it is extremely difficult to bring up and educate a family materially different from its surroundings.

This is so obvious that it seems to me that it requires no proof to carry conviction to any mind. I laid down this principle in the lecture twenty-three years ago. A large and varied experience since has only confirmed me the more as to the fact that it is the mother that gives character to the offspring, both mentally and physically; the circumstances by which she is surrounded during her eniente state or pregnancy operating on her, and through her upon the offspring in utero. The Irishman loves his potatoes, the Dutchman his sour-cROUT and lager-beer, the Frenchman his wine and fancies. It is these habits and surroundings that influence character and appetite. No man need go beyond his family, if he has several children, to test the truth of this position. The more nervous and sensitive the mother is the more varied will be the offspring under varied circumstances. Look into your villages and cities, scarcely any two places where the people are alike unless commercial relations have blended them. Look at the North and South of our own country—the East and West—each possessing distinct characters and appetites. What but the surroundings marks the distinction? If this be granted (which it must be) by every thinking and reflecting individual, the question will arise as to how this is to be remedied. Just as you would all other things. By altering conditions or surroundings by reason and common sense. Put away all superfluities and unreasonableness. But, says the inquirer, this is the work of society; no one individual can work a reformation or any great change in a community. Grant the proposition; what then? Let the individual begin and teach his susceptible neighbor the lesson, and this neighbor the next, and so on.

In the present activity of the human mind we will soon build up the reformation. We have abundant examples. A Moses wrought a mighty change in teaching the existence of God and the adoration due Him, which is as far above Paganism as light is above darkness. Jesus of Nazareth wrought another great change, fully

evidenced, when He said to the woman, "Believe me, ye shall neither in this mountain nor at Jerusalem worship the Father; but the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship Him in spirit and in truth." When this religion became corrupted a Luther came forth and wrought another change. If we analyze these quotations we will find them stupendous and wrought into the strongest emotions of man's nature, his religion. If we but step into the realm of science we shall be equally startled; go no farther back than Gallileo, though in the last days of his eventful life his master mind, in the simple development of truth, changed the whole science of astronomy, and that, too, in direct opposition to the Church. Compare the philosophy of a Bacon with that of Plato, and see the wide difference in the mode or method of reasoning—the labors of a Sir Isaac Newton; and, down nearer to our own time or present day, we have a Dick, a Hugh Miller. These have wrought a great change in nearly all branches of science and religion; harmonizing religion by the most sublime ideas of which man is capable, with the attributes of God, as manifested in nature. With these facts before us let us be bold, and not only so, but persevering in our efforts to establish and maintain truthful principles. We should not stop at the beginning, but nurture the children and train them in the way they should go. This is not only an old proverb, but a truthful and wise one. Teach them, in conjunction with the morality of the thing, its physical bearing, that it is in morals, as in physics, causation governs. Man has intuitions; and, if left to guide and control our thoughts and actions, would, to a great extent, lead us into the paths of correct reasoning and action. It is dogmatism, a false notion of things, which lead into error, left to be controlled by men of influence who are grossly ignorant of first principles. Fashions and customs too often control without regard to truth or even utility.

The foundation of intemperance is often laid by the fond mother, after the birth of the child, by cordials, anodynes, and stimulants, to not only allay a slight colic, often induced by over-feeding, but that her darling offspring may be hushed while she indulges in some voluptuous novel, that she may live over again the days spent in early life. But often this does not stop here. The child must be left with the nurse while the mother attends a fashionable party. It is first dosed by the mother with some popular anodyne, then left with the nurse. The child becomes restless for the lack of its accustomed lacteal fluid derived from its natural source, the bosom of the mother. To keep it quiet it is again

dosed by the nurse. Mother at last returns, tired and wan; the bosom distended, the lacteal fountains polluted by the vitiated secretion, induced from overexertion and the use of wine or perhaps lemonades impregnated with brandy or some other stimulant. The child is now bountifully nursed, and soon is suffering from colic. The wearied mother, to hush the suffering darling and likewise to be able to obtain her own much needed rest, doses it again. Thus goes the round of the nursery. Then comes teething. The little sufferer is again and again dosed with some cordial, or perhaps some adodyne prescribed by the family physician *for some real need*, or it may have been done to please some *good paying* customer. But how fares the poor and ignorant part of community? The children of this class fare no better. Instead fashionable drugs and anodynes it is dosed with mean whisky in the form of panada, or it may be in the form of hot or cold toddy. Thus the ills of the child of the unfortunate poor and ignorant are treated, and the child is fortunate if the mother does not indulge in the daily round of stimulus to drive away the cares of drudgery and the contentions of squalid poverty. Thus often in infancy the brain and whole nervous system becomes poisoned and morbidly excited to a desire for artificial stimulus, which finally ends in drunkenness and ruin.

And here let me say to the medical profession that you make thousands upon thousands of drunkards. Take the unfortunate convalescent to whom you have recommended tonics and bitters, whose basis is alcohol, they continue to use them until their action has become interwoven with their very being, and they are rendered miserable if deprived of their accustomed stimulus.

There is not a sound physiologist of the present day but will tell you, dear reader, that a train of motions once established become a part and parcel of man's being, and will remain more or less fixed; and it is a fixed law of man's being that to produce and continue the pleasant effects of narcotics, anodynes, or stimulants, a gradually increased quantity is necessary. Thus life goes on until the functions of the system are worn out by over-stimulation. Nor is this all, the use of alcoholic stimulants begets a desire for rich and highly-seasoned food; thus adding more mischief; the powers of the stomach to digest fail, and unless timely arrested the patient sinks and dies. I have seen quite a number of cases in point. No thinking and reflecting physician but must admit the truth of this position.

I will not stop here. Tobacco in all its forms is pernicious and leads to excesses not only in its use, but it creates a demand for a

new excitant, which if indulged in leads to ruin. All unnatural excitants are more or less injurious, especially to the young. Man is so constituted by nature that he requires but plain and simple food, and pure water for his beverage. Tea and coffee are, without exception, stimulants, exciting to the nervous system in a greater or less degree, affording very little, if any, actual nourishment to the system. Of the two, coffee affords the most and continues its effect the longest. Stimulants, narcotics, and anodynes are all of them unnatural excitants. There are certain conditions of the system, induced from disease, when they may like other medicinal agents be used with beneficial results, but should never be continued long. A man in health can perform more labor on plain food and water than by the addition of stimulus, unless the period be very short.

There remains another view of this subject, and one of great importance to the well-being of individuals and community. I think I have sufficiently shown that drunkenness or habitual dram-drinking becomes a disease, though I have not shown in detail how this is brought about in the animal economy. To do so fully would require a volume. It is sufficient for my purpose here to say that it is through the brain and nervous system that the impression is first made. Its effects become imparted to every tissue of the body, as the results of post-mortem examination fully show, and a cure can only be effected by the timely withdrawal of the poison (I mean the stimulus employed) and the careful introduction of plain and nourishing food, such as can be taken by the patient and be the most easily digested and conveyed into the blood-vessels by the proper organs. Each particular case will require its own particular treatment. As in all other diseases, such as the organs affected and the extent of injury done, the general condition, as well as the local, must be looked after, and such means used as will restore the wasted and worn-out condition of the whole system. This course must be persevered in until firm health be restored, abstaining exclusively from any intoxicating drink or medicine; and this course must be persisted in for a long time after the cure seems complete; and ever afterward all stimulants should be wholly abandoned, as well as narcotics and anodynes. The brain and nervous system that has once become diseased by intoxication, and continued for any length of time, never entirely loses the susceptibility to the influence of stimulus, but continues (though not in an active state) in a similar manner that trains of motions become concatenated in the brain through playing on wind-instruments, and are seldom lost. Teach a child a

trade, or a particular business, and the trains of motions necessary to carry out the well-associated train connected with the thought can in after life be called up, and by a very little practice be again rendered perfect. It is on a similar principle that drunkenness is established and confirmed. Here is a wide field open for thought, to show how impressions are made on the brain, and their influence on organization, and how these may be transmitted to offspring. But I think I have said enough to prove the facts; if so, it is sufficient for my present purpose in this lecture.

When it was first announced by Dr. Rush and others that insanity was a diseased action, but few would investigate the matter, and it was a long time before even scientific men and statesmen could be brought to adopt their views; but a man now would be hooted at who held a different opinion. Millions of money have been expended for asylums for this class of unfortunates, where more than one-third of them are cured if timely removed to the asylum and properly cared for and treated. The idea that this class of individuals was beset by witches and devils has long since exploded, as all error will be when learned and tested by truth. Every civilized community needs asylums for the unfortunate class of drunken individuals, where they can be skillfully treated, and removed from any and all temptations to the use of intoxicating drinks, and where they can be kindly and humanely treated and cured.

Such an institution would greatly lessen the number of convicts in our State prisons, thin the poor-houses, and greatly relieve society from squalid poverty. Besides this, society would be rid of the annoyance and the demoralizing influence of intemperance. But few of man's passional feelings are stronger than the social, and from the law of sympathy, or rather affinity, men of like habits and opinions will congregate together. There is no class of individuals where this sympathy is stronger than in the tippler at the dram-shop. The odor of the cup is exhilarating to the inebriate. The first few glasses elevate the feelings, the party engage in glee, mirth and song enliven the scene, glass after glass has gone the round, until mirthfulness is succeeded by a row (if the party be of the low, vulgar class), bloody noses and broken furniture follow, while here and there one at last has been beguiled into the arms of Somnus, and lodged, like a brute, in some filthy corner to awake in shame, or only to renew his drunken orgies, and enact the scene over again. I shall never forget a case I saw when a youth. It occurred at the house where I was boarding. A man who had been drunk over night crawled out from his corner, came up to the

“bar,” tottering, and called for a glass of liquor, took it with a trembling hand, his stomach heaving at the smell of the liquor. Says he, “If this will only stick!” With much effort it was retained. The scene was so revolting that the impression has never been effaced from my mind. What a happy change society would make to exchange the tippling-shop for well-regulated asylums for the inebriate. Yet the people seldom think of such a thing.

Well-regulated lyceums in every village and school-house in the country, with a good library and weekly lectures upon useful subjects, would do much to put down this monster-evil. It would be a pleasant resort for both men and women, young and old. It would do much toward revolutionizing the whole current of thought. The age in which we live is an active one, mentally and physically. To direct this mind we require varied discourses on all that goes to make up a sound public sentiment on all subjects, true science so mingled with the great fundamental principles of religion as to please and interest all. The day of dogmatisms and the worship of idols is past, and abstract metaphysical questions suit but very few individuals. To further illustrate the subject I will call attention to the middle classes of society, who get their living by honest toil and thrift. They not only make a good, comfortable living, but lay by against want and old age. They pay no bills to the grog-shops, for luxuries, or for fancy amusements, have no lawsuits or quarrels with their fellow-men. As long as this class holds the power they are the balance-wheel or safety-valve of community. You will see families of this class going through several generations, now and then becoming wealthy, growing luxurious, and falling into fashionable vices; their children, brought up in idleness and luxury, become intemperate in drink, to keep up the excitement, and finally sink into degradation.

On the other hand, a few meet with misfortune, become poor, sink into degradation, and associate with the dram-drinker, to cheer them when thinking of their hard lot, and in the end die drunkards. Why this depravity? It is the lack of proper cultivation. Not a single faculty that has been given to man but was designed to serve a useful and noble purpose. It is the perversion of faculties that begets the wrong and leads to woe and misery. Then let moralists, religionists, statesmen, and all well-wishers of the human race, join in putting down this monster-evil of intemperance in the use of ardent spirits, and not only this but all other evils, by the practice of love and good-will to all our fellow-men, remembering the good Samaritan and Him who said: “Woman, go thy way and sin no more.”

Vindictive laws may control a few, but love controls the many. All natural and divine laws are predicated upon the love-basis. It is upon this that we must build our temperance reform; erect asylums for the poor unfortunate inebriate, create rational amusements for all, especially for the young; guard them in infancy against all false practices; surround maternity with all that is noble and good. Nothing contributes more to this end than a well-regulated domestic circle, where there is taught, around the hearth-stone, those great truths of sobriety and temperance in all things, and that the universe of *mind* and *matter* are governed by unchangeable laws, rewarding the obedient and punishing their violation. This, with well-conducted lyceums, with appropriate lectures and a library, with appropriate apparatus for the exemplification of the principles taught, together with such curiosities as geological collections, specimens in botany and natural history. The collection and arrangement of these different specimens would afford amusement and employment for the wealthy, and those who could afford the time and leisure. I now have in my possession, more particularly in connection with geology, specimens that were collected by my youngest son, when a small boy, and by him laid up until he had quite a fine cabinet of curiosities; but as he grew up he went from under my care to a city influence and fashionable society, and neglected these innocent pastimes and pleasures.

On the principle before explained, throw around the youth and the whole of society better influences. Let such an institution as above given be gotten up in every village and city. Take the poor and the outcast of society by the hand of kindness; go with them to your lyceum meetings, where their minds will become imbued with intelligence; and manifestations of kindness will be returned by the unfortunates, with love and regard, and they will be raised in the scale of human beings.

The foregoing is not a mere theory. It is founded on the law of man's organization, as before alluded to. Love and right action in all things is the pivot-point on which all human actions depend, and may be read every-where in nature. "Love worketh no ill to his neighbor," is an old axiom, but none the less true. Then act upon this principle in all things, and you will reap its benefits. They may be slow, but in the end they will be certain, if the course be persisted in. Perfection is nowhere to be found, nor is it essential to human happiness. Happiness is to be found in the effort to improve conditions. It is the key that unlocks the door to the arcana of nature, and the celestial realms of the blessed. Then let us progress a step to overcome the monster



intemperance. In this enlightened age what would be said of an individual who would say to an unfortunate person who was languishing on a bed of sickness—although the disease was a loathsome one—or laboring under insanity, “Arise, get out of my sight, you filthy being;” or, “You madman, begone!” Would not society pronounce such a man an unfeeling wretch? Then provide for the unfortunate drunkard a home, where he may be cured and restored to his family and society.

I submit the foregoing to the candid, reasoning, thinking part of community for investigation and criticism, which I hope will be done in a fair and logical manner. In conclusion, I will say that there is one bright spot in the prospect for an asylum. The State of New York for several years has been engaged in the erection of a fine building near Binghampton, in that State, which is to be dedicated on the first day of January, 1864, as an asylum for the unfortunate inebriate. I am not informed as to the manner or plan on which it is to be conducted. I saw in the New York Tribune, more than two years ago, that over seven hundred applicants, of all classes of society, had applied for admission, and that was long before the building was ready for the reception of patients. If this institution succeeds, as I have no doubt it will, the time is not far distant when these institutions will be in every State of the Union, and will prove a greater safeguard against this evil than all the other laws or means that have been employed.

December 24, 1863.

# AN ADDRESS ON AGRICULTURE:

DELIVERED JULY FOURTH, 1848 OR 1849.

N O . I .

---

*Fellow-citizens:* While thousands of individuals in these United States have met to-day to celebrate the Anniversary of the Declaration of American Rights and Independence, we have met for quite a different purpose, and while attending to it, I trust our hearts will not beat the less warmly or fervently with patriotism and devotion to our *country* and its *rights*. They are so intimately connected with the object of this meeting, that this sacred day to liberty is quite appropriate to our purpose, viz.: the business of organizing an Agricultural Association.

This is one of the most important subjects relating to our interests, and one which may be rendered most interesting and pleasing. To accomplish all that might be accomplished in this is a work of time, a work that we to-day can only begin, and hope the future may perfect. No branch of business or art ever sprung up in a day, or a fortune made in a week; all<sup>d</sup> require time. The art of printing, that most valuable of all arts, is yet undergoing improvements. The steam engine was a long time getting successfully into general use.

It invariably happens that the individuals inventing any great improvement seldom live to witness its full utility; though they may, and often do, fully appreciate the ultimate advantages that community will reap, yet it seldom falls to their lot as an inventor or benefactor of mankind to realize other than a moiety of its benefits. The inventor of the cotton gin gave a value to the cotton raising and use that is incalculable, the same with the inventor of the cotton jenny; the one picks or separates the cotton from the seed, and the other spins the material for the fabric that clothes half the civilized world.

Farming is a business mostly of another kind; quite different principles are involved. The one a law of mechanics and its application to the performance of hand labor; the other involves some

of the most hidden laws of nature, shrouded in mystery and requiring a long series of observations in order to become acquainted with its mode of operation, by which alone it is made available. It is like the study of the laws of gravitation, magnetism, electricity, and galvanism, we may learn their *modus operandi* and the application of its principles to useful purposes, but never arrive at what the thing itself is. So it is with the growth of vegetables; we may learn the method by which we may cause the seed to germinate, grow to perfection and reproduce the seed, yet we can never know in what the principle consists. So in the breeding of stock, we may learn their habits, the mode of growth and reproduction, but the entire philosophy of animal existence must forever remain a secret. This should not discourage us; we have already learned much which is useful; but, reasoning from analogy, there remains much yet to be learned. It is not half a century since the political economists of England wrote and published concerning the necessity of putting a stop to the increase of population, for fear that excess in their numbers would exhaust the means of subsistence. But at this time the dense population of Great Britain are as well provided with food and clothing as they were half a century ago; and may, for all that we can determine, be as well off half a century to come as they are now.

The improved modes of farming, with the same labor bestowed, has increased the products equal to the increased population, and most likely will continue so. The provident man provides in advance for his coming wants, let them be what they may; this is of vast importance to an agricultural community where their wants are so numerous, and so constantly accruing. First, the proper information is wanting; second, the means to carry on farming operations. These latter embrace all the implements, teams, and seed, necessary to each branch of farming, together with the stock necessary for a farm; each, in its turn, to be the most successful, should be of the best kind, and attended to carefully with the best possible means for culture and raising. To attain this object should be the great aim of every farmer; but to do this in the best manner requires a large amount of intelligence, more than is possessed by the majority of farming community I fear.

There is scarcely any branch of science but what may be made to be of great assistance to the farmer, whether it be botany, geology, agricultural chemistry, or animal physiology. Botany is useful that we may understand plants; geology, to understand the different soils, and their adaptation to the growth of particular plants; chemistry, the composition of soils, vegetables, and

manures, calculated to promote the growth of vegetables, for without this knowledge our operations in farming are mere random shots. Physiology gives us a knowledge of the laws of organic life in animals—a knowledge which is indispensable to the successful production and preservation of the health of animals. I know of no subject of more importance than a knowledge of physiology; the word means science of the functions of all the different parts of organized matter. When applied to vegetables it is called vegetable physiology; when to the lower animals comparative, and when to mankind human physiology. A knowledge of this branch of science gives a vast fund of information, it marks the distinction between living matter and inanimate substance. It teaches the condition necessary to health, and points out the means of avoiding many diseases, and the means of rendering life more comfortable, more energetic, and may be made the means of prolonging existence.

It is equally applicable in the cultivation of plants, in animals of the lower order, and man. Physiology should be taught in all our schools, and understood by every parent, as well as teachers and farmers. A most excellent work on this subject has been written in a plain style, suited to general readers, and published by Dr. Combe.

It is not to be expected that the great body of farmers will ever understand these sciences in the scientific manner of the schools, but they may be made sufficiently acquainted with the practical bearings, so as to answer all necessary purposes. A school-boy may soon be taught the different earths and stones, and ascertain nearly all of their constituent parts, and observation teaches the kind of soil adapted to particular purposes of farming. One great difficulty now is that this information is not sufficiently imparted, and often, too, the proper means are not taken to acquire the information. Another difficulty is there is no concert of action; no means of accumulating facts from which to draw conclusions. The whole secret is to be acquired only by a long and varied series of experiments by the united efforts of intelligent minds, and then so managed that minds less capable of investigation may get in possession of the facts. This accomplished, any tyro could produce a result. Almost any numskull can plow a field, and plant it in corn, when he is told the mode of plowing, the time of planting, and the kind of soil to plant in, and amount of cultivation requisite; yet, much labor and experience is necessary to learn even these simple things. I may perhaps be wearying your patience by this method of investigating this subject, but its importance has become so deeply impressed upon my mind, and the want of this kind of intelligence

has proved so disastrous to a large portion of our agricultural interests, that I can not refrain from enjoining upon the community the necessity of endeavoring to remedy these evils by education.

My associations have, for the most of my life, been with the farmer. I have seen his hard toil and waste of labor; his bad tools, bad fences, bad cultivation, bad seed, and bad time of seeding, all associated with great ignorance. All these things have passed so often in review before me that I have ceased to wonder why men are poor, and hard run to pay their honest debts and live. The objects then to be accomplished, in the institution of an agricultural association, is the acquisition of knowledge; to obtain which, in the diversified pursuits of a farming life, require associated action, directed by intelligence and liberality. Men associate together for banking purposes, for manufacturing purposes, and for commercial enterprises; for, by these associations, wealth is increased by superier intelligence and a union of capital. *Skill* in mechanical pursuits is capital of itself, and I have shown that the same holds good in farming. We want *skill*, and how shall we obtain it in the shortest way? It is by united effort.

Associations for the promotion of science, for State purposes, for religious purposes, for social purposes, and almost all other purposes, are established, while but few exist for the promotion of that which is not only the most ennobling, but the only one on which civilized man can depend for the actual wants of his nature, viz.: agricultural pursuits. Then I say to the farmers that this meeting to-day is one effort, one step toward the acquisition of knowledge; make another, organize, appoint your officers and committees of correspondence, and committees for inquiring into the different modes of farming in our own county, as well as from abroad. Get the facts and lay them before the society, and let all be benefited who join the association. This will give a new impulse to farming, and a dignity to the occupation of the farmer. Each and every lover of good farming will be ambitious to succeed and excel, the best method of doing everything will soon become an object and obtain among our farmers. It is a fact beyond contradiction that the more scientific knowledge a man has, if directed by experience and practical facts, the better will he succeed in anything; though another thing is equally certain, that practical experience alone is better than all fine-spun theories, *without practical* application. As to the best mode of organizing it is not for me to dictate, that which will secure the collection of practical results will best accomplish the object aimed at or

sought after. To effect this I do not presume that so much depends upon the mode of organization as upon the activity and energy of the individuals who may be appointed to carry out the objects of the association. The prompt and full attendance of our meetings, at which proper reports should be made and proper discussions had on all doubtful points; these, with the interchange of opinion and a spirit of inquiry, exciting a desire to excel, is what is absolutely necessary. I have a plan of my own, and though I shall give it I do not anticipate, certainly, its adoption. My great object in this address is to awaken public attention to the great importance of the farming interest. It is above all others, it is the noblest calling of man, and I must ask you to indulge me a little longer and permit some detail. Look at our own county of Fayette, and see for yourselves what the last twenty-five years have done toward increasing the happiness and improving the condition of man. Thousands of acres, of wild, uncultivated lands have been brought from a state of nature into beautiful cultivated fields. Comfortable houses have been built, with other accompanying conveniences. Where, but thirty years ago, roamed the savage and the ravenous wolf, now bleats the lamb, and many a smiling face is found, in the enjoyment of the many luxuries of life, procured by the skill and industry of enlightened man. On this very spot where we now stand, twenty-five years ago stood the native *forest*, in all its majesty, since which time there has sprung up a beautiful *town* in its stead. The spires of three churches ascend toward heaven; a seminary for learning, and this court-house in which we now hold our meeting, have all been built. We now exchange products with half of the civilized world. All realms are taxed to minister to our wants. An inland country has, by the hand of man, been made accessible by navigation. Who can think of this mighty change in our condition and not, at the same time, reflect upon the vast difference not only in the comforts and conveniences we enjoy, but also the vast amount of energy and intelligence that have been requisite to produce such a change. Most branches of science have been made subservient for this purpose, and thus have added to our stock of knowledge. But how has this change been brought about? Why, mostly by the sweat of the brow of the farmer; it is his toil that has furnished the means, and although there be mutual dependence between the farmer, mechanic, and the man of science, yet if the plow does not go, and the crop does not grow, all must stop. There are but two modes of obtaining wealth—one is from the productions of agriculture, and the other is derived from the labor bestowed in manufacturing the agricul-

tural products for useful purposes. The trading part of community, the business men as they are called, are but mere factors for the farmer and mechanic: they are necessary, and constitute the medium through which the farmer makes his exchanges. The professional men are mere drones in the hive; and if that degree of intelligence existed in the laboring part of community, connected with sound moral sentiments that might exist, there would be but little use for professional men at all. Due attention to diet, exercise, and a plain course of living, with the timely use of a few simple remedies, when absolutely necessary, would leave the physician but little to do. Honesty and uprightness of conduct would leave the lawyer to starve, along with a host of constables, justices, and their whole *posse*.

You ask, can this be so? I answer, most assuredly it is. The most of the ills to which flesh is heir grow out of ignorance and vice; and of all the pursuits in life none are so well calculated to invigorate the mind, expand the body, and develop man's moral nature, as that of agriculture, and the only reason that farmers can give for their being deficient in intelligence, and unable to compete with professional men, is owing mostly to indolence, the misapplication of time, and the unequal distribution of labor. Not a single branch of natural science, if practically understood, but could be made to subserve the farmer. Thus, rural life naturally awakens the softer and more pleasing emotions of the human mind, the farmer is freed from that strife and rivalry in business which exists in other pursuits. The constant changes that are going on in the various stages of the growth of the field and the raising of stock, afford abundant stimulants for the mind, and that of the milder and more satisfactory kind. The revengeful feelings and angry passions that are generated in business pursuits between man and man are not so frequently produced among farmers, and hence in all ages of the world the husbandman has been found pursuing peaceably his honest toil, while war and all its horrors are engendered from ambition in commerce or lust of power, through the hollow-hearted pretense of politicians to secure rights to the masses. It is hard to tell in this age of civilization whether our governments do the most good or harm; one thing is certain, the most plain and simple form of government is by far the best. When high taxes prevail for the support of war, or high-salaried officers, from which our own happy country is far from being free, the fault is in the farmer, for he, by his votes and acts, favors all the ills that grow out of bad governments. Have I not enumerated excitements enough to arouse your energies, and prompt you to in-

quire for the means by which the husbandman is to redeem himself from the burden imposed on his hard earnings? I hope so; and will now proceed to point out the steps to be taken on the part of the farmer to accomplish the great desideratum, viz.: the acquisition of knowledge; for this is power more potent than force; more valuable "than silver or fine gold." Knowledge properly applied begets all that man wants, and if in the possession of the husbandman he governs. The means which I shall propose as the best in the present condition of society for acquiring intelligence is, first, a good school-house in each and every neighborhood, in which a good teacher should be employed to teach the young. One well informed in all the simple branches of education with a knowledge of geology, chemistry, botany and agriculture. Send all the children in the neighborhood, at all times, when they can be spared from the domestic cares at home. Fit up a good book-case in each school-house, and fill it with well-selected books, and let the teacher be the librarian. In addition to this each farmer should take some one of the agricultural papers of the day, and keep regular files of the same; and in addition to this he should take an ably-edited, good, general newspaper. These papers, when taken, should be *read*. He should have a farm book, in which should be kept a register of his stock, and another for the different kinds of seed used; the time of sowing and planting the different kinds of grain, and the mode of culture; a general statement at the opening of the different seasons, and the general state of the weather. A stock account, or register, might be made of great use—say a page in the farm book for horses, one for neat cattle, one for sheep, and one for swine. In the single item of sheep, in this county, a large sum is annually lost for want of proper attention to the time in which lambs are foaled. The best season for this is the last of March or first of April. By this time the weather becomes warm, and the sheep may be permitted to roam in the fields. The care of sheep through the winter is much neglected. A shelter could be made at moderate expense that would preserve them, and at the same time save much feed. Hogs are one of the staple products of our farmers, but it would seem from the poor attention bestowed on them that they were of but little use. Instead of so managing as to have the young brought forth in April, or early May, as they should be, they are permitted to breed at all seasons, and are consequently of all ages and sizes. The time of altering the young ones is the early summer. The breeders, at the time of bringing forth their young, should be separated, and each kept to them-



selves until the pigs acquire strength. This accomplished, the dams and their young should be kept apart from the stock intended to be fattened, and can thus be better fed, and well cared for. By this system thousands of dollars could be annually saved in Fayette County alone. A register would contribute much toward facilitating these arrangements. By this plan none but the breeders would be wintered more than one winter. The stock, by proper feeding, would be of proper age to go into market, well grown and well fattened, and this accomplished at the least expense, which is a great desideratum in all farming operations. The different kinds of feeding should be registered, and its advantages and disadvantages noted. By these means in a few years each farmer will have acquired a fund of facts which may be made of great use in future operations on the farm.

Another important mode of acquiring information remains to be spoken of. It is through agricultural associations. There should be a State society, a county society, and a society in each school district. The county society should be formed by a number of delegates from the school district society; the State society should be composed of delegates from each county society. The State society should hold an agricultural fair every four years, and the county society a fair every two years. Such premiums as could be afforded should be awarded for the best specimens of stock and products, accompanied with the method adopted for producing said articles or stock.

The district societies should be composed of all the farmers and young men in the district. The meetings of the society should be held monthly during the summer, and weekly during the fall and winter months, the school-house serving as a place of meeting. At those meetings the comparing of the stock registers, and the mode of farming, the kinds of seed used, and the results, etc., should be considered of importance. This interchange, and comparing notes or statements, would increase the fund of intelligence; it would beget a spirit of emulation among the farmers; and, in this desire to excel, there would be developed new improvements and the best method of doing everything. When opportunity afforded, which would be often the case, the society could assume the form of a lyceum, and debates and questions of interest would spring up, and in this way mind would be brought into contact with mind. This would beget a spirit of inquiry, a habit of speaking, and would soon produce, in individuals, a confidence in their own powers and their ability to sustain themselves. New impressions would be formed, and each would learn to think and act for himself. Until

this confidence is acquired men will be slaves to other men's opinions, or else slaves to their own ignorance.

The schoolmaster should be competent to give lectures upon botany, chemistry, geology, and other branches of science. The library will be a fountain for the young from which to draw knowledge, and would also prove a guide, besides being pastime, for the older ones. In this arrangement you have an association which will be of benefit to all. The correspondence that would be kept up among the members of the different societies, and of the societies themselves by their secretaries, would give a new impulse. The farmer would soon learn his true interest; would "know his rights, and knowing dare maintain them." In this arrangement each husbandman would find himself operating with individuals equally interested with himself in promoting the best interests of mankind, as well as supplying himself with the wants of his nature. Prosperity must follow in the train. Tyranny and usurpation would cease for the want of material to operate upon. The little farm—the neat home—stocked with all that life needs, with leisure to cultivate the intellect, and with good society, the farmer would be contented and happy. We have sufficient proofs of the facts in the foregoing statements to convince us of the importance of a good organization with good government, directed by prudence and economy.

The Friends or Quakers are living witnesses of the success of similar principles to those contended for in the body of this address. These people have their semi-weekly, monthly, quarterly, and yearly meetings. It is at these meetings that their well-regulated government is arranged. It is the interchange of opinions at those meetings that makes them acquainted with everything that passes throughout the world. Their attention is devoted to good morals, thrift—the procuring of those things that supply the wants of our nature. A more orderly class of people, or one more in the possession of the comforts and conveniences of life, is not to be found on the face of the globe. Poverty is almost unknown among them. And why is this so? It is the result of sound morals and well-directed industry. These people, besides bearing their share in the expenses of a general government, support a government of their own; and, in doing so, they spend a part of two days in each week at church, and support their own poor. It is their thrift and the economy in all their affairs that enables these people to spend so much time, and yet live in full possession of all the comforts of life.

A large portion of mankind love excitement. It seems to be

indispensable to their existence. Hence those kind of men seek company and amusements, which, though innocently begun, often end in the corruption of morals, and in acquiring profligate habits of idleness and useless expenditure, resulting at last in poverty. The excitement in the societies and lyceums—proposed to be formed in this address—would be free from the too great monotony of the Quaker meeting. The excitement produced by the investigation of science, morals, and the business pertaining to farming, would not arouse the rough and vicious passions of man's nature, as in politics; but would, if properly directed, kindle into life the reasoning powers of our nature; and, at the same time, the softer feelings and emotions which contribute so much to our happiness. I say to the farming interest, arouse from your lethargy; put on the armor of strength and intelligence; buckle to your side determination and energy, and demand and preserve your rights in the field, in the councils of the nation, and in all things wherein your happiness lies. Be frugal, hospitable, charitable, kind, and generous, and spurn him who would tax your hard toil without giving in return a fair equivalent. Disclaim empty show, parade, and extravagance in every thing, for they are incompatible with your dignity as sensible men, and that simplicity of life which conduces the most to health and happiness.

# AN ADDRESS ON AGRICULTURE:

## NO. II.

---

*Fellow-citizens:* We have met for the purpose of advancing the interests of Agriculture. Before inquiring as to the best means for advancing this interest, it will be well for us to try and learn something of its present condition in this part of the country, and thus make ourselves acquainted with its requirements and necessities, after which a knowledge of the remedies to be applied for its benefit will then become comparatively plain and easy, for it is an undeniable truth that so long as we grope in the dark, as to the true interests of agriculture or its wants, we will not be able to apply those correctives which may be necessary.

Of all the employments which have engaged the attention of man the cultivation of mother earth contributes the most to his happiness. It not only furnishes him with all the means of supplying the real wants of his nature, but it affords that kind of exercise essentially necessary for his health and happiness. Yet there is scarcely any employment within the whole range of man's pursuits which is so little understood. While hundreds seek to be learned in what are termed the sciences, barely a thought is expended on the subject of agriculture; and even *that* thought is but too often given only to condemn the business, and to regard it as a task imposed, and one that would if possible be gladly avoided. As long as the subject is thus regarded, so long will it be only the dull round of a menial business, which but too often even the farmer himself is disposed to regard it.

But let us pause for a moment and inquire into cause and effect. Let us inquire into the principles which are involved in successful farming. They are numerous, so much so that they may be made to take in the whole range of the sciences. But, says one, what is the use of all this science? a man plants his corn, beans, and potatoes, etc., and raises a good crop, and at the same time he is quite an ignorant man as to your "book-learning," your botany, geology, chemistry, etc. But stop my friend a moment. Let us inquire how ignorant this man is who raises these good crops. Let us for a moment compare this man's knowledge with your school-

man, the real college-taught man, as you see him just from the halls of science and learning. The latter may run over the names in botany, chemistry, geology, etc., like a school-boy over his A B C's, but take him to the field and he could not tell timothy-grass from red-top, or young oats from young wheat, and so on. Now your ignorant but successful farmer, as you call him, can tell you at once those different products, and the kind of soil to which each is best adapted. He can tell you too the best season for planting, and the best method for keeping the weeds out of his fields. Now, I ask, which of these men is the better informed as to the useful purposes of these sciences? You must acknowledge at once that it is the practical man. The school-man after he has spent his first twenty years at school has then to learn the means to make a living, and consequently some four or five years more are necessary to learn how to apply successfully his knowledge to the useful purposes of life.

The great difficulty with agricultural men is this: they do not pay enough attention to the philosophy of things. They do not acquaint themselves sufficiently with the unchangeable laws of nature, and thereby learn the *modus operandi* of those laws. The law of reproduction of plants, if properly understood and applied by cultivation, could be made to contribute largely to the productiveness of the farm. A knowledge of the law of reproduction of animals might be made of vast importance to the farmer. It would enable him to breed the best stock, and even improve that breed. A knowledge of the laws of animal physiology is almost indispensable to the preservation of the health of the animals which the farmer domesticates. From the barn-door fowl to the noble horse, all are under fixed laws of propagation, growth and maturity, a knowledge of which would enable the farmer to keep his stock healthy and in a prosperous condition. Not a single tool that he uses but is more or less dependent for its utility upon its conformity with the several laws of hydraulics, pneumatics, acoustics, mechanics, and indeed the whole science of natural philosophy. A knowledge of these principles would greatly advance the business and interests of the farmer; system would be the result, order would prevail, a place for everything would be provided, and everything would be kept in its place. The stock would be of the best quality, all the seed, grain, etc., would be of the best kind, and planted or sowed in due season. All the tools and implements would be well selected and adapted to the uses for which they were intended. Thus a large amount of labor would be saved, and the largest amount of crop produced by the least

degree of toil. These improved facilities would afford time for considerable study and reflection.

Another great advantage arises from this systematic course of farming, and that is it expands the mind and develops the law of success through acting correctly; it instructs as to the means necessary to accomplish by art what mere brute force could not effect; for example, a plow from the badness of its construction may require an additional horse, and even then may not perform as good work as one would which was more skillfully made. Minds disciplined by these modes of thinking are continually led on to make new investigations; the thoughts of such are more pure and chaste, they reason from nature in all its simplicity and beauty, and thus create a world within themselves. But notwithstanding this independence of thought in some, the majority of mankind are so constituted that they will have society, and if it can not readily be obtained among the intelligent and correct they will seek it on a lower plane. There is another trait of human character which often leads men into error, and that is a tendency to follow some man as a leader, to adopt his habits and opinions, in short, to have some one to do all the thinking and directing, and thus the few give tone and laws to society while the masses are little else than slaves. Each and every man should learn to think, reason, and compare his own ideas with the standard of truth; by these means he will soon learn to think and act for himself. Yet, with all this, he can not be expected to know all things, but he will learn that he has a certain sphere to act in, and learn also to deal and exchange with his fellow-man certain commodities and opinions that each for himself has accomplished by much toil and fatigue. The more a community is advanced in the knowledge of these things the more it evidences a higher order of civilization. Society is always benefited by associations where mind is brought into contact with mind, and interest with interest. This develops the highest intellectual attainments that society is capable of, and in none is it of more importance than in agricultural pursuits. In no association that can be organized is there a greater unity of interest than in that of agriculture, and whatever step we take to-day is an advance in the pursuits of the most important interests to individuals and of civilization.\*

---

\* These last two addresses were delivered at two different meetings in attempting to organize an agricultural society in Fayette County. The organization was finally effected on the 18th of October, 1851. The society, however, was afterward changed into a stock company in 1861.

## AGRICULTURAL SCHOOLS.

---

CONNERSVILLE, IND., January 12, 1865.

GILBERT TRUSLER—Dear Sir: I have been somewhat slow in fulfilling my promise to write to you on the subject of the grant of lands by the United States for Agricultural Schools. No argument will be necessary to prove the importance of this munificent appropriation, or the propriety of our State Legislature in accepting the offer by the United States enactment; but, unexpectedly, I see quite a diversity of opinion in regard to the mode of using it, though there is less perhaps in this State than in some others. It is to be lamented that the different branches of education, which hitherto have swallowed up every morsel that could possibly be squeezed out of the public purse or that of private individuals, are now eager to clutch at this appropriation, and every argument and sophistry has been resorted to in order to avail the literary institutions of this important fund, wisely set apart for the special advancement of agriculture and the mechanic arts, which are the very basis of civilized society, and the source from which the springs of government are supported. It is contended that civil society is sustained by intelligence. It is readily granted that no form of government can exist *without* intelligence, but it is in the ratio of it, or in other words the more *limited* the intelligence the more despotic will be the government, and, on the contrary, the more extended and general it is among the masses, the more liberal it will be, and the more the natural rights of each individual will be secured. Now, what is the condition of our people? From the first settlement of the United States to the present time their condition has constantly been improved to suit their requirements, and to fit them for an enlarged civil liberty and the individual rights of man. Common schools have been fostered to a degree before unknown, and have arrived at such a point that in almost every county a fair English education can be obtained. The school fund of our State is a magnificent one, and our common schools are constantly improving. Many of our graded schools

are superior to our former academies, and these latter are now approximating to a former collegiate course. The State is being dotted with colleges, and such are the necessities for *practical* information that law, divinity, medical, and commercial schools or colleges have sprung into existence with great rapidity. Again we have a large number of benevolent institutions under the care and authority of the State, and in almost every county there is a farm, which is an asylum for the poor, under the supervision and care of the county authorities. We may well be proud of those institutions, but let us ask ourselves the question, from whence comes the support of all this? Is it not from the toil of the husbandman and the mechanic? Most assuredly it is.

The soil of a large portion of our State is becoming worn out and exhausted by tillage; many of our people are selling out and going West, to more virgin lands, although our State is comparatively sparsely settled. What is needed to induce our people to remain at home, amid the surroundings of early friendships and associations? It is the means to improve and better their condition, to enable them to make *two* spires of grass to grow where but *one* now comes. You may reasonably ask how can that be learned? Why, it can only be done in two ways: First, by experience, drawn from close observation; and secondly, from the experience of others who have gone before us.

What is education? It is the development of the human mind, by which we arrive at two important considerations. One is the enlargement of the understanding in a literary point of view, a religious and philosophical way by which the mind takes a broad and comprehensive view of God and the universe of matter, thus rendering it charming and pleasing from the contemplation; the other is in the practical application of the knowledge acquired. I have pointed out many of the modes now used to accomplish this object, but the poor, hard-working farmer and mechanic have, to a great extent, been "left out in the cold." Now, from the munificent fund appropriated by Congress, let our people build up an institution within our own State, where the young man who has gone through our graded schools can enter and learn the nature and growth of plants, the principles that enter into their composition, the nature of soils, the adaptation of grains to each particular kind of soil, the kind and depth of culture of each, along with the best and cheapest manures; the best tools and implements, and the difference in the products. For the various branches in mechanics we need the philosophy of the power and motion of machinery, and its applicability to the wants of mankind, and



also a more thorough knowledge of hydraulics. I am not for a magnificent establishment, but for a farm of sufficient size that, when properly cultivated, would afford the supplies for a boarding-house for the pupils, and should be sufficiently remote from the corrupting influences of a city, with appropriate buildings for lectures, a library, and also a residence for the pupils, where the domestic relations could to a great extent be kept up, and a snug farm house for the accommodation of the cultivators of the farm. For the beginning, a small library of carefully selected works on farming, horticulture, and the mechanics arts, etc., with a small amount of apparatus for the exemplification of such lectures as one or two professors could give in teaching the principles of farming and the mechanic arts. Some periodicals, such as the "Scientific American," and a few of our best agricultural periodicals. Let the institution grow as the wants of the country might require, and as it gained knowledge of its wants and the necessities of the country demanded. There should be an annual report of the institution, of its doings and the progress of agriculture within the State, and that should be widely circulated among the people. Our annual fairs are properly named, they are a holiday affair, they lack almost wholly the information that is needed, namely, a statement of the means used to produce the articles or commodities exhibited for premiums. To make these shows useful the means used to produce the articles should be given, preserved, and published, so that all could see the advantages of any particular mode of culture.

Thus, sir, you have my views, derived from a long life of close observation, through a wide range and much study. For the last ten years I have traveled much and mixed with the farming interest, and am now carrying on two or three farms, and that after having devoted years to the practice of medicine, mostly among a farming community, as well as mechanics, etc. The foundation of a Republic rests on the knowledge of this class.

This subject could be enlarged upon to a volume, You are at liberty to make such use of this as your good judgment may direct, though this was hastily gotten up. Yours,

PHILIP MASON.

P. S.—Our State College could be readily converted into the School of Agriculture. Would it not be a good change? I am inclined to this opinion. It is a healthy location and accessible by railroad, though nearer the center of the State would be better.

CONNERSVILLE, IND., February 5, 1865.

GILBERT TRUSLER—Dear Sir: I see by the newspapers that legislation progresses very slowly at the capital. I have not seen as yet any definite action taken to secure the grant of the United States for an agricultural school. I do not know that any thing I could write you would advance the interest connected with that important subject. As has always been the case, the farming and mechanical interest are measurably inactive. This I attribute mainly to the lack of energy and a proper training of the mind in business operations. They do not properly realize the great advantage of combined action to effect a purpose. There is no doubt but that a large majority of our farmers and mechanics, who are favorable to the enterprise, take it for granted that the thing will come as a matter of course. A few may be relying on words spoken to their representatives. All know, but few realize, how tardy the masses of men move, and but few appreciate or understand the labor involved in getting up any new enterprise and the arrangement of all the details.

I do not see that I can add much to my former letter on the subject of this enterprise other than as to the *plan* of the school. I advocated a moderate beginning, and an advance, as experience and the necessities of the country demanded. It is a fact, and must be admitted by all intelligent minds, that agriculture is in its infancy, and all experience teaches that mankind advance but slowly in acquiring knowledge of any kind. Trace man back to his primitive state or condition, we learn how extremely ignorant he was, and that he only learned as his wants or necessities urged him. From the herdsman's life he advanced to the cultivation of the soil, with the rudest possible instruments fashioned, and gotten up from necessity. He slowly improved as the mechanic arts advanced, and these only advanced as the actual wants urged. The mechanic could only improve slowly until the *science* of mechanics was understood and applied, and it is comparatively very recently that the application of the philosophy of mechanics and hydraulics has been brought to the aid of machinery. Tools and implements, suitable for carrying on any branch of mechanical labor, were indispensable to success, and even these were slow in being developed—first, the simple; then, the more complex, requiring a higher culture of the mind. Many of the implements, now regarded as indispensable to successful farming, have only come into use within the last quarter of a century. All brought about

by the skill of the mechanic. The farmer was necessarily limited in his operations for the lack of proper implements, and unless he could operate on virgin soil he was in danger of being disappointed in the result of his toil and labor. He was at a loss for the means of recuperating worn lands, because he lacked the knowledge of agricultural *chemistry*, as very little of that science was known until within the last half century.

Leibig has done more to enlighten mankind in this branch of science than all who have gone before him, and even now comparatively but little is as yet known of the different soils, or their adaptation to the culture of the different kinds of the farmers' products. Climatology is very imperfectly known; and in this country, as in all others, the crops of every kind are largely affected by the climate. The best mode of culture to suit the climate, soil, and the article to be produced, are questions of the first importance. In short, we may say that agriculture requires a knowledge of nearly all the branches of science in order to be successful. The law of production and reproduction, embracing the physiology of vegetable life, is all important; and this, as well as everything else, can only be studied and learned by close observation, through a series of years, aided by the experience of men who have gone before us, and who had made it their study. Thus, step by step, accumulate facts, until the subject is exhausted in every direction, but which will require yet a long time, much toil, and close observation. Of the knowledge for facilitating the germination of a seed, under the various circumstances and conditions which may surround it, and for advancing its aftergrowth, we are yet in infancy. The want of space will not permit my going into detail. A few generalities must suffice.

In my former letter I said I was not for a magnificent or an extended school. First the proper teachers could not be obtained, (we have not the men) we could not even select a good library, we must try to alter or change as circumstances would permit. We want a common center where facts can be collected, classified, and arranged, culling from the best; and from this common center to be again diffused among the best workers and closest observers. Take a young man from one of our graded schools, put him into the agricultural school to there learn, both by observation and study. His time should be properly divided into various branches of learning, and his attention given to the study of chemistry especially, as well as agriculture, mathematics, and history.

Agricultural works should be arranged into class-books, the different soils and their adaptations to particular growths; land-

drainage, the best method and materials used, each adapted to particular localities. Each cereal should be classed, its habits carefully studied, and the best means for supplying its requisites; and here a considerable length of detail could be given. There should, at least, one or more annual books emanate from the institution and be distributed freely over the State. In the mechanical department a great variety of useful studies could be adapted, so as to better fit a man for an active life; and, in course of time mineralogy should be added in connection with geology and botany.

Merchandising, law, medicine, and theology, have (a long way) the start, and can take care of themselves. The masses who contribute by their hard labor to the support of the government of a free people, must be brought up to a higher plane if we intend to sustain our free institutions and secure the equal right of all. "Knowledge is power," and the people not only want to know their rights, but to know the means of maintaining them by the force of intellect. Provide the means for a beginning, and lay the foundation, and the institution will build itself up. It may make blunders but it will right them. We are now only laying the foundation for an empire of mind and mental activity. Let the stream flow from a pure fountain and we shall have nothing to fear, we will have an empire of strength as well as of intellect. Much will depend upon the location of the institution. It should be in a rural district free from all contaminating influences. I see that Wayne County is offering a large bounty (of a hundred thousand dollars) to obtain the location for the school. It is worthy of consideration, and unless some other locality, as favorable offers, I see no good reason why *she* should not have the preference. It would certainly add to the fund, and is not an unfavorable location. I must close, as my sheet is full.

Yours,

PHILIP MASON.

## MASONIC ADDRESS:

DELIVERED AT THE DEDICATION OF A MASONIC HALL IN ANDERSON-VILLE, FRANKLIN COUNTY, INDIANA, SEPTEMBER 12, 1851.

---

*Ladies, Gentlemen, and Brethren of the Masonic Order:* We have assembled for the purpose of dedicating a building which has been erected by the Craft of this place for the institution of Ancient Craft Masonry. This implies a particular use, to set apart for a particular purpose; that purpose, as I understand, is to be the place of your future meetings, where all that appertains to the institution of the Fraternity is to be promoted. This I regard as a wholesome regulation; it fixes the bond of friendship more firm; it is the home for the Brotherhood.

Some years ago when it fell to my lot to preside in the councils of the craft in this State, the policy of erecting Masonic domicils for each Subordinate Lodge was among the most important of my recommendations; and it became a leading measure of the Grand Lodge until a short time ago, when that body engaged in the erection of a splendid edifice, engulfing or absorbing all the means that could be raised to decorate and adorn that building. Since then the Grand Lodge has ceased to afford that encouragement to her children in the erection of a home which had been her former care. What will be the effect of that change I shall not pretend to say, but will leave it to time and the management of those whose places require them to lead.

You, my brethren, have done a noble deed, one worthy of the cause in which you are engaged; and as you have set this day apart to dedicate the building which your skill and industry have erected to the memory and well-being of the Order, we will pause and inquire as to the object of thus dedicating a house to this purpose.

Custom, as has tritely been said, becomes second nature. It has been customary in all ages of the world to manifest in some way approbation or disapprobation of any important event, in a nation or in smaller associations; or in setting apart any particular

thing for a particular purpose, to make some public demonstration of the act and explain the object. Some form or ceremony was observed on the occasion by which it was not only understood and its purpose declared, but it was intended that it should be observed and kept in the minds of those interested, and made to serve as a beacon light to others.

The Book of Exodus is replete with those dedications—the setting apart particular things for particular uses; the institution of the Passover, which was to be continued in all future time, in commemoration of the preservation of the first-born of the Hebrew children during the bloody sacrifice of the first-born of the Egyptians—this ordinance was established by the Most High—the erection of the Tabernacle, the construction of the Ark, the setting apart of Aaron and his sons to the Priesthood, were all attended by solemn ceremonies and purifications, ordered by the commands of the Deity himself. To those who desire to know more of this matter let them turn to the Bible and read the Book of Exodus, where they will find much to interest him.

The dedication of the Temple of King Solomon was one of the most sublime things that the human mind could contemplate, of which we shall say something more in another part of our subject.

If we turn our attention to profane history we shall not be lacking in examples for setting apart particular things for particular purposes. The temples of Nineveh, as has been recently discovered, leaves not a doubt upon the mind of an intelligent individual but that these temples were dedicated or devoted to religious rites and for containing the record of the people, embracing the more important events in their history. The temples of Babylon served the same purpose, also those of Egypt, as well as their vast pyramids. The days of Greece and Rome furnish ample proof of the dedication of their most extended works of art, for the purpose of perpetuating their religion, morals, and arts.

Down to our own day, the practice of dedicating particular buildings for the worship of God is quite common, and we set apart particular days for particular objects, others for the purpose of commemorating particular and important events.

The Fourth of July, while we retain our national character, will be revered and celebrated, in memory of the day of the Declaration of Independence. But I will not weary you with long recitals of time-honored usages, of dedicating temples and houses for the worship of God, or the important events in a nation's history.

We live in a day and an age of inquiry. The mind of the pres-

ent generation is active and full of investigation; its course is onward and upward; it suffices but little to know that the example is an old one, sustained by usage. The desire is to the point, the why and wherefore, the advantages, mentally, morally, and physically, are the questions now asked by every intellectual student. They are not satisfied with mere form, usage, or the sayings of others. The question is the benefit to be derived by some of man's faculties or wants.

To the question of the utility of dedicating a man to the ministry, a house to the worship of God, or a building to Masonic usages, or for any benevolent purposes, must depend mainly upon the after use made of the thing set apart, though if the dedication be attended with appropriate service, and in a solemn and serious manner, directed by intelligence, the effect for the time must be beneficial.

Man is so much the creature of circumstances that he, in a greater or less degree, partakes of the feelings or circumstances around him; if they be good he is benefited, if bad he has lost.

I say solemnly and intelligently directed, as an individual or a body of individuals may be so bigoted or blinded by their absurd prejudices as to assume a solemn tone and manner, and yet not be enlightened or intellectually improved by any service. He may have a blind reverence, adore and worship the thing sought, and even have enthusiasm, but he falls far short of that lively intellectual serenity enjoyed by a well-cultivated mind. Intelligence, directed by well-trained moral sentiments, leads us in the highway of happiness, and enables us to contemplate truths as they exist in fact.

To have this occasion prove beneficial the ceremonies should be solemn and conducted with an earnestness of purpose directed by intelligence. The manner and matter of your speaker should be such as to make a strong and decided impression of the importance of a well-cultivated mind, associated with others for good. He should confine himself to important truths, and in a manner to reach the attention of the audience.

That the fruits of this day may be lasting you must practice when assembled in council in the edifice you this day consecrate, those moral and fraternal principles so strongly and forcibly inculcated in our Masonic lectures. This is not all. You must convince the world, by your daily walk and life, that there is a meaning, a truth, a lasting benefit in the Masonic ritual.

I speak not to you to-day as an eulogist of our time-honored institution. I want to speak to the understanding and use my feeble

efforts to direct to the paths of peace and love; to point to and urge the practice of those noble precepts which lead to those social relations that makes life desirable and society a blessing. The great positive mind, the eternal principle, is an embodiment of the universe, infinite in all things, controlling all things by eternal and unchangeable laws. This is evidenced by the operations of nature. Take matter, from its most rudimental state to its most perfect organization, it evidences design and the dominion of law. The stratification of the earth in uniform series, the crystallization of the various crystals, gives evidence of design, intention, and an end! Take matter in its more advanced state, the form of vegetable existence, from its first appearance in mass-form to the most perfect form of organization, there is the manifestation of principles, a design, regulated, governed, and contrasted by an unerring law, acting uniformly and producing like results, through a long series of manifestations. Take the more perfect organization, the animal form, from the zoophyte to the most perfect man, the same unchangeable law governs and influences throughout the whole of this most magnificent manifestation of the power, wisdom, goodness, and greatness of God, the great positive intelligence.

Man is so far created in the image of his God as to have a spiritual nature and a physical organization. His physical nature is an organization of matter, so arranged and controlled by the spirit-principle, as to be a living, moving, acting principle, manifesting the power of mind—intelligence thereby directing his actions toward accomplishing an end. The physical organization is the medium through which the mind or spirit-principle is manifested.

To think is but an emotion produced by an inherent quality of man's spirit-principle. The result depends on the will-faculty or the choice made in the emotions. If the good are obeyed the manifestations will be of that kind. By the proper application of the various results of the different phenomena around him he learns, in other words the law of destiny, the final result. The knowledge of the law of development in any department of science is all important. A knowledge of these laws which develop and mature the different species of vegetables is important to their successful culture. The law regulating or governing metallic substances is all important to a successful operation. So steady and uniform are these laws that where once understood results are uniform.

Man's moral government is unquestionably under similar controll-



ing laws. Not a single passion or emotion of man's mind but is essential to his happiness and well-being. It is the misapplication that produces antagonisms and discord in the individual man and in society. Pope, justly says, "The proper study of mankind is man." The application of these principles will be more fully treated in the close.

Thus, my brethren, if you desire this day's labor to be useful you must not stop, or rely alone upon the good produced to-day in consecrating this hall to charity, brotherly love, relief, and truth, but you must in all future time continue in the exercise of all those benevolent and kind actions and feelings. This great universe stops not. The great positive intelligence is ever active, and if we desire to approximate to it, or be happy and contribute to the happiness of others, we must be ever active and be found in obedience to all those laws that promote happiness.

It should be our constant care to acquire, by every possible means, that knowledge of men and things and their relations to the first Almighty cause, by which alone we can become acquainted our duty to God, to ourselves, and to our fellow-men.

One great error is committed. Instead of watching the operations of nature all around us, and studying the real wants of our existence, as well as the constitution of our mind, and its relation to the great positive mind, God, we indulge in our emotions to the gratification of our passions, and thus, by a morbid excess, injure and impair our faculties for that rational and solid enjoyment which we might otherwise have by conforming to those laws of our being that beget happiness. We have a beautiful illustration of the principles we have been discussing in the Jewish history, and particularly in that part which relates to the building of the Temple of Solomon, its dedication, and the after history.

Indulge me while I give a short detailed account of that which appertains to this subject, and I think that we shall then be forcibly reminded of the importance of obeying the law of man's destiny, the command of the Most High.

Turn with me to the First Book of Kings, commence at the fourth chapter and read to the ninth, and you will be strongly impressed with the order that prevailed throughout the whole time of the building of that vast and grand Temple of Solomon. From its commencement to its completion, the dedication and the depositing of the ark upon the oracle, under the wings of the cherubim, where the Divine Majesty manifested His presence, all was peace and harmony.

In the erection of this Temple there were employed upward of

one hundred and fifty-three thousand human beings. It was so arranged that some were employed in the forests of Lebanon; some in the quarries of the mountains; others in conveying the timber from Lebanon, in floats by sea to Joppa, and thence by land to Jerusalem; others in putting them up. If we believe the Bible or Josephus, the utmost harmony and order prevailed. The several bands of workmen had their overseers, and these, again, were subject to the grand overseers.

If we contemplate the beauty of the Temple, or the majesty of God in its dedication, we are struck with astonishment and admiration. While Solomon and the people obeyed the mandates of Heaven all was peace and happiness. But when Solomon left the paths of virtue, and the people walked in ungodliness, the scepter departed from them, and they wailed in bitterness.

Let us turn our attention to profane history, and examine into the causes that have led to the rise and fall of any people or government. The history of one is the history of all. Read that of ancient Egypt, Chaldea, Babylon, the Persian Empire in the time of Cyrus, Carthagenia, Greece, and Rome. Those governments commenced with an industrious and virtuous people. Economy and thrift marked their course; public and private rights were duly regarded. These principles brought prosperity and happiness.

The Jews were once slaves to the Egyptians, who in turn became degraded, while the descendants of Abraham became a great people, but through great tribulation. Guided by the wisdom of Solomon, these people became a rich, powerful and brilliant nation; but by disobedience they declined, and became degraded and slaves to the great Babylonian Government, which afterward was overturned by Cyrus. He liberated the Jews, who again returned to their own country, and by correct habits again became a great nation, and rebuilt the Temple in all its former glory. Again, by disobedience to the Divine laws, they were degraded, and became subject to the Roman Empire, which in time was overrun by the Gauls. Thus we might multiply examples, but sufficient has been said to show that obedience to law and order is indispensable to the well-being of any people.

Society and governments are made up of individuals. It is to individuals that we must look for all that is ennobling in society. To have correct individuals we must look to the family circle—around the family hearth for the inculcation of those sound maxims and moral principles that render larger associations intelligent and good. It is the proper disciplining of the mind to due re-

straints upon the passions; first in the family circle, and then in the smaller associations of individuals united for mutual improvement in all that is good, that we must look for all those great national blessings that make a great people.

Man was formed for society, and society he will have; if not among the good, he will seek it among the vicious, and in those debasing associations by which he is corrupted, debased, and becomes as the wandering Arab, without society, or any fixed purpose, other than that of supplying the immediate wants of nature.

Then let us cling to the domestic circle and the small associations of men, and nurture all that is good and ennobling in human nature; fraternizing, extending the hand of brotherly love and kindness to all who will yield obedience to the mandates of order and virtue. Such is the institution of Freemasonry. Peaceable in all its tendencies; fraternal in its sentiments; benevolent in its usages; charitable in its precepts and opinions. I am aware that some very good people hold a very different opinion, and among the ladies some strong prejudices exist against us; but, let us say to the fair ones, that if you sometimes have occasion to regret our late hours, console yourselves that your dear ones are not in the midnight revel or unmindful of your wants and cares; that in the society of which he is a member you have an interest as abiding as the institution itself. Doubt not, for these things are so. The institution is one where the burdened heart of the widow and the orphan may pour out their grief and not go away unconsoled.

It is but too common to applaud without merit, and to condemn on the most trivial testimony. That the Fraternity of Masons have been thus treated there is no doubt. Vice and virtue are sometimes blended, like light and darkness by the evening twilight, and to distinguish between them is sometimes difficult; yet the diligent will separate the good from the bad; will love the one and hate the other.

The institution in the United States has passed through a fiery ordeal; but the stormy passions of opposition have subsided. If opposition now exists it is with those who have not thought or taken the pains to investigate the claims and principles of the Order. In the State of New York, where more of the angry passions and violent defamation existed than elsewhere, and where books containing the most heated defamations were written and published with a zeal worthy of better cause, Freemasonry still survives, and is now in a flourishing condition. I have thought, during this fiery struggle and misplaced zeal, of our ancient brethren during their Babylonian captivity. Our brethren in New

York had their days of tribulation; but, like our ancient brethren, who, after their liberation by Cyrus, returned to Jerusalem and rebuilt the house of the Lord. Our New York brethren have clung to the institution, and are now prosperous and happy and in the full resumption of their labors.

It does not require the initiation into the several degrees of Masonry to convince an unprejudiced mind of its beneficial tendency. Read any of the text-books of the several degrees (they are open to all and easily obtained) and then read the Scriptures referred to. A man must be a bigot or an infidel if he does not admit that there is a meaning—a substance—in Masonry not to be wasted. Another objection is made—"It is not a religious or Christian institution." This objection may at once be answered. If to cultivate the doctrines of charity, benevolence, and to learn to be peaceable and prudent, to work diligently, and to worship God according to the dictates of our own consciences, be irreligious, then are we antichristian. For the truth of what I say I appeal to every Mason. Read our monitors and other printed works, and study well the precepts taught by them, and you will learn that every emblem of Masonry has its moral, designed to impress upon the mind wise and important truths.

Instruction by symbols is the most forcible of all methods of instruction, and better adapted for leaving a strong and lasting impression than by abstract reasoning. I hope that before the ceremonies of this occasion close you will have abundant reason to think justly of, compare, analyze, and appreciate our rites. These ceremonies are no new thing. They originated with our ancient brethren, and have been handed down from generation to generation. They are a part of the institution of Masonry.

The individuals composing our lodges may become corrupt, vicious, and like the ancient craft go astray. The Temple of Masonry may become dilapidated, a pile of ruins, stranded by its own ungodliness, yet its *principles* will ever survive.

Nations, kingdoms, and empires have decayed and become extinct; yet that which was good continues to live. Rome, with all her greatness! where is she? Extinct. Yet a Cato, Cicero, and Seneca, and many others, yet live to sing the song of her hallowed days. Greece! That once great people, with their Athens, teeming with science and learning! She too, gone to the tomb; yet live her Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, as well as many others, to tell the tales of her greatness and goodness. While we sing the funeral dirge of many other nations, a light shines from their tombs sufficient for all to read, who will, those pure and unalloyed prin-

ciples that led to their greatness as well as those debasing influences which led to ruin.

As sure as man has an immortal spirit, and that God exists, will the principles of Masonry survive. Though this world be wrecked on worlds, and become one chaotic mass, yet will live the principles of truth and virtue, the emblems of Masonry.

To conclude, permit me, my brethren, to address you in your Masonic character. Our institution is of long standing. It is time honored. It has been sustained by some as good men as the world can boast. It has been patronized by kings, princes, and republicans. It existed in the dark ages, and served as a beacon light. It has flourished in the days of prosperity of the world, and in days of adversity it has not been forsaken. Neither the ravages of time nor the devastations of war have been powerful enough to uproot it. It is still revered by savage as well as civilized man. These things go far to recommend it to the thinking mind.

My brethren, these facts before us leave us an important part to perform in life's drama and in civil society. In ancient times society was in a very different condition from what it is now, and the means of acquiring knowledge much more difficult. Society was formed on a different basis, and the few that acquired knowledge connected with bodily vigor were the individuals who acquired power and influence, and used that power to enrich themselves and to gratify their own ambition. The few intelligent and virtuous were without patrons or protectors. From this fact I have no doubt that our institution had its origin. In it the arts and sciences were cultivated in connection with the moral and social relations of men. I am warranted in this opinion by our ritual and the history of the Order, as handed down by our ancient constitutions.

From our monitors and text-books, as well as our unwritten lectures, we learn that the ancient craft were both operative and speculative. The operative included the physical sciences, those branches which the more immediately contributes to man's present wants; to these were added a symbolic science of morals, plain, simple, and easy to be understood. Thus they are adapted to the most common wants of man in his social relations, and are so far interwoven with religion as to teach the sublime idea of a self-existent, invisible, eternal Being, who governs the universe, who said: "Let there be light, and there was light."

We, my brethren, are constantly reminded in the lodge-room of that enlightening power by reference to that bright orb which arises in the East to illumine the earth with its effulgence, vivify-

ing and quickening into life the whole of animated nature and awakening the most lively sensations of the human mind.

The spring given to vegetative life, the morning song of the birds, the going forth of the beast of the field, awakened into activity by the orb of day, all crowd upon the human mind a thousand sensations, and call into action every emotion, awakening into being man's thinking and reasoning powers. It was natural, in the early history of man, that his mind should be called to those things that more immediately concerned him, and supplied his more immediate wants. These supplied, others came, and so on, until the whole field of nature was called into requisition to contribute or in some way minister to man's real or imaginary wants. Thus has man progressed, thus has one institution silently contributed her mite to the general good. Its moral emblems are constantly reminding us of our great duties as individuals, as members of society, and the whole human race. There is not an association on earth, or ever was, whose principles of universal benevolence and usefulness were more in accordance with man's wants and desires than ours; yet it is a lamentable fact that war and strife yet exist, and even the recipients of our rites are found without the pale of our ritual, the passions yet unsubdued and the kinder sympathies of our nature left to be overgrown with the rank weeds of strife and discord. I ask how long will this discord and deadly strife exist? It will be until the mass of mankind are brought into subjection to those moral laws so essential to man's well-being, and I trust that that day is dawning. The rapid strides now being made in science is diffusing intelligence, and carrying comforts and convenience into every hamlet and reaching the dark and benighted mind in every corner. To insure these blessings and comforts a moral force sufficient to secure their full and complete operation must accompany them. The pleasures that these improvements afford are sufficient in the main to secure moral obligation.

The general development of the human intellect has brought us to the investigation of the subtle matter of the universe and make it subserve man's purpose. This shows us the power of mind over matter. By observing the laws governing matter we learn to apply them so as to benefit man. The discovery of the explosive force of gunpowder led to an entire revolution in the art of war, and man learned to butcher his fellow-man in a more refined manner than was anciently practiced. To shun this deadly material when used in war by deadly engines, men contrived to evade its blow, and every power of the human mind was brought into requisition

to outgeneral and avoid an open combat and deadly fight. Civilized men will not now war for trivial things. It is found that it abridges happiness in a large number of ways; it stops commerce and that interchange of commodities that we now think so important to our happiness.

The discovery of the expansive force of steam and its application to man's wants is working a revolution unknown before. To this add the electric telegraph, and watch the changes that are going on and the revolutions in the destiny of man. He who watches these operations and does not see that the human mind is expanded and yet expanding (and its limits we know not) is but a poor observer. It was natural that the easier and more commonplace sciences should be first learned, and so on, and yet the field is but just entered upon. The study of vegetable chemistry, the law of reproduction, and the supplying of the materials that enter into the compound of the vegetable is of great importance. Upon this depends the whole human race, to a large extent, both for food and raiment.

Need I say more? Have I not said enough to prove that there are now developing laws, the effect of which will tend to unite mankind into one universal brotherhood? Interest, self-interest, one of the strongest passions of man's nature, is made to subserve this purpose, at the same time unfolding and developing man's moral and intellectual powers, thus harmonizing him with his fellow-man and the great positive mind of the universe. The intercourse between man and man which commercial relations beget, increases knowledge and awakens moral obligations, as without it the vast proportion of comforts and convenience now attendant upon this commerce would be greatly abridged if not destroyed. The more extended and diffused these commercial relations are, the more important becomes the regard for truth, correct action, and fraternal feeling.

Anciently, my brethren, our institution was in the lead, and continued so until the last few centuries. London, the great metropolis of England, was laid out by the Grand Architect of the Grand Lodge of England. During the revival of the arts and sciences in England, the Masonic Craft took a leading hand in the construction of all the public buildings, such as churches, colleges, the principal buildings of cities, and the laying out of towns and villages, and if they did not give the first impulse to the study of the arts, they played a conspicuous part in their development.

I now ask you the question, shall we rest upon our labors and

the ceremonies of the lodge-room, or shall we not rather awaken to the spirit of the age in which we live and devote a portion of our time to the acquisition of science? To this some will say, "We have not the time and the means; these things must be left to the schools of learning with which our country abounds." To this I say it will not do; our schools of learning may do for the few, but for the many they are not sufficient. Society at the present day needs every possible means for the diffusion of knowledge. Every lodge-room should contain a well-selected library in which should be found the best scientific journals of the day. During the fall and winter evenings the hall should be opened for scientific lectures, suited to the wants of the community. I know of no method better adapted for the improvement of individuals than well-selected subjects well delivered in the form of lectures. These, in conjunction with a lyceum, after a primary education in a common school, I believe to be the best mode of diffusing intelligence among the masses. We yet lack for this general diffusion of knowledge. The science of cultivating the earth is but little understood. It is a business in which every human being is interested, and yet there are but one or two agricultural schools in the United States, and these are dependent upon a few spirited and enterprising individuals. I have no doubt but that much of the hard toil of the present day could be saved by a proper knowledge of agricultural chemistry and mechanics.

But I am reminded that I am not delivering a lecture on agriculture, yet I desired to speak of this as among the important subjects of the day, and to call the attention of the Brotherhood to the importance of looking around us, and to see if the time has not come for a more efficient action by which we can benefit ourselves and mankind. Our numbers are considerable, and if we can but awaken a proper interest we may do much to help the tide of intellectual improvement that is now bursting upon the world. If we do not arouse to energy and action we must fall behind. This is the day of activity of both body and mind. The long and broad field of nature is before us, yet but partially explored. The engine propelled by steam stamps its energies upon man; all is bustle and activity along the track of the iron horse, spreading and diffusing innumerable comforts from the center of commerce to remote places. The lightning line, though almost silent in its operations, yet with a speed scarcely to be calculated, conveys intelligence, diffusing knowledge all around. The knowl-



edge diffused however must be first acquired, and requires time and activity.

My brethren, I weary your patience. I must close. In doing so permit me to say to you this: Let the house you this day consecrate be a point around which to rally in all coming time. Let brotherly love, relief, and truth prevail, so that the tear of the widow and orphan may be dried. Let intelligence and virtue abound, that those who come after you may be able to say, "Well done thou good and faithful servant." And when the sun that arose in the East to illumine your path shall set in the West to close the day, the Grand Overseer will be ready to pay the laborers their wages, the just reward of their toil.

## INSTALLATION LECTURE:

DELIVERED UPON THE OCCASION OF THE INSTALLATION OF NEWLY-ELECTED OFFICERS OF WARREN LODGE, NO. 15, AT CONNERSVILLE, INDIANA, JUNE 30, 1863.

---

*Ladies, Gentlemen, and Brethren of the Masonic Fraternity:* We have assembled this evening for the purpose of installing the newly-elected officers of Warren Lodge, No. 15, for the ensuing year. Ceremonies of any kind are only useful when they convey lessons of instruction. The time, circumstances and manner in which the lessons are given, have much to do with the nature of the impressions left upon the minds of the persons present.

Instruction, to be useful, should be clothed in appropriate language, and enunciated in a manner indicating its importance. In all ages of the world it has been a custom, on all occasions of public interest, and in the lesser associations of individuals, to adopt some ceremony commemorating any important act, in setting apart particular individuals for any particular department of State government, and to use some form or ceremony fitted for the occasion, in the dedication of churches and public buildings for public use. At one time it was a common custom to dedicate a new residence to the use of a private family, and many a joyful hour has been whiled away on those occasions. Let us stop for a moment and look into the interior of a new, snug residence, finished for the purpose of sheltering a family circle from the vicissitudes incident to the changing seasons, where the domestic circle is to be secured from the storms and inclement weather. Imagine, for a moment, a happy family assembled in their new home, surrounded by their orderly, yet merry neighbors, enjoying all the comforts of a new and comfortable fireside, or surrounding a well-furnished board. The pulse beats higher, and for a season there is a renewal of all those tender social relations which endear man to his fellow-man,

and promote the advance of a step in civilization. It is so in regard to the dedication of a church, or of a man to the ministry, and so also in the installation of an officer into the service of the State. When the appropriate ceremonies are well conducted, each leaves with the feeling of a renewed pledge to the maintenance of those correct principles, by which alone the true happiness of man can be attained.

The recurrence to first principles is often necessary to train the mind in those great moral sentiments and principles by which alone society can be made happy and great. With this view our time-honored institution has adopted the practice of annually setting apart certain individuals to be the managers of our association, and for the purpose of renewing the pledges of fidelity to the institution. We require certain pledges to the faithful discharge of the several duties to be performed, which service is rendered in the presence of those who constitute the association.

Here I might stop; but will it not be as well for us to inquire as to the importance we should attach to ceremonies, and their influence on the well-being of society, as well as upon each individual constituting the association? Every human being is isolated, individualized; yet he bears certain relations to all that is around him—to the vast universe of matter, to God, and to his fellow-men. This is so obvious a proposition that to me it seems to require no argument to sustain it; yet, if we go into the details of the obligations, or the relations in which we stand toward God, ourselves, our fellow-men, and to matter, we find that mankind widely differ in their conclusion. This difference is owing to our inability to judge correctly and determine with precision the laws that govern the relations we bear to our surroundings.

Man is brought into the world more helpless than any other living organization, his innate or intuitive faculties are less developed than in other living thing or being, yet he is endowed with an intellectual germ, which if properly cultivated, and trained to act in harmony with his instincts or intuition, he can acquire, to a great extent, a knowledge of all his relations and duties. If the foregoing be true, and I think it can be logically sustained, we perceive that man has a vast amount to learn, and not only so, but much depends upon the proper training of the youthful mind, for even *thought*, as well as instruction, becomes incorporated into his very being and becomes a part and parcel of the individual. Hence the importance of a correct method of training in all things, to never do or say a foolish thing, nor introduce into any association

ceremonies that have not a direct meaning or bearing toward some useful purpose. Although the institution of Freemasonry has been handed down from time immemorial, and has passed through all the grades of civilization to the present time, yet I challenge the world to gainsay ought against any of its leading principles and ceremonies; all have a useful meaning and application. It recommends and teaches the importance of all the arts and sciences, and they are embraced in all the several degrees of Symbolic Masonry. It teaches the moral obligations, the duty we owe to God, to ourselves, and to our fellow-men; and while it teaches these principles they are not rendered dogmatical, but in that broad and comprehensible manner in which all can agree. For the truth of this position I refer you to our text-books which are open to all. The explanations of our symbols are full of instruction of a useful kind. Freemasonry is a broad platform on which *all* can meet who love science and have a rational feeling of devotion for the Deity and observe a correct moral deportment. Upon the Masonic platform *all* can meet, viz.: the Jew, the Pagan, the Mahomedan, and the Christian, all except the Atheist.

There never was a period in the history of man when there was as much mental activity as now exists, and it is to be feared that this activity is leading us too far into the broad field of pleasure, and in the acquisition of wealth in order to gratify our passional desires, by which we lose sight of those relations we bear to one another. Each seems to be absorbed in the effort to obtain the means of gratifying his own selfish desires; hence he is isolating himself from those social ties, which are so essential in making up the sum total of human happiness. The question often occurs, "will it pay?" meaning dollars and cents. Wealth is desirable, but to be useful it must be made to contribute to the greatest sum total of the masses of mankind. In our race for dollars are we not losing sight of first principles and our true relations? Forms and ceremonies of every kind, though kept up, oftentimes become a mere farce, and even in the lodge-room I fear we sometimes lose sight of the great objects embraced in the Masonic Ritual. In the affairs of State we seem to have lost sight of those great principles of liberty and self-government on which our political institutions are founded; and I fear that in our moral and religious institutions we have yielded to a fashionable round, and are not keeping in view that great moral principle of "doing unto others as you would that they should do unto you." How far can we attribute this decline to the neglect of the enforcement of those first principles to

which I alluded in the commencement? I fear we have lost much and have fallen into a dull round, and have thus rendered principle a farce or myth. How far the present unhappy condition of our country will teach us humility, and the importance of recurring back to first principles, time alone can tell. If we fail, and lose those great principles of self-government, we will retrograde and lose for a time those ennobling ideas of self-government and civil liberty which have hitherto been our glory and our pride. Let us arouse from our lethargy, and let the ceremonies we shall observe or perform to-night sink deep into our minds and affections.

## MASONIC LECTURE:

DELIVERED BEFORE MAXWELL CHAPTER, NO. 18, AT CONNERSVILLE, INDIANA, JANUARY 26, 1866.

---

*Companions:* We have assembled this evening for a grave purpose, that of installing the officers lately elected for the ensuing year of Maxwell Chapter No. 18, of Royal Arch Masons, at Connorsville, Indiana. The services, as enjoined by the Grand Royal Arch Chapter of the State, which we are to use on this occasion, not only point out the duty of each officer but also of the *members* of the Chapter, in order to awaken in our minds those great moral truths, the observance of which is so essential to our happiness as individuals, as well as to promote the welfare of the association of which we are members, and also in teaching us the importance of the relations we bear toward all mankind. And although each and every individual that comes into the world is individualized, yet he bears certain relations to all his surroundings, and is endowed with intellect and with the power of reasoning, and of coming to conclusions, through which he may learn his whole duty to himself and his fellow-men. True happiness consists in living or acting in all things in accordance with truthful principles. Our greatest enemy is ignorance of what constitutes *truth*. The business of our whole lives should be to seek the truth and act in accordance with it; but yet after all our efforts we shall have learned comparatively but little. The law of progression seems to teach that our state of existence here is only preparatory to a future and more perfect one, to be realized in another sphere of being. This however may be beyond the immediate teachings of our beloved institution.

Let us inquire as to what are some of man's relations and wants. He is born into the world a helpless being, and for years is wholly dependent on other individuals for support and protection, and after having grown to matured years he seeks associations with his fellow-men. It is one of the elements of our nature, and can not be dispensed with. With this desire to associate with those around us, comes all the multifarious terms and relations by which the association shall be governed or regulated. First arises the

Patriarchial association, led by the eldest of the family. These multiply and become banded together or unite into clans, and finally, their numbers increasing, they separate into large associations, peopling a whole territory oftentimes. This condition, or state of society, awakens all the powers of man; the intellect is sharpened, and all that goes to enlarge the sphere of human principle, or action and happiness, is brought into requisition. As one principle is developed others are brought into action, and thus society goes on, constantly multiplying our wants and relations; and the questions by which the whole shall be governed are constantly arising and claiming our attention. Thus, as we ascend in the scale of events, our wants increase, and the means to supply them demands our attention; and thus one ceaseless round of advancement from the lower to the higher plane of being. Here the question naturally arises, where then is the necessity for the institution of Freemasonry? To answer this we must go back to the more primitive history or condition of man. In the primitive ages a few among the masses of mankind became comparatively intelligent. They too often used their increased intelligence however to advance their own selfish purposes; and instead of endeavoring to enlighten those less fortunate than themselves, they sought to keep them in ignorance. The lazy and indolent portion of the community soon began to rely upon the more active, and thus became mere drones in the human hive, to be ruled and governed by the few, and consequently lost their independence and that manly character which ever characterizes a high-toned, intellectual people. They soon became jealous of all improvements, and sought by all the means in their power to arrest those new schemes which they regarded as innovations upon their rights or cherished opinions, being too bigoted or too indolent to examine into the *truth* of the new opinions for themselves, or to test their utility. In this way society has been constantly struggling, ignorance with intelligence, the designing few alone generally profiting by the alteration.

Our institution had its origin during the earlier stages of society, when ignorance and superstition largely predominated. It was made up of artisans and the better-informed individuals. For the truth of this examine the work of the learned Dr. Oliver. The association was composed principally of operative and practical men, and so continued until comparatively a very recent period. Since its assumption of the speculative form it is patronized by the benevolent, the mechanic, the philosopher, and the moralist. The unfolding of the institution by the several degrees, from the com-

mencement and through the whole, shows that there is a wise arrangement by which all the moral and social relations are taught in the most forcible manner, yet by a simple method. Through it is urged the culture of all arts and sciences. The whole system teaches industry, and the proper application of our time to useful purposes, by which to secure an honest living; and, if any one is, or should be, unfortunate, to extend the hand of charity towards him. The institution teaches us to support *no drones* in the hive; for, as we are created *intelligent* beings, so also should we be *industrious* ones. The question may here be asked, if these are the general principles of the institution, why then the necessity of all this form and ceremony of installation, with all its solemnity? It may be further urged that the too frequent recurrence, or repetition of solemn and grave matters, becomes too familiar and loses its force. I think that if we would put more stress upon the importance of strictly observing the precepts inculcated in the ceremony of *installation*, we would be more largely benefited thereby. The ceremony teaches, in the most forcible manner, *strict order*, not only as regards the officers, but all of its members. Thus the lodge-room at least should observe "order, heaven's first law." Here opens a wide field for the statesman, the scholar, and the moralist. But time will not permit my elaborating. I must refer you to an address I delivered before Warren Lodge, No. 15, in June, 1863, on the occasion of the installation of the officers of that body. As before intimated, I can not urge too strongly upon the newly-elected officers of this Chapter a prompt and decisive action, on their part, in all matters brought before the Chapter. In the lodge-room there should be no private conversation or controversial question raised, but an open, manly, dignified course pursued; and when the business of the Chapter is through with close; and then, if desirable, enter into a social conversation, or indulge in some rational amusement.



## DEDICATION SERVICE.

---

ROYALTON, WISCONSIN, August 25, 1865.

TO MY COUSIN AMY AND HER HUSBAND, BRIGGS THOMAS.

*Written for the Dedication Service of the First Baptist Church, at  
Richmond, McHenry County, Illinois.*

---

We have assembled for the purpose of dedicating this church edifice, which has been recently erected by a few spirited individuals, who are entitled to the thanks of the members composing the Baptist Society of this place, the more so as the number of members are few. The building is a creditable one, for which the society is largely indebted to the liberality of the people.

If we were to look into past history for examples for the dedication of a building for a particular service, and a house for the worship of a God, we would be fully justified in our meeting to dedicate this house, and the setting it apart for the exclusive worship of God, and that in the manner comfortable not only with the views entertained by the body of that branch of the church which is to occupy this building, but as rational and intelligent individuals. It becomes us to carefully and fully examine into the premises of not only the creed which we have embraced, but all of our surroundings, in order to discover, if possible, how far the ceremonies of the past may be made to accord with the requirements of the present, and our present peculiar and relative standing to all our surroundings. At first view we may not think that this is of much importance to us or to those that may come after us, but we are met at once with many grave and important obligations, viz.: the duty we owe to ourselves, to God, and our fellow-beings. These relations must be regarded in the light of our surroundings, which embraces all the means at our command to fully discharge those duties. Let us now examine this subject in the light we have indicated.

All ceremonies to be useful must be practicable, and to, in some manner, minister to our happiness and supply some necessary want of our being. It may reasonably be asked, how or in what manner the setting apart of a house for the worship of God advances our happiness, or the lessons taught in the ceremonies used in the dedication may be made serviceable or in any way be beneficial to us? If some beneficial result can not be found or urged all must conclude that the day's service is a failure. It is often said that custom or usage becomes a law, and is the means by which men regulate their actions with their fellow-men. An established custom is generally known and followed according to the period in which it is observed. Thus it may be said of the custom of dedicating a house for the worship of God.

In the earlier days of God's chosen people, the Jews, the erection of an altar of unhewn stones on which to offer up sacrifice to the living God was accomplished in an humble way, and the ceremony of dedication was an humble one; but as the Jews advanced in knowledge and refinement as a nation, they observed more form and ceremony, as we observe in the erection of the Tabernacle and its adornments, and the depositing of the Ark of the Covenant. Strict observance of all these ceremonies was attended to for more than forty years, during the sojourn of the children of Israel in the wilderness, and these forms were, more or less, observed up to the time of the completion of the Temple of Solomon, in the dedication of which splendid edifice more pomp and ceremony was observed than was ever seen or known before or since. We have a full account in the Old Testament of all these ceremonies—of the placing of the Ark of the Covenant in the Most Holy place, under the wings of the cherubim, and the glory of the Lord filling the house; and there were sacrifices upon the altar, and much feasting; and Solomon stood before the altar, in the presence of all the congregation, and stretched forth his hands in prayer to the living God. See First Kings, eighth chapter, and also the ninth “And Israel feasted for twice seven days.” Here we have a dedication of the house of the Lord, built by King Solomon, and at its dedication the presence of the Lord filled the house.

Since that time we have not had any examples or authority for the dedication of any house for the worship of God. The worship of God as practiced in the rites and ceremonies given by God to Moses, together with the erection of the tabernacle and the ark, and the depositing of it in the Holy of Holies, of all the sacred vessels, and the setting apart the tribe of the Levites for the ministry seems to have been a special providence for a special purpose,

and to meet the wants and suit the feelings of the Jews. The destruction of the temple and the captivity of the Jews, during the Babylonian captivity, so humbled a portion of that people that Cyrus, the Persian King, who had conquered them, being touched with compassion for them, liberated, and permitted them to return to Jerusalem, and to carry with them all the sacred vessels of the temple. He also authorized them to rebuild the "House of the Lord," and Zerubabel re-erected the tabernacle, and established again a place wherein to worship the living God, as in the days of the sojourn in the wilderness. Zedekiah, the High Priest, assembled the people together, and read the Law as given to Moses on Mount Sinai. How he came in possession of the Ark, which contained the Law, we are not informed, as no mention is made as to what became of it during the time of the Jewish captivity in Babylon, nor do we learn that at the rebuilding of the temple there was any discovery of the books of the law, or the ark; neither do we find any ceremony mentioned for a second dedication. We are told though of the fall of the Jews as a nation, by the power of the Romans, the destruction of their sacred places, and the coming or rather the preaching of Christ, the plain, simple Nazarene, who went about preaching in the by-ways and public-ways, of Him who overturned the tables of the money-changers, in the sanctuary of the Lord, who taught the doctrine of humility and the brotherhood of man. We learn of His sayings to the woman of Samaria at the well, when He asked her for water, and her replies, and His further conversation with her, etc., when, in St. John's gospel, chapter fourth; nineteenth, twentieth, twenty-first, twenty third, and twenty-fourth verses, we see that "The woman saith unto him, Sir, I see that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshiped in this mountain, and ye say that in Jerusalem is the place where man ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a spirit, and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth."

The context all goes to show that the true worship of God is in the spirit, and with an understanding heart, thus requiring no *particular form* of worship. You may turn to any portion of the four gospels, which contain the sayings and teachings of Christ, and you will find they are all plain and simple. He taught this, not only in words, but by the example of His whole life. He

taught it by the wayside, in the streets, on the mountain, and the hillside, and in the valley. He also taught that to worship God there was something to be *done*, as well as to be *believed*, and that we must in all things live pure good lives, acting lovely in all our ways, knowing that when we thus acted the spirit of Christ would be with us.

Let us continue this subject farther, and inquire into these Christian duties, and examine them as to their compatibility with our surroundings in life. Man, though an individualized being, bears certain relations to his fellow-men, both socially and relatively. The proper observance of these duties is essential to our happiness. Compare this *natural right* with the teachings of Jesus the Nazarene.

You will find in St. Mark, twelfth chapter, twenty-eighth to the thirty-fifth verse, that, "One of the scribes came unto Jesus, and interrogated him, in regard to one of the commandments: and Jesus answered him, saying, The first of all the commandments is Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself: there is none other commandment greater than these. And the scribe said unto him, well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbor as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God." Here we have the specific teachings of Jesus himself. Love seems to be the most prominent obligation in the commandment; and, when the scribe repeated the commandment, Jesus said unto him, "Thou art not far from the kingdom of God." In this we see no incompatibility between Christ's teachings and the natural law; for it is from a just sense of what is right in the nature of things and in accordance with that by which alone we can be truly happy in this life. Let us turn our attention to the tenth chapter of Mark and fifteenth verse. Speaking of little children He said, "Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child he shall not enter therein." Where is the individual to be found that is not fully sensible of the advantages of humility, and correct deportment in all things, especially to his fellow-men. Again, we find, in the seventeenth verse, "There

came one running and kneeled to him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?" And, in the nineteenth verse, Jesus said unto him, "Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honor thy father and mother. And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth. Then Jesus, beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me. And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions. And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!" In the foregoing quotation we have an example of the effect of strong attachment to worldly goods; showing that, where the mind is wholly absorbed in thinking of riches, we lose sight of those things that would minister to our intellectual and spiritual enjoyment in this life, and the hope of a glorious immortality beyond the grave.

In the twenty-first chapter of Matthew we have the practical teachings of humility by Jesus. After riding into Jerusalem on an ass, or asses' colt, "He went into the temple of God and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves, and said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves." Here we have the teachings of Jesus himself; and who is the man or woman that will say aught against the principles and lessons He inculcated or taught. They are admirable and well-calculated to make men and women better: better husbands, better wives, better fathers and mothers, better children, and better citizens; consequently their sphere of happiness and usefulness will be greatly augmented.

The seventh chapter of Mark, commencing at the fifteenth verse, Jesus says: "There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile; but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man." And in the twenty-second and twenty-third verses, "Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness, all these evil things come from within and defile the man." By this we are taught to set a watch over our lips, and a guard over all our thoughts and actions, so that we may be truthful in all things, thereby having the sweet consolation of having lived in

the discharge of our whole duty to ourselves, our neighbors, and to God. If we turn our attention to the Acts of the Apostles, we there find on almost every page of that book how those who lived in conformity with the principles taught by Jesus were made happy, and enjoyed the outpourings of the Holy Spirit. The history and life of Jesus was a succession of righteous deeds, some of which we have quoted. Further on, in the second chapter of the Acts, where the disciples were met together on the day of Pentecost: "And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with tongues as the Spirit gave them utterance." This was a *spiritual* religion. It filled the soul with gladness and joy. It was not that dull round of ceremony, full of forms and nice sayings, but it was manifested in acts of mercy, kindness, and love, in healing the sick, making the dumb to speak, the blind to see, and the lame to walk. Again, in Acts, ninth chapter, we follow Paul on his way to Damascus. While on the road he was stricken to the earth by a light, above the brightness of the noon-day sun, and became blind. He was then commanded to arise and go to Damascus, and it should be told him what to do. And he went, by the assistance of those who were with him, and when there he was waited upon by Ananias, who put his hands on Paul, and he again received his sight and was filled with the Holy Ghost. In the seventeenth chapter, from the twenty-second to the twenty-fifth verse, we will go with Paul to Athens where he was accused of preaching a strange doctrine. And Paul stood up and said: "Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, *to the unknown God*. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you. God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; neither is worshiped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things." And in the twenty-sixth chapter let us follow him in his defense before King Agrippa. It is one of the most beautiful defenses of himself and the Christian religion that could have been made or delivered. We find him (Paul) after his conversion continually proclaiming and explaining the doctrines taught by Christ; and his fifteenth chapter, First Corinthians, is one of the most sound and logical discourses on the resurrection to be found in the whole Scriptures; and none can at this day excel his teachings, or give us a brighter hope of a glorious immortality, or the resurrection on a clearer basis. He says: "There are also celestial bodies, and

bodies terrestrial; but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another," etc.

Thus I conclude the most prominent teachings and exhortations of Jesus and His leading apostles, and the whole may be summed up in a few words: Our duty to ourselves in living a correct and truthful life, walking in all humility before God and man, doing right in all things. In this we have a Scriptural assurance of happiness in this world, and the promise of a glorious immortality beyond the grave. After all this I see no impropriety in setting apart a house for the worship of God, where we can assemble as the apostles did on the day of Pentecost; see second chapter of Acts, where it is said, "The Spirit of the Lord will be with us, and bless us in spirit and in truth." It is the pompous and extravagant display, without the Spirit, to which I have objection. If a dedication is to be made it should be in a plain, humble manner, as was once the wont of our old Baptist brethren, but leaving out the dogma of the Calvinistic creed. Those that worship God in spirit and in truth will not only enjoy happiness here but also in the spirit land.

Since writing you this morning, I concluded to finish out my promised dedication, although it is not recommended by Christ.

Yours,

PHILIP MASON.

## METAPHYSICS.

---

CONNERSVILLE, IND., December 11, 1864.

DOCTOR CAMPBELL—Dear Sir: Last summer, as we came in the cars together from Liberty to this place, you said you would call and see me. I have been expecting you ever since, but you have not called. I would have been much pleased to have had you done so. When in the cars our conversation turned and culminated on the subject of the natural and spiritual laws. You expressed at least a preference in the belief that the physical laws differed from the spiritual. My inference from what you said was that the effect or relations of the one were different from the other, and spoke of the law of gravitation as precluding the idea that spiritual law was governed by the same laws as physical. I have ever since that interview desired to discuss this principle with you. Our conversation was in a general sense, but I presume that you will not for a moment deny that physical laws are numerous, yet having a co-relative bearing.

First, let me define what I understand by Newton's law of gravitation. It is simply that the major controls the minor, though we may apply different names, as attraction, repulsion, or affinity, as in the laws governing chemistry, or the law of the positive and negative. All of these latter are only the modifications of the law of gravitation. You will now be prepared to understand me; the major force controls the minor one. I will next define my views of spirit and matter. The only difference between *gross-matter* and *spirit* is in the degree of refinement. I hold that the vast universe of matter is a laboratory, in which matter is constantly undergoing a change, elaborating finer particles, culminating in spirit-matter. The primary motive-power by which the various results are produced is the great positive mind we call God. Not a particle of matter that exists, however gross or refined, but is endowed with motive-power, adapted to the circumstances or conditions in which it exists, all operating to one great end, spirit-matter. It is one of the laws of force to become expended or ex-



changed; as a body in motion being arrested, the motive-power is changed into heat; for instance, the sun's rays passing through the atmosphere produces no sensible heat until it is arrested by a solid body; when impinged upon the earth, heat is evolved. The same results are produced in ponderable bodies; if arrested while in motion, heat is given off.

These facts are well defined in Tyndal's work, "Heat Considered as a Mode of Motion;" and also in a late publication entitled "Co-relation and Conservation of Forces," edited by Edward L. Youmans, M. D. This work is the result of the labors of several of the ablest minds in the world. They fully sustain my views, though the book is only designed as a work on physical science, and it is well that it is so. The ideas contained therein will make their impress upon the human mind, without infringing upon any religious creed. They extend co-relation to physiology and the law of life-force. (See Carpenter on the "Co-relation of the Physical and Vital Forces," in the work before spoken of, p. 401.)

Individuality is one of the forms in which matter is culminated. If *gross* matter can be individualized by its own inherent forces, I can not see any good reason why *spirit* matter can not be equally individualized. We see in man individualization so endowed that it not only manifests intellectuality, but is actually in possession of it, and by the power of thought takes possession of forces and produces results. The arrangement of the brain and nervous system is only the medium by which its powers are manifested, as in the telegraph arrangement. In order to communicate through the telegraph we must not only have the proper arrangement, but the intellect directing it, and the primary power back of it. If there be any cogency in this reasoning, we have no difficulty in arriving at man's individualized spirit-existence, the forces inherent in man operating so as to individualize a perfect man. I see no good reason why the finer forces of spirit-matter may not be individualizing within man a spirit-body, for the the residence of the *mind* in all its bearings. In evidence of this we have clairvoyance, which goes far to show that the mind can be, and does act, independently of our physical organization, and if we reason from analogy we must come to the same conclusion. The electrical force in the wire of the telegraph has no manifestations of its existence until the proper tests are applied; the same holds good in magnetism. In the electrical machine and the galvanic battery the poles must be brought in proximity, so that the positive can operate on the negative until they are equal, then a new law governs and repulsion takes place. Here is

a force in motion not controlled by gravitation. It is the major force controlling the minor until equalized, then they repel. We have a similar condition of mind, the major always did and always will control the minor, and that independently of the will-power. The will is a power of itself; I can, I will, and shall do it; who does not know the force of this determination? It becomes a motive-power and continues until arrested and succeeded by some new force; thus the law of conservation is constantly maintaining a proper equilibrium. There is another view of this matter, all classes of thinkers, who admit the existence of a God, admit Him to be a Spirit, ever present and controlling all things, matter as well as mind. If a spirit-intelligence controls *physical* matter by fixed and unalterable laws, why not so extend them as to control *spirit-matter*? I think He does and have given some of the reasons why it is so, and will conclude for the present by a farther analogy. All well-informed minds, at this time, are bound to admit the law of progress. Civilization teaches it, and if that were lacking geology teaches it beyond contradiction. The mind of man is progressive beyond all controversy. Take a man who is ignorant of the *sciences* and teach him, he at once abandons his old superstitions in relation to science and its facts. The same holds good in moral science; our whole civil code of jurisprudence is founded upon this theory, conditions and motives now govern. We no longer hang or burn witches, why? because we have arrived at a more enlightened moral view of the case; here again the motive-power of thought acts similarly as the motor-power acts on matter in any form whether refined or gross. Thus you see that a co-relation and conservation of forces are in constant action, whether it relates to gross-matter or imponderables, as light, heat, electricity, or magnetism. It is only a modification, or condition of force, that brings about the various results; force may be exhausted in one direction while the law of conservation acts upon it in another. My sheet is full and I must close these hasty remarks. You will see that I make no pretensions to fine composition or well-defined logical deductions. I hope you will find time to answer this and criticise it elaborately.

Yours, with much esteem,

PHILIP MASON.

LEBANON, OHIO, January 1, 1865.

DR. MASON—Dear Sir: While in Connersville a short time since it was my fortune to begin an acquaintance with you, and at the same time to listen to your discussion of a class of top'ics which is regarded as very dull, as compared with "greenbacks," and how to get them. Since coming home, however, I find that the subject in which you are so much interested has occupied the attention of at least two men who have held high rank in our nation's history. I find in Thomas Jefferson's correspondence (edited by T. J. Randolph) a letter of August 15, 1820, to the elder Adams, from which I make the following extract:

"I can conceive *thought* to be an action of a particular organization of matter, formed for that purpose by its Creator, as well as that *attraction* is an action of matter, or *magnetism* of loadstone. When he who denies to the Creator the power of endowing matter with the mode of action called *thinking*, shall show how he could endow the sun with the mode of action called *attraction*, which reins the planets in the track of their orbits, or how an absence of matter can have a will, and by that will put matter in motion, then the materialist may be lawfully required to explain the process by which matter exercises the faculty of thinking."

These thoughts I find, if I rightly understood you, to be very closely related to your ideas. I have only extracted a part of what Jefferson writes on the subject, deeming it probable that you are familiar with it; yet I venture to write so much of it, knowing that if you had not seen it it would gratify you to have your attention directed to it. Jefferson's letter is in reply to one from Adams, which I have not seen, but which Jefferson refers to as treating of "Matter, Spirit, Motion, etc." The thoughts of such men on such a topic are highly interesting in a historical point of view, aside from the value they have as aids to our investigations in the same direction.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

WILLIAM W. WILSON.

CONNERSVILLE, IND., January 16, 1865.

WM. W. WILSON—Dear Sir: Yours, under date of the 1st inst., was duly handed me by your brother, the Judge, and read with much interest. The quotation from Jefferson was thankfully received. I was aware that a correspondence, of an interesting character, had been maintained between him and the elder Adams, but have never read any of it except a few newspaper extracts. I regret that the answer to your letter has been unavoidably delayed, and now I doubt my ability to place the subject to which you allude in a clear and tangible light. A subject shrouded as *it* is in so much obscurity, requires not only talent but much research into the province of imponderable agencies, of which I do not claim the scholarship, but if I so far succeed as to compress into a short epistle such ideas as will awaken an investigation of a subject-matter, by which the human mind is expanded and ascends to a higher plane of thought and being, I shall have accomplished as much or more than I expect. The extracts you quoted from Jefferson are cogent and can not be refuted, although I think they are limited. He refers or bases his remarks upon the foundation of a Creator. To this term Creator and creation, when used in its broad signification, I have no objection; but the human mind is not capable of conceiving the existence of anything unless it is endowed with the attributes of *matter*, and that under the influence and control of organic law, and that law manifesting an intelligence. The power of numbers is illimitable, so far as the mind can comprehend, yet the powers of each combination are fixed and definite, and their results, when legitimately marked out, are uniform in each particular form or division, as the square, cube, angle, and so on, through the whole. As of this, so of every other proposition. Music has its invariable sounds, dependent upon motion, and that motion dependent upon a cause, or combination of causes, viz.: the strings or keys, atmosphere, and back of all a force, to put in motion; and if there be a combination of instruments and harmony of sound produced, it is self-evident that there is an intelligence back of all which harmonizes and produces the ultimate result. We will turn our attention to animated nature; first, the plant, the germ, its development through all its various stages to its ultimate; each stage has its particular motion and

action, wisely designed to develop its growth, and so on, stage by stage, until the plant is matured, all the while manifesting an intelligent action. Each and every vegetable has its own particular functions, by which particular results are produced, varying from all others, and yet, like numbers, maintaining certain general laws. If we approach the animal kingdom we see an advancement, though in the inferior the change is slight; as we advance, however, we find an increase of development, and when we arrive at the mammalia, the distinction is clear; and as we ascend in this class we see a wide development, widening and widening up to man, who is the climax of organized matter, a miniature universe, endowed with mind, capable of design and arrangement; yet this design and arrangement is limited, and in order to be successful must be regulated by pre-existent laws. What shall we infer from the foregoing statements?

1. That mind is the primary of all co-existing relations. It is the power that grasps and wields all other laws so as to bring about results, and that ceaseless agency we see going on in all elements, ultimating in ponderable matter, and this in turn ultimating in imponderable. I can conceive of mind only as it is connected with matter. We have been so long accustomed to thinking in connection with gross-matter that it requires an effort to enter a higher realm. Look at the steam engine with its combinations and its results when in motion; the force is produced by an elastic, invisible power we call steam. The same may be said of electricity and magnetism—light and heat; these latter may be rendered evident; yet, in their normal action they are not evident to our senses. So of that principle we call spirit; a peculiar, refined, organized matter; an original principle by and through which mind is manifested in man; and how? Why, by the same laws by which all substances are manifested; by motion. I can conceive that all matter is endowed with motion, even in inanimate particles. That which is called cohesion is motion, and exists no longer in that form when it is undisturbed by another motive power. Motion is reciprocal or co-relative, and though the motion seems to have been expended, it only exists in another form. Thus we have a continuous or successive motion, varying in force, depending on surroundings. I regard motion as one of the original laws, as much so as mathematics. Indeed, it is closely allied, as in a large number of its operations, it is on strictly mathematical principles.

You may perhaps ask what are the deductions from the foregoing premises? The answer is simple and plain; the great posi-

tive mind of the universe we term God, associated or acting through fixed laws, brings about all the phenomena in the universe of matter, animate or inanimate. Again, you may say that all this is mere assumption. I admit that it is measurably so; but I have made some statements which may have some bearing, and I will now make a few more. The laws of natural philosophy, in all its bearings; the laws of chemistry, astronomy, vegetation, animal life, are all under *fixed* laws; one of which is motion, operating with mathematical certainty; bringing about certain and unmistakable results; all referring back to an intelligent mental source, operating by motion. Take the germ of a plant, first learn its habits and wants, and then comply with its requirements, and motion is produced, by which the germ is developed into a plant. Take a flower, and apply the pollen to another flower, of the same genera of different variety; the motion imparted by the pollen will beget a new variety, so that when the germ of the new combination is developed into a plant and flower, the hybrid is evident; in this the first action is motion in the molecular particles of the pollen. The same takes place in the ovum of the oviparous animals; in man, for instance, the highest type of the mammalian species, the sperm of the male, under certain favorable circumstances, coming in contact with the ovum of the female, imparts a new action or motion; and if favorable circumstances be continued, an immortal being is developed, endowed with mind and medium of spirit existence, which is effected by the law of motion acting on matter, producing the various results of organic functions.

To enter into the details, and show how the results are produced, would require volumes. You will see that I make no pretensions to strict scientific argument, or deductions; I lack the early training. If I have been sufficiently interesting as to induce you to reply to this, I shall be happy to exchange communications with you, as leisure and time will afford.

I am most respectfully, yours,

PHILIP MASON.

ALBION, MICHIGAN, September 26, 1865.

W. V. MORRISON, Esq.: Permit one, who has been a recipient of your kindness, to address you a few lines upon an important subject; one that concerns every individual, however humble or exalted. I allude to man's immortality; a conscious state of being, including identity and individuality; a being perfectly cognizant of its surroundings in a spiritual state, or that condition we assume after death of the body. It will be readily acknowledged by all intelligent minds that *something* can not be produced from *nothing*; and, it must be further admitted, that the law of conservation and co-relation teaches that not any *thing* or principle is lost, but is conserved; and, further, it must be admitted that existence or a state of being is only evidenced by motion, and even *that* is conserved. Again, it must be conceded, that there is a law of progression by which all bodies and minds are advanced from a lower to a higher plane or state of being. Geology, mineralogy, botany, and the science of animal life are in a constant state of progression.

It must also be admitted that *all nature* is tending to *individuality*, or separate state of being, though at the same time dependent upon other separate states of being or conditions. There is also another condition which is self-evident; that there are individual primaries, or parts, which, by their joint action, result in the production of all the phenomena we see in nature. It must be equally admitted that there is a power which regulates, and is the great *motive* power, the action of which results in all we see in the universe of matter, and which may be summed up in the law of causation, producing all these phenomena. What is this power? It is the self-existing, positive intellect of the universe, manifesting itself through matter, acting by and through other primaries, producing results we call *life*, motion, being, or state of existence. The various grades of existence seem indispensable to prepare and refine matter for a higher state; hence the flora and fauna of the season, or period, are perfecting matter, and their own organization, for an advanced state of being or condition; and, though we may not be able to trace it through all the grades of living organisms, yet we are forced to believe the fact that nature is constantly advancing the scale of being from a lower to a higher plane. By

this process a living intellectuality is individualized in man, though not perfect, yet in a state of being or condition to further advance to a more perfect existence. But, you will reply, how can this possibly be manifested, as there is a lack of organization through which to manifest itself? In answer, I must say that there may be, and probably is, an organization fully individualized, of such fine material that we in ordinary conditions are not able to see or realize it; as, in mathematics, the *principles* are in being, although we may be wholly ignorant of the fact until, by the array of the numerals, the problem is solved; yet the fact existed as certainly *before* the solution *as after*. Conditions are all important for the proper manifestation of anything. We are not able to see mind, or discover it by any of our senses, until it is clothed with some form of language, or, through motion, in the organic structure of man. Light, heat, electricity, and magnetism are in a constant state of existence, though they are only evident through certain conditions, which it is not necessary to give here. But you will say that the conditions *do* exist, and through the conditions are made manifest, which can not be the case with *mind*, as it is only made manifest through the brain; hence at the time of dissolution all traces of its existence are lost. This at a superficial glance may appear so, but there is no time or condition of mind but that there exists a condition or mode by and through which it is manifested in a conscious state of being: first, through the brain, and then through spirit organizations. Again, no organization is endowed with power or faculty beyond its needs for its state of being. It has been demonstrated most clearly that there is a desire for life and a fear of death. There is also an innate desire for immortality. The desire for life is a wise provision, evidently given to preserve and perpetuate the species. This longing after immortality can not in any way be necessary for our present existence. It is separate and apart from the desire to perpetuate our existence here. The latter is based on a *higher plane of being*, with higher enjoyments, and of more elevated and sublimer thoughts and surroundings; while the former is alone the desire to perpetuate, or *protect us*, in the enjoyment of the animal man, and his surroundings, on this mundane sphere.

Again, this higher desire, or state of being, is further evidenced in the firm belief among all men (savage, semi-barbarous, or civilized) that there is, and has been, in all ages, not only a *belief*, but positive statements, that spirit-form has had communion with man in this life-sphere. The collection of facts, by Mrs. Catherine Crow, leaves not a single doubt on this subject; and, in our own



time and experience, we have a large and extended collection of facts, through clairvoyance and persons termed mediums, who state positively of having seen the spirits of departed persons, and in various other modes they have had communication with individuals who have left life's form in this world. Besides, we have no means of accounting—by any known principles of philosophy, either physical or mental—for the peculiar phenomenon witnessed all over our country, and in the presence of all grades of mind and intelligence. Again, this faculty of the human mind could not in any way subserve any purpose of our existence here, and would be a useless power, and in opposition to nature's mode of endowment. This must be admitted to be at least a strong negative argument of its use in a future state of conscious being. Again, as shown above, progress is a law, and the refinement of matter is the object and end, and matter is not only refined but organized, so that the eternal principle of the mind may act and may be recognized through a refined organized state or condition. Again, we can not see any object nature could have in view, if there was only a ceaseless round of organic arrangement; the one to succeed the other; the intellect of one individual to be conserved to accomodate or subserve some other purpose. It would seem more in accordance with the order of development in nature that mind be individualized, and retain its individuality, to progress through all eternity.

I will close this epistle at this point for the lack of time. Should it be deemed necessary, by your reply to this, I may resume the subject.

Yours truly and fraternally,

PHILIP MASON.

---

CONNEERSVILLE, IND., February 22, 1866.

W. V. MORRISON—My Dear Sir: Yours, under date of the 28th of last month, was received on the 5th inst., and read with deep interest. The kind manner in which you speak of me is duly appreciated and reciprocated, and will be so continued, notwithstanding every difference of opinion which may exist between us on the subject of the philosophical discussion, which we have commenced. As stated, in the concluding part of my former letter to you, I will here attempt to extend my argument in favor

of the position I have taken. You must excuse me for passing over a large portion of your long letter. To follow it, and answer the various questions you have raised, would be foreign to my first proposition, viz.: Man's future conscious immortality. I will here, at the outset, remark that each of our minds are positively constituted; yet so developed as to widely differ in our mode of thought, and consequently we differ largely in our conclusions; but, as individuals claiming a share of intelligence and correct moral action, I trust that we each will maintain for the other that due decorum that should ever characterize friends. It is to be regretted that in philosophy we have not a more concise and fixed mode of settling questions. The logical method of Plato; the inductive mode of Lord Bacon, to which has been added the deductive; and, more recently, a new system of philosophy has obtained, I think by Herbert Spencer, the author of several new works, one of which is his "Law of Progress." Says Dr. Youman (the compiler of the essays constituting the work entitled "Co-relation and Conservation of Forces"): "The ancients were prevented from creating science by a false intellectual procedure. They believed they could solve all the problems of the universe by thought alone. The moderns have found that for this purpose meditation is futile unless accompanied by observation and experiment."

I thought this much was due to myself, in order that you might the more readily understand my aim and drift of argument. In my letter of the 26th of September, 1865, to you, I used the word spirit in relation to man's condition after death. I also used in the same connection other phrases, and placed them in the most prominent light, which was done to lessen the force of the word spirit. The words soul and spirit are used synonymously, which is an error, as in the earth-sphere of existence we have body, soul, *and* spirit. On the third page of your letter of the 28th ult., you used the following: "It is said that man has two natures, 'human and divine,' or, in other words, a *sensual* and a spiritual nature. Who knows this? Who can define them separately, where the one commences or where the other leaves off?"

This is what I purpose to do, or if more agreeable, I will unravel the great mystery that has been thrown around that which to me appears a plain matter. I repudiate *in toto* the phrases used above, they are unmeaning and untruthful. Previous to proceeding I will lay down this rule, which is a principle well settled: actual *demonstration* and *positive evidence* are received as *facts* and acted upon as *truthful*. In my letter previously referred to, I spoke of the law of progression, by which matter was constantly advancing from a

lower to a higher plane. To this I understand you to assent, hence I need not go into details to prove the fact. Man in the scale of creation stands at the head of all. He has the finest organization to which is added a much higher plane of mentality, the power of reasoning, comparing, and drawing conclusions, as well as the will-power to execute them. Here we have the positive evidence of the adaptation of attributes for specific purposes, physically and mentally, each performing its particular function in its own way, and no other faculty can be substituted for that which belongs to it. Notwithstanding this individuality each not only acts in harmony, but have, in nearly every organ and faculty of the mind, as well as the body, a duality. Digestion, absorption, and secretion are exceptions, each has its separate function, performed by separate organs, yet all must act in harmony to produce a good result. Again, these functions are dependent not only upon one another but upon their due excitement of nervous force or sensation; here again, each nerve has its separate and distinct office to perform, no one branch of nerve-force or sensation can, in the least, supply another; the ear can not see, nor the eye hear, neither can the nerves of the liver secrete the gastric juice, and so on, through all the various ramifications of sensation and motion. This is not all, there exists a great difference in the *degree* of sensation, also in motion, it may be increased or diminished. It may be so diminished as to be nearly lifeless, or it may be increased to such a degree as to cause the sensations to become so exquisite that life itself for a time is rendered a burden to the possessor.

Then we have the mesmeric condition, which differs widely from all other forms of nervous influence. In this condition the nerves of sensation and motion are more or less suspended while the individual is under the will-power of the mesmerist, and acts in accordance with the wishes of the individual under whose influence they are controlled. Again we may examine the brain in all its parts, and the ganglions with their nerve-centers; from these centers to the spinal column, even to the brain, we notice with interest their beautiful arrangement, but we may go further, and test by experiment on the nerve itself, and show that the function of a part depends upon nervous sensation; but how or in what manner this nerve-power is accumulated, is beyond the ken of the most learned physiologists. We know that it is exhausted by fear and accumulated by pleasurable sensations, but the how that this is so remains a secret with nature. I could extend these remarks to great length and show that there is a vital force inherent in organizations, and

exists in an ascending scale, depending on condition. Again, there are but few persons who have not at some time been made conscious, when in the presence of another individual, of an influence causing a sensation either pleasant or unpleasant, creating a feeling of liking or dislike of that individual. I ask how is this influence transmitted? There is no nervous connection between the persons, then what is this influence? Is it magnetical? Electrical? Or is it an emanation from that fine organization, the soul? I hold that it is the latter—an emanation from the mind operating through or by the organization of the *refined matter* constituting the *soul principle*, the real man. It is well known that certain individuals when put in communication in the mesmeric state with another individual, can, by the will-force, exert a strong influence, even at the distance of miles. Every one is aware that the mind, when directed by the will-power, can be made to traverse space, and revisit a spot where it had once been, or to wander to a place accurately described. Mind is a principle, has organization of parts, takes cognizance of things, determines by the will-power certain results, and acts by and through the soul, directs and controls all nature, by fixed laws. I here allude to the positive mind of the universe, termed God. *Finite* mind is limited in its action, and that in the ratio of its knowledge of things and laws. Some individuals are so constituted that they can not appreciate this. There are highly intellectual persons who openly declare that they have both seen and conversed with individuals who once inhabited bodies on this earth.

Now for the evidence to sustain the foregoing position. First, I quote Stilling's "Pneumatology," first American edition, by Bush, New York, 1851. Though I do not endorse all he says, yet the simple facts given are strong evidence of man's *conscious* state of being after death of the body. In this work will be found the interesting "Narrative at the Dinner-table in Paris," prior to the Revolution in France, "The Prophecy of Cazotte." I will next call your attention to the "Life of Emanuel Swedenborg," the American edition, dated 1850. Swedenborg has become so generally known that I presume you have read his biography. If so, you have got the main points of his spiritual opinions and facts as given by him. (I use the word spirit and spiritual in their popular meaning, and for the lack of a word that will express the true condition.) I will now mention several recent works, their authors being men of science, who have occupied a high position as men of veracity, intellectuality, and learning. I quote first a work entitled "Spiritualism," by Judge Edmonds and Dr. G. T. Dexter,

with an "Appendix" by Nathaniel P. Tallmadge. The first of these men was a judge of one of the higher courts of New York, and highly esteemed for his legal acquirements and high moral bearing. Dr. Dexter is a man of learning, and a practicing physician in the city of New York. Talmadge had been a United States Senator from New York, afterward Territorial Governor of Wisconsin. (He died about eighteen months ago.) The book is of large size, and contains five hundred pages. Next is Professor Hare, professor of chemistry in the Pennsylvania Medical College, in the city of Philadelphia. I have forgotten the title, and have not the work at hand, but it is a volume of considerable size. There are quite a number of others, but I shall only mention a few more.

The works of Andrew Jackson Davis, especially his "Ever-recurring Questions from the People," published in 1862, at New York. This work is very interesting; I advise you to read it, especially "Jonah's Life in the Whale," page 142 to 153, first edition. Also his "Magic Staff, or Autobiography of A. J. Davis." This Davis is one of the most remarkable men the world ever produced, to say nothing of his spiritualism. His "Death and the After life," in three lectures is an excellent work. I have only mentioned three of his works out of nearly a dozen. To conclude with these quotations, I will give the "Arcana of Nature or the History and Laws of Creation," in two volumes, by Hudson Tuttle. The first volume is a treatise on "Geology," on a new basis. The second is wholly devoted to the "Philosophy of Spiritual Existence and of the Spirit-world." I read these volumes when they first came out. At the time I read his work Geology I thought it a superior production by a superior mind; the second volume I do not have as distinct an impression of, but I have read it. I give you one more.<sup>1</sup> "Man and his Relations, Illustrating the Influence of the Mind on the Body," by J. B. Britton, M. D. The volume contains nearly six hundred pages; I recommend for your perusal the thirty-sixth chapter, the last in the book. A short review of what I have written and then I shall close. First, I speak of the first cause which is the cause of all causes, and by a conjoint action with matter results in all we see in nature. Secondly, I assign man's sphere of action as first in the scale of created existence, and in possession of a three-fold nature, body, soul, and spirit or mind. The body is composed of the coarser materials adapted to the state of existence on this mundane sphere. The soul is produced by *organic action* of the grosser matter, as evidenced by clairvoyance, and through individuals who have been in communi-

cation with souls who have left the earthly body, and as is shown to be the case by the authors we have quoted. The spirit-principle is that intellectuality which is manifested in everything we see in the universe of matter, and is culminated in man, consequently he becomes a reasoning, thinking being, a miniature universe in himself.

Well, friend Morrison, in concluding my letter to you I will adopt your mode. You say, "In treating such subjects my method is first to divest them of all extraneous appendages, thereby resolving the whole to its equivalent root." When in your place last fall I passed through your mill and found everything admirably arranged for converting wheat in the hopper to flour in the barrel; all the machinery was idle for the lack of power on the water-wheel, when the water was let on the *wheel* all was put in motion. In this arrangement we must go back to the *first* cause, which was the *intellect* of the designer; next to the water, as the power by which the whole had motion, thus producing the final result. I am aware that you will reply that truth (as you please to call the first cause) puts into motion or being by fixed laws that living principle called man, whose organized structure continues to run until worn out or some part is obstructed, then the vital forces ceases to exist and the law of chemistry takes the control. What has become of this vital force that had for years resisted the chemical laws? I ask again, what has become of this vital force? Where has it gone? Nature knows of no losses, everything is conserved however varied in form; man in his earthly sphere had a conscious state of being, the power of reasoning, making deductions, and a limited power of creating. This intellectual, creative power in man must continue in existence in some form! I ask again, in what condition or form does it exist? I shall always be pleased to hear from you though we may differ on these points.

Fraternally yours,

PHILIP MASON.

## LECTURE ON EDUCATION:

DELIVERED AT CAMBRIDGE, AND ALSO AT THE BRICK CHURCH IN WEST  
UNION, FEBRUARY, 1847.

---

*Ladies and Gentlemen:* The subject for to-night is Education; but previous to entering upon it, I shall make a few general propositions:

First: Every thing connected with our globe is governed by fixed laws; laws as unchangeable as the first Almighty cause. This holds good in the rotatory motions of the heavenly bodies; the earth as a body, or the particles which enter into its composition, whether applied to organic matter or the constitution of the human mind. The constancy of these laws enabled Copernicus to become acquainted with the motions of the heavenly bodies and to determine their revolutions—eclipses of the sun and moon, and all things pertaining to what is called the Copernican system. It is the uniformity of those laws which enables the chemist to produce with unerring certainty those results which are everywhere met with in modern science, and applied in the various arts. It furnishes the dyer with his colors, the chemist with his chemical agents, the physician with his medicines, the artisan with his metals, in all their various compounds and qualities. The production of animals and vegetables are under equally fixed and immutable laws. All this will be accepted as truth, none denying my assertions; but when I say that the mind of man is under fixed and unchangeable laws I shall be regarded as a fatalist or materialist, neither of which positions I advocate; yet I am well convinced that mind is as much under the influence of fixed laws as electricity, magnetism and galvanism are, and though I may not be believed, yet it will not lessen the truth though it may blunt its force. But no great truth ever was announced that has not been condemned, for a time at least, by the mass of mankind. The simple truths taught by the humble Jesus, for thirty years, were doubtfully received except by a few, and even to this day there are disbelievers in His doctrines.

The Copernican system was not accepted as a truth for a long time, only by a few great minds. It was scouted by the would-be Christians of that day as a fallacy. Man seems to be skeptical in all things where it requires intellect and thought for comprehending any deep or abstruse subject. But this is no mystery; for, as before stated, the mind has its laws of development and organization. That portion of the mind which relates to the physical man is first developed; next the perceptive, then the moral, and last the reflective or reasoning powers of our nature.

A few remarks relative to the *modus operandi* of the mind of man and I shall proceed to the main subject, education, wherein I design to show how the mind may be educated in accordance with the laws governing man's physical and mental nature. The faculties of the mind appertaining to our animal nature are first developed in consequence of the calls of nature for food, and all those things that are conducive to our happiness. They commence early and only end in death. The perceptive faculties are next called into action through the five senses, namely, hearing, seeing, feeling, tasting, and smelling. Impressions made on some one or all of these senses calls up those faculties of the mind by which we acquire a knowledge of individual things, such as their size, weight, color, and dimensions. These faculties improve or diminish just in proportion to the condition of our external senses. If sight be wanting, all that appertains to color or beauty in any thing is wanting; if hearing be deficient, all harmony of sound is destroyed; if smell be lacking, the odor of the rose or other sweet flowers can not be appreciated; and should we be deprived of taste the pleasures of the palate are lost, as well as that the pleasant or unpleasant qualities of things can not be learned, which alone are imparted by that organ. The moral feelings are next awakened by the desires of the animal feelings to apply individual things perceived to our natural wants. The right to apply awakens conscientiousness, reverence and benevolence. The why and the wherefore of things is slow, and hence we can trace man through all the various stages of civilization that have ever existed. This is reason—the highest and noblest empire of man in this world. It is true that man's moral nature is susceptible of high and lofty emotions and aspirations, ever looking into the "far beyond." "Hope buoys us up, nor quits us till we die." To doubt man's moral nature is to place him on a level with the brute. Has not man reverence? Where has he been found that he did not pay homage to a God? No where. Has not man a conscience? Most certainly. The question of right and wrong is ever present. Has



not man feelings of benevolence? Most certainly. The attention we give to suffering humanity springs mainly from this faculty or motive. These questions are so full of interest that I am loth to leave them at this point. But let me here say, beware how you blunt or repel these moral sentiments, for he whose moral feelings have become insensible becomes an outcast among his fellow-men. He is lost to all the enjoyments produced by benevolence in having performed acts of kindness to his fellow-men, and the happiness derived from a consciousness of having lived a life of rectitude before God, and in having dealt justly toward man and to himself. The mode and manner in which the moral feelings may be elevated, or on the other hand, misapplied, will be shown in the lecture. One or two more samples in which the mind of man is called into action must suffice.

Like begets like; if our own feelings are lovely, and we communicate with another, it is almost certain to beget similar feelings in those with whom we converse. If we weep, it often causes others to weep; if we rejoice, it induces those about to do so; if we laugh, and are merry, the company will incline that way. If men reason and inquire into the cause of things, others are disposed to do likewise; hence, wherever you find two or three intelligent and courteous individuals, that community will become more intellectual and intelligent through their influence. If combativeness be exercised, a spirit of strife is engendered. For example, if I to-day, instead of delivering this lecture, which I have announced, were to commence pointing out the follies and weaknesses of the Methodists and Universalists (who are members of this association, and who both have churches in this place), I should go away with curses on my head, from the very fact that such a course would indicate in me a desire to set up my own opinions in opposition to theirs. This, by the law of which I have been speaking, would awaken self-esteem in the members of those societies, and combativeness would come to their aid; strife would be engendered in words, if not in deeds.

If we wish to be beloved, we must first love others. We have a most striking example of this influence in the intercourse of William Penn with the Indians. The feelings manifested and practiced by this great and good man and his adherents, have resulted in a peaceable intercourse between the Indian and Quaker up to this day. One whole tribe of Indians in New York has become somewhat civilized through this influence. As before stated, intelligence begets intelligence; and he who would wish to have a community become intelligently religious, must first

become so himself. We have a beautiful remark on this subject in one of St. Paul's epistles; he says: "When you pray, pray with the spirit and with the understanding. When you sing, sing with the spirit and with the understanding." As much as if he had said, to have your prayer do good, you must be in a tender and kind mood, having proper feelings towards God and man; then direct your prayer in accordance with Divine law. To illustrate, suppose an individual were to enter this room at this moment, dressed in tatters, with hair disheveled, countenance forlorn, the body decrepit, and then commence putting up to me and the audience the most piteous prayer, and continue it until a late hour. Would that individual's petition be in the spirit and understanding? It might be in the spirit of distress, and so far command our best and warmest sympathies; but where would be the understanding? Would we not get tired? Would we not think the individual a lunatic? And however much we might pity, would seek to free ourselves in some way from so uncomfortable a position. Thus the workings of all the faculties of the human mind. But to my subject, education.

As I am in the habit, and have been of late years, of thinking for myself, and doing things in my own way, be not startled if I treat the subject of education in a new and somewhat novel light. In doing so I shall confine myself to four general propositions:

1. The individuals to be educated; their qualifications or physiological endowments.
2. The qualifications requisite in a good teacher.
3. The kind of education proper for each individual.
4. The advantages and disadvantages arising from education.

Before entering upon the foregoing propositions I desire to say something on the word education, as I design using it frequently in this discourse. I wish to be fully understood in the meaning which I attach to the word, as I shall use it in its literal signification—instruction imparted, and the formation of manners and character—not using it as it is generally, to mean scholarship, as taught in the schools and seminaries of science.

To my first proposition: the individual to be educated. These are, each and every one who is in this wide world of ours; from "the puling infant in the nurse's arms," to decrepit old age. But those who are the more immediately to be looked after, and require the most care, are the young; those whose characters are forming; for a character may be so formed that to change their condition materially is out of the question, unless surrounding circumstances be also changed. Be the circumstances what they may, an indi-

vidual, and even whole classes of individuals, may be compelled to follow the destiny fixed by surrounding incidents. For instance, a child born a Hindoo, and brought up one, if he continues to live among his countrymen, is compelled to be an Indian in thought, word, and action. The same holds good in regard to all other nations whose respective national opinions and manners have long obtained. As scarcely two individuals ever look alike, so it is that hardly two individuals are to be found who think alike. This depends upon the difference in the organization of individuals; and as all the sensations and emotions of each and every individual in existence depend upon organization, it is of the utmost importance that we first understand the law of our nature and the physiology of the human faculties.

There is, in addition to the common form or development of the animal economy, four temperaments, each of which is variously modified. Hence the diversity of character in individuals of the same class. These different temperaments are generally known as the bilious, sanguine, nervous, and lymphatic, each constituting a separate and distinct character, and to a considerable extent indicating the kind of organization of the individual. The lymphatic—the lax-fiber, sluggishness, or dullness in all its perceptions and motions, requiring a large amount of stimulus to excite action. In the nervous temperament the opposite condition is present; all the perceptions are quick, and all the motions are performed with eagerness, hence the nervous individual will perform in an hour what would require three for the lymphatic. The bilious affords the greatest power of endurance. The purely sanguine is seldom found, the tendency to overaction being mostly destroyed in early life. This last temperament, united with the bilious and nervous, in proper proportions, with full development of brain, muscles, and bones, produces the best possible specimens of human organization. The body is not only capable of making great efforts, but has powers of endurance; the mind, too, acting on an equally gigantic scale. But there is another important matter to be taken into account in forming our opinions of the capabilities of an individual for endurance. A person may have a tolerable appearance and possess the requisite temperament and yet want proper stamina in some of the important organs. A well-formed stomach, heart, and lungs are of the utmost importance. If the stomach be small or deficient in action, proper powers of digestion will be lacking. If the chest be narrow, the lungs can not play properly, though the changes in the blood that usually take place in this organ will not be affected; but I have so far hinted at these subjects that it will

be understood that physical organization is of primary importance. A few words on the subject of the brain will end this part of my subject. It is now so universally admitted that the mind depends upon the organization of the brain, that no argument is necessary to establish the fact. To have a sound mind we must have a sound brain, and to have a well-balanced, comprehensive mind we must have a brain well-developed and under the influence of a proper temperament, sustained by a strong vitative system. The great diversity of temperaments and developments produce a great variety of character. This seems to have been a wise provision of nature, as this diversity is necessary for man's happiness in the supplying of his wants and desires, thereby fitting him for the various stations in life. From the positions here taken it is evident that to make a man useful and happy, it is of the utmost importance in the cultivation of his mind to do it in accordance with his natural developments. Every day's experience shows us that these different developments do exist, not only in nations but in individuals of the same nation. One may be naturally ambitious, and use all the means in his power to obtain place, station, and distinction among his fellow-men. Another loves ease, another the study of philosophy, another the mechanic arts, another the accumulation of wealth, and no toil or danger deters him from engaging in perilous enterprises, provided he sees a well-grounded hope of success in obtaining the object of his desires. There is another class of individuals that should not be forgotten. They are those who seek but to gratify the animal desires, and seem happy only when they can obtain the gratification of their wants in the indulgence of their appetites. It will not be denied by any that the gratification of all the desires enumerated is proper and even laudable, provided they be regulated by reason and governed by correct moral sentiments. Then, to educate correctly, it is first necessary to study the natural tendencies of the child; second to become acquainted with his physical organization, and learn if his powers of body are equal or capable of sustaining those pursuits to which his mind naturally turns. If not, direct the mind in that course which his physiological developments indicate, keeping in view the natural tendency of his intellectual organization.

My second proposition: The qualifications necessary for a teacher. First, it should be an individual of good constitution; of fine physical and intellectual developments, well-schooled in the sciences proposed being taught. He should understand the philosophy of teaching, and have a love for the business. Above all he should be able to govern himself by sound moral sentiments and

force of character. He should be so situated as to teach by example, as well by precept, demonstrating the matter taught as far as demonstration be possible, explaining its philosophical and moral bearings. Without these requisites no individual can be a good teacher. As it is out of the question for one person to understand everything, it is important to have a variety of instructors, and a variety of places for instruction. Every department should be under the guidance of an instructor, engaged in his or her particular branches. By this means not only the teacher but the pupils, if properly directed, will be constantly deriving pleasure from their pursuits, gratifying the natural tendencies of their developments, and that, too, under the direction of moral government, and will at last attain the great object, end, and aim of human existence, happiness. There is another matter worthy of our most serious attention. A teacher should be well acquainted, not only with the branches to be taught, but with the physiology of the human system and the philosophy of the human mind. An intimate knowledge of these branches of learning, directed by the moral sentiments, would not only enable the instructor to guide and direct the pupil in the paths of virtue, by the influence of the better feelings of our nature, but he would improve his physical organs and maintain that just balance so indispensable to a full development of the whole man. A due course of exercise, by which all the muscles of the body are brought into play, thereby rendering them vigorous and active, is not only conducive of happiness, but is the means of prolonging existence and rendering the individual more intellectual and useful to himself and to mankind.

Our present modes of instruction are quite deficient in this respect. The excitability of the whole system, under the present methods of instruction in our schools, is expended through the brain, at the expense of the vitative and muscular system; thus it becomes enfeebled, and consequently fails to afford that support and nourishment which is absolutely necessary for its wants. The brain itself flags, the mind fails, irritability ensues, and the individual is only able to exert his intellectual powers but for a short interval; and, in consequence of his incapacity, is forced to abandon a literary course, or drag out a miserable existence, in applying his learning to the uses for which it was acquired. Learning is only beneficial when it can be applied in procuring happiness. It must, to be useful, be made to minister to our physical wants, to subserve the moral sentiments, or gratify the intellect—the reflective faculties of man—the reasoning powers of our species.

My third proposition: the kind of education proper for each individual. As before stated, the object of human existence is happiness. Then the first object is to ascertain what will conduct the most to that object. This will depend, as before intimated, upon the physical organization. Mind is dependent for its manifestation upon the development of the brain and the temperament of each individual. The vitative system, the physiology and developments of the brain, therefore, should all be well studied; the natural character of the mind understood, and the general powers of the whole system duly appreciated; the course of instruction adopted which is best suited to the capacity and ability of each individual. Where the developments favor the arts, a practical education in some one of them will be the most successful. If too literary or philosophical let this be the chosen field of labor. If commercial, then a course of instruction suited to the various wants and intelligencies so essential to success in commercial enterprise. Thousands fail for the want of attention to these special matters and studies. By far the largest portion of mankind are fitted for rural employments. The cultivation of our mother earth not only affords us amusement and pleasure, but renders the body vigorous, and at the same time furnishes us with the means for supplying the wants of our existence. Yet, of all subjects, this has received the least of man's attention, so far as its philosophy is concerned. Agriculture, until quite recently, has been regarded as a dull round of anxious toil, a kind of menial business; a business only fitted to those who, from poverty or ignorance, were rendered incapable of higher attainments; hence the phrase, "he is nothing but a clodhopper," implying that he is of but little account in the scale of society; but this is far from the truth, for the time is now at hand when the "clodhoppers" will be the lords of the land. Their little homes, with their industry directed by a knowledge of things as they exist in nature, will afford intelligent amusement and facilities, by which they will be rendered the governing principle of the land. They, constituting a majority, must and will govern. Give to this class intelligence in the way of their business, and let them learn that a little home will supply their wants as well as millions would. They will grow contented. Let them fully understand that labor renders the body strong and the intellect vigorous, and they will spurn the fashionable rounds of the cities by which the body and mind are rendered effeminate. The study of agricultural chemistry, geology, and their practical application, will expand the mind and develop new resources, which will lessen toil and afford time for intellectual culture,

developing the moral as well as reflective powers. These, acting in harmony, lead man so that he is governed by moral law instead of a law of force; or, what has been more frequently and worse, fanaticism; that worst of all despotisms.

My last proposition: The advantages and disadvantages of education. This, to a considerable extent, has been pointed out in the preceding remarks. But there is a view of this subject, which has been almost entirely overlooked, one which is of vast importance—early impressions. The time when these begin can not be fixed with certainty. That they commence as soon as sensation begins I have no doubt, and that the character for life is, to a great extent, formed in a large number of individuals prior to birth. Impressions created in infancy frequently remain through life. Sensations at this early period, if felt in the brain, awaken the animal faculties of the mind. Those portions of the brain, in which the moral and intellectual faculties are resident, are the last developed, and it is not until some years have elapsed that these portions bear a just proportion to the others. In many individuals that balance is never obtained. Whole tribes and nations exist in which the moral and intellectual powers fall far below the development of the animal feelings. A lengthy treatise would be necessary to fully establish the premises in the last few paragraphs, but a few hints must suffice at this time. As far as man has been able to investigate nature, every particle of matter, whether animate or inanimate, is under fixed and unchangeable laws. The imponderable substances, electricity, galvanism, and magnetism are also under fixed laws. Just in proportion as man becomes acquainted with the laws that govern their action, we are enabled to not only demonstrate at will their various phenomena, but to use, and make them subserve the purposes of man. The law of production and reproduction in vegetables is unerring under the same circumstances. The same holds good in animals; and, reasoning from analogy, we must conclude that the mind of all animals is under fixed laws; and, in the higher order of animals, the law is equally unerring, but more complex or difficult to be understood. All writers on metaphysics agree that man has perceptive, reflective, moral, and animal feelings, and that the action of either may and is followed by muscular motion or action. The action will be under the influence of the dominant faculty or perception; for instance, an individual under the strong influence of the animal feelings will act in accordance with that influence, absolutely controlling the admonitions of the moral sentiments. The lower order

of animals are governed by an instinctive principle, which, when left to nature alone, is unerringly directed in all that relates to their wants. Not so in man; he has but few instincts.

The perceptive, moral, and animal feelings afford a wide range or field over which the reflective faculties of the mind may and were designed to hold sway. The violation of any of the laws to which man is subject is invariably followed by sensations in the mental man, hence he is at once informed of the violation, and suffers the penalty of the violation. Here arises the admonition, the lesson, and the accountability. For instance, if an individual violates the moral feeling of benevolence, and perpetrates an act that does injustice to his fellow-man, and robs him of a right or deprives him of a privilege to which he is justly entitled, he has done that individual an injury that will awaken conscience in himself and his reflective powers, both of which will condemn the act. Society too will not only, if virtuously directed, condemn the act but will take steps to prevent like occurrences. The individual perpetrating the offense will be warned concerning his wrong-doing, and thereby receives an admonition for the future to keep alive the moral feelings in order to restrain the propensities. A second violation justly deserves punishment, and one which is certain to come.

Man is a social being, formed for society, and bound to obey social laws founded upon the true law of social compact. St. Paul makes a most beautiful remark on this subject. He says: "He or they that are without the law and the prophets are a law unto themselves," and such has been the simple teachings of this simple law, that all who have followed its dictates have been led into the high road of happiness and true greatness. The observance of the simple laws of nature accumulates a vast stock of useful information, in all that concerns life and happiness. Look back into the past, see an Aristotle, a Socrates, a Plato, a Pythagoras, a Cicero, Newton, Shakspeare, a Washington, a Franklin, and a host of such names, are they not living monuments of this principle? I think so. And here is one of the finest fields left open and nearly unoccupied for the collection of facts in regard to transmitted influences and the force of early impressions, showing the law of human developments and influences from developments. No branch of science is more needed, and none more neglected. By carefully studying these phenomena we find that nature, in the law of animal reproduction and organization, first provides for the physical man, lastly the moral and reflective. A knowledge of this law is of primary importance, for upon it depends the proper



developments by education, and to a great extent the good or evil of after life. In the physical man no fact is better established than the one that exercise of one part of the system more than another enlarges the part thus exercised, and renders it more vigorous. The pedestrian has shorter, larger, and stronger legs, while the upper limbs are proportionately small. In the blacksmith the arms are the larger and the stronger. Those exercises which bring into play the muscles of the chest, such as fencing, playing on wind-instruments, causes the chest to expand and thereby giving greater play to the motions of the heart and lungs. The exercise of a given part determines the fluids which nourish and support the system to that part; hence the increase and skillful cultivation of plants is upon this principle. By supplying them with an abundance of those substances that enter into their composition their growth is increased. This same principle is applicable to the development of the human mind; it awakens in the brain thought, and for a time an increase of the vital fluid is determined to the portion aroused. It may be continued so long as to produce injury, and be followed by insanity, or imbecility, but if only healthily excited it is invigorated. The better class, as they are called, who reside in our cities, are generally more intelligent but effeminate. The peasant is stout and robust though less informed. There is a middle class of individuals who have been favored with good physical organization, and from the force of circumstances have been compelled to much exercise in early youth, and afterward circumstances called the mind into action by which they have risen to distinction, and have become capable of succeeding in great efforts of both body and mind. Many instances of this kind could be adduced in our own country. The human mind being made up of perceptive, reflective, moral, and animal faculties or sensations, all dependent upon organic arrangement for their manifestation, it is of the utmost importance to understand the law of development, and as we have given the mode we will now apply its principles.

The savage man, wherever he is found, is under the influence of his animal appetites, because no incentives exist to call into action the reflective and moral feelings, except in a limited degree. Take the half-civilized man and he is yet under the influence of his animal desires, for what little of intelligence he has gained is applied to gratify his animal appetites alone. The art of war is improved, the love of conquest and power predominates. The gratification of all the sensual desires, gluttony, gaming, debauchery of every kind, and the little knowledge acquired is made to minister to the

passions. The religion of these people partakes of the same character. If gluttony and debauchery be the dominant passions, their gods are of this description, and are made to revel in all licentiousness. Such a people are cotemporaneous with the ancient Jews—the worshipers of the god Baal. If the fierce and fiery passions be dominant, so is their religion of the arbitrary, tyrannical, and vindictive kind. Such a people are to be found in the believers of the Mahomedan faith.

The ancient Grecians, with the exception of a few philosophers and good men, cultivated the reflective only to minister to the animal desires—sensuality and combativeness. Hence their god Mars, the god of war; Bacchus, the god of wine; the goddesses Venus, Minerva, and Isis, of the Romans; all these latter deities were worshiped to pander to their wanton desires. The early history of the church is not wanting in examples for evidence of uncultivated reasoning powers, to give a striking contrast between that devotion and benevolence taught by Christ and a well-cultivated intellect which unfolds the laws of God. To have a pure and undefiled religion, the moral feelings must be directed by a well-cultivated intellect and the reflective powers of man's mind; however, I am not giving a lecture on religion. The examples given, I hope, will be sufficient to elucidate my position in the development of the human mind.

That these are facts, enduring facts, and undeniable, the history of man fully proves. Take the history of a more civilized people, where the arts have been cultivated, philosophy studied, agriculture pursued, the thoughts become not only more pure and refined, but the religion of such a people is sublime. The doctrine of one self-existent God is taught, whose attributes are benevolence and love. How sublime the idea, how beautiful the thought! A people regulated by these influences hold a social intercourse with their fellow-men, while kindness and the softer feelings of the human heart govern. These constitute the good Samaritan spoken of by the Savior. Thus we have established, we think beyond successful contradiction, that both the body and mind are developed in accordance with the direction given to the mind of the young. If the animal feelings alone be cultivated the man will be but little more than a brute. If the reflective faculties be cultivated, without reference to the moral feelings, the knowledge acquired will be used to gratify the animal appetites, and whichever of these are in the ascendancy they will give the direction. If the combative and destructive be the ones, such a community will use all the intelligence acquired in conquests, subjecting the weak and

defenseless to their gratifications; such a people existed in one age of the Roman Empire. If the love of wealth and luxury be the dominant feeling, then the intelligence acquired will be used in the arts necessary to accumulate wealth, and to indulge in all its kindred feelings; such a people existed in the ancient Tyrians, and to a great extent exists in the English and Americans of the present day. If to this character you add the cultivation of the moral sentiments, so that all our acts be regulated by moral feelings, then will mens' actions be governed by the eternal principles of truth as it exists in fact. The reflective faculties being well cultivated in the knowledge of things, and the moral sentiments being awakened, will be unerringly directed. The moral perceptions are made up of a number of sensations; justice is one. Strict justice would in many instances punish what benevolence would tolerate and even approve. Reverence, combined with strict justice, would make exactions that would be severe, arbitrary, and sometimes shock the softer feelings. To settle these differences correctly, the law of *love* should be called into requisition and directed by well-cultivated reflective powers. The rule of decision would then be based upon the reasonableness of things as founded in justice influenced by love. In the thirteenth chapter of the First Corinthians, St. Paul gives us a most beautiful illustration of this principle. He says, "Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal." Again, he says, "Though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing." This whole chapter is replete with instruction of this kind, and which we would do well to study.

One other matter remains to be spoken of—the influences which are produced by the reaction of the principles taught. If they are bad, the individual becomes more confirmed in wickedness; the sensations and emotions become incorporated into the constitution. If good, a similar result is produced, but of a different kind; the individual thinks and acts correctly without an effort. The concatenation between mind and motion is such that the one follows the other as a natural result or law; and these sensations, good or bad, as they may be, are frequently transmitted to offspring. To sustain this position a large number of facts could be adduced, which for want of time I must omit. By this law of reaction the human species are improved, or else are made to degenerate. The Anglo-Saxon race has, for more than a thousand years, stood as a monument of these principles. Their steady and con-

tinned advance in all the sciences, the developments of the mind, by which a knowledge of the physical laws of the universe are unfolded and made to subserve the purposes of man, speak in language too strong to deny that influences are transmitted. The Italians and Grecians are samples of the deterioration of man, through failing to actively employ the moral and reflective powers. Look at Athens, in the days of her ancient glory, her schools of education, her noble edifices, and the gigantic intellect of her sons! Where is she now? In that same spot where once shown forth her greatness, though yet inhabited by the descendants of this once great people, they are taught and instructed in their mother tongue by *foreigners*, the masses being but a grade or so above the savage man. Where is now the once imperial Rome? Then giving laws to the whole world from her proud and majestic city; her grave Senate chambers, her illustrious senators and citizens. I ask again, where are they? Oh, how fallen! That once mighty empire has dwindled down to a handful; her greatness has gone! She only retains the *relics* of her ancient luster; her native sculptors are superseded by foreigners, who from the rich quarries of that fine, beautiful marble, to be found only in Italy, embellish each their native land. Why this mighty change? She departed from that course of education that kept alive the moral and intellectual powers, and thus became degenerated, and transmitted that degeneracy to her posterity.

With these facts before us we can at once understand the importance of education, its bearings and relations. And here permit me, in all good feeling, and with a due regard to the softer sex, to say a few words upon *female* education. Though fully aware of the influence of the tyrant fashion, it is too potent, for thousands are sacrificed annually to it. Many a rosebud and blooming flower is not only faded, but sent to an untimely grave by the tyrant, a fashionable education. As you love life, and as you love posterity, I say to the fair ones, learn to spurn that which violates nature's laws. In childhood, gambol and sport in all innocent amusements, such as will expand the body and invigorate the mind, and as you grow up cultivate the mind in all that will be useful. When you have arrived at womanhood, be pure and bright as the morning sun, and harmless as doves. Remember that the young are to be committed to your care, those who are to be our future governors, statesmen and judges. Then learn that which will be useful and practical in the every-day pursuits of life, so that you may transmit to posterity a rich legacy—health and

sound intellect. Well might David exclaim, "What is man, that Thou art mindful of him; or the son of man, that Thou visitest him with crowns of honor and of glory."

I am aware that the course of education aimed at in this address would be a great innovation upon our present modes of instruction. Society has for a long time needed a change. Education, to be useful, must be practical, and made to subserve the common purposes of life. Agricultural schools might be made to supersede nearly all others, in an inland country; but be the kind what they may, they should be so conducted as to develop man's whole nature, moral, intellectual, and physical.

In conclusion, let me say to the young of both sexes, if you wish happiness, learn wisdom; for wisdom begets knowledge, and knowledge begets understanding, and understanding comprehends the universe. Learn to be contented with what you can not remedy. Make things around you subserve your purposes, remembering that true happiness consists in obeying the laws of man's existence, the violation of which, either morally or physically, is attended with unerring punishment. To conclude, I will recite the beautiful verses of Theognis, quoted by the good and great Socrates at the banquet of Xenophon:

"When virtuous thoughts warm the celestial mind,  
 With generous heat each sentiment refined,  
 Th' immortal perfumes breathing from the heart,  
 With grateful odor sweetens every part.  
 But when our vicious passions fire the soul,  
 The clearest fountain grows corrupt and foul;  
 The virgin springs which should untainted flow,  
 Run thick and blacken all the stream below."

How sublime the poet, how beautiful the thought! May guardian angels protect us! May man learn to govern himself by the laws of his own existence, is the prayer of your humble speaker.

Since writing the foregoing, I received from an unknown source the following paper, which I will read, and then follow with a few hints in answer:

"Education, to be valuable, must constitute a knowledge of nature, of the things that compose us, and surrounding circumstances. What we are, and

where we are, and how capacitated and situated; a knowledge to apply our capacities on the materials created for that purpose, and so essential to our well-being; a knowledge that is equally essential and practicable for all, and universally attainable, which implies the means. Are the means universally attainable by the many? Are they not absolutely limited to subsistence at the suffrage of others, by our existing state of civilization, let alone any means for education. How then to be attained? To be left to the charitable sympathies of the already engrossers of the earth (the foundation of all the means), and depend on them for both the means and kind of education. And what kind would that be likely to be? A knowledge to bewilder and dazzle, to blind their real interests, and make them more timid by superstition and patient under labor, to contribute to the luxuries, extravagance, and ease of the few. The conclusion then is that the means must be universally and individually accessible, and for that man must be restored to his equal individual inalienable right to the earth, in order to procure the means and be independent of the caprice of others, to direct education for their exclusive interests. This right has been withheld by arbitrary and assumed power hitherto, hence the ignorance of the masses and inequality of knowledge, and of that spurious education which tends to make man more miserable than happy; for history and observation show that in proportion as governments approached to the toleration and protection of the rights of the many, in the same ratio were the people enlightened and happy."

The substance of this paper is the two following propositions:

*First.* The physical and mental constitution of man.

*Second.* The best means to develop the faculties of mind and body.

Each of those propositions naturally divide themselves into two parts. The first into that which relates to the physical man and that which relates to the mind. The first division of the first proposition relates to man's body, which to understand fully requires a knowledge of the laws of organic life, called physiology. I have pointed out in the preceding lecture much that belongs to this subject, but to understand it well much time and study is requisite. The best work for common readers on this subject with which I am acquainted is Dr. Andrew Combe's *Physiology*, and George Combe on the "Constitution of Man." The second part of the first proposition is that which relates to the mind. Of this division I have said a great deal in the preceding lecture, but much still remains to be learned. It is a subject that until quite recently was almost unknown, or has been treated in such an obscure manner that it was difficult to understand what was intended. For those who wish to understand this subject thoroughly I would

refer them to the works of Spurzheim, Combe, and Fowler. This latter author has written a number of works of much value, and deserves to be first in every man's library. The first division of the second proposition, which relates to the development of the human mind: Many important things pertaining to this subject have been treated of in the lecture, but a volume could be written in explaining the play of all the faculties and the mode of developing them in accordance with the laws governing man's mind. Those who wish to acquaint themselves with this subject should read Fowler on "Self-Improvement," "Love and Parentage," and "Matrimony," and his work on "Natural and Revealed Religion." Also, George Combe on "Moral Philosophy."

The second part of the second proposition implies—as is justly stated in the paper—the means to accomplish so desirable an end as the true development of the mind of every human being that is in the world, or that may ever come into existence. This part of the subject embraces all the municipal laws of society. I find but few to agree with me, however, on the subject. In my opinion, by far the largest number of governments which have ever existed have been as good as a majority of the people governed. In the main the mass of the people have it in their power to change the form of their government and their laws. To have good laws you must have an intelligent community, who are influenced by sound moral principles. In the matter of intelligence and correct morals a fearful responsibility rests on parents. Many an individual is ruined for the want of correct training during childhood. This early training is of the very first importance, but the question arises how can an ignorant parent, or one unacquainted with the subjects and principles necessary to be taught, be a teacher of his children? It is simply impossible. But can not this be remedied? To a great extent it can. But few in this age of the world but are sensible of their ignorance of almost everything. Then is it not their bounden duty to acquire intelligence? Most assuredly it is, and to do so we have abundant means. Books upon books upon all the natural sciences can be had, and there are but few so poor but could, if their means were properly applied, purchase them in sufficient numbers for all useful information. The time and money spent at horse-races and for ardent spirits, the use of which is injurious to health and morals, and above all the money expended in imitating the extravagances of the rich, who lavish their means in useless expenditures and luxuries, that make them less happy, through its injurious effects on the constitution, thus weakening

the physical and mental man. The time spent in idleness at grog-shops and other places of resort, to say nothing of the long winter evenings that are generally spent in idle amusement, talking scandal of their neighbors, would, if spent in reading, make every man acquainted with all that which would be useful in life. In these United States, where each is left free to think and act for himself, all that I have suggested might be accomplished by a well-regulated system of economy in the expenditure of money, and the application of time.

There yet remains unspoken of a means of acquiring knowledge by the poor, which I regard as of vast importance. That is the organization of neighborhood and village lyceums and library associations. Let each neighborhood of a hundred individuals organize themselves into a library association; procure a library of well-selected books at a cost of not more than two dollars to each person; a sum will thus be raised fully sufficient to procure, at the present low price of printed matter, a useful and interesting library, embracing various works, and also the most important periodicals of the day. Let the library association meet once a week in summer, and twice a week in the winter, and form themselves into a lyceum. They can discuss the subjects of agriculture, chemistry, the mechanic arts, philosophy, governments, with occasional lectures from learned men. By adopting such a course, and conducting it with prudence, and a sincere desire to promote the common good and general welfare of mankind, would in a few years produce a change, not only in the advancement of the intelligence of such a community, but would place them in the possession of the comforts and conveniences of life. I never knew a man in my life that was strictly moral, industrious, and prudent in the management of his affairs, and lived peaceably with his neighbors, but what was beloved and lived comfortably. The means of acquiring information and power—for I hold that they are inseparable—of which I have been speaking, is within the compass of almost every neighborhood; and so long as they fail to exercise the power they have, they not only stand in their own light, but allow the chains of power to be closer drawn around and riveted. A word, in regard to the duty of the Government, towards advancing the object of education, and I shall close. In Republican governments it is of the utmost importance that the people be virtuous and intelligent. To accomplish this it does seem to me to be the bounden duty of legislators to provide a fund sufficient to educate all the children of the State. And that pro-



vision should be made for the erection of school-houses and seminaries, where the poor man's child as well as the rich can have an opportunity of receiving an education. Knowledge is power, and, if it was generally diffused, power would be advancing from the few to the many, as it is now going from the many to the few. The subject of *rights* and *powers* is in the hands of the many; but as long as they sleep upon those rights, by remaining in *ignorance*, so long will the few govern the many. Hence, the remark before made, the laws of a people will be in exact proportion to their intelligence; for man is a selfish being, and will first provide for himself power, station, and wealth. Then rise, ye masses, and put on intelligence as the armor of your strength. The governors can govern only by the consent of the governed. The wealthy can live only by the industry of the poor or less fortunate. In conclusion I will give a few more suggestions. There are but two methods in civil society of accomplishing any considerable object; one is by force, and the other is by moral suasion, directed by intelligence. Intelligence and moral sentiment revolt at the first mode of acquiring influence. It awakens the worst passions of man's nature. It engenders strife, and ends in the sacrifice of the rights of the weak and vanquished party. The principles of benevolence, of justice, and all the high and ennobling feelings of man require that all improvements in society be accomplished by revolutions in the minds of men. To effect this the plans or propositions must be founded in wisdom, guided by benevolence and justice. Plans thus originated will acquire strength, and as they strengthen they increase in importance. If a union of action be had, and a general diffusion of sentiment be effected and enforced by moral suasion, the object will be accomplished. Then, I again say to philanthropists, and all who wish to be benefactors of their race, organize lyceums and library associations, and by a united effort send to the masses that intelligence which is so much needed. All are acquainted in this country with the power of the press. Who is ignorant of its mighty influence in manufacturing political partisans? If but half this influence was wielded in the dissemination of the knowledge of man's true nature, and his relations to God, to things around him, and to his fellow-men, a very different state of society would exist. Then organize, secure a press, publish a paper embodying the philosophy of man as he is and as he can be made. Teach him all his relations; his natural rights, political as well as civil, and with this teach him all *his obligations*. To me it is plain that all our benevolent and religious institutions

of the day are behind the spirit of the age, full of quibbles and non-essentials. Orthodoxy against heterodoxy; heterodoxy not only against orthodoxy, but against one another. That is, reformers divide on trival things, and divide to their own destruction. In short, we forget to acquaint ourselves with simple truth. Christ said, love God with all thy heart, mind, might, and strength; and thy neighbor as thyself. Upon this hang all the law and the prophets. How the practices of the present day comport with the foregoing I shall not say. Judge ye each for yourselves, and judge impartially; first get the beam out of your own eye before you attempt to take the mote out of your neighbor's.

## APPENDIX TO THE LECTURE ON EDUCATION.

---

It is now twenty years since the proposed plan for a school was written out, though the principles embraced in it I had been maturing for several years. It was some four years after the plan was proposed before the Lecture on Education was written and delivered. The subject of education, or rather the instruction of youth, has occupied much of my thoughts ever since. I have read much that had a bearing on the subject, and all that goes to give a correct view of the constitution of the human mind; but, from the multiplicity of cares in business which claimed my attention, I neglected to keep extracts from authors, and now I have no access to a library by which I might refresh my memory, and if I had it would extend this appendix to too great a length. I shall now only attempt to give the conclusions to which I have arrived on the subject.

It is one but little understood, and one too in which no great or radical change can be made at once. Man is a progressive being. Comparatively but few men are in advance of the age in which they live, and those few, however industrious they may be in propogating their opinions, make but slow progress in establishing them, even those relating to things which are of common utility, unless the individual be in possession of all the means to carry into effect and fully demonstrate their usefulness, importance, and advantages. Even with these advantages it is a work of time to get any thing new, however useful, into general use. The operations of the human mind are obscure, and as a general thing but little attended to. The great difficulty of demonstrating the fact must necessarily render any considerable change, in the opinions of men in regard to the best mode of cultivating the mind, slow and difficult. Add to this another fact; men differ as widely in the constitution of the mind as they do in their physical organizations, hence the mode of reasoning differs, and the conclusions to which they arrive are different, and the only way by which this can be overcome is by fully understanding the first

principles. Mankind have advanced very slowly in learning the operations of the simple laws of nature, while the more hidden and complex are but little studied or known. The most comprehensive minds have but just entered the domain of nature in her imponderable agents, which are no doubt the great mediums which nature employs to bring about the greatest results in all her operations. This is owing to the lack of individual means to pursue any one branch of study, and the means of procuring the apparatus necessary to demonstrate the facts they have in the outline discovered. It is extremely difficult to bring the public mind to the conclusion, that each and every individual is interested in the advancement of a correct knowledge of any thing that does not immediately concern them.

The introduction of common schools by laws, where the first principles are taught, are of recent origin, and their introduction has been attended with great opposition and difficulty. Academies and colleges are few, and are to a great extent limited to the wealthy, and even these are confined almost exclusively with a view to the learned professions—a class who contribute but little to the advancement of the masses of mankind. In these professions each individual seeks to throw around it a mystery to advance his own interest and consequence, though it be a false notion induced by a cold and selfish interest, yet it is constantly acted upon, when an open frank course would in the end give him far greater standing and consequence among his fellow-men. But the day is now dawning, and the rapid strides that have been made in the useful arts in almost every thing has given a new impulse to thought and mental activity. If this activity of thought can only be controlled and properly led into the channel of sound moral and philosophic investigation, we may hope that in a few generations hence man will be on a much higher plane of intellectuality and civilization. To trace briefly the causes which have led to our present mental activity will not be improper. It is by the lights of the past that we improve; one point gained serves as a stepping-stone to a higher advance, and it is by this kind of advancement that we must expect to improve. The first, and one of the most important changes, was the acquisition of the liberty of conscience, where the play of the human intellect was left free to investigate the phenomena which were found all around us; and although this free investigation often led to a difference of opinion, this only continued until the truth was established. It was a very wise remark of that able statesman, Thomas Jefferson, that “We had nothing to fear from error if truth was left free to

combat it." This liberty of freely expressing thought on all subjects leads to free and full investigation of all questions. The mind expands, and as one point is gained and mastered a further field is opened for investigation. The lyceum system was founded by Joshua Holbrook, and gave a new spring to thought and action. One of its modes for instruction was propounding questions for discussion, in which parties took sides. The powerful stimulus that seems to be inherent in the nature of nearly all men for mastery prompted the greatest exertion of which each was capable. All the available arguments which he was able to command served to strengthen the mind; and as one effort succeeded another new thoughts and facts were developed. As there is no end or limit to the expansion of the human intellect, it may be continued as long as life lasts in this world, and there is no doubt but that it continues in the spirit-sphere.

The labors of Gall and Spurzheim have done much in laying the foundation of a new mental philosophy, by which we now have a much clearer perception of the mind's operations, and the best modes of improving it. The works of Combe and Fowler have done much in giving the mind a proper direction to thought and the acquisition of correct knowledge. I have not the time to pursue these investigations through all their bearings, for it would require a volume. To properly develop the human mind, we must first learn its constitution and its predominating or leading traits. Phrenology, to a great extent, gives even in children those traits, and they can be learned by the parents at a very early period by closely watching the actions of the child. The actions of children, as well as men, are always, when unrestrained, in the direction of the dominant or preponderating faculties of the mind, as it affords a larger amount of pleasurable feeling. This is more so in children than in cultivated men. In a cultivated man there are trains of associated ideas which lead to final results, where favorable or unfavorable terminations are found. To obtain a favorable end, the reasonable man will forego some pleasurable emotion for the greater and more favorable results; while the child is acting from the dominant emotional feeling, and will so continue to act, until experience teaches the consequence of wrong-doing. Those actions which affect him physically are first learned, both as to their favorable and unfavorable results. Even here, though, strong desires often govern, and although the end is known to terminate unfavorably, the present desires predominate so largely that consequences are wholly lost sight of. Hence the importance of cultivating the intellectual and moral powers, and that conjointly with the emo-

tional. This should be done at an earlier period than is generally attended to, for trains of thought are like trains of motion, they are never entirely lost. Great care is necessary on the part of parents, so that the child may be taught correctly. Thousands of children are ruined by false teaching. Plain and simple truths alone should be taught the child, such as can be easily understood and correctly demonstrated. Dogmatisms or mere assertions are highly injurious, as the child will sooner or later find out the error, and in the discovery will become disgusted; his emotions will become reversed, and instead of aspiring onward to a higher plane, will relapse into apathy, or the mere gratification of his dominant desires. This the well-informed and observing mind may see all around him, and had I time and room, I could demonstrate the fact beyond all contradiction or doubt.

At the present stage of civilization there are developments of mind in every department or pursuit of life; and so varied and numerous are those pursuits that they can afford employment for every grade of development in any rational and legitimate pursuit. The great object should be, in all educational instruction, to cultivate in accordance with the natural developments; for it is impossible to create any thing new; and the errors of all the present systems are an arbitrary mode of instruction from birth to mature years. The mind of each child should be carefully studied, and a course of instruction should be adopted by the parent that will most readily develop all the best traits of the child's character. By this means you please and interest the child, and will soon establish correct trains of thought that become associated with trains of motion or action, which combine to increase pleasure as the child grows up and is eligible for a place in the village or neighborhood school. This principle should not be lost sight of; too much care can not be taken in the selection of a proper and competent teacher; one who is by nature properly endowed with the requisites for teaching; one who can readily judge relative to the character of each child and his ability to learn; and then be able to so classify and arrange the pupils that in their different classes each shall act in harmony with the others. At a more advanced stage the youth should be placed at a select school, where he, with others of like developments, can be taught in accordance with his tastes or desires. By this kind of training he will return with a practical education, and be fitted to follow a pursuit that will not only afford him pleasure, but also the means of acquiring a respectable living. While children are young both sexes should be taught together—as far as possible classed in the same classes. It

excites emulation between them. In their more advanced years, in their select schools, there should be a female department, under the management of competent teachers, where the girls might be taught some one or all the branches of domestic economy along with their other studies. There might be different branches in different schools, some for needle-work, embroidery, etc., and thus dividing the domestic pursuits so that proper selections could be made to suit the different tendencies of the girls.

It is a matter of the first importance in all educational institutions, to observe in their arrangement, as near as may be, the family circle and relations, and as far as possible avoid that distinction which is too often made by wealth; which has been and is yet the bane of civilization and society. Many may object to the foregoing views and tauntingly call it utopian. The haughty aristocrat of wealth will call it the leveling down democracy. On the contrary, it is the leveling up of principle, and to put all on an equal footing for the race of life. The rich man should recollect that if he is not wholly dependent on the hard toil of the poor man for his wealth, he is at least, largely indebted to him for it. What is the daily pittance of the poor laborer compared with the profits derived by the rich from his daily toil? Great indeed is that difference. There is another consideration far beyond this in importance. The children of the wealthy who are brought up in ease and luxury are, in a majority of instances, rendered profligates and wholly unfit to take care of the wealth left by the parents. Besides this the children of the wealthy are but too often deficient in intellect, and with all the training that can be given them they only occupy a medium standard in society. This is so well understood that it has become a saying that the grandchildren of the rich are beggars. The time will come, and is now at hand, when the principle here laid down will be adopted. Look at the graded schools through Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, and Iowa, where from three to six hundred children congregate every day in one common building, are classified and arranged in different rooms with appropriate teachers, all under the supervision and control of a superintendent, and he under the general direction of a board of trustees; every department moving like clock-work in its own appropriate sphere. We have law schools, medical schools, commercial schools where penmanship, book-keeping, and all the transactions of commerce are practically taught, also the whole system of banking operations, as well as other branches of study. These kinds of institutions will soon multiply as the wants of the country may demand. But as yet we lack in one of the most important branches of knowledge,

and that is schools where the science of farming is systematically taught in conjunction with the several mechanical branches, not only practically, but in the most scientific manner. Even in this we have a commencement. The People's College in the State of New York is intended as a school of this kind, and there is an agricultural college commenced in Michigan, in conjunction with a model farm, and the recent acts of Congress in giving lands for the purpose of founding agricultural colleges, this with an Agricultural Bureau, connected with the government, will do much in forwarding these departments which underlay all others. This war once terminated, and the old Union shall have again settled down to the peaceful pursuits of life with equal rights to all, a new race to intellectual culture, in all that is useful to man, will be prosecuted with vigor. It now remains to give the best mode by which to cultivate the youthful mind. I have laid down the rules that should govern, but the best method by which the object can be accomplished remains to be spoken of. Every person who has paid that attention to children which they are entitled to receive from parents and instructors, must have learned that children and youth are not only inquisitive, but seek a short method to arrive at any point. The why, the what, and the use, are always first on their lips when anything new is presented. This, or any one of these questions, should be answered promptly, and as concisely as the subject will admit of. This, with young children, is very important. The child is gratified and is imperceptibly educated, and at ten years of age will be familiar with most things which have come under his observation, and will really know more than one who has been confined exclusively to books. There is another important consideration, parents and teachers should use good language, discarding all provincialisms or vulgarisms; and as often as circumstances will admit children should be taken from home and allowed to mix with the world of mankind. They will by this means see new things or old ones under different circumstances, which gives new impulse to thought, and thus the reasoning powers will be brought into play, especially if the parents take pains to gratify and answer the various questions, which will be asked by the children, during or after the return from such visits.

Another important method of instructing children is by picture-books, embracing a great variety of things. The various pictures will each excite new inquiries, which should be carefully and appropriately answered; if concerning an animal or insects, the habits of the animal, etc., should be carefully explained, and so of



all the pictures. Blocks on which are pasted each letter of the alphabet, in all its forms, should be given to children as playthings. Their attention should be often called to the names of each letter. This will soon familiarize the name with the form of the letter; and, as soon as the letters are learned, they can be formed into words of one syllable, and then into words of two syllables. When thus far advanced the blocks can be given up for the primer or books with short words. In a short time children can thus be taught to read and spell. This should be in the business of the nursery, by the mother, assisted by the father in his idle hours, which should always be spent at home. Each figure or numeral can be pasted on blocks, and can be used as toys or playthings by children, and learned in the same way as the alphabet, as above directed. By multiplying the number of blocks to one hundred and forty-four all the simple rules of arithmetic can be learned, and in a practical manner. The multiplication of numbers can easily be learned by a simple arrangement of the blocks thus:

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12
2 are											
2	4	6	8	10	12	14	16	18	20	22	24
3 are											
6	12	18	24	30	36	42	48	54	60	66	72

Bring down each time the upper block, and add the proper number. In a very short time a child will learn to arrange the numbers. Addition can also be learned by arranging the blocks in a perpendicular row, and then placing the number which each line foots up, with a block containing the proper number. As soon as the child becomes familiar with the numbers, and learns to add, he can be taught subtraction, division, and multiplication. From this they should be taught in mental arithmetic, of which we fortunately now have quite a number simplified to the lowest point of which numbers are capable.

Grammar, to a very considerable extent, can be taught by questions and answers, and the child may, at quite an early period, learn the parts of speech, and their use and application. Commence at the beginning. *Question.* What is English Grammar? *Answer.* The art of speaking and writing the English language with propriety. *Q.* How many parts is it divided into? *A.* Four—Orthography, Etymology, Syntax, and Prosody. *Q.* What is Orthography? *A.* The art of spelling and writing correctly. *Q.* What is Etymology? *A.* The derivation of words or certain articulate sounds; the signs of our ideas. *Q.* How many parts of

speech are there? A. Nine, viz.: Article, Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Adverb, Adjective, Preposition, Interjection, and Conjunction. Q. What is a Noun? A. The name of any person, place, or thing. And so on, through the whole, commencing with the most simple parts.

Let the questions at the commencement be of the most simple kind, and the answers to correspond. They should be repeated until the child can repeat them correctly; and, as it progresses, let the questions be of a more advanced kind, and so on. In this way a good knowledge of grammar may be obtained. I regard a correct knowledge of grammar as of great importance in every situation of life. First, in acquiring a knowledge of it enlarges the capacity to reason, and in the judicious selection of words it not only conveys an idea more clearly, but in a short and concise manner. One word to the point often conveys a more clear and distinct idea of the meaning than half a dozen otherwise would. I have felt the want, through all my life, of a full and correct knowledge of grammar, and the force of words. Most of young persons would be greatly improved by the study of logic. Elocution greatly improves the beauty and harmony of a discourse. Words appropriate to the subject, properly enunciated and logically arranged, give power and beauty even to common conversation. After children are so far advanced as to be able to read great care is necessary in selecting books for them. They at first should be in the form of questions and answers, and afterwards in the form of stories. The best which I have ever seen published are those of "Peter Parley," by Goodrich. They have not been as universally used as their merit warranted; one obstacle, I suppose, was the price. They were higher than other books used in schools. All children are pleased with something in the form of a tale or story. There is no subject but what might be arranged as a story. I do not know of any one subject that needs a change so much in the form and matter as the books in our primary schools. Although there has been great improvement of late in the manner of the books for common schools, yet a further improvement is much needed. Fortunately for the young a great improvement has been made in common arithmetic and the use of blackboards in schools, and also in geography. Yet we lack in what is called reading-books for children. At the end of each lesson there should be given a list of the principal words in the lesson, and opposite the word its definition or meaning, as is given in the McGuffey Readers, only more extended. The child should be required to repeat the words and their definitions. The more

instruction that can be given in a conversational manner the better, especially to the young. The impression is stronger, and lasts longer. Too much stress can not be placed upon this point.

In towns of considerable size we can have one or more schools where quite small children can be taught, those from three to five years old. Each lesson should be very short, and children of this age should not be confined too closely, only put under such restraint as will render them orderly. The teaching should be nearly all of it done orally. One or two schools are now conducted on this principle in the city of New York. From the notices which I have seen in the weekly newspapers they are on the plan I propose. One is taught by Mrs. Halleck. Young ladies are also taught in the same building. This school is on the Kindergarten system, with which I am not acquainted. I recently saw a notice that the plan had been published in England. A school for young men and girls, or boys from fourteen to twenty and girls from twelve to eighteen, should be a select school. A school of the higher grade should be so arranged that there be separate and distinct departments for the various branches of learning. A grammar department, where all of the parts can be fully learned, including writing and composition. A mathematical department, where all of its different branches are thoroughly taught. A philosophical department; this should embrace chemistry and all the branches of natural philosophy (history should be added as a relaxer of the mind.) If all these several branches are taught in the same edifice, under different teachers, there should be a separate building used as a lecture-room, where the whole school should assemble at least once a week to listen to a lecture by one of the professors or teachers, with the necessary apparatus to demonstrate the facts taught, on some branch of science. These meetings would not only improve and advance each in knowledge, but the social arrangement would bring them into harmony with each other. There should be specific times for play and exercise in the open air, whenever the weather would permit, and it should be done under the eye and in presence of the teachers. There should be a boarding-house, and so arranged that there be a cooking department, with a large dining-hall, sufficiently large to accommodate every scholar, including all the teachers. There should be as many rooms connected with the building as there are scholars, so that each scholar have his own room. Each room should be provided with the means of lodging, and some convenience to serve as a wardrobe, also having a washstand, pitcher, and basin, and a means for conveying away the waste water from each room. The

building should be so arranged as to have one wing of the building for the female department and the other for the male department, between which and the female department there should be no direct communication. The dining-hall should be the common reception room, where all may meet at meal-time. There should be two departments, in some place within the building, that could be used as a hospital, one for the girls and one for the boys. In protracted cases of illness each could be placed in their appropriate department, and provided with all the proper means for their restoration to health. The whole should be conducted on the principle of a family society. The teachers, both male and female, should not only be regarded as teachers, but exercise a parental care over each and every pupil. In all the gambols and sports at playhours let the girls and boys mix in the hall and on the playgrounds, but under the watchful eye and care of the teachers, and as far as possible the family relations should be maintained. This system of instruction should be adopted, whether the school is conducted on the "manual labor" system or not. The nearer the family relations can be observed with the young the better. It serves to develop the feeling of friendship and love, which go far toward checking wild and rude habits and controls the rougher passions of our nature, by awakening its tender sympathies. The utmost pains should be taken at all times, and under all circumstances, by the teachers to inculcate correct action and the best method of investigating all subjects, both in a moral and philosophic sense. In the investigation of all subjects truthful principles should be developed; free, full, and deliberate discussion should not only be tolerated but promoted, and conducted in a calm and deliberate manner. All our lessons of life teach, that man is endowed with reasoning powers, capable of arriving at facts, if the proper course be adopted. If this course be adopted in infancy, and persisted in until mature years, the mind will be free from bias, superstitions, credulous opinions, and dogmatisms. The more oral the instruction the better, and as far as possible everything taught should be demonstrated, and too much pains can not be taken in providing the proper instruments to make the demonstrations.

I am fully aware that objections will be made to this mode of instruction on account of the expense. Besides this it will be claimed that such a system is too material, and it will be argued by some that minds trained in this way will lose the force of religious sentiments, but such reasoning is false. The proper and full investigation of all subjects leads us back to the first Almighty

cause, which we term God. There is not a fact in the universe, whether of physical or moral origin, but leads us in the final conclusion to an invisible spirit-principle which is coupled with intelligence. There is not a single phenomenon in nature, when properly investigated, but leads us to this conclusion; and further, that it is man's true interest to conform in all things to the law of his being. It is the non-conformity to these laws that begets all the ills and mishaps of this life, or the one in the spirit spheres. All other modes of thought and instruction are founded either in ignorance, fanaticism, or superstition. All error is founded in ignorance. Then if this be so it is a matter of the first importance that we, to the utmost of our ability, acquire a correct knowledge of all that immediately concerns us.

As before hinted, agriculture and the mechanic arts must be the employment of the largest number of individuals, and upon these two branches depends the advance of civilization; and the advance is in the exact ratio of the state or condition of these branches of industrial pursuits, for upon these depend all commercial relations between man and his fellow, and between nations. As these branches advance they beget a necessity for the exchange of commodities, and this leads to commercial relations. New views and opinions arise as well as new wants; this begets mental activity and means are devised to supply not only wants but the best means of supplying them. Hence the trading and mechanical mind is the more developed while the strictly agricultural is less developed, being more retired from those sources or avenues where mind is brought into contact with mind. But the day has dawned when men are beginning to realize the lack of that information which is so essential to success; and the day is not far distant when this interest—the farming interest—will be furnished with the means of advancing their knowledge in all that goes to fit the young mind to engage in agricultural pursuits. He will obtain a knowledge of the great variety in soils, and their adaptation to the various productions, and the best means of keeping their lands to the highest point of productiveness. To do this we must have agricultural schools, model farms, with appropriate libraries, and apparatus for testing soils and the constituents which enter into the composition of vegetables, and the best mode of preparing ground. Agricultural journals will spring up where practical experiments, and all that pertains to actual farming in the best mode on given soils, will be discussed. These will be exchanged, and the best talent of the country will be employed in developing the resources of the soil, instead of engaging in what is now regarded

the learned professions. It is the man that makes the business, not the business that makes the man; and to make the man he must have capacity and a love for his business, and with this his mind must be cultivated and stored with all the facts connected with his pursuits. Nothing is plainer than this position, and not until the masses awaken and demand their interests will they get them. Man is an individualized being; has his wants and his cares, and is so constituted that if he pursues the proper course he can supply all his reasonable wants, and though he is thus isolated he bears certain relations to his fellow-man, that the due performance of those duties growing out of these relations is essential to his own being and happiness. This in no instance should be lost sight of, as our own happiness is concerned in the faithful discharge of those duties which grow out of those relations.

To do the subject of education the justice which its importance deserves would require a large volume; but if I have in this essay said sufficient to awaken an interest on the subject, I have done all I designed to do.

A few remarks on the subject of a new plan for a lyceum, which has been gotten up within the past year in New York city. It is called the Childrens' Progressive Lyceum, and has already been followed by several others of a similar character in different parts of the United States, and now bids fair to revolutionize the mode of instructing children, and to awaken mental action. They are classified according to age into twelve groups, and twelve in a group. The first group is made up of children of four years of age; second group of children of five years, and so on up to the age of fifteen and upward. These lyceums commenced as a Sunday school; and quite recently I see that a very considerable increase in improvement has been observable, besides a large increase in numbers. The several groups have been duplicated, and the lyceum is now increased to one hundred and eighty-eight children. Each group has a teacher. At each meeting questions are given out as a lesson for the next meeting, when they are required to answer the questions put by the teacher growing out of the lessons last given; at the same time full explanations are given by the teachers. The whole is arranged into a kind of military order where each pupil is taught order, system, and regularity. In this lyceum they have a library, selected with great care, from a primer up, and now numbers five hundred volumes. Each pupil draws through his teacher one volume each, to be returned at the next meeting. This is done at each meeting. From a recent quarterly meeting of this lyceum, I see much praise is bestowed by spectators

upon both teachers and pupils. I will not add more, as a neat little volume of one hundred and forty-four pages has recently been published, giving in detail the whole mode of instruction. Boys and girls are mixed up in the groups.

In conclusion I will add, that man advances in the ratio of the pains taken with children to teach them to think and reason, then as they grow up to manhood they will not be contented with a mere say-so, but will require evidence of the truth of the statement; and too much pains can not be taken by parents and teachers in instilling truthful principles in a plain and concise manner, and to never make an averment unless it can be fully substantiated.

## APPENDIX.

---

AN ADDRESS, DELIVERED BY DR. PHILIP MASON, *before the Grand Council of Royal and Select Masters of the State of Indiana, at Indianapolis, May 21, 1862.*

Comp. Philip Mason read before the Grand Council the following address :

COMPANIONS: Permit one who long years ago entered the portals of our sanctuary, and through the kindness of the brethren has been permitted to pass into the place where in olden time the select few were only admitted, to briefly address you. The bare recollection of past events is well calculated to inspire the warmest emotions of our nature, and recall to mind the ever-changing scenes of time; yet a few great principles are ever present, unchanged by time and events; by these lights we divine the future, and they serve as polar stars to guide us in the onward and upward progress of human thought and advancement. Turn back only as far as the recollection of a few of us extends, and compare the early history of our loved State, her institutions, and the condition of the Masonic Craft of those early days with our present advancements in all that goes to make up the comforts and conveniences of life, and one is struck with astonishment and surprise, that in less than forty years a wilderness, roamed by savages and wild beasts, has been converted into fine fields which yield a bountiful harvest to the husbandman, dotted by comfortable houses, fine villages, cities, and fashionable life, each and every section provided with its church and school-house, and now and then the seminary and college. This, with the unparalleled increase of the Masonic fraternity, and we have just cause to be thankful that we have lived in the day, age, and place we have. It is this improvement that marks the distinction between the savage and civilized man.

What power has wrought this mighty change? Labor and skill, directed by Almighty power through human intellect, acting upon



those immortal principles of Truth, by which alone success can be obtained. I fondly trust that our beloved institution has not been an idle spectator in the midst of those improvements; I trust that, individually and collectively, we have contributed our mite to this advancement.

The talent and intelligence I see around me warrants the conclusion that the high moral principles embraced in the teachings of our Masonic Rites have been active, contributing to man's elevation in the sphere of civil society and civilization. If one thing more than any other has contributed to bring about this happy state, it is that equality taught by the Level, that rectitude of which the Plumb reminds us, and learning to square our actions by the Square of Truth, and keeping our desires in due bounds, learning from the Bee industry and frugality. Acting upon this basis, developing thought in all that is useful, we may justly claim for our institution its share in the advanced and ameliorated condition of the masses of our people. This is no fancy picture, but a stern reality. Go where you may there is not to be found a people more imbued with the plain practical truths which must always enter largely into national prosperity, than is to be found in Indiana. We came here from nearly every part of the world, with limited means, each with his own peculiar opinions, which have been freely interchanged. Our wants and necessities urged us to adopt the most useful and forsake the ideal. Thus the rough diamond has been polished and made to shine forth its latent beauty; thus have been brought about the great results to which I have alluded.

I will not weary you with long recitals. In concluding, permit me to say that we are the representatives of the select few, who, from their skill and fidelity, were selected to do an important work, and were permitted to enter the most retired place; and by our labors I trust posterity has been blessed. In view of these facts, how important it is that our lives should be void of offence, and our minds be stored with a knowledge of the useful, and at all suitable time and occasions be able to give proper instruction to those who are less advanced. Oft and again have I been not only reminded of my lack of ability, but that application which is so essential to confer distinction.

This may be the last time I may ever meet you in Council, yet be assured I shall carry with me the most pleasing emotions, which has been warmed into being by my associations with this Grand Body. I see a few around me with whom I acted in middle life. They, like me, must go hence to be here no more. To the younger members let me say the work is in your hands; to you posterity

must look, not only for our ancient landmarks, but the preservation of that advanced civilization we now enjoy, together with higher unfolding of the useful, in all that attains to enlarge man's moral, intellectual, and physical wants. To the aged, my companions in years, let me say, though separated for years by my absence from the Grand Bodies, where in earlier years we met, the meeting again in this hall, and that cordial shake of the hand and warm reception with which I was met, filled me with joy, and will last as long as time endures with me. But now in parting, perhaps for the last time on earth, how sad the thought. Let it be relieved with the fond hope of a happy meeting in the summer land where parting will be no more. Let me drop the veil and cover the emotions, and in silence drop the sympathetic tear and bid adieu, while I trust I shall leave with you my warmest regard and affection.

Which, on motion, was ordered to be spread on the minutes.

On motion of Companion Bayless it was unanimously

*Resolved*, That Companions Philip Mason, Cornelius Moore, and Chauncy Carter be recorded upon our proceedings as Honorary Members of this Grand Council, and that they be fraternally invited to participate in our deliberations, when God, in his providence, may permit them to honor us with their presence.

---

AN ADDRESS DELIVERED BY DR. PHILIP MASON *before the Grand Chapter of the State of Indiana, at Indianapolis, May 22, 1862.*

Comp. Philip Mason then addressed the Grand Chapter as follows:

COMPANIONS: Permit one of your number—one who has neared his allotted time of three score and ten years—one who is often reminded of human infirmities by the beautiful lines used in the ritual of the lower degrees of our Order, "That the keeper of the house shall tremble, and the strong men shall bow themselves, and the grinders shall cease because they are few, and those that look out of the windows be darkened," to address you a few parting words. It is now over forty-one years since I crossed the threshold into the Masonic sanctuary in the village where I now reside. By the kindness of my brethren, I have been advanced to what I regard the summit of ancient Masonry. I received the Chapter Degrees in the old Chapter in the city of Cincinnati, Ohio; the

Council Degrees, in Richmond, Wayne County, of this State, and the Order of High Priesthood in the Council connected with this Grand Chapter; and though it may seem egotism in me, I desire to leave with my companions a brief statement of the part I have taken in the rise and progress of Masonry in this State, that it may be safely deposited, and in after times it should be brought to light, the evidence of one who had taken an active part in the institution might bear favorable witness of its teachings and tendency. Permit me to say I served as Master of Warren Lodge, where I was made a Mason, thirteen years, and Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of this State eight years, and you saw fit to place me in the Council of this Grand Body, and though I have done but little more than be present at our meetings, yet I trust that my presence is the evidence of my continued faith in our Order.

For a number of years my own domestic affairs so occupied my time and attention that I could devote but little time to the work, other than to attend the meetings of the several Subordinate Masonic Bodies in our own village. When time and circumstances permitted me to revisit the Grand Lodge, and meet with my Companions in the Chapter and Council, a new generation had grown up; there yet lingered but a few who had been co-workers with me in middle life. The cordial meeting with that few, together with those who now fill places heretofore made vacant by the remorseless scythe of Time, filled me with delight and will be remembered with pleasure while life lasts with me.

Indulge me a moment while I refer back to the days long gone by, to the time when our loved institution in this State had a bare existence; when but nine chartered Lodges were represented in the Grand Lodge, and that too after each and every Lodge in the State had been notified to attend. (See the printed proceedings of the Grand Lodge, by Comp. Hacker, p. 280 to 292, and a few subsequent meetings.)

At that time there were but two Chapters in the State. This was in the year 1833. A few had not forgotten the plumb line and level, nor that instrument which spreads the cement of brotherly love and affection. The labors of these few laid the foundation on which our present prosperity has been erected. Notwithstanding the zealous efforts and untiring industry of those who faced the storm of anti-Masonry, it was several years before many of the old Lodges were resuscitated and new ones sprung up, but the spring time came and summer succeeded and we are now reaping the harvest. From nine chartered Lodges, with but few members, the number has been increased until we now number two hundred and

seventy-five, with two under dispensation, embracing ten thousand five hundred and fifty members. From two Chapters we now number forty-seven, with one thousand five hundred and ninety members, and from no Councils at all, we now number fifteen, an Order of High Priesthood, and an Order of Encampment, each department under their appropriate Grand Bodies. There is the evidence of a prosperity not excelled, if equalled, in the whole history of civilization. .

The advancement in our loved institution is not the only progress which has been made in our boundaries. As a people, we have advanced in all the appliances that build up a great nation; that develop the useful and ornamental, and contribute so largely to man's happiness. There are but few of us now living who have been favored by taking a part in those improvements or witnessing the rapid changes within our loved State, and even those who have witnessed, and even engaged in bringing about those improvements, which we see around us everywhere, can hardly realize the magic change in everything that goes to make up the comforts of civilized society.

Thirty-four years ago I first attended the Grand Lodge held in this place, sixty miles from my residence, and to reach here by traveling on horseback required two days, and sometimes three, and that was the only way we could travel in certain seasons of the year. To ensure an attendance at the Grand Lodge we fixed our meetings a week in advance of the meeting of the State Legislature, which convened on the first Monday of December of each year. Now we breakfast at home and reach here for early dinner.

I am yet with you, lingering upon the verge of the time allotted me, and though it has fallen to my lot, in times past, to take a part in many of the passing events, not only among my Masonic brethren, but in the affairs of State and the active duties of a laborious profession, I am now the old book laid upon the shelf, hardly taken down for reference. Such are times and events. A new generation is upon the stage, and let me say to them, play well your part; the trust you have inherited from the fathers is now in your hands and keeping, and may it be your happy lot to excel, and leave to your posterity greater blessings than you have inherited.

May the fratricidal strife that is now raging to break down one of the best governments on earth, one in which the sons of Indiana are playing a noble and conspicuous part, be hushed in peace, and the rights of men advanced to a higher plain.

To those who have been my compeers in days gone by, and like

me are lingering upon the shores of time, I may be permitted to say that your labors are nearly ended, and you too must soon pass away, but you may indulge the pleasing reflection, the solace of your declining years, that you have conserved to those great moral truths which go to make up a great and truly happy people. This may be our last parting, and be assured I shall carry with me pleasing emotions of the past and the present, in the fond recollections of our former associations.

When, on motion of Comp. Hazlerigg, it was

*Ordered*, That the address of Comp. Mason be printed in the proceedings.

On motion of Comp. Bayless it was

*Resolved*, That Comp. Philip Mason be enrolled upon our records as an Honorary member of this Grand Chapter, and he be fraternally invited to participate with us in our deliberations, whenever God, in his providence, may permit him to honor us with his presence.

---

FAREWELL ADDRESS, DELIVERED BY DR. PHILIP MASON, *before the Grand Lodge of Indiana, at Indianapolis, May 26, 1862.*

Past Grand Master Philip Mason, by the consent and invitation of the Grand Lodge, read his Farewell Address:

BRETHREN:—For a number of years I have only met with you occasionally; not because I no longer enjoyed the friendly intercourse incident to your gatherings together, nor because my confidence had become weakened as to the benefits incident to the institution of Masonry, but because time had brought age, which prompted me to participate less frequently than heretofore in your deliberations. Yet, at the annual return of the meetings of this Grand Body, though personally absent, I was with you in feeling and sentiment, often looking over the pages of your annual reports, from which I have learned of the happy strides in the good work, which, as members of the Fraternity, you found yourselves called upon to perform, thus often finding relief from the daily rounds of a business life.

Much that goes to make up man's advance in moral, intellectual, and social relations must be drawn from the domestic circle and the smaller associations of men. There are certain great funda-

mental principles which underlie all advancement, and unless these principles be early taught, we can not hope for success. Impressions made in early life become interwoven with our very being, and become a part and parcel of our nature, either for good or ill. The teaching in youth points forward, with almost unerring certainty, to the character of the future man; hence the importance of correct training in early life; and hence, also, the importance of keeping constantly in view the invaluable lesson taught in our Ritual—the three stages of human life, “Youth, Manhood, and Age”—with its accompanying application and explanations. Let me say, that from our entrance into the lodge-room, through all of the several degrees, from first to last, every step and advance teaches a useful and an important lesson, which, if adopted and carried out, would not only fit us for the practical duties of life, but expand the mind in all that is high and ennobling in human nature. Man is formed for society; which he will have, if not among the good, it may be among the vicious and the wicked. Though circumstances which surround us may exercise a strong influence over us, yet there is a teaching within us, which, if acted upon by our intellectual powers, would lead us to rise above mere circumstances, and control our own destiny. The teachings of our loved Order, if carried into full practice, would lead us to all truth and that rational freedom so much desired by the truly great and good.

Brethren, my Masonic history is with you, and may be found in the printed Proceedings of this Grand Lodge, as compiled by Brother Hacker, to whom the Fraternity owe a debt of gratitude. I had tried for years to collect the reports and manuscripts, but failed to get a few. Brother Hacker, more fortunate, found these lost few among the rubbish in a hall of this building, and now our history is complete as far as published.

The members of the first Grand Lodge of Indiana have all passed away except two. I entered the Grand Lodge in the year 1828, but ten years after its organization, and was for years almost a constant attendant; but during the past few years I have seen but few that were my compeers in the days I was an active member. Such are the mutations of time—one generation passes away and is succeeded by another; mind and matter still survives, advancing onward to a higher plane of being, as is strongly evidenced in our own past history. It has fallen to my lot to not only be a spectator but a participator in the active events of by-gone times. I came to Indiana in the year 1816, and, like many others, with

limited means and without an education. A wide field lay open, which served as a powerful stimulant or incentive to activity and energy. But now the almost allotted three-score-and-ten admonishes me that my part in this great drama is about ended, and that the pioneers of this noble work must soon surrender it to younger and more vigorous hands.

Brethren, when I look over this hall, and see the representatives of two hundred and seventy-five chartered Lodges, I am led to exclaim, "What mighty hand has, in less than thirty years, wrought this change?" From the nine small Lodges in 1838, has grown up this increase.\* Nor is this all; for when we look abroad over our State, we see the same rapid improvement in all that ministers to man's physical, moral, and intellectual wants. And may we not justly flatter ourselves that the influences of the former have largely contributed to the production of the latter?

The fathers have gone; their immediate successors are also rapidly passing—the institution is in the keeping of another generation. I trust that the traces left on the trestle-board, and committed to your care, are far in advance of those which were accessible to us in earlier years. Our lights were few, our means small, Masonic libraries out of the question; but now we have the immortal Oliver, Preston, Anderson, and many others; our own printed proceedings have become a light unto us; times and circumstances have awakened thought, which have brought out latent principles that might otherwise have lain dormant. There remains much to be done, to develop principle and carry into practical use those great principles of "brotherly love, relief, and truth;" and may it be your happy lot to hand down to posterity, in a greatly advanced state, all that goes to elevate man's moral greatness—which makes him a better man, a better husband and father, a more loyal, patriotic, and Christian citizen; and thus, made true to himself, his God, and his country, forever hereafter prevent that fratricidal strife which imbrues brother's hands in brother's blood, so painfully witnessed in the present distracted condition of our beloved country.

This may be my last meeting with you, and in parting let me say, "Press on; take lessons from the past, avoid our errors, and practice the good." My compeers in years, who acted with me in early life, let me remind you that our lives are drawing to a rapid

---

\*May, 1868, there is reported over four hundred Masonic Lodges in Indiana, with twenty thousand members.

close—our active labors are ended. May our counsels, for the remaining time we linger here, be in love and wisdom, cheering on the young and active to nobler deeds than it fell to our lot to accomplish.

In taking leave of you, probably for the last time, be assured I shall carry with me all of those fraternal feelings and recollections of the past that have so often brought us together.

On motion of Brother Francis King, a copy of the same was requested for publication in the proceedings.



## ERRATA.

---

The manuscript containing the Family Record of Octavia Parker was mislaid, and not found until the Family History was printed. It should have appeared on page 64 of Family History.

FAMILY RECORD OF OCTAVIA PARKER, as given me by herself at her house, in 1866.

Her mother was Marcy Mason, daughter of Philip Mason, Sr.; she was twice married; first to a Mr. Parker, by whom she had children, George Parker and Octavia Parker. Her second marriage was to Russell Barker; by him she had no children.

George lived and grew to manhood, married and moved to Ohio, where he died, leaving no children.

Octavia Parker was married to Melancthon C. Wetmore on the first day of February, 1827. He was raised in Whitesborough, Oneida County, New York, and was of a numerous family, both on his father and mother's side. By this marriage they had two children—one died in infancy, and the other, whose name was George Parker Wetmore, grew to manhood and married Eleanor R. Rosney on the 26th of March, 1856. These latter had two children—George M. Wetmore, Jr., born August 31, 1858, Charles H. Wetmore, born August 6, 1862.

George P. Wetmore, Sr., died aged thirty-five years, leaving a wife and two children, who are now living (1868) with his father and mother. In 1866 they were living two miles south of Rochester, New York.

---

Seven lines from bottom of page 85 reads "Samuel Jenks, Sr.," it should read "Samuel Jenks, Jr."

Ninth line from bottom of page 119 reads "Crisker," it should read "Crisler."

Twenty-third line from top of page 153 reads "by invitation a railroad invitation," it should read "by invitation to attend a railroad celebration."

First line from top of page 202, reads "old lady, Mrs. Sharp," it should read "old lady, Mrs. Tharp."

Tenth line from bottom of page 225 reads "Pike Creek," it should read "Pipe Creek."

Twenty third line from top of page 340 reads "is contains," it should read "it contains."

Eighteen lines from top of page 341 reads "my Uncle Baker," it should read "my Uncle Barker."

Twenty-fourth line from top of page 353 reads "keep," it should read "peep."

Ten lines from top of page 368 reads "Valley of the West Fork of White River," it should read "Valley of the West Fork of Whitewater River."

Eleventh line from top of page 390 it reads "top root," it should read "tap root."

Fourteen lines from top of page 486 reads "Instead fashionable drugs," it should read "Instead of fashionable drugs."



# INDEX TO PART FIRST.

## FAMILY HISTORY.

	PAGE.
PRELIMINARY REMARKS .....	7
Allen's Isaac, Family.....	72
Allen's Nancy, Family.....	72, 73
Allen's Moreau, Family .....	71
Bishop's George, Family.....	59
Hussey's Sylvanus, Family.....	73, 74, 75
Hussey's Reuben, Family.....	73
Hussey's Sarah, Family.....	73
Hussey's George, Family.....	74
Hussey's Benjamin, Family.....	74
Hussey's Stephen, Family.....	74
Hussey's Mary, Family.....	74
Hussey's Eliza, Family.....	74, 75
Hussey Eliza, and Child, Lewis J., Richard H., and Stephen D...	74, 75
Hussey's John, Family.....	75
Hussey's Erastus, Family.....	75
Hussey Erastus, and four Sisters of my Mother.....	75
Jenks' Family, four Brothers.....	77, 78
Jenks Jesse, one of the four Brothers.....	78
Jenks' Jesse, Family and Children.....	78
Jenks Jesse, Twice Married.....	78
Jenks Jesse, Jr .....	78
Jenks' Jacob, Family.....	78
Jenks' Shubel, Family.....	79
Jenks' Stephen, Sr., Family .....	79
Jenks' First Emigration.....	79
Jenks' Second Emigration.....	79, 80
Jenks' Mary, Family.....	80
Jenks' Deborah A., Family... ..	80, 81
Jenks' Stephen, Jr., Family.....	81
Jenks' Elijah, Family.....	82
Jenks' Sarah, Family.....	82
Jenks' Deborah Ann, Family.....	82
Jenks' Lucinda, Family.....	82
Jenks' Samuel, Family.....	83
Jenks Gideon, a Bachelor.....	83

	PAGE.
Jenks' Stephen Warren, Family.....	83
Jenks' Robert N., Family.....	83
Jenks' John T., Family.....	83
Jenks' Edwin, Family.....	83
Jenks' Gideon, Second Son.....	83
Jenks' Samuel, Sr., Family (First Family).....	84
Jenks Samuel, Twice Married.....	84
Jenks' Phebe, Family by Second Marriage.....	85
Jenks' Mary J., Family by Second Marriage.....	85
Jenks' Emily, Family .....	85
Jenks' Stephen, Family.....	85
Jenks' Robert, Family.....	85
Jenks' Louisa, Family.....	85
Jenks, Richard Tyler.....	85
Jenks' Susanna, Family (Second Family).....	85
Jenks Samuel, Jr.....	85
Jenks' Samuel, Jr., Family.....	85
Jenks' Jesse, Family.....	86
Jenks' John, Family.....	86
Jenks' William, Family.....	87
Jenks' Ann, Family.....	88
Jenks' Conclusion of Family History.....	88, 89
The Compiler.....	88, 89
Lippitt's John W., Sr., Family.....	31
Lippitt's John W., Jr., Family.....	32
Lapham Family, an Abstract of, taken in 1782.....	65 to 68
Lapham's Benjamin, Family.....	68
Lapham Jonathan, Letter from.....	69
Lapham's George, Family.....	69, 71
Lapham's Gideon, Family.....	69, 70
Lapham Dr. George H., and daughter Mary T.....	70
Lapham's Jonathan, Family.....	70
Lapham's Jeremiah and Asa.....	70
Lapham Susan, and Family.....	70
Lapham's George, Family.....	70, 71
Lapham's Benjamin, Jr., Family.....	71, 72
Lapham's Stephen's, Family.....	76
Lapham Stephen, Jr.....	76
Letter to John Hussey and several Relatives.....	76
Mason Sampson, the Baptist.....	9
Mason Sampson, the American Root.....	10
Mason Sampson, a Man of Substance.....	11
Mason Sampson, Buried.....	12
Mason Sampson, Married.....	13

	PAGE.
Mason Sampson, Longevity of Children..	18
Mason Pelatiah, Head Clerical Branch.....	16
Mason's Pelatiah, Longevity.....	18
Mason Job, Reverend.....	17
Mason Nathan, Elder.....	17
Mason Russell and John, Elders.....	18
Mason Melatiah, by trade a Mason, and a man of 100 years.....	19, 20, 23, 24
Mason Isaac, a Deacon.....,.....	15
Mason Hezekiah, the third.....	19
Mason's Sampson, Will.....	21, 22
Mason Alanson Reverend, Letter to P. Mason.....	24, 25
Mason's Pelatiah, Family.....	25
Mason's Russell Reverend, Sr., Family.....	26
Mason Russell Reverend, Letter and Essay.....	26, 27, 28, 29
Mason's Philip, Sr., Family.....	29
Note by Compiler.....	30, 31
Mason's Russell, Jr., Family.....	32
Remarks by Compiler.....	33, 34
Mason's Philip, Compiler, Family.....,.....	35
Mason's Philip, Second Marriage .....	39, 40, 41, 42
Mason's Philip, Third Marriage.....	42, 43
Mason's Harrietta, Family..	36
Mason's Rush, Family.....	36, 37
Mason's Thomas, Family.....	37, 38
Mason's Darwin, Family.....	38
Mason's Stephen, Family.....	38, 39
Synopsis of the Mason and Lapham Families.....	43, 24
Mason's Almond, Family.....	44, 45
Mason's Russell, Family.....	44
Mason's Nancy Jane, Family.....	44
Mason's Scott, Family.....	45
Mason's Amos T., Family.....	45
Mason's Stephen P., Family.....	45
Mason's Mary Ann, Family.....	45
Mason's Horatio, Family.....,.....	45
Mason's Mahala, Family.....	46
Mason's Warren, Family.....	46
Mason's Alonzo, Family.....	46
Mason's Amelia, Family.....	47
Mason's Horatio, Second Marriage.....	47
Mason's Mary, Family.....	47
Mason's Fidelia, Family.....	47
Mason's Ozias, Family.....	48
Mason's Ozro, Family, Twice Married.....	48
Mason's Lucretia, Family.....	48

	PAGE.
Mason's Caroline, Family.....	49
Mason's Caesar, Family.....	49
Mason's, Austin, Family.....	49
Mason's Annie, Family.....	49
Mason Family, Remarks on by Compiler.....	49, 50
Mason's Stephen, Family.....	50
Mason's Candace, Family.....	50
Mason's, Sylvania, Family.....	50
Mason Sylvania, a Daughter Married.....	51
Mason's James, Family.....	51
Mason's Hiram, Family.....	51
Mason's Amelia, Family.....	51
Mason's Henry Marcus, Family.....	51
Mason's Marion, Family.....	51
Mason's Hiram, a Brother's Family.....	52
Mason's Mercy, Family.....	52, 53
Mason's Nancy, Family.....	53
Combs Family, Remarks on by Compiler.....	54
Mason's Isaac Uncle, Family.....	54
Mason's Amy, Family.....	55
Mason's Alanson, Family.....	56
Mason Amos T. and Maria, form a Family.....	56
Mason's Electa, Family.....	56
Mason's Joseph W., Family.....	56
Mason's Helen E., Family.....	57
Mason's Hannah A., Family.....	57
Mason's Samuel, Family—A Son.....	57
Mason Samuel, Married.....	57
Mason's James, Family.....	57
Mason John and Harriet, Lived as a Family.....	57
Mason John, Died June 25, 1868.....	—
Mason's Amy, Family.....	57, 58
Mason Brooks, Brother to P. Mason, Sr.....	61
Mason's Eddy, Family.....	61
Mason's Russell Brooks, a Son's Family.....	62
Mason Isaac, Son of Mason Brooks.....	62, 63
Mason Rhoda, Great Aunt of Compiler.....	64
Mason's Joseph, a Great Uncle, Family.....	64
Mason's Aaron, (Son of Joseph) Family.....	65
Mason's Kingsley, (Son of Joseph) Family.....	65
Mason's Joseph Jr., Family.....	65
Mason Phebe, a Sister of Joseph, Sr.....	65
Mason's Octavia, Family.....	595

	PAGE.
Sayles' Duty, Family.....	57
Sayles' John, Family.....	58
Sayles' Cyrus Dr., Family.....	58, 59
Sayles' George M., Family (Twice Married).....	59
Sayles' Mary Williard and William Bishop, Family.....	59
Sayles' Bishop George, Family.....	59
Willmarth, Scott M.....	59, 60
Willmarth, Isaac, Jr.....	61

---

## PART SECOND—AUTOBIOGRAPHY.

---

Preparatory.....	91
Born, Settlement, Education.....	92
Family Moved to a New Home.....	93
Library Association.....	93
Teach an A B C School.....	94
Apprenticed to Carpenter and Joiner.....	94
Leave and go West.....	94
Chemistry, a Surprise.....	95
Return to my Mother's.....	95
Return West and Marry.....	96, 97
PREPARE TO LEAVE FOR INDIANA.....	97
Start and Arrive at Olean.....	98
Embark on Raft, Reach Pittsburg.....	99, 100
Leave Pittsburg and Reach Cincinnati.....	101, 102
Leave Cincinnati for Whitewater.....	103
Frost, June 7, 1816.....	104
Connersville in 1816.....	106
Arrival of Father-in-Law and Family.....	107
LEAVE FOR VINCENNES AND UP WABASH.....	107
Fort Harrison.....	108
Return a New Route, by Bean Blossom to Brownstown.....	109, 110
Brownstown, Home, On Route out.....	110, 111
Disappointed with the Country.....	111, 112
Father Jenks Settles.....	112
I SETTLE ON GARRISON CREEK.....	113
Hard Living.....	116
Sugar Making.....	117
Clear Ground for Corn Crop.....	118
Buy Mill with my Brother.....	119
Trade Back.....	120
Teach School and Study Medicine.....	121
RETURN EAST, REACH MOTHER'S.....	123, 124

	PAGE.
Visit with my Mother my Birthplace.....	125
Return to Mother's.....	127
Visit Sulphur Springs at Richfield.....	128
Parting Scene with my Mother.....	129
Route Home, Visit sundry Connections.....	129, 130, 131, 132
MOVE TO CONNERSVILLE.....	133
Study Medicine with Dr. Moffitt.....	133
Return to Farm.....	133
Move to Fayetteville.....	135
MOVE TO CONNERSVILLE.....	137
Visit Fort Wayne.....	137
Trade for New Farm.....	137
Move to New Farm.....	139
A Trip to Vincennes.....	140
REMOVE TO CONNERSVILLE.....	141
Health Failed.....	142
Bought a Drug Store.....	142
Railroad Celebration.....	143
Go to Philadelphia by way of Washington.....	144, 145
Taken Sick at Philadelphia.....	147
Visit Medical College, and Lunatic Asylum of the Quakers.....	147, 148
First Wife Dies.....	149
MARRY SECOND TIME.....	150
Again Engage in Drug Business.....	151
Success in Business.....	154
Buy Land.....	155
Sell Drug Store.....	155
Move to New Residence, Wife and Son Dies.....	156

## EVENTS IN LIFE.

Military Life.....	156, 157, 158, 159, 160
Civil Life.....	160, 161
Elected Probate Judge.....	161
Elected to Legislature.....	162
Re-elected.....	162
Acts in Legislature.....	162, 163
Elected Third Time and Acts.....	164, 165, 166, 167, 168
Appointed State Commissioner.....	168
Acts as Commissioner.....	169, 170, 171, 172
Elected Commissioner Whitewater Canal.....	173
Surrender Canal to Company.....	173

## MASONIC.

Made a Mason.....	174
Elected District Master.....	175
Acts in Grand Lodge.....	175, 176, 177



Made a Royal Arch Mason, took Council Degrees and Order of High Priesthood.....	177
Concluding Acts as a Mason.....	178, 179, 180, 181

## WESTERN TOUR.

Matteson House, Chicago.....	181
Leave Chicago for Rock Island.....	182
Take Steamboat to Burlington.....	183
Leave Burlington for Fort Des Moines.....	183
Leave Des Moines for Council Bluffs.....	185
Old Council Bluffs.....	187
Recross River at Omaha to Mission Station.....	189
Return to Council Bluffs.....	192
A Petrifying Spring in a Cave.....	193
Dr. Krider's Anecdote.....	193
LEAVE COUNCIL BLUFFS ON RETURN.....	194
Lay over for Sunday at Iranistan.....	195
Return to Fort Des Moines.....	196
Hunt Lands and enter them.....	196, 197, 198, 199, 200
LEAVE FORT DES MOINES.....	200
Reach Dahlonaga and Stop.....	201
While there made Visits.....	202
BLACK HAWK WAR, A HISTORY.....	203
Visit Agency City, and the Graves of Keokuk and Black Hawk, Mr. Street, Indian Agent.....	204
Was at Ottumwa Several Times.....	205
LEAVE FOR FARMINGTON.....	205, 206
Sick at Farmington, Hot Weather.....	207
Visit Keokuk, saw Nauvoo.....	207
Visit Keosauqua and Sablubra.....	208
Farmington, Des Moines River.....	209
General Swasey and the Mormons.....	209, 210
PRAIRIES AND MISSISSIPPI VALLEY.....	211, 212, 213, 214
LEAVE FARMINGTON (hot day), 5TH OF SEPTEMBER.....	215
Leave Keokuk for Wapello.....	216, 217
Stop with Dr. Taylor.....	217
Found Acquaintances at Wapello.....	217
Leave Wapello for Blue Grass.....	217, 218
Stop with my old friend Perrin.....	218
Visit Wolcott Railroad Station.....	219
Leave Blue Grass for Davenport.....	220
Cross Mississippi River—Take Cars for La Salle.....	221
Leave La Salle for Sycamore.....	221
STOP WITH A NEPHEW.....	222
Leave Sycamore for Chicago, then part with Nephew and Family.....	225
Reach Home—Visit a few Friends.....	226

	PAGE.
LEAVE FOR NEW YORK.....	227
Stopped at Newark, O.—Leave for Cleveland.....	228
At Cleveland took Cars for New York.....	228
Stop with an old Aunt.....	229
Self and Brother Horatio leave Utica for an Uncles near our old Home.....	229
Visit the Graves of our Parents.....	229
Visit a Second Grave-yard.....	231
LEAVE THE SCENES OF YOUTH FOR THOSE OF CHILDHOOD AT FAIRFIELD.....	231, 232, 233
We Left the Cherished Spot for Herkimer Village.....	234
We take the Cars for Pierpoint Manor, Jefferson County, stop with a Brother.....	235
Visit Sackett's Harbor.....	236, 237
We Left with our Brother to see another Brother near Fulton....	237
We Leave; Took Cars for near Morrisville.....	238
Leave here for Conistoto, then take Cars for Home.....	239
MARRY THIRD WIFE.....	240
Employed for William Houston.....	241
Commence small Hat Store.....	242

## TRIP NORTH-WEST.

Arrive at Wabash.....	244
Fort Wayne.....	246
Globe Hotel, Chicago.....	246
Go to Sycamore, and up Fox River.....	246
Took Cars to Fulton, Demont House.....	246
Go down the River to Rock Island.....	247
Visit Blue Grass, and go to Galesburg.....	248
Leave Galesburg for Home.....	249
Stop at Mattoon and Paris, Reach Home.....	250, 251
Resume Domestic Life.....	251
TRIP TO CLERMONT, OHIO, AND BACK.....	251, 252

## TRIP TO WABASH, 1858.

Leave Home, Reach Wabash.....	252, 253
Visit sundry places and County Fair.....	253, 254
Leave for Home, Make sundry Calls on the Road.....	254, 255, 256

## TAKE AN EASTERN TRIP, 1859.

Leave Home, Stop at Columbus, Ohio.....	256, 257
Cleveland and Buffalo.....	259, 260
Visit Niagara Falls.....	260, 261, 262
Leave the Falls for near Utica.....	262, 263
A Mishap, Reach Mohawk.....	263
REACH UNCLE'S AND OLD HOME.....	264, 265
Visit Richfield Springs.....	266, 267

	PAGE.
Visit Cousin Alanson's.....	268
Visit Cousin Willmarth.....	269
Leave for Pulaski.....	271
Leave for near Fulton.....	274
At Brother Almond's.....	275
Visit Oswego at the Lake.....	276
Visit a Relative.....	278
LEAVE FULTON FOR MORRISVILLE.....	279
Visit sundry Relatives.....	280, 281, 285
Leave for Home.....	284
County Fair of Fayette County.....	285
LEAVE HOME FOR WABASH—GO TO COUNTY FAIR, MAKE SPEECH—ATTEND CHAPTER.....	285, 286
Go to Ashland—Close Land Trade, and go to Tyler's.....	286
Leave Wabash for Home.....	287

## TRIP TO WABASH, 1860.

A Variety of Incidents.....	287
AT LAFAYETTE—Meeting of Grand Chapter.....	288
LEAVE FOR WABASH—Stop at Anderson with a relative.....	288
Leave for Wabash—Reach it—Go to County Fair and to Ecl River.....	289
Leave and Return Home.....	289, 290
MAY, 1862—LEAVE HOME FOR INDIANAPOLIS—Attend Meet- ing of Grand Masonic Bodies.....	290
Go out of Hat Business.....	290
SEPT. 1862—AGAIN FOR WABASH—At Anderson meet a Cousin I had not seen for forty years.....	291
At Wabash we made our usual Visits and Business.....	292, 293
Leave—Stop at Anderson—Find our Friends all Sick.....	293
Visit Gronendyke and Fentress.....	293, 294
A Clairvoyant.....	295
Return Home.....	295
Visit First Wife's Relatives in Fall of 1862 and 1865, and Old Landmarks.....	295 to 297
Spend Summer of 1863 at Home.....	297

## IN FALL, OF 1863 VISIT WABASH.

A Dreary Scene.....	297, 298
Fall of 1864 visit Wabash again....	299

## TRIP WEST, 1865.

Logansport, Peoria, Galesburg.....	300, 301
Farmington—Dr. Clifford.....	302, 303
Pella and Fort Des Moines.....	303, 304
Leave the Fort—North to Nevada and Clinton.....	304, 305
Visit Lyons and Cordovia.....	306

	PAGE.
Leave Clinton for Sycamore.....	307
AT SYCAMORE—Stop with a Nephew, H. H. Mason.....	307
Quit the Use of Tobacco.....	308
We leave Sycamore—Go to Briggs Thomas', McHenry County...	309
We leave for Crystal Lake, Oshkosh, North Port, and Royalton..	309, 310
HISTORICAL AND DESCRIPTIVE.....	311 to 321
LEAVE ROYALTON—Take Boat at North Port to Oshkosh—Take	
Rail to Milwaukee.....	322, 323
Go on Board Steamboat—Cross the Lake to Grand Haven—Take	
the Cars to Grand Rapids.....	323, 324
Take Stage for Kalamazoo.....	325
Visit Three Relations, return Homeward and reach it.....	325, 327

## TRIP OF 1866.

Leave Home for Lafayette.....	326
Leave for Michigan City....	327
Sandbanks and Harbor.....	327
Leave for Kalamazoo and a Relative.....	328
Visit Prairieville and a Relative.....	328
Description of Kalamazoo County.....	329, 330
Battle Creek.....	331
We stop at Galesburg, Battle Creek, and Albion with Relatives.	
See Remarks on Country.....	330, 331, 332
LEAVE FOR ROCHESTER—Description of Country.....	333
Spend a week with a Relative near the City. Description of	
Place.....	334, 335, 336
LEAVE ROCHESTER—Take Cars for Cayuga. Country Passed	
over.....	337
Land at Aurora—Visit a Relative and Old Localities of my	
Early Life. ....	338, 339
Leave for near Morrisville—Pass through Auburn, Syracuse,	
Petersborough, Morrisville.....	339, 340, 341
Solsville to Utica.....	341, 342
LEAVE FOR ALBANY—Reflections Induced from Utica to Al-	
bany.....	343, 344, 345
Stop with a Cousin.....	345, 346
LEAVE FOR SOUTH ADAMS—Stop with Cousin—Various Visits	
and Calls.....	347
Visit Village Grave-yard, and the Old Home of the Brother of	
my Mother.....	348
Leave for my Grandfather's old Residence and his Grave.....	349
Return by New Route.....	350
Visit to the Hoosac Tunnel.....	350, 351
RETURN TO ALBANY—Leave for Herkimer and Old Home—	
Spend Several Days Here and Leave.....	351, 352
Stop with Cousin in Fox Hollow.....	352 353

Return to Utica and Cousin's.....	353
Visit County Fair, Trenton Falls, and our Relatives.....	354, 355, 356
LEAVE UTICA—Reach Pulaski and Fulton.....	356, 357
Leave for Syracuse and Rochester.....	358
Leave for Buffalo and Aurora, where we have several Cousins.....	358, 359
LEAVE BUFFALO—THROUGH CLEVELAND TO TOLEDO—Stop with Moreau Allen, a Cousin.....	360
LEAVE FOR FORT WAYNE AND WABASH—While here we visit the County Fair and a large number of acquaintances.....	361, 362, 363
LEAVE FOR INDIANAPOLIS—Stop with General Coburn.....	363
Description of Indianapolis.....	364, 365

---

## PART THIRD—ORIGINAL ESSAYS.

---

HISTORY OF FAYETTE COUNTY AND AN ADDRESS ON AGRICULTURE.....	366 to 393
First Settlement of Whitewater.....	368
Facilities for Settlement.....	369
Emigrants.....	370
School-houses and Churches.....	371
Incidents of Life.....	371, 372
Admitted a State and County Formed.....	372, 373
Location County Seats.....	373
Tax Levied.....	374
Settlement with Tax Collector.....	375
Tax Tables.....	376, 377, 378, 379
CANAL.....	380
Law of Commerce.....	381
Free State, a Wise Provision.....	382
The Major Controls the Minor.....	383
Tillable Lands and Assessments.....	384
AGRICULTURAL ASSESSMENT AND MANUFACTURES.....	385
Agricultural Science and Library.....	386, 387
Farm Book.....	388
Rain and Manure.....	389
Fall Plowing and Land Drainage.....	390
Agricultural Fairs.....	391
Plows and Climatology.....	392, 393
THE ART OF PRESERVING HEALTH.....	394 to 443

	PAGE.
Importance of Health.....	394
Structure once Destroyed never wholly Restored.....	394, 395
Influence of Mother on Offspring.....	395, 396
Child at Birth should be cared for and not over-fed.....	397
Avoid Stimulants and Narcotics.....	398
BATHING CHILDREN.....	398, 399
Mind on Health.....	400
Importance of Teaching Children.....	401
A Home—its Location and Surroundings.....	401 to 409
SLEEP AND REST.....	409
FOOD AND DRINK.....	410
DRINKS.....	411
EXERCISE OR LABOR.....	412
CLOTHING.....	413
Female Dress.....	415
MOUTH AND TEETH.....	417
Wet Clothing.....	418
Night Air and Late Hours.....	418
SUNSTROKE.....	418
Cold Water Drinking.....	419
Exercise—Loss of Blood.....	419
Costiveness.....	421
BOWEL COMPLAINTS.....	421
Dysentery.....	422
Mode of Sleeping.....	423
Gluttony.....	423
Impure Water ....	424
STIMULANTS AND NARCOTICS.....	424 to 426
Tobacco.....	427
Wine.....	428
SYMPTOMS OF DISEASE.....	429
Acute Diseases.....	430
Baths.....	430, 431
Injections to Move the Bowels.....	432
Laxative and Ague Pills.....	433
Medicine Box—Cuts.....	435
Bruises and Sprains.....	436
Burns and Scalds.....	437
Simple Cerate—Basilicon Ointment.....	438
Bread and Milk Poultices.....	438
Onions and other Articies as Poultices.....	439
Bowel Complaints and Colic.....	440
Hops as a Remedy.....	441
Pain in the Back.....	441
Erysipelas.....	442
To Cure Old Sores.....	443

LETTER TO DR. FORD ON MALARIOUS DISEASES.....	444 to 450
HINTS ON THE ART OF MAKING A LIVING.....	451 to 463
Sixteen Aphorisms or Sayings.....	463 to 464
Concluding Remarks.....	464 to 468
LECTURE ON TEMPERANCE.....	468 to 491
Division of the Subject..	470
Its Tendency to Degenerate Mankind.....	471
INSANITY.....	474
Brain Fever of Drunkards.....	476
Apoplexy and Epilepsy.....	477
Effect of Alcohol upon the Liver and Digestive Organs.....	478
Dropsy and the Exciting of Latent Diseases into Active Being...	479
APPENDIX TO THE FOREGOING LECTURE.....	480
A Prize Essay Quoted .....	481
A Moral Disease .....	482
Legislators pass Laws.....	483
Surroundings have Influence.....	484
Activity of the Human Mind.....	484, 485
The Foundation of Intemperance oft laid by a fond Mother.....	485, 486
Physicians make Drunkards.....	486, 487
Drunkenness a Disease.....	487 to 490
Vindictive Laws useless.....	490, 491
ADDRESS ON AGRICULTURE, No. 1.....	492 to 501
Improved Modes of Farming.....	493
Importance of Physiology.....	494
Importance of Associations.....	495
Where Thirty Years ago roamed the Savage.....	496
Rural Life awakens softer feelings.....	497
Importance of Books and Schooling.....	498
Importance of Agricultural Fairs.....	499
Friends or Quakers an Example.....	500
ADDRESS ON AGRICULTURE, No. 2 .....	502 to 504
Lack of Proper Attention.....	503
Conclusion.....	504
AGRICULTURAL SCHOOLS—A Letter to the Legislature.....	505 to 507
Subject Continued.....	508 to 511
MASONIC ADDRESS.....	511 to 523
Dedication of Masonic Hall..	511
We Live in an Age of Inquiry.....	512
Man a Creature of Circumstances. ....	513
Errors in the Culture of the Mind.....	515
Jews once Slaves.....	516

	PAGE.
Domestic Circle.....	517
Kingdoms may Decay—Principles Never.....	518
General Development of Intellect.....	520
Self-Interest Serves to Unite Mankind.....	521
Conclusion.....	522, 523
INSTALLATION LECTURE.....	524 to 527
MASONIC LECTURE.....	528 to 531
DEDICATION SERVICE—A SERMON.....	531 to 538
METAPHYSICS.....	538 to 552
Letter to Dr. Campbell.....	538, 539
Letter from William W. Wilson.....	541
Answer to Wilson's Letter.....	542 to 545
Letter to W. V. Morrison, No. 1.....	545 to 547
Letter to W. V. Morrison, No. 2.....	547 to 553
LECTURE ON EDUCATION.....	553 to 572
Like Begets Like.....	555
If we wish to be loved we must first love others.....	555, 556
Four General Propositions.....	556 to 558
Second Proposition.....	558, 559
Third Proposition.....	560
Last Proposition.....	561 to 563
The Savage Man.....	563
The Ancient Grecians.....	564
Reaction of Principles.....	565
Conclusion.....	567
A Paper Introduced and Answered.....	567 to 570
Acquisition of Knowledge by the Poor.....	570 to 573
APPENDIX TO EDUCATION.....	573 to 585
Introduction to the Subject.....	573 to 574
Causes which Lead to Civilization.....	574, 575
Present Age of Civilization.....	576
Female Department—Select Schools.....	577
Inquisitiveness of Children.....	578
Instruction by Blocks and Questions.....	579
Children Pleased with Stories.....	580
In Villages and Cities quite Small Children can be Taught.....	581
Teachers to use Parental Care.....	582
Agriculture and Mechanics.....	583
Progressive Lyceums.....	584
Address Grand Council.....	586
Address Chapter.....	588
Farewell Address, Grand Lodge.....	591
Errata.....	595









**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

[illegible]

5508.1

APV

Mason, Philip, 1793-1868?

A legacy to my children, including family history, autobiography, and original essays.

By Dr. Philip Mason... Cincinnati, Moore, Wilstach & Baldwin, printers, 1868.

610 p. ill. 25 cm.

NYPPL

Howes, M. 371.

1. Mason family (Sampson Mason, d. 1676).

I. Title.

